

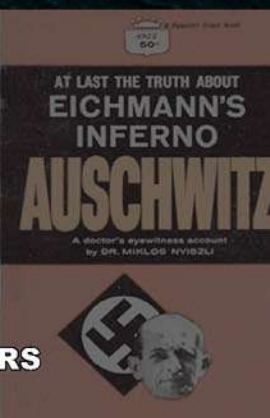
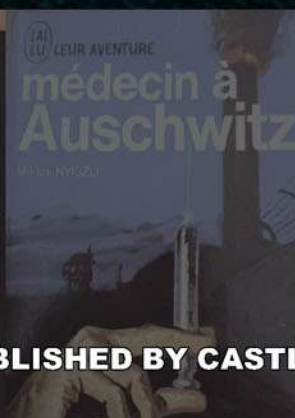
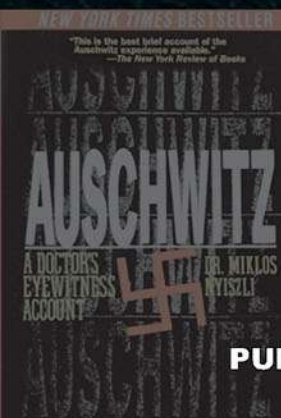
HOLOCAUST HANDBOOKS · VOLUME 37

DR. MIKLÓS NYISZLI, CARLO MATTOGNO

AN  
**AUSCHWITZ**  
DOCTOR'S  
EYEWITNESS ACCOUNT



**The Bestselling Tall Tales of  
Dr. Mengele's Assistant Analyzed**



PUBLISHED BY CASTLE HILL PUBLISHERS

AN AUSCHWITZ DOCTOR'S EYEWITNESS ACCOUNT



# **An Auschwitz Doctor's Eyewitness Account**

The Bestselling Tall Tales of  
Dr. Mengele's Assistant Analyzed

Carlo Mattogno, Miklós Nyiszli



Castle Hill Publishers  
P.O. Box 243, Uckfield, TN22 9AW, UK  
February 2018



## **HOLOCAUST HANDBOOKS, Volume 37:**

Carlo Mattogno, Miklós Nyiszli:

*An Auschwitz Doctor's Eyewitness Account:*

*The Bestselling Tall Tales of Dr. Mengele's Assistant Analyzed*

Translated from the Italian and Hungarian by the author, by Kladderadatsch,  
and by Germar Rudolf

Uckfield, East Sussex: CASTLE HILL PUBLISHERS

PO Box 243, Uckfield, TN22 9AW, UK

February 2018

ISBN10: 1-59148-152-X (print edition)

ISBN13: 978-1-59148-152-2 (print edition)

ISSN: 1529-7748

Published by CASTLE HILL PUBLISHERS

Manufactured worldwide

© Carlo Mattogno

Distribution

Castle Hill Publishers

PO Box 243

Uckfield, TN22 9AW, UK

[shop.codoh.com](http://shop.codoh.com)

Set in Times New Roman

[www.HolocaustHandbooks.com](http://www.HolocaustHandbooks.com)

Cover Illustrations: top: Dr. Josef Mengele in Auschwitz (left); the only known portrait of Dr. Miklós Nyiszli (center); another wartime image of Dr. Josef Mengele (right); bottom: cover arts of various editions of Nyiszli's best-selling book.

# Table of Contents

	Page
<b>Introduction.....</b>	<b>9</b>
<b>Part 1: Miklós Nyiszli's Book.....</b>	<b>17</b>
I Was Dr. Mengele's Forensic Pathologist in the Auschwitz	
Crematorium .....	19
Declaration.....	19
Chapter I .....	19
Chapter II .....	23
Chapter III.....	24
Chapter IV .....	28
Chapter V .....	30
Chapter VI .....	32
Chapter VII .....	38
Chapter VIII.....	43
Chapter IX .....	49
Chapter X.....	50
Chapter XI .....	52
Chapter XII .....	55
Chapter XIII.....	57
Chapter XIV .....	60
Chapter XV .....	62
Chapter XVI.....	64
Chapter XVII .....	67
Chapter XVIII.....	68
Chapter XIX.....	69
Chapter XX.....	72
Chapter XXI.....	76
Chapter XXII .....	78
Chapter XXIII.....	79
Chapter XXIV .....	80
Chapter XXV .....	82
Chapter XXVI.....	83
Chapter XXVII .....	85
Chapter XXVIII.....	91
Chapter XXIX.....	94
Chapter XXX.....	102
Chapter XXXI.....	105
Chapter XXXII .....	110
Chapter XXXIII.....	112
Chapter XXXIV.....	113

Chapter XXXV .....	115
Chapter XXXVI.....	118
Chapter XXXVII.....	120
Chapter XXXVIII .....	121
Chapter XXXIX .....	124
Chapter XL .....	128
Epilogue .....	130
<b>Part 2: Other Documents by and about Miklós Nyiszli .....</b>	<b>133</b>
2.1. Miklós Nyiszli's Declaration of July 28, 1945 .....	135
2.2. Miklós Nyiszli's "Testimony" at the I.G. Farben Trial .....	139
2.2.1. The "Testimony" .....	139
2.2.2. " <i>Tanú voltam Nürnbergben</i> " – "I Was a Witness at Nuremberg" .....	140
2.2.3. Nyiszli at Nuremberg: The Affidavit of October 8, 1947 .....	160
2.2.4. Nyiszli's "Testimony" at the I.G. Farben Trial: an Unheard Imposture .....	165
2.3. The Correspondence between Paul Rassinier and Miklós Nyiszli.....	170
2.3.1. The Correspondence between Paul Rassinier and Albert Paraz ...	170
2.3.2. The Correspondence among Paul Rassinier, <i>Les Temps Modernes</i> and Miklós Nyiszli.....	173
<b>Part 3: Critical Analysis of Miklós Nyiszli's Statements .....</b>	<b>179</b>
3.1. From Hungary to Camp BIIf at Birkenau .....	181
3.1.1. The Journey.....	181
3.1.2. Nyiszli's Arrival at Birkenau .....	182
3.1.3. The Monowitz Camp (Buna) .....	182
3.1.4. The Hospital Camp BIIf at Birkenau .....	189
3.2. The Birkenau Crematoria.....	192
3.2.1 Terminology.....	192
3.2.2. The History of the Birkenau Crematoria.....	195
3.2.3. Furnaces and Cremation Capacity .....	197
3.2.4. Flaming Chimneys .....	202
3.2.5. Access to the Crematoria and Repairs .....	203
3.2.6. Demolition of the Crematoria .....	205
3.3. Extermination Technology: the "Gas Chambers" .....	207
3.3.1. Zyklon B .....	207
3.3.2. The "Gas Chambers" .....	213
3.3.3. The Girl Who Survived the "Gassing" .....	225
3.3.4. Dental Gold.....	228
3.4. The "Gassings" .....	230
3.4.1. The Czech Camp.....	230
3.4.2. The Jews from Corfu .....	231
3.4.3. The Gypsy Camp ( <i>Zigeuner-Familienlager</i> ) .....	233

3.4.4. Camp C (BIIC) .....	233
3.4.5. The Riga Ghetto .....	236
3.4.6. The Litzmannstadt (Lodz) Ghetto .....	236
3.4.7. The Theresienstadt Ghetto .....	238
3.4.8. The Milo Ghetto .....	243
3.4.9. The End of the "Gassings" .....	243
3.4.10. Transports and Deportees .....	244
3.4.11. Balance Sheet of the Extermination .....	246
3.5. Extermination Technology: The Pyres .....	248
3.5.1. Location .....	248
3.5.2. Pyres and Aerial Photographs .....	250
3.5.3. The "Farmhouse" (Presumed "Bunker 2") .....	250
3.5.4. Killing Technique and Number of Victims .....	252
3.6. The <i>Sonderkommando</i> .....	256
3.6.1. The Succession of <i>Sonderkommandos</i> .....	256
3.6.2. The <i>Sonderkommando</i> Revolt .....	259
3.6.3. The Extermination of the Ninth <i>Sonderkommando</i> .....	265
3.6.4. The Crematoria Personnel .....	266
3.7. Topography and Layout .....	269
3.7.1. The Topography of Birkenau .....	269
3.7.2. Layout of the Crematoria .....	270
3.8. Chronology .....	277
3.9. The Auschwitz-Birkenau Camp .....	280
3.10. Evacuation to Mauthausen .....	284

## **PART 4: Nyiszli's Testimony in the Context of Trials and Other**

<b>Testimonies .....</b>	<b>287</b>
4.1. Detainees and SS Men Mentioned by Nyiszli .....	289
4.1.1. Sentkeller .....	289
4.1.2. Lewy and Grósz .....	289
4.1.3. Epstein .....	294
4.1.4. Heller .....	299
4.1.5. Nyiszli's Three Assistants .....	299
4.1.6. Dina .....	300
4.1.7. Michel, Pipel and Dajen .....	301
4.1.8. Bennamia [ <i>Bennahmias</i> ] and Olleé [ <i>Olère</i> ] .....	301
4.1.9. <i>Rottenführer</i> Holländer, Eindenmüller, Dr. Klein .....	304
4.1.10. Mengele .....	304
4.1.11. Was Nyiszli Jewish at all? .....	307
4.2. Dr. Charles Sigismund Bendel, <i>Sonderkommando</i> .....	309
4.2.1. A Professional Witness .....	309
4.2.2. Nyiszli and Mengele .....	309
4.2.3. The Crematoria .....	312

4.2.4. The “Gas Chambers” .....	314
4.2.5. The Number of Victims .....	320
4.2.6. Dental Gold .....	323
4.2.7. Disinfestations with Zyklon B .....	323
4.2.8. Nyiszli versus Bendel .....	326
4.3. Gassings and Cremations at the Auschwitz Camp .....	338
4.3.1. The Defendants’ Knowledge during the I.G. Farben Trial .....	338
4.3.2. The Stories of Hungarian Jews Deported to Auschwitz .....	347
<b>Part 5: Nyiszli’s Statements in the Orthodox Holocaust Narrative.....</b>	<b>351</b>
5.1. The Quotation Cherry Pickers .....	353
5.2. The Critics.....	368
5.2.1 The Critique of Jean-Claude Pressac .....	368
5.2.2 The Critique of Charles D. Provan .....	371
<b>Appendix .....</b>	<b>385</b>
Dr. Mengele’s “Medical Experiments” on Twins in the Birkenau Gypsy Camp .....	387
Bibliography.....	413
1. Sources Used for this Study .....	413
2. General Bibliography .....	413
3. Principal Editions and Translations of Miklós Nyiszli’s Book.....	421
Archive Abbreviations .....	424
Documents .....	425
Index of Names .....	471

## Introduction

In spring of 1946, the Jewish Hungarian physician Miklós Nyiszli privately published a book of memoirs entitled *Dr. Mengele boncolóorvosa voltam az auschwitz-i krematóriumban* (I Was Dr. Mengele's Forensic Pathologist in the Auschwitz Crematorium).<sup>1</sup> The next year this text was republished by the Budapest daily *Világ* (World) in forty-one installments between February 16 and April 6,<sup>2</sup> before being published in book form under the paper's imprint later that year.

At the beginning of 1951, extracts from this book, translated into French by Tibère Kremer, appeared in a two-part article in the French review *Les Temps Modernes* under the title “S.S. Obersturmführer docteur Mengele: Journal d'un médecin déporté au crématorium d'Auschwitz.”<sup>3</sup> The complete<sup>4</sup> text in French translation appeared in book form ten years later in 1961 with the title *Médecin à Auschwitz: Souvenirs d'un médecin déporté*. That same year, Nyiszli's memoir also saw the light in German translation, serialized in numbers 3-11 of the Munich magazine *Quick* under the title “Auschwitz: Tagebuch eines Lagerarztes.”

These publications attracted the attention of Paul Rassinier, founder of Holocaust revisionism, as well as that of his friend Albert Paraz, who alerted him to the first remarks in the French press regarding the articles in *Les Temps Modernes*. Rassinier contacted Nyiszli (see Chapter 2.3.), and he later devoted a few pages to the doctor's memoir, particularly in his books *Ulysse trahi par les siens* and *Le Drame des juifs européens*. Rassinier's criticisms, at least in part, were well founded and pertinent; they concentrated on obviously false or

<sup>1</sup> The various texts authored by Nyiszli are listed with all pertinent bibliographic information in the first part of the Bibliography in the Appendix.

<sup>2</sup> For details of serial publication, see György 1987, p. 294.

<sup>3</sup> In the title of the French text “*Obersturmführer*” is spelled incorrectly, without an umlaut.

<sup>4</sup> Or rather, substantially complete. The Julliard edition omits Chapter 24 of the original text.

absurd declarations by Nyiszli, but also highlighted various contradictions between the translations then available.

In the 1980s, in turn, the theme aroused my interest, and I decided to write a critical study on Nyiszli's testimony. Thus was born my book *'Medico ad Auschwitz': Anatomia di un falso*, based on the Italian translation of the 1961 French edition,<sup>5</sup> but with an attentive eye on the latter as well.

The work, characterized by the late Charles D. Provan in 2001 as "a wonderful treatment, exhaustive and extremely thorough" (Provan 2001) was subdivided into two parts. The first contained the historical-critical analysis proper, broken down in the following chapters:

- I – Arrival of Nyiszli at Birkenau
- II – Geographical errors
- III – Topographical errors (Birkenau camp)
- IV – History of the Birkenau crematoria
- V – The Birkenau crematoria: furnaces and cremation capacity
- VI – Technique of the "extermination": the "gas chambers"
- VII – The "gassings"
- VIII – The end of the "gassings"
- IX – Technique of the "extermination": the pyres
- X – Balance sheet of the "extermination"
- XI – The *Sonderkommando*
- XII – Internal contradictions
- XIII – Chronological contradictions
- XIV – Chronological errors
- XV – More falsifications, errors and incongruities

The second part was a text-critical comparison of the principal translations then available, that is, the French and German versions mentioned above plus the English translation titled *Auschwitz: A Doctor's Eyewitness Account*.<sup>6</sup>

In the course of that comparison I uncovered more than 70 divergences and omissions of various kinds among these translations, so I concluded at last that, in order to know what Nyiszli really wrote, the only solution was to have recourse to the original text itself.

I thus dedicated myself to the study of Hungarian, procured a copy of the first edition of Nyiszli's book and translated it into Italian. During that period, I also examined other important texts, like the appendix to the 1964 Hungarian re-edition of Nyiszli's book – *Orvos voltam Auschwitzban* – and the series of articles by Nyiszli titled "*Tanú voltam Nürnbergben*" (I was a witness at Nu-

<sup>5</sup> For bibliographic details on the principal editions and translations of Miklós Nyiszli's book see the third part of the Bibliography in the Appendix.

<sup>6</sup> Translated by Tibère Kremer and Richard Seaver. Although it preceded the "complete" 1961 French edition published by Julliard in order of publication, this English edition is in fact a re-translation of Kremer's French version, adapted (rather freely in places) by Seaver.



remberg) which saw the light of day in the Budapest daily *Világ* (World) in 1948 and upon which I will elaborate in Chapter 2.2. of the current study.

Nyiszli's "testimony" was quickly taken up by the nascent historiography of the Holocaust as a decisive testimonial proof of the Auschwitz "gas chambers," starting with Gerald Reitlinger's 1953 *The Final Solution* (p. 151), and then appearing in other books such as Adler/Langbein/Lingens-Reiner's *Auschwitz: Zeugnisse und Berichte* (pp. 64-73), Poliakov's *Auschwitz* (pp. 46-48, 62-65), the first French edition of *The Auschwitz Album* (Freyer *et al.* 1983, p. 94), the collective Polish work *Auschwitz: Nazi Extermination Camp* (Rada... 1978, p. 124) and Heiner Lichtenstein's *Warum Auschwitz nicht bombardiert wurde* (pp. 78-81), to name a few.

This success was all the more strange given that Nyiszli appeared as a witness at neither the Belsen Trial (September-November 1945), nor the Tesch Trial (March 1946), nor the International Military Tribunal in Nuremberg (November 1945-October 1946), nor the trial of Rudolf Höss in Warsaw (March 1947), nor the so-called Auschwitz Garrison Trial in Krakow (November-December 1947). Moreover, at those trials held after his death in 1956 – notably, the Eichmann Trial in Jerusalem (April 1961-May 1962) and the Frankfurt Auschwitz Trial (December 1963-August 1965) – Nyiszli's testimony was not accepted into evidence. On the matter of his supposed "testimony" at the I.G. Farben Trial (August 1947-July 1948) I will have more to say below (see Chapter 2.2.).

The remarkable documentation on Auschwitz published by Jean-Claude Pressac in 1989 signaled the end, in principle if not in practice, of Nyiszli as an eyewitness to the gas chambers of this camp, because despite assurances to the contrary by the French researcher (as we shall see, he held Nyiszli to be "an authentic witness"), the documents themselves resoundingly refute Nyiszli's claims. In fact, in the single chapter from Nyiszli's text which Pressac subjected to critical examination (Chapter VII), he counted at least 25 "errors" and one "multiplier" – which even he finds incomprehensible – by which Nyiszli routinely inflates numbers by a factor of four (Pressac 1989, pp. 474-475). I will return to Pressac's rather too casual commentary in Chapter 5.2.

As a matter of firmly established practice, the Auschwitz Museum authorities avoid critical analysis of any witness testimony, and Nyiszli's is no exception: they still consider it fundamental despite the grave contradictions it presents with respect to the documentation in their own possession. Indeed, at times they cover up such contradictions with an all-too-evident complicity (see Chapter 5.1.).

Other researchers, such as Raul Hilberg, do without Nyiszli's testimony almost completely; Robert Jan van Pelt limits himself to a brief reference void of significance (van Pelt 2002, p. 445).

Worthy of particular mention here is Charles D. Provan, “a revisionist who believes in the gas chambers,” as Ernst Zündel once described him, who passed away at a young age in 2007. Provan was one of the rare few who were researching Nyiszli in those days, and he made his results public in an article titled “New Light on Dr. Miklos Nyiszli and His Auschwitz Book.”<sup>7</sup> I will consider him as well in Part 5 of this study.

But if, since the publication of Pressac's work, Nyiszli's fortunes have inevitably been in decline in relation to the gas chambers, they have risen in the eyes of other Holocaust historians, who trot him out as witness *par excellence* to the presumed nefarious crimes of Dr. Josef Mengele. The cue for this development was furnished in 1986 by Gerald L. Posner and John Ware, authors of the book *Mengele: The Complete Story*. In the second chapter of their book, “Auschwitz: May 1943-January 1945” (*ibid.*, pp. 19-58), they essentially rely on Nyiszli, citing him at least fourteen times, despite having various documents such as Dr. Mengele's diary, autobiography and letters at their disposal (*ibid.*, p. 354).

Franciszek Piper, in a paper entitled “Gas Chambers and Crematoria” which appeared in 1994 in the anthology *Anatomy of the Auschwitz Death Camp* (Gutman/Berenbaum 1994, pp. 157-182), mentions Nyiszli solely as a physician who performed dissections of twins at the orders of Dr. Mengele and as a witness to the presence of a gold smeltery in Crematorium II (*ibid.*, p. 168). A year later, in the third volume (“Extermination”) of the anthology *Auschwitz, 1940-1945: Central Issues in the History of the Camp* (Długoborski/Piper 1995/1999/2000), Piper cited Nyiszli's memoir a number of times, but without ever revealing the profound contradictions that exist between his claims and those of the other witnesses who remained in Auschwitz until the arrival of the Soviets (see Chapter 5.1.).

Helena Kubica, a researcher at the Auschwitz State Museum, subsequently confirmed Nyiszli's new function as “eyewitness” to Mengele, making him a central figure of her 1997 article “*Dr. Mengele und seine Verbrechen im Konzentrationslager Auschwitz-Birkenau*” (“Dr. Mengele and his crimes in Auschwitz-Birkenau concentration camp”).

This aspect of Nyiszli's memoir, though it has become predominant over the years, interests us here only marginally, particularly because I have demonstrated elsewhere the complete documentary vacuity of the accusations laid against Dr. Mengele, promoted to the rank of “Angel of Death” for the occasion (Mattogno 2008; see the updated translation in the Appendix).

In this context, no mainstream historian has taken into consideration the following fact which, from the perspective of orthodox holocaust historiography, should appear rather extraordinary. In the “Declaration” with which he begins his book, Nyiszli writes:

---

<sup>7</sup> The anecdote about Zündel is related by Provan himself on p. 20 of his 2001 article.

*"As chief physician of the crematoria of Auschwitz, I drew up innumerable autopsy and forensic medical reports and signed them with my tattoo number. These documents were countersigned by my superior, Dr. Mengele, and then shipped by me to the address of the Institut für rassenbiologische und anthropologische Forschungen in Berlin-Dahlem, one of the world's most illustrious medical centers. They should still be discoverable to this day in the archives of that great research institute"*

Returning to the subject in Chapter VIII, he adds:

*"I sent countless such packages [i.e., of autopsy specimens] to Berlin-Dahlem during the course of my activity in the crematorium, and I received replies about them with exhaustive scientific commentary or instructions. I set up a separate dossier to keep the correspondence. In their letters to Dr. Mengele they always expressed their grateful appreciation for the rare material sent to them."*

On the basis of the descriptions in the book, it appears that Nyiszli would have performed at least 170 autopsies while at Auschwitz. The extraordinary fact, then, is simply that despite the "countless" autopsy reports written and signed by Nyiszli and the "countless" packages of biological material sent by him to the "*Institut für rassenbiologische und anthropologische Forschungen* in Berlin-Dahlem" (as he calls it in his "Declaration"),<sup>8</sup> there does not exist a single piece of paper in the documentary record bearing Nyiszli's signature!

But there is another fact, no less extraordinary, which also is continually passed over in silence by orthodox Holocaust historians. At the Belsen trial in late 1945, the Romanian Jewish physician Charles Sigismund Bendel claimed, just as Nyiszli would claim a few months later with the first publication of his book, to have been *the* doctor of the *Sonderkommando* for the Birkenau crematoria, starting, in his case, in August 1944.<sup>9</sup> Since Nyiszli, according to the account in his book as we shall see, was himself at the crematoria from May 1944 to January 1945, this means that the two doctors spent at least four months together in the same place, where they presumably saw the same things and lived through the same events, yet not only are they ignorant of one another, but they produced completely contradictory testimony with regard to these matters. I will address this question in detail in Chapter 4.2.

<sup>8</sup> Later on, in Chapter VIII, Nyiszli speaks of "the Institute for Racial and Developmental Biology in Berlin-Dahlem," with "developmental" (*fejlődéstani*) replacing "anthropological" (*anthropologische*) in his translation of the German name as presented in the "Declaration." Both names, however, are wrong: the institute in question in fact was called the *Kaiser-Wilhelm-Institut für Anthropologie, menschliche Erblehre und Eugenik* (The Kaiser Wilhelm Institute for Anthropology, Human Heredity, and Eugenics). Curiously, given his implied complicity in Mengele's alleged crimes, Otmar Freiherr von Verschuer, director the institute from 1942 onward, was not the subject of any judicial action, Allied or German, in the postwar period.

<sup>9</sup> Phillips 1949, pp. 130ff. It is not clear from Bendel's Belsen testimony when he left the crematoria, but later statements indicate that he remained there until the evacuation of the camp on January 17, 1945. See Section 4.2.2.

A brief explanation may be in order here. After the arrival of the Soviets at Auschwitz, the prisoners remaining at the camp lived indiscriminately for more than three months beneath a propaganda bombardment from two official “investigations” – one Soviet, the other Polish – into the presumed extermination in the “gas chambers.”<sup>10</sup> In particular, the “eyewitnesses” remaining at the camp were able not only to consult with each other, but to examine locations, ruins and even building plans and other German documents, thus absorbing the official version of events which was then developing.

On the other hand, those prisoners evacuated from the camp ahead of time took with them the propaganda stories invented by the various resistance movements of the camp, without being able to benefit from these final “updates.” This helps to explain the substantial differences which exist between the statements of the first category of prisoners – those, to be clear, who were subjected to interrogation first by the Soviets and then by Judge Jan Sehn – and the statements of the second category, in which Nyiszli and Bendel found themselves. Because the propaganda stories which circulated at Auschwitz were numerous and multifarious, and because none of them was able to impose itself as official “truth,”<sup>11</sup> each witness drew literary elements from the various strands available – a circumstance which in turn helps explain the fact that the testimonies of Nyiszli and Bendel are in complete mutual contradiction.

Very few books have struck the collective Holocaust imagination quite like Nyiszli's, as is attested to by its considerable publishing success: translations and reprints have followed one another, and continue to follow one another at an ever-increasing pace. In the Bibliography to this study, I present an overview of this publishing history, without any pretense of completeness, merely to demonstrate the amplitude of this remarkable phenomenon: apart from various re-editions of the Hungarian text, there abound translations into Italian, French, English, Dutch, Czech, Polish, Croatian, Spanish, Portuguese, Hebrew, Arabic, Sinhalese and Romanian.

Nyiszli's book has also inspired two films, Tim Blake Nelson's *The Grey Zone* (2001) and László Nemes's *Saul fia* (Son of Saul, 2015).

With regard to translations made directly from the Hungarian original, one of the best undoubtedly is the 1992 German translation *Im Jenseits der Menschlichkeit: Ein Gerichtsmediziner in Auschwitz* (Beyond humanity: a forensic doctor in Auschwitz), which is supplemented by explanatory notes and an interesting appendix. Also worth mentioning is the 1996 Polish translation

<sup>10</sup> The two investigations resulted, respectively, in the so-called Extraordinary State Commission report on Auschwitz, entered into evidence as Document 008-USSR (often cited as USSR-8) at the International Military Tribunal in Nuremberg (*IMT*, Vol. XXXIX, pp. 241-262; in German) and Polish investigating judge Jan Sehn's report (Sehn 1946). The former is available in English translation in: Soviet... 1946, pp. 283-300.

<sup>11</sup> I have presented an overview of these various literary strands in Mattoigno 2018.

*Bylem asystentem doktora Mengele: Wspomnienia lekarza z Oświęcimia* (I was Dr. Mengele's assistant: memories of a doctor at Auschwitz), though more for the annotations by Franciszek Piper than for any fidelity to the Hungarian text.

Practically all of the more important translations of Nyiszli's book made directly from the original text contain omissions and manipulations here and there. It is not the purpose of this study to make a systematic comparison, but in the translation of the book which follows I underline certain passages omitted from the "classic" translation of Tibère Kremer.<sup>12</sup> Here it will suffice perhaps to mention, by way of example, a passage invariably omitted in all the translations that I've examined:<sup>13</sup>

*"Three great men form and shape the character of the peoples of the world and ensure their future: Stalin! the genius leader of the Russian people, Roosevelt Franklin Delano, wise president of the United States, and Churchill, the British lion."*

I will provide further details on this theme in Chapter 5.1.

The translations in question also allow themselves all too ample liberties in correcting, to a certain extent, Nyiszli's peculiar technical terminology, especially regarding the Birkenau crematoria. This question will be analyzed further in Section 3.2.1.

The documentation on Auschwitz has grown enormously since I published my original study of Nyiszli's book in 1988, and now allows his testimony to be evaluated in a more thorough manner.

That said, his invented "testimony" at the I.G. Farben Trial, as I shall demonstrate in Chapter 2.2., is already more than sufficient to get a quite clear and precise idea of the seriousness and reliability of this "eyewitness."

\* \* \*

In the translation of *Dr. Mengele boncolóorvosa voltam az auschwitz-i krematóriumban* which follows, I have indicated in square brackets the original Hungarian text in various places where Nyiszli's choice of words is particularly significant, and I have also let stand the innumerable question marks and exclamation marks with which the book is littered. Nyiszli's prose abounds in elliptical expressions, which I have supplemented above all in those cases where the sense would otherwise be unclear, as well as in indeterminate subjects and sudden switches between tenses and singular and plural forms. To the extent that they do not impair comprehensibility, however, such

<sup>12</sup> In their French and English translations, respectively, Kremer and Seaver suppressed Nyiszli's Chapter 24 altogether; Seaver moreover merged Chapter 16 with 17 (making for 39 and 38 chapters respectively, instead of Nyiszli's 40).

<sup>13</sup> Nyiszli 1946, p. 166. The various versions examined handle the passage as follows: *Médecin à Auschwitz* (1961a), p. 242, omission not indicated; *Im Jenseits der Menschlichkeit* (1992), p. 151, omission indicated with ellipsis; *Bylem asysyentem doktora Mengele* (1996), p. 168, omission not indicated.

apparent “blemishes” have been faithfully reproduced in the translation below. No attempt has been made to polish Nyiszli’s text; rather the goal at all times has been to reflect its true character, both in style and content, as accurately as possible, without omission or alteration.<sup>14</sup>

Wherever linguistic explanation is required for German terminology used by Nyiszli, I refer the reader to an apposite footnote. Terms and expressions in German and Latin are reproduced in the form, sometimes erroneous, in which they appear in the original text. As an aid to recognition, however, such foreign terms are printed in italics in the translation, a practice which Nyiszli does *not* follow in his book.

The translation is provided with essential explanatory notes only; all necessary additional analysis will be presented in the later parts of this study, Part Three in particular. It will at all events be helpful for the reader to keep in mind that Nyiszli’s numbering of the Birkenau crematoria from I to IV, while not an error as such,<sup>15</sup> differs from the more familiar practice of numbering them from II to V (reserving I as the designation for the crematorium at the Auschwitz Main Camp).

---

<sup>14</sup> Translator’s remark: In preparing the English version of Nyiszli’s book below, the translator has consulted the original Hungarian text throughout to ensure that no inaccuracies creep into the translation as a result of working at a linguistic second remove. While following Mattogno’s Italian version in its strict concern for accuracy, the English version thus is not a mere retranslation, but is in effect a first-order translation in its own right, rigorously checked against the source material. The object, at all times, has been to reflect the content and character of Nyiszli’s writing as closely as possible. The same principle of consulting original texts is followed, wherever feasible, in the translation of other quoted material in later parts of the study as well.

<sup>15</sup> After the decommissioning of the original crematorium (I) in the Auschwitz Main Camp in July 1943, the newly built Birkenau crematoria (II-V) were in practice renamed with numbers I through IV, a fact reflected in various testimonies of the immediate postwar period. Modern scholarly practice, on the other hand, generally restores the original numbering. See Nyiszli 1992, p. 164, Note 28.

## Part 1:

### Miklós Nyiszli's Book





## I Was Dr. Mengele's Forensic Pathologist in the Auschwitz Crematorium

By Dr. Miklós Nyiszli

### Declaration

I, the undersigned Nyiszli Miklós,<sup>16</sup> M.D., ex-prisoner of the K.Z., bearer of tattoo number A-8450, hereby declare that in the work now published, the creation of my own hand, a work which contains within it the darkest pages in the history of humanity, free from all emotion and in strict conformity with the truth, and without the slightest exaggeration or embellishment, I write as the direct spectator of, and participant in, the activity of the crematoria and cremation pyres of Auschwitz, into whose flames vanished millions of fathers, mothers and children.

As chief physician of the crematoria of Auschwitz, I drew up innumerable autopsy and forensic medical reports and signed them with my tattoo number. These documents were countersigned by my superior, Dr. Mengele, and then shipped by me to the address of the *Institut für rassenbiologische und anthropologische Forschungen*<sup>17</sup> in Berlin-Dahlem, one of the world's most illustrious medical centers. They should still be discoverable to this day in the archives of that great research institute.

In writing this work I do not aim at literary success. I was a doctor, not a writer, when I experienced these horrors exceeding all imagination, and as I undertake now to describe them, I write with the pen of a doctor, not a reporter.<sup>18</sup>

At Oradea-Nagyvárad, in the month of March, 1946

Dr. Nyiszli Miklós

### Chapter I

In a late afternoon in May, in a closed freight car with windows covered with barbed wire, the smell of ninety dirty people crammed together is unbearable

---

The original Hungarian title is: *Dr. Mengele boncolóorvosa voltam az Auschwitz-i krematóriumban*

<sup>16</sup> In Hungarian the family name precedes the given name.

<sup>17</sup> "Institute for Racial-Biological and Anthropological Studies." In German in the original. The institute's correct full name was *Kaiser-Wilhelm-Institut für Anthropologie, menschliche Erblehre und Eugenik*, or The Kaiser Wilhelm Institute for Anthropology, Human Heredity, and Eugenics.

<sup>18</sup> In English in the original [reporter].

enough already, let alone the stench of the buckets of excrement filled to the brim.

It is a train for deportees, a train made up of forty wagons like this one; already it is the fourth day it has been traveling, kilometer after kilometer, first through Slovak territory, then through the *Generalgouvernement*,<sup>19</sup> bearing us within it toward a still-unknown destination. In the convoy is the first group of the million [*egymillió*] Hungarian Jews condemned to extermination. The Tatra Mountains are behind us. We race at full speed toward Lublin, then comes Krakau.<sup>20</sup> During the war, both cities became centers of concentration, that is, centers of extermination [*megsemmisítőhelye*] for the anti-Nazi citizens of Europe, whom the representatives of the new European order dragged here from the territories they occupied.

Leaving Krakau, our train runs along for give or take an hour before coming to a stop at an imposing station. A sign in gothic lettering declares the name of the station: Auschwitz. To us it is merely a name. We have never heard of it, whether in connection with the railways, or in any other regard.

Around our train, as I watch through the cracks, there is a great coming and going. Our previous SS guards get off. A new group takes their post. In the same way, the railway personnel for the trip depart as well. As I gather from snatches of conversation, we are almost at the final destination of our voyage.

The train sets off again, and after a run of some twenty minutes it once more comes to a stop with a long blast of its whistle.

I find a crack from which I can look outside again. All around is a plain of yellow clay, an arid terrain, as the land of eastern Silesia generally is. Only an occasional leafy thicket and the twisting course of the Vistula River break the monotony here and there. The area that opens out before me is enclosed in pillars of reinforced concrete placed in regular files, along which are strung numerous lines of barbed wire. Porcelain insulators and signs placed at frequent intervals reveal that the wires are carrying a high-voltage current. The concrete pillars form a quadrangle within which there are hundreds of barracks with tarpaper roofs, painted green, which form long straight streets.

Inside the fences I see figures in the striped uniforms of prisoners. They are carrying rough-sawn planks. Another group of men marches in regular files with shovels on their shoulders. Further in the distance, large bales are being loaded onto trucks. Along the fences, at a distance of 30-40 meters from each other, elevated towers reveal the character of the place. Guard towers! On each of them, a soldier in a green uniform rests his elbows on a machine gun mounted on a tripod. This is the Concentration Camp Auschwitz, or as the

---

<sup>19</sup> In German in the original.

<sup>20</sup> In German spelling in the original.

Germans say – they love to abbreviate everything – K.Z., pronounced “Kacett”!<sup>21</sup>

The knowledge is not reassuring, but the for the moment nervous curiosity overwhelms the sense of fear.

I look around me at my companions in the wagon. Our group is made up of 26 doctors, 8 pharmacists, our wives, our children, a few older people, men and women, parents of our colleagues. Seated on baggage or on the floor, they stare into empty space with weary, anxious faces. Perhaps they are gripped by a terrible presentiment, but in the bustle of arrival even this does not cause them to stir. Some of the children are sleeping, others are eating scraps of left-over food, for the most part bread. Those who lack even this comfort pass dry tongues helplessly over lips chapped with hunger and thirst.

The sand outside squeaks beneath heavy footsteps. Loud orders break the monotony of waiting. The padlocks on the wagons are opened. The door slides open on one side and immediately the order sounds out: *Leave the large baggage inside, everyone down off the train with their own hand luggage!* We reach our children and our wives down in our arms from the meter-and-a-half-high wagon. Soon we are lined up before the train.

Before us stands a young SS officer with glossy black boots and a gold rosette. Clearly he is in charge, the soldiers waiting on his commands. I don't know SS ranks, but from the caduceus badge on his arm, I presume that he is a doctor.

Later I learn that he is an SS *Hauptsturmführer*.<sup>22</sup> His name is Doctor Mengele, and he is the chief physician of Concentration Camp Auschwitz [*az auschwitzi koncentrációs tábor első orvosa*]. He is present on the ramp at the arrival of every train. He is the doctor who makes the selections. In a few short minutes we will discover what a selection is at Auschwitz. The other phases of the process we only get to know later, each according to his fate.

And now it begins! Hurriedly the SS guards separate the men from the women, and the children under 14. The latter remain with their mothers.

In this manner the long formation in front of the wagons divides into two parts. We are suddenly separated from our families. The guards respond to our anxious questions in a reassuring tone. “It's nothing,” they say. “We're taking you to have a shower at the disinfection area, that's the rule here, and then everyone will see their family again.”

Until the selection of the group, four thousand people strong, is completed, I have time to look around myself. In the light of the fading day, the landscape I saw from inside the wagon now leaps to life. Here there is much more to see.

<sup>21</sup> Phonetic Hungarian transcription of the German *Kazett* which in turn is the German pronunciation for the letter names K and Z. “K.Z.” itself is an abbreviation for *Konzentrationslager* (concentration camp).

<sup>22</sup> Nyiszli here uses *főrohamvezető*, the literal Hungarian equivalent of the German *Hauptsturmführer* (“head storm leader”). The rank is equivalent to that of captain in traditional armies.

The first thing that draws my attention – rivets it, so to speak – is a gigantic square chimney, tapering toward the top and built of red bricks, which emerges from the top of a factory-like, two-story building, also built of red bricks.

It's a strange shape for a factory chimney, but what is really impressive is the column of fire 8-10 meters high [*a 8-10 méteres lángoszlop*] which gushes from its mouth between the lightning rods at its four corners. I try to imagine what kind of hellish kitchen it could be to need such a fire. Then it comes to me. I am in Germany, the land of crematoria, where I spent ten years as a student and doctor. I know that every last little German city has its crematorium.

So it is a crematorium! Not far from it is another, and beyond, in a grove [*egy lugasban*] which partly hides it, I spot a third similar building, all with the same fire-spewing chimneys [*ugyanolyan tűzokádó kéményekkel*].

A gentle breeze carries the smoke toward us. A nauseating stench of burning flesh and singed hair strikes my nostrils. A familiar smell! Burning human flesh emits an acrid smell just like that of church candles made of carrion tallow.

There's much to reflect on in that, but already the second phase of selection is underway. Men, women and children parade in single file before the selection committee. At a gesture of the selecting physician – I will call him now by his name, Dr. Mengele – we form ranks again, to the left or to the right. Now we find ourselves in two groups, one on the left and one on the right. In the group on the left, I notice, are mostly the old, the crippled, the sickly, and women with children under fourteen. In the group on the right, those able to work. Among them I see my wife and my fourteen-year-old daughter. We have no chance to exchange words now. We wave to one another.

Those unable to walk, the sick, the old, the mad, are loaded onto Red Cross trucks. A few of my older doctor colleagues ask to go with them as well. The trucks set off first. Then the group on the left, in lines five abreast, at a slow pace and under an escort of SS guards. In a few minutes, they disappear from our view beneath the trees of a small woodlot. The group on the right stays put. Dr. Mengele orders the doctors to form a group to one side. When this is done, he approaches the group, about fifty doctors in all, and calls on any doctors who did their studies at a German university, are thoroughly versed in pathological anatomy, and who also practice forensic medicine to step forward.

"But it would be best that you take care," he adds, "to comply with these prerequisites, because..." And then follows a menacing, meaningful gesture. I look at my colleagues to my left and right. Perhaps there are no specialists among us? Or are they frightened by the threat? No one steps forward. No matter, I have decided! I leave the line, stand before Mengele and introduce myself. He interrogates me thoroughly. He asks me where I did my university studies, where, and with what professors I studied pathological anatomy,

where I have practiced forensic medicine, how long I have worked in that field, and so on. I must have satisfied him with the precision of my answers. He orders my colleagues to return to the group on the right, and these now set off marching along the right-hand way, the way to life, toward the camp... for now I can reveal what I still did not then know. The group on the left, only minutes after its departure, had passed through the doors of one of the crematoria. And from there there was no return.

## Chapter II

As soon as I am alone, my thoughts turn to fate and to Germany, the land where I spent so many years, the best years of my youth!

Above my head the stars are already out in the sky. High above my head I see the Big Dipper, just as it is at home in Hungary. The cool air of the evening breeze might even be refreshing, if only it were not blowing toward me the acrid stench of burning corpses from the crematoria of the Third Reich.<sup>23</sup>

From the concrete pillars, hundreds of arc lamps send out a dazzling light. Beyond the chain of lights, however, it is as if the air has become condensed. It covers the camp like a heavy shroud and one can barely discern the silhouettes of the K.Z. barracks.

The ramp is now deserted, only a few inmates in prison stripes are stirring here and there, loading the baggage left in the wagons onto trucks. In the darkness, the forty empty wagons, bearers of our destiny, merge ever more into the gloom of the landscape and the objects around us.

Dr. Mengele gives some last instructions to the SS soldiers still waiting there, then gets into the driver's seat of his Opel car and motions for me to get in behind. The back seat is already occupied. Beside me sits an SS enlisted man. We set off.

Our car is tossed about on the camp's bumpy, clay roads, which are much worn by the spring rains. The brilliant arc lamps along the fences flash swiftly past us. We stop before a closed iron gate. From the guardhouse, an SS enlisted man rushes to open the way for Dr. Mengele's familiar car. We proceed for a few hundred more meters along the camp's main street between barracks lined up on either side, then come to a stop before a rather more-elegant building.

Dr. Mengele gets out of the car. I get out after him. "Camp Office" [*Táboriroda*] I hastily read on a sign posted at the entrance. We go inside. Several intelligent-looking individuals in prison clothes are sitting at desks. They all leap to their feet and stand stiffly to attention without speaking at their places.

---

<sup>23</sup> Nyiszli never uses the German expression *Drittes Reich* but rather always the Hungarian translation *III. Birodalom*.

Dr. Mengele calls over a close-shaved inmate in prison uniform of about fifty years old. I stand quietly a few meters behind them. I cannot catch what they are saying. Dr. Sentkeller – for that is his name, as I later learn – head doctor of Camp Hospital “F,” nods understanding. He calls me to him and accompanies me to the desk of another inmate worker. There, the clerk draws out some pre-printed cards. He asks me for my personal data and records them in a large volume. He passes the completed cards to an SS escort. We go outside. I bow my head before Dr. Mengele as we pass, at which Sentkeller, more ironically than angrily, barks at me not to play at social niceties here, but rather get used to the fact, and fast, that this is a concentration camp!

I proceed to the third barracks, alone with my escort. There the sign reads “Bath and Disinfection” [*fürdő és fertőtlenítő*]. My escort hands me over to his colleague there, along with my card. Two inmates in prison uniforms approach me. They take away my little doctor’s bag. They search my pockets and then ask me to undress. A barber arrives. He crops my hair close, shaves me all over and then sends me under a shower. They wash my head with a solution of calcium chloride. My eyes burn so badly that it takes several minutes before I can reopen them. In another room I receive a grey jacket and a pair of striped black trousers in place of the clothes I handed over earlier. My shoes they return to me, after having immersed them in a tub full of calcium chloride solution. I put on the clothes. They fit me well, as if they had been tailor-made for me! Who knows what companion in misfortune once wore them! An inmate rolls up the left sleeve of my jacket, reads the number found on my card, and with practiced speed lays down along my arm innumerable needle pricks with a little device filled with ink. Where the needle punctures an indistinct blue stain begins to form. The prisoner reassures me. The skin may be a little inflamed for now, but that passes in a week or so and the numbers become clearly visible. So I too am tattooed, I, Dr. Nyiszli Miklós; I cease to exist under my own name and become a mere number, A-8450, a prisoner of the K.Z.

Suddenly the memory of another formal act of inscription comes to mind. Fifteen years earlier the Dean of Medicine of the Friedrich-Wilhelms-Universität in Breslau had shaken my hand and, wishing me good luck and a prosperous future, conferred upon me my doctor’s diploma, *cum laude*.

### Chapter III

I am left in a strange state of inner turmoil, but I have never been one to give in to empty despair. No matter! I must adapt myself to whatever my situation brings. I must not despair! I must not become sentimental! I must neither see too much, nor yet be too sober! And yet I am indeed clearly sober, for I am saying such things to myself.

My situation for now is not the worst it could be! Dr. Mengele wants to give me a medical job. Probably I’ll be taking the place, at least in part, of a



German pathologist or forensic specialist from an institute in some German town who's been drafted into the army. I am also encouraged by the fact that, presumably on Dr. Mengele's orders, I have been given not a prisoner's uniform but rather an excellent civilian suit. It follows that the position reserved for me is one that requires a neat appearance. But this is just speculation. We shall see.

From the bath building, accompanied by a new escort who carries my card in his hand, I pass into the barracks which stands opposite and which bears the number 12 on its front. It's a building around 100 meters long. The interior forms a large hall. Along both sides of the hall run lines of three-tier bunks made of rough-sawn beams and planks, divided into compartments crowded with patients. I am in Camp "F," Hospital Barracks 12.

My SS escort hands my card to an inmate, a chubby-faced older man who hurriedly stands to attention to receive it. My escort departs, and we two shake hands. We introduce ourselves. He is the supervisor of Barracks 12. He makes me comfortable in a small room off the big hall and tells me the story of his life, as prisoners always do.

He is a German from the Reich<sup>24</sup> [*birodalmi*]. He is fifty years old and by profession, in civilian life, a bank robber. He explains that he always worked alone. His last job was a bank robbery in grand style. He robbed one of the main banks of Düsseldorf in broad daylight. He lived for three years on the money until he was denounced by his wife, who had separated from him. He did a ten-year sentence in the Moabit Prison.<sup>25</sup> Upon his release, the political SS were waiting for him as he came out the prison gates, and he next became a prisoner of K.Z. Auschwitz. He has been in custody here for five years now.

On the breast of his striped shirt, just above his heart, he wears a badge with a green number on a white background. A green badge in the K.Z. is the insignia for a professional criminal. He explains the other prisoner insignia to me: a red badge is for political prisoners, while brown is for Jehovah's Witnesses, Sabbatarians and Baptists. The notoriously work-averse and prostitutes are blue. A black badge is for homosexuals charged under paragraph 175. A white letter "A" embroidered on a black ribbon on the sleeve stands for *Arzt*,<sup>26</sup> or doctor, but there are few of these since only imprisoned doctors actually holding the position of doctor in the K.Z. receive them.

It is already past midnight, but curiosity keeps fatigue at bay. I listen intently to every word of the barracks supervisor. He knows the complex organization of the K.Z. He knows by name the commanding SS officers for every part of the camp. He knows the prominent prisoners<sup>27</sup> who have a position

---

<sup>24</sup> That is, a German from Germany proper, as opposed to Germans from other German-speaking countries or areas.

<sup>25</sup> A famous prison in the "Moabit" area of Berlin.

<sup>26</sup> In German in the original.

<sup>27</sup> Nyiszli uses the German term *Prominente*, rendered in Hungarian as *prominens*.

here. I discover that K.Z. Auschwitz is the largest extermination camp [*megsemmisítő tábora*] of the Third Reich and not a labor camp! He speaks of the selections,<sup>28</sup> which take place every week in the hospitals and the barracks of the camp, when they load hundreds of selected prisoners onto trucks and carry them to the crematoria situated a few hundred meters away.

From his stories I learn about life in the barracks, where 800 to 1000 people are massed together in cramped, cagelike, comfortless boxes.<sup>29</sup> The feet of one rest on the head of another, or on a neck or a chest, they lie lengthwise and crosswise and back-to-front on their miserable pallets. Deprived of any trace of humanity, they punch and kick and bite one another to secure a space of just a few centimeters [more] for their brief sleep.

Indeed, the night's sleep is finished already by three in the morning. The work-detail bosses,<sup>30</sup> cudgels in hand, drive the men from their beds. They pour outside, jostling each other at the door of the barrack, and are soon standing in lines. And now begins the most dehumanizing song and dance in the whole K.Z. repertoire: *Appel*,<sup>31</sup> or "roll call" [*sorakozó*]. The inmates stand in five rows. They begin to put themselves in order. The barracks clerk places the taller ones in the front row, the shorter ones behind. Another "prominent" arrives, the room duty leader.<sup>32</sup> Raining blows heavily down with his fists he drives the tall prisoners to the back and brings the short ones to the front again. Finally the barracks supervisor himself emerges from the barracks, well fed and well dressed. Striped uniform freshly washed and pressed, he strikes a Napoleonic pose before the formation, inspects the front line, does he not observe a fault somewhere? He most certainly does. He launches himself at some men wearing glasses in the front row, slugs them on the chin with his fists and sends them to the back. Why? No one knows! No one even thinks about it. This is the K.Z. and no one expects a rhyme or reason for anything.

And so it goes for hours. Fifteen times the roll is counted, this way then that way, forwards and backwards along the rows. If a line is not straight, the entire barrack must squat for half an hour with their arms raised. Soon everyone's legs are shaking with exhaustion. Even in summer the dawn hours at Auschwitz are cold. The light, striped material of the uniforms protects neither from the rain nor from the chill, yet roll call always begins at first light and continues until 7 a.m., when the SS enlisted man arrives.

<sup>28</sup> Nyiszli does not directly use the German term *Selektion*, but rather always the Hungarian *szelektálás*.

<sup>29</sup> Thus in the original: *bokszokban*, from *bokszok-*, plural of *boksz* ("box") and the locative case ending *-ban*. The expression as a whole presumably refers to the three-tier bunks mentioned earlier.

<sup>30</sup> Nyiszli here uses the Hungarian *felvigyázók* ("bosses" or "overseers"), presumably as a translation of the camp slang term *Kapo*, or work-team leader.

<sup>31</sup> In German in the original, correctly *Appell*.

<sup>32</sup> Nyiszli here uses a Hungarian translation [*szobaszolgáltatás*] of the German *Stubendienst* ("room duty"), the name for a prisoner in charge of ensuring that barracks are kept clean and orderly.

The barracks supervisor, loyal servant of the SS and almost always, in every barracks, a green-badged ruffian, stands to attention and reports on unit strength. The SS man too goes along the lines. He tallies up the columns and records the headcount in a notebook. If the barracks has any dead – there are 5 or 6 each day, sometimes as many as 10 – they too figure in the roll call. They must stand there at the end of the row, propped up on either side by a pair of prisoners, as long as the counting goes on, for dead or alive, the headcount must add up! It sometimes happens that the *Kommando*<sup>33</sup> tasked with corpse removal, overwhelmed with work, does not show up for two or three days with their hand-drawn cart to take away the dead. And so the latter must be present at every counting until they are finally taken away and removed from the roster.

After what I have heard, I am glad to have [had] the courage to improve my lot. By speaking up to Dr. Mengele, I have obtained just the assignment I wanted. I have obtained an assignment as doctor, and from my first day here I have managed to avoid sinking into the squalor of the crowd in the quarantine camp barracks. Thanks to my civilian clothes I have preserved my human aspect and tonight I will sleep in a properly made bed in the clean doctor's room of Hospital Barracks 12.

Wake-up call is at seven a.m. The doctors, myself among them, line up in front of the barracks along with the rest of the hospital personnel. We are counted. The entire operation lasts two, three minutes. The sick are counted in their boxlike bunks, along with those who have died during the night. The bodies of the dead still lie among the sick.

At breakfast, which we eat apart in our room, I get to know my medical colleagues. The chief physician of Hospital Barracks 12, Dr. Lewy, is professor at the University of Strasbourg; his deputy, Dr. Grósz, professor at the University of Zagreb. Both are internists. In the field of medical research, they are eminent figures on a Europe-wide scale.

Here in the K.Z., ignoring danger and fatigue, putting aside their own personal tragedies, they seek to heal and to alleviate suffering, despite lacking adequate instruments and serious drugs and despite working in the complete absence of proper sterilization and antiseptics, in an environment, K.Z. Auschwitz, where within three to four weeks even those who arrive in the best physical condition break down under the weight of hunger, squalor, corporal punishment and hard labor. (How much the worse for those who have an underlying organic illness!) These are men and doctors through and through, one hundred percent, [in a place] where it is difficult to remain a man and more difficult still to be a doctor.

---

<sup>33</sup> A German military term meaning a work detail. Nyiszli here uses the borrowed Hungarian equivalent, *kommandó*.

Subordinate to them, eagerly following their example, is the six-member medical team. They are French and Greek doctors, of more recent vintage, kind-hearted and caring. For three years now, they have eaten the bread of the K.Z., bread made with horse-chestnut flour cut with sawdust [*vadgesztenyeliszből készült, fűrészporral hintett kenyérét*]. Their mothers, their wives, their children were all liquidated, that is, cremated, within hours of arrival. Even if they wound up on the right-hand side, as fit for work, they could only have sustained the ordeal for three or four months at most before being selected and disappearing into the flames of the crematoria.

Even with the consciousness of all these horrors – accepted out of apathy or mere habituation, I do not know – even with the heavy burden of despair at their own fate, they strive with selfless dedication to help the walking dead who come into their hands. For indeed the patients in the hospital are the walking dead. You have to be very sick to be admitted to the hospital in the K.Z.

Withered to the bone, starved down to 30 kg, they are true walking skeletons, bellies fearfully bloated from hunger, mouths full of sores, implacably gripped by diarrhea, dried-up, yellow-skinned shadows of men. Their bodies are covered with disgusting, rampantly spreading phlegmons and festering abscesses. Such are the patients in the hospital of the K.Z.! It is these that we must help!

## Chapter IV

I still do not have a job to do. I look around a bit at Camp “F” in the company of a French doctor. One thing that immediately catches my interest is a shed-like structure attached to one side of Barracks 12. It is made of rough-sawn planks, and a man-length table, a chair, a wooden box with compartments containing dissecting instruments, and a zinc bucket in one corner constitute its only inner furnishings. As my colleague informs me, it is an out-of-service dissecting room, the only one in the entire camp. They used to use it long ago. Currently he does not even know of a specialist able to do autopsies in the camp. It's not out of the question, however, that my presence here might depend on some plan of Dr. Mengele's and that my arrival thus means the return to operation of the dissecting room.

That latter possibility cools my enthusiasm somewhat. I had imagined a modern dissection hall as the scene for my activities, not this shed in a concentration camp. In all my career, not even at rural exhumation sites or while doing obligatory autopsies at suicide or murder sites have I ever performed my work in such primitive circumstances with such inadequate instruments.

I have an accommodating temperament, however, and I can adapt to this situation too. After all, in the K.Z. this is a first-rate assignment! What I don't understand is just why they gave me a new set of civilian clothes only to have

me do my work in a filthy shed. I see a certain contradiction there, but I don't worry my head too much over it.

I look across the wire fence with my colleague. In the next section of the camp I see dark-faced children at play, running about naked, their voices buzzing. Women with brightly colored clothes and racially mixed features, half-naked men, old and young, who sit jumbled together on the ground, or stand in groups talking or watching the children at play. This is the famous Gypsy camp! The racial science of the Third Reich has declared Gypsies an inferior people, harmful from a race-hygienic point of view. On the basis of this classification, they have been dragged here from all the territories under the German Reich and made prisoners of the K.Z. Because they are Catholic, they enjoy the advantage of living in the family camp. Old, young, children, all mixed up together, wherever they want to be. There are around 4,500 of them. They do no work; the only service they provide is to act as barrack and camp overseers in the Jewish barracks in the adjacent section of the camp, a task they perform with a cruelty surpassing human imagination.

The Gypsy camp has a point of special interest, the experimental barracks [*kísérleti barakk*] located there. Professor Dr. Epstein, professor *publicus ordinarius* at the University of Prague and a pediatrician of world renown, is chief of the research lab. He has been a prisoner of the K.Z. for four years already. His assistant is Dr. Bendel, lecturer in the faculty of medicine at Paris.

The experiments underway there are divided into three groups. The first is twin studies, which have recently become fashionable around the world due to the birth of the Canadian quintuplets.<sup>34</sup> The second is an inquiry into the physiological and pathological causes of dwarfism. The third is a study of *noma faciei*, or so called water cancer<sup>35</sup>, a gangrenous disease of the face, seeking to identify its cause and to develop related medical treatments.

In normal practice one sees this terrible disease only very rarely. All the more reason to study it here, then, since it occurs *en masse* among the children of the Gypsy camp. Indeed this fact provided the initial impetus for the research, the concrete results of which will be groundbreaking findings for medical science.

Hereditary syphilis [*syphilis*] is detected in the majority of the Gypsy children. Typhus [*typhus*], diphtheria [*diphtheria*], scarlet fever [*sarlach*], measles [*kanyaró*] and even malnutrition are merely cofactors which prepare a fertile ground for the development of *noma*, but only among the children of the Gypsy camp, for these same ground-preparing factors are the order of the day among the children in the Czech, Polish and Jewish sectors of the camp as

<sup>34</sup> Nyiszli here refers to the birth of the Dionne quintuplets in Canada in 1934; their survival was a medical first and created an international sensation.

<sup>35</sup> Nyiszli here uses the word *vízirák*, a direct translation of *Wasserkrebs* ("water cancer"), a German lay term for *noma faciei*. In English the disease is also referred to by the names *cancrum oris* and *gangrenous stomatitis*.

well. *Noma* has not, however, been demonstrated in the absence of hereditary syphilis during the course of the research. It thus appears indisputable that *noma* is related in some way to hereditary syphilis. This finding is with contrast to the prevailing medical view according to which *noma* appears above all in connection with measles, scarlet fever and typhus.

On the basis of this general conclusion a treatment method has been developed which promises a certain cure; it consists of a combination of neosalvarsan and inoculation with malaria.

Dr. Mengele visits the experimental barracks every day. He takes part in the research with keen interest, working together with two prominent doctors and a painter named Dina<sup>36</sup> who prepares, with great skill, the drawings needed for the work. She is from Prague, and she has been in the Czech camp for three years. As Dr. Mengele's associate, she enjoys certain advantages. She is counted among the "prominent"!

## Chapter V

Dr. Mengele, chief physician of K.Z. Auschwitz [*az auschwitzi K.Z. első orvosa*], is indefatigable in the exercise of his duties. He spends long hours at the experimental barracks in the Gypsy camp immersed in his work. He stands half the day on the *Judenrampe*<sup>37</sup>, where already four to five trainloads of deported Hungarians are arriving per day.

The transports march past, one after the other, in long lines five abreast, under SS escort. They are marching far from where I stand, but even through three or four layers of barbed-wire fencing I can see by their elegant attire, by their long coats and smart-looking hand luggage, that they have been hauled out of some large city where they had created a life of culture and prosperity for all. That was their crime!

Still, Dr. Mengele has time to find work for me as well. A long hand-drawn cart pulls up before the dissection shed. The corpse-transport team unloads two bodies from the cart. Written on their chests, in blue-colored chalk, are the letters Z.S., an abbreviation for *zur Sektion*.<sup>38</sup> And that means: to be dissected! I get the barracks overseer to assign me an intelligent French prisoner from Barracks 12, and with his help I place one of the bodies on the table. It has heavy, black wire cable around its neck. This one either hanged himself, or was hanged. I make a summary examination of the second corpse as well. I immediately recognize the signs of death by high-voltage electrocution. It is easily recognizable by the small round crusts of burnt skin, as well as by the

<sup>36</sup> Dinah Gottliebová.

<sup>37</sup> Nyiszli here uses the word *zsidórámpa*, a direct translation of German *Judenrampe* ("Jews' ramp"), an informal name for the railway ramp at Auschwitz-Birkenau where trains carrying deportees arrived.

<sup>38</sup> In German in the original ("for dissection").

reddish-purplish discoloration of the skin around them. Here again I ask myself which of two cases it might be: did he run against the electrified fence of his own will, or was he thrown into it? In the K.Z. both alternatives are equally common.

Whether suicide or murder, the formalities to be observed are the same. At evening roll call the deceased is stricken from the roll, the body is loaded onto the corpse-transport cart and taken to the mortuary. From there, a truck carries some fifty to sixty bodies per day to one of the crematoria.

Dr. Mengele has assigned the two corpses to me as a test. He tells me beforehand that I should be careful to live up to what I have undertaken. I will be careful.

An automobile roars outside, within Barracks 12 the command rings out: "Attention!" Dr. Mengele has arrived, accompanied by two high-ranking SS officers. They listen to the reports of the barracks overseer and the head physician. Then they make straight for the dissection room, the prominent inmate doctors of Camp F behind them. They stand in attendance as if in the anatomical theater of a great scientific institute as a particularly interesting case goes under the scalpel. I see on their faces an intense interest in the autopsy, as well as curiosity regarding my own competence. I am to undergo an examination before an exalted – and rather perilous – tribunal. I feel almost as if my prisoner colleagues are worried for me.

Apart from myself, no one here knows that for three years, working directly from corpses, I studied every form of suicide as assistant to His Excellency Professor Dr. Strassmann [*Prof. dr. Strassmann őexcellenciája*] at the Institute of Forensic Medicine in Breslau [*Boroszló*]. What I knew then, present-day prisoner number A-8450, doctor of the K.Z., knows too.

I get down to work on the dissection: I open the cranium, the thoracic cavity, the abdominal cavity. I extract all the organs, demonstrate all the anomalies present. I rapidly answer the various questions that crop up frequently as I work. The look of satisfied interest on their faces and the friendly glances they send toward me convince me that my examination has gone well. I dissect the second corpse also. Dr. Mengele instructs me to prepare reports on the autopsies. He will send for them tomorrow. The SS doctors depart. I remain chatting with my fellow inmate doctors. Up till now they have been courteous toward me; now they accept me into the circle of the prominent.

The next day I receive three more corpses for autopsy. My audience today is the same, but the mood is more relaxed. I am a known quantity now. Today there is more interest, more breaking in with comments, and a lively discussion arises concerning the solution of a certain scientific question.

After the departure of the SS doctors, some young Greek and French doctors come to meet me. They ask me to introduce them to the techniques of lumbar puncture. They want me to let them practice on the corpses. I gladly comply with their request. I am deeply impressed that even here, behind the



barbed wire of the K.Z., they manifest such a lively interest in the profession. They practice diligently, and after five or six attempts the lumbar puncture is a success. They depart proudly, faces beaming.

## Chapter VI

For three days now I have had no work to do. I receive the rations due to a doctor; I relax on my bunk, or sit on a bench in the sports field located next to Camp "F." Yes, such a thing exists in Concentration Camp Auschwitz, but only the *Prominente*, German prisoners from the Reich, may use it. On Sundays, there is lively sports activity here. The rest of the week, the great field is silent. Just a single wire fence separates it from Crematorium I. I would love to know what is going on at the foot of its gigantic, blazing chimney [*lángoló, oriasi kémény*]. From where I am sitting I can't see very much. To approach the fence would not be advisable, for a hail of automatic gunfire will be sent down without warning from the closely spaced watchtowers upon anyone who blunders into the dead zone [*a neutrális zónába*].

All I can see is that men in civilian clothes are lining up in the crematorium courtyard before the big, red-brick building. There might be two hundred of them. In front of the group stand a few SS soldiers. I presume that roll call and headcount is underway there. They are changing the crematorium personnel, day shift replacing night shift. Work goes on in the crematorium without interruption night and day. From an old prisoner, I learn that the crematoria personnel are classified as *Sonderkommando*, that is, a *Kommando* assigned to special work. They get excellent food and excellent civilian clothing. In return, they do the most horrible of jobs. They are not permitted to leave the crematorium compound, and every four months [*négyhavonként*], when they have become familiar with its many secrets, they are liquidated. So it has been for every *Sonderkommando* for as long as the K.Z. has existed. No one has ever yet escaped from those terrible buildings to tell the world of what has been going on, for years now, within their walls.

I return to Barracks 12 just in time to encounter Dr. Mengele. He arrives in an automobile. He is greeted by the barracks overseer. He sends for me! He tells me to get in! This time I do not have an escort. I cannot even say good-bye to my colleagues. We set off, but then stop in front of the camp office. Dr. Mengele calls Dr. Sengkeller hurrying over, and asks him for my card. Moments later it is in his hands.

For ten minutes we move among the maze of fences, through gates, heavily guarded front and back, from one part of the camp to another. Only now do I see just how enormous in scale the K.Z. is! Very few prisoners ever have the chance to see this, for the majority of them perish in the same sector of the camp they first arrive in. At times Auschwitz Concentration Camp has held prisoner as many as 500,000 people [*500.000 ember*] within its electrified

barbed wire. My reflections are abruptly interrupted by Dr. Mengele. He calls back to me: "It's no sanatorium where I'm taking you, but it will be a quite tolerable position."

We exit the camp and proceed along the *Judenrampe* for three hundred meters. The car slows, the horn sounds. A large iron gate opens in the fence. Beside the gate stands a guard post. We pass through and arrive in a spacious, well-kept courtyard covered with green lawn. The sandy pathways and green fir groves [*fenyőlugasok*] of the courtyard would make it a welcoming place were it not for the large red-brick building there and the enormous, flame-spewing chimney [*óriási, tűzokádó kémény*] at one end. We are at one of the crematoria! We get out of the car! An SS hurries over briskly, presents himself to Dr. Mengele. Crossing the courtyard, we pass through a large door into the crematorium building. "Is the room ready?" Dr. Mengele asks our SS escort. The latter answers yes, and we make our way there directly. They enter, I follow behind them. We are in a freshly whitewashed room. Overlooking the courtyard is a large bright window with heavy iron bars over it. The furniture of the room makes an almost weird impression after the barracks room in the camp. A white bed, a white wardrobe, a long table and some chairs make up the room's furnishings. On the table is a red velvet tablecloth, and underfoot, on the concrete floor, are splendid carpets. I see they've been expecting me. The men of the *Sonderkommando* have painted the room and furnished it from the chairs and tables and tablecloths left behind by the transports who have been destroyed here, along with a pinewood bed made in the local woodworking shop [*házi asztalosműhelyben*] and a wardrobe.

From there, passing through a long, dark corridor, we arrive in another room. We are in a bright, double-windowed dissection hall of the most modern type. The floor is of reddish concrete, and in the middle of the room, on a grey concrete base, stands a marble-slab dissecting table with numerous drainage canals cut into its surface. Installed near the edge of the table is a tub with nickel-plated taps. Three porcelain sinks are mounted along the wall. The walls are painted with a light-green, oil-based paint. In the windows, behind the iron bars, green-meshed screens keep the flies and mosquitos out.

From the dissection hall we step into the room next door. This is the laboratory [*munkaterem*], an elegant room fitted out with gleaming furniture. In the middle of the room stand comfortable armchairs and a long worktable covered with a gray cloth. On the table I count three microscopes. A broad, tall bookcase stands in one corner, filled with technical works in the latest editions. A glass cabinet also stands in the room, full of chemicals. On top of all that, there is a linen closet containing gowns, aprons, towels and rubber gloves. What unfolds before me is a perfect replica of the anatomical institute of a big modern city.

I try to take this all in, but I am paralyzed with terror. I had realized immediately, even as I passed through the main gate, that I was passing along the

way toward death. Toward a slow death, yawning before me in its dizzying, bottomless depths. I feel it, I am done for.

Now I understand why I received civilian clothes. They are worn only by the *Sonderkommando*, the *Kommando* of the walking dead.

My boss prepares to leave. He advises the SS that, with regard to my duties, I am subordinate to him alone. The crematorium's SS personnel have no authority over my person. My meals will be provided by the SS kitchen. I may supplement my clothes and linens from the storeroom. For haircuts and shaves I may go to the SS barber shop found in the crematorium building. I do not have to be present at morning and evening roll call!

Apart from anatomical and laboratory work, I am required to provide medical attention for the 120-man-strong SS contingent assigned to the four crematoria, as well as for the 860-man-strong *Sonderkommando*. The necessary medicines, instruments and dressings are at my disposal in sufficient quantities. For ongoing patient care, I am required to visit the individual crematoria once per day – and in case of necessity, even twice – to call on the sick where they lie. I am free to come and go among the four crematoria. I may move about without any escort from 7 in the morning until 9 at night. Every day I must report the number of bedbound and ambulatory sick to the commander of the SS and *Sonderkommando* units, *Oberscharführer* Mussfeld.

I listen, paralyzed, to the list of my rights and duties. Under such terms I would be the leading *Prominente* of the K.Z., were it not that I am to be part of the *Sonderkommando* and that all this is to happen within *Krema I*.<sup>39</sup>

Dr. Mengele departs without saying farewell. An SS, even of the lowliest rank, does not exchange greetings with a prisoner of the K.Z. I close the door of the dissection hall, taking the keys with me. I am responsible for everything here now.

I go to my room and sit down to collect my thoughts somewhat. A difficult task! I start at the beginning. The image of my abandoned home rises before me, the sunny little house on the terrace with its pleasant rooms where I passed so many difficult hours caring for my patients – difficult, but with the satisfaction of being able to help – and so many happy hours surrounded by my family.

It has been a week already since we were separated; where could they be, I wonder, in this hundred thousand-headed throng, nameless, like everyone else locked up in this gigantic prison? Has my fifteen-year-old daughter managed to stay with her mother? Have they been separated from each other? What will become of my aged parents, for whom I have worked, with so much love, to make their twilight years carefree? What will become of my little sister, love-

<sup>39</sup> "... *nem lenne mindez a Krema I-ben.*" Nyiszli here uses the Auschwitz camp slang *Krema I*, short for *Krematorium I*. Modern scholarship now identifies this building as *Krematorium II*, saving the name *Krematorium I* for the disused crematorium at the Auschwitz main camp.

ly, gentle-hearted girl, to whom I have been a father in place of our sickly father? How good it was to love them, how good it was to help them! Not for a moment do I doubt their fate. They too are *en route*, in one of the trains made up of forty ramshackle wagons, here to the death camp Auschwitz – to the *Judenrampe* – where, at a mechanical gesture from my learned boss Dr. Mengele, my parents will turn to the left, and my little sister also, to the left, for even if the judgment for her should say to the right, she undoubtedly will ask, hands joined in supplication, that they permit her to go with our mother. They will grant her permission and she will thank them for it with warm words and with tears in her eyes.

News of my arrival has spread quickly among the SS personnel of the crematoria and among the *Sonderkommando*. They come to my room to call upon me, one after the other. Some SS NCOs open the door. Two grimly martial *Oberscharführers* of enormous stature enter. I know that my demeanor at this moment will determine their future attitude toward me. I think of Dr. Mengele's order, I am subordinate only to him! Accordingly, I treat the visit as strictly private in nature, an act of courtesy. I do not leap up, as per K.Z. regulations, to present myself standing at attention, but rather remain seated; thus welcoming them, I invite them to sit down.

They stop in the middle of room and stare, sizing me up intently. I sense the importance of the moment. Now I face the test of first impressions! It appears I don't do badly, for the muscles over their high cheekbones lose their rigid tension, and with a nonchalant motion they sit down.

Our conversation moves within a very narrow ambit. How was my journey? How did I wind up in the K.Z.? They cannot ask such questions, for my answers might embarrass them. And of politics, the war, the conditions prevailing in the K.Z., of these things I cannot speak. But I am not flustered, for my years of study in Germany before the war provide plenty of material for discussion.

We become completely absorbed in conversation. It impresses them that I speak their language more perfectly than they do. They do not even understand some of my expressions, though they try to avoid showing it. I know them well: their country, their cities, their family life, their moral and religious conceptions. The conversation is not difficult for me. I can see that my oral examination has gone well, for they leave smiling.

Other visitors arrive. Men in civil clothes, neatly groomed and shaven. The head *Kapo*<sup>40</sup> of the *Sonderkommando* and two *Kommando* leaders<sup>41</sup> enter my room. Another courtesy call! They're the ones who arranged my room with their men; they'd heard of my arrival, they invite me to dinner so I can get to know the rest of the crew as well.

<sup>40</sup> "*Főkapója*," a direct Hungarian translation of German *Hauptkapo* ("head *Kapo*").

<sup>41</sup> "*Kommandóvezető*," for German *Kommandoführer* ("Kommando leader").

Just then it was indeed time for dinner. I go with them up to the first floor<sup>42</sup> of the crematorium, to the quarters arranged for the personnel there. It is an enormous hall, lined on either side with comfortable single beds. The bunks are made of unpainted wood, but each is richly covered with cushions and silk coverlets in different styles and colors. This brilliantly colorful bedding stands in sharp, even jarring contrast with the surroundings. It was never meant for this place! It is from the belongings left by the transports brought here. Such is the privilege of the *Sonderkommando* that they could take such things from the storerooms and use them.

The whole room is flooded with dazzling light. They do not economize on lighting here like in the barracks of the K.Z. We pass between the long rows of beds. Only half of the *Kommando* is in the quarters, the other half, one hundred men, is on the night shift. They are at work. Of the men here, some are already lying down, or even asleep. Some are reading books. There are plenty of them! We are a book-reading people! Every deportee brings a few, each according to his or her intellectual level. But this too is a privilege, the fact that the *Sonderkommando* can keep books for themselves and read them. In the K.Z. it's twenty days in the standing cell for anyone caught reading, if they don't just beat you to death.

The table is waiting for us spread with a silk-brocade cloth. Fine, monogrammed china, silver tableware, porcelain jugs, this too is all stuff from the transports. The table is piled with every delicacy, all that a deported people have brought with them on an uncertain journey. There are preserves, smoke-cured bacon [*szalonna*], salami, marmalades, pastries, chocolate. From the labels I see that these things are provisions left behind by Hungarian deportees. Perishable foods pass, by right of office, to any legitimate successors still among the living, that is, to the *Sonderkommando*. Sitting around the table are the head *Kapo*, the engineer, the chief stoker, the captain of the tooth-pulling *Kommando*, the director of the gold refinery. The welcome they extend is a hearty one. They offer generously from everything they have. There's more where it came from! The transports from Hungary keep coming one after another. They bring plenty of everything!

I swallow each mouthful with difficulty. I can't help thinking of my companions in fate, driven from their homes, who in the last hours before deportation had gathered together or prepared provisions for the journey while shedding bitter tears. They had suffered from hunger, but they ate nothing along the entire way in order to have something in reserve for their elderly parents and for their children should harder days come later. But harder days never

---

<sup>42</sup> In the European manner, "first floor" (*első emelet*) here refers to the first floor above ground level, i.e., the second floor of American English. Nyiszli's room is on the ground level.

came! The food was left here, untouched, in the undressing room<sup>43</sup> of the crematorium.

I drink tea with rum. After a few glasses my internal tensions subside completely. My mind is purged, liberated from its tormenting thoughts, my whole body becomes enlivened. A pleasing warmth flows through me. I am drunk. I can feel the alcohol's intoxicating work. Its effect is like a mother's caressing hand, as if benevolence is raining down upon me. We smoke fine cigarettes, also from the Hungarian transports. In the camp itself the price of a cigarette is a ration of bread. Here there are hundreds lying in packages on the table. We carry on a lively conversation. Represented are Poland, France, Greece, Russia, Germany, Italy. The talk proceeds in German, as everyone understands it.

Over the course of our conversation I learn the history of the crematoria. How tens of thousands of prisoners [*fegyencek tízezrei*] built these gigantic buildings out of stone and concrete. How they had to complete them in harsh winter weather. Every stone in these buildings is stained with the blood of tens of thousands of unlucky Jewish deportees [*tíz és tízezer szerencsétlen zsidó deportált*]. Starved and thirsty, inadequately clothed, nourished with wretched gruel as their only food, they toiled day and night so that these horrid factories of death could be completed and become the cremators of their own bodies. Since then four years [*négy év*] have passed. Millions and millions [*millió és millió*] of people have stepped down off the trains onto the ramp and passed through the doors of the crematoria. This current group is the twelfth *Sonderkommando* [*a XII-ik Sonderkommandó*!] I get to know the history of each *Kommando*. I get to know the names of their heroes and I confirm what I have already heard in the camp as well, that the life of a *Sonderkommando* lasts only a few months.

Whoever is of the Jewish faith can begin, from the day of his arrival here, the rites for purification before death. For his death will surely come, as it has for every *Sonderkommando* until now.

It's nearly midnight, the members of the dinnertime company are worn out from the day's work, woozy from all the alcohol they've consumed. Our conversation becomes more and more halting. An SS guard doing the rounds warns us quietly that it would be best for all of us to hit the sack. I say good-night, and I too head off to sleep.

Thanks to the strong rum I sleep through my first night relatively quietly, though it helps as well that I'm in a state of complete nervous exhaustion.

<sup>43</sup> The Hungarian text here has "*vetkező-termében*," an evident spelling error. The word *vétkező* means "sinner" from *vétkezik* "to sin"; the correct term is *vetkőző* "undressing."

## Chapter VII

The long-drawn-out wail of a locomotive's whistle sounds from the ramp. It's daybreak! I go to my window, where I have a clear view across. A long train is standing there. Within a few minutes, the doors are flung to one side and the wagons disgorge from within themselves the chosen people of Israel [*Izrael kiválasztott népét*]. Lining up and selection take half an hour at most. The left-hand column sets off at a slow march.

From my room I hear loud orders, hurried footsteps. The noise is coming from the furnace hall [*kazánterem*] of the crematorium! They are making preparations for receiving the transport. The whine of electric motors becomes audible. They have turned on the giant blowers [*óriási ventilátorokat*] which fan the fire [*a tüzet élesztik*] to the proper temperature inside the furnaces [*kazánokban*]. Fifteen blowers of this kind [*tizenöt ilyen ventilátor*] are in operation at once! One is installed next to each furnace [*minden kemence mellé van egy építve*]. The cremation hall [*égetőterem*] is about 150 meters long [*százötven méter hosszú*], a brightly lit, white-washed, concrete-floored space with enormous, iron-barred windows. The fifteen cremation furnaces [*égőkazán*] are installed separately [*külön-külön*] in large red-brick structures. Their massive iron doors, polished to a gleam, run in a sinister line down the length of the hall.

After five or six minutes the transport arrives at the gate, the gate's leaves swing open. The procession enters the courtyard in the customary rows of five. This is the phase of the process which nobody knows about, for of all those who might know, having walked the three hundred meters here from the ramp along the path to their doom, none has ever returned to tell the story! This, then, is what "to the left" means: one of the crematoria! Not a camp for old folks, invalids and children, where those unable to work will care for the little ones, as the German disinformation spread among the anxious group that winds up on the right would have it.

They walk with slow, weary movements. The little children cling sleepily to their mothers' skirts. Babies in swaddling clothes are for the most part carried in their fathers' arms, or pushed in buggies. The SS escort remains outside the gate. According to the text of a warning sign, entry is forbidden to outsiders, even SS!

In an instant they spot the taps installed in the courtyard for irrigation purposes. Pots and other vessels are brought forth. The column dissolves and, pushing and shoving, they rush to fill them. No wonder they're so impatient! For five days they have scarcely drunk any water. What they did drink was foul and could not quench their thirst.

The SS guards who receive the transport are used to this scene. They wait patiently until everyone has quenched their thirst and filled their vessels. Until all have drunk, they cannot bring the group to order. Slowly they herd them

back together again. They proceed about a hundred meters along a cinder path bordered with green lawns until they reach a grey-painted iron railing [*míg egy szürkére festett vaskorláthoz érnek*] where ten or twelve concrete steps lead below the ground to a large room, upon the façade of which hangs an enormous sign stating, in German, French, Greek and Hungarian, that this is a “Bath and Disinfection Room.”<sup>44</sup> The unsuspecting are lulled of course, but even the doubtful are too. They go down the steps almost cheerfully.

The room into which the transport is conducted is about 200 meters long [*körülbelül kétszáz méter hosszú*], starkly illuminated and painted white. A line of columns stretches down the middle of the room to the end. Benches are arranged around each column and along the walls as well. Above the benches are long lines of hooks, above the hooks are numbers. Advisory signs posted at frequent intervals announce in each language that one's clothing and shoes, tied together, should be placed on a hook. And their number should be noted without fail, so that no unnecessary confusion arises upon returning from the bath! “This is real German orderliness!” say those inclined to German-worship from the old days. They're right, too! It really is for the sake of order, so that all these thousands of high-quality shoes, so hard to find in the Third Reich, do not get mixed up together. The same goes for the clothes as well, so that they remain usable by the bombed-out German population.

Three thousand people [*háromezer ember*] are in the room. Men, women, children. SS soldiers arrive and immediately the order rings out: everyone is to undress completely, ten minutes! They stand petrified, old folks, grandfathers, grandmothers, children, wives, husbands. Modest matrons and maidens look at one another helplessly. Perhaps they did not understand the German words [*a német szavakat*]? But already the order is repeated! Its tone is more impatient now, almost menacing!

They are filled with foreboding, their pride is stirred, but with Jewish resignation they recognize that, with regard to themselves, anything is permitted! They begin to undress with difficulty. A group sent from the *Sonderkommando* assists in the undressing of the aged, the lame and the mad. In ten minutes everyone is naked. Their clothing hangs on the hooks, along with their shoes, laces tied together. And their hook numbers have been carefully noted....!

The SS clear a path through the dense crowd to the oak double doors located at the end of the room. They open them! The crowd surges through them into the next room, also brightly lit. This room is the same size [*olyan nagyságú*] as the undressing room [*vetkezőterem*], but there are no benches and hooks here. In the center of the room, at a distance of thirty meters from each other [*egymástól harminc méter távolságra*], a number of columns stretch from the concrete floor to the ceiling. These are not support columns, but are

<sup>44</sup> “Fürdő és fertőtlenítő helyiség.” This thus must have been the inscription in Hungarian.



rather quadrangular tinplate pipes [*négyszögletű vasbádóg csövek*], their sides pierced throughout with holes like a grill.

Everyone is inside now! A loud command rings out! – SS and *Sonderkommando* are to leave the room! – They leave and take a head count. The doors [*az ajtók*] close, the lights are turned off from outside.

At that moment, an automobile roars outside. A luxury model Red Cross car [*vöröskeresztes luxuskocsi*] arrives. An SS officer and an S.D.G. *Sanitätsdienstgefreiter*,<sup>45</sup> a non-commissioned medical officer, step out. The medic has four green-colored canisters in his hands.

They advance across the lawn to where some low concrete chimneys emerge from the ground [*földből*] at a distance of thirty meters from one another [*egymástól harminc méterre*]. They head for the first chimney. They don gas masks. They lift the chimney cover; it too is made of concrete [*betonból*]. They punch open the patented top<sup>46</sup> of one of the canisters and pour the contents, a substance consisting of bean-sized lilac-colored [*lila színű*] granules, into the opening. The material poured out is Cyclon, or chlorine in granular form [*Cyclon, vagy Chlór szemcsés formája*]; it immediately gives off gas as soon as it comes into contact with air [*amint a levegővel érintkezik*]. It falls down into the perforated sheet-metal pipes [*lyukacsos bádógcsöve(k)*] into the underground room. It stays there in the pipe; it does not scatter all over. The gas immediately comes out through the holes, and within moments [*pillanatok alatt*] it fills the room crowded with people. Within five minutes [*öt perc alatt*] it kills them!<sup>47</sup>

The Red Cross car comes like this to every transport, bringing the gas from the outside. No supply of it is ever kept in the crematorium. A despicable precaution, but more despicable still is the fact that they should bring it in a car marked with the insignia of the International Red Cross!

The two gas executioners wait five more minutes, to be sure of their work. They light cigarettes and get into their car. They have just killed three thousand innocent people!

Twenty minutes later, the electric ventilators [*a villamos szellőztetőket*] are switched on to remove the gas. The doors [*az ajtók*] open. Trucks arrive now too. A *Sonderkommando* group loads clothing and shoes separately onto the trucks. They're taking them away to disinfect them! To the real disinfection now! From there, they go by train to various centers around the country.

The modern, exhaustor-system fans [*az exhaustor rendszerű, modern szellőztetők*] quickly clear the room of gas, but it remains present, if in small quantities, trapped in cracks, among the dead. Even hours later [*még órák*

<sup>45</sup> In German in the original along with the abbreviation.

<sup>46</sup> Nyiszli's "patent top" (*patent tetejét*) presumably is his translation of German *Patentdeckel*, a trade term for a lid with a flattened concave profile, like that of a paint can.

<sup>47</sup> Or "it is finished!" The Hungarian verb *végez* literally means "to finish," but like its English equivalent (cf. "to finish off") it also means, colloquially, "to kill."

*múlva*] breathing it provokes a suffocating cough. For this reason, the *Sonder-squad* [*Sonderesozsztag*] enter with rubber syringes<sup>48</sup> and wear gas masks. The room is once more starkly illuminated. A terrible spectacle unfolds before those who enter.

The bodies do not lie all over the length and breadth of the room but rather in a single, story-high heap [*hanem emeletmagasan egyhalomban*]. The explanation for this is that the fallen gas granules first permeate the air layer above the concrete floor with their deadly vapors and only gradually [*fokozatosan*] saturate the higher layers of air in the room. This forces the unfortunate victims to trample each other, to climb over one another. In the higher layers the gas thus reaches them later [*A magasban így későbbben éri el a gáz őket*]. What a terrible struggle for life must take place there, and yet the time won is only one or two minutes in all! Could they but think about it, they would know that they are trampling their parents, their wives, their children in vain, but they cannot! What they do is a survival reflex! I notice that at the bottom of the tower of bodies [*hullatoronynak*] lie the babies, children, women and aged, at the top, the stronger men.

Tangled together, their bodies covered with bloody scratches which they caused one another in the scramble, they lie with bleeding noses, bleeding mouths. Their heads are swollen and blue [*kékre van dagadva*], deformed beyond all recognition! All the same, the *Sonderkommandos* often recognize their relatives among the dead. I myself dread the horror of such an encounter! There is no work for me here, and yet I have come down among the dead, because I feel a sense of duty to my people and to the world, that, while I cannot reasonably hope it, yet through some trick of fate I may escape from here and write these lines as the only living witness!

The *Sonderkommando* group stands around the mountain of corpses [*hullahegy körül*] in tall rubber boots and flushes it with powerful streams of water. There is great need of this, for the last act of death by asphyxiation, and thus death by gas, is the release of excrement from the bowels. All of the dead are filthy with it!

After the “bathing” of the dead is accomplished – and with what spiritual abnegation, what complete self-surrender the *Sonderkommando* performs this task! – next begins the pulling apart of the tangled-together corpses. It is a very difficult job! They loop straps around the wrists below the spasmodically clenched fists, and so drag the bodies of the dead, still slippery with water, to the elevators in the next room. Four large mechanical freight elevators are in operation here [*Négy nagy teherfelvonógép működik itt*]. They pile the dead onto these, twenty, twenty-five to an elevator. An alarm bell informs the operator that it can ascend! The elevator stops at the cremation hall [*égetőtermé-*

<sup>48</sup> *I.e.*, bulb syringes, presumably to blow contaminated air out of the spaces it is trapped in and thus disperse it.

ben] of the crematorium, where its massive doors open automatically. The towing *Kommando* [*a vontató kommandó*] is waiting for it there. Once again, loops go around the wrists of the dead. They drag them along the concrete floor on a slide made for the purpose and deposit them in front of the fifteen furnaces [*a 15 kemence előtt*].

They lie in long lines on the concrete, the corpses of old and young and children alike. Blood trickles from their noses and their mouths, as well as from their bodies, abraded from the dragging, and mixes with the continuously flowing water which trickles from taps installed for that purpose through channels in the concrete floor.

Then follows a new phase in the exploitation of the Jews' corpses. The Third Reich has already seized their clothing, their shoes. Hair is a valuable material too. It is essential for delayed action bombs, as hair is a fiber which expands and contracts uniformly in both dry and humid air. This capacity is brought to bear in the detonator mechanism of the bombs. And so the dead are shorn.

The Third Reich is founded on the value not of gold but of work! They say it and shout it to the whole world. Here's the truth! The eight men of the tooth-pulling *Kommando* [*a foghúzó kommandó*] stand before the furnaces, two kinds of tool, or rather "instruments," in their hands. In one hand, a crowbar, in the other, tooth-pulling pliers. They turn the bodies face upward, open the mouths, and with horrid workmanship ruthlessly proceed to not so much pull out as smash out any gold teeth and bridges they can find in the oral cavity. And yet the men of the *Kommando* are all qualified dentists and oral surgeons! It was as such that Dr. Mengele recruited them for the performance of challenging dental and oral-surgical duties. They had hoped for a good position in their own professions! They had presented themselves and fallen into the hell of the crematorium. Exactly as it happened to me!

The gold teeth wind up in a zinc bucket, where they sit in a hydrochloride solution to burn off the bone and pieces of flesh. The other gold items found on the dead, the platinum objects, the pearls, the necklaces, the rings all go into a closed strongbox set aside for this purpose. They toss them through a hole in the lid. Gold is a heavy metal; I would estimate 8-10 kilograms [*nyolc-tíz kilóra*] is collected per day at one crematorium. Naturally it depends on the transports as well. There are poor transports and there are rich transports, depending on where they come from.

The Hungarian transports arrive at the ramp completely looted. The transports from Holland, Czechoslovakia and the various parts of Poland, even after years of life in the ghettos, have managed to keep and bring along their jewels, their gold objects, their dollars. The Germans thus come into possession of immense riches.

After the last gold tooth is out of the mouth of its dead owner, the corpses go to the cremation *Kommando* [*a hamvasztó kommandóhoz*]. These then

place them three at a time [*hármásával*] on a pushing device made of steel plates [*egy acél lemezekből készült tolószerkezetre*]. The furnace's heavy iron doors open automatically [*automatikusan*]; the device moving on iron wheels rolls into the glowing furnace, drops its load, slides back, heated to incandescence.<sup>49</sup> Two men with rubber hoses douse it with powerful streams of water.

The bodies of the dead are reduced to ashes in 20 minutes [*20 perc alatt hamvadnak*]. The crematorium works with 15 furnaces. This means the cremation of 5,000 people a day [*Ez napi ötezer ember égését jelent*]. Four crematoria are in operation at the same capacity [*Négy krematórium dolgozik ugyanilyen kapacitással*]. Altogether 20,000 people [*összesen 20.000 ember*] pass each day [*naponta*] through the gas chambers and from there into the cremation furnaces. The souls of twenty-thousand innocent people fly off through the gigantic chimneys. Nothing remains of them here but a heap of ashes in the courtyard of the crematoria [*a krematóriumok udvarán*], which trucks carry off to the Vistula, rushing along some two kilometers away, and deliver to the waves. After so much suffering, so much horror, they are not even granted the finality of rejoining and fading away into the earth.

## Chapter VIII

The pathological anatomy laboratory was established at the initiative of my boss, Dr. Mengele, and is intended to satisfy his medical research ambitions. It has been finished for several days, waiting only for a forensic pathologist so that it can begin operations.

Grand possibilities and wide vistas open here on the grounds of the K.Z. for the forensic investigation of the frequently occurring cases of suicide, for twin studies, for the pathological evaluation of developmental disorders such as dwarfism and gigantism!

The abundance of corpse materials occurring nowhere else, and the possibility of having corpses at one's disposal without limit and without responsibility give a great impetus to research work and afford ever greater possibilities!

I know from experience that while the hospitals of major world cities are able, with difficulty, to make available 100-150 corpses per year for research purposes to forensic medical or anatomical institutes, they are available in K.Z. Auschwitz in quantities calculable in the millions [*milliók számokban*]!

Anyone who enters the confines of the K.Z. is a candidate for death here. Those whose good fortune takes them to the left become corpses in the gas chambers within an hour. Less fortunate are those whose bad luck puts them

<sup>49</sup> In the text of the 1947 edition, an entire line of text was dropped here, making the phrase nonsensical: "a vaskereken járó szerkezet a kemence izzásig van hevítve" instead of "a vaskereken járó szerkezet a kemence ízzó belsejébe gördül, ledobja terhét, ismét kicsúszik, izzásig van hevítve."

on the right! The qualification of “candidates for death” applies to them as well, only with the difference that, for three or four months, for as long as they may hold out, they must suffer all the horrors of the K.Z. along the way. They succumb to slave labor! They bleed from a thousand wounds. They cry out in hunger. Losing their minds, they howl with staring eyes. They freeze to death writhing in fields of snow. Trained bloodhounds tear off what flesh still remains on them, and when even the lice no longer find nourishment on their dried-up bodies, along comes redeeming death for them! Who has it better? Who, among their fathers, their mothers, their brothers and sisters, their children? The right side or the left?

Already upon the arrival of new transports an SS soldier goes along the line of people assembled before the wagons and asks after the twins and dwarves to find among them. The mothers, hoping for something good, hand over their twin children without reflecting. The adult twins, for their part, know that they are scientifically interesting. Only something good can come of that. They present themselves willingly. This happens in the same way with the dwarves.

They are separated out, they all go to the right. Guards accompany them, still in their civilian clothes, which they are allowed to keep, to the barracks in the camp specially designated for them, the so-called convalescence barracks.<sup>50</sup> Here the food is good, the beds are comfortable, there are washing facilities, the treatment is good.

They are in Barracks 14 of Sector “F” of the camp, and from there their supervisor takes them to the previously mentioned experimental block in the Gypsy camp. Here each day every medical test that can be done on living humans is performed. Blood tests, spinal taps, blood transfusions between twins, and innumerable other tests, all of them painful and exhausting. Dina, the female painter and illustrator from Prague, prepares comparative drawings of the twins’ skulls, ears, noses and mouths, and the lines on their hands and their feet; each drawing goes into a separately created dossier containing detailed personal data where the test-report pages prepared from the results of research tests are kept as well. This is the procedure with the dwarves also.

These tests, known in medical terms as “*in vivo*,” that is, performed upon the living, still are far from exhausting the possibilities of twin-research science. They are full of gaps; they offer little! Thus follows the last and most important phase of twin research, the anatomopathological evaluation! The comparison, in twin siblings, of healthy and abnormally functioning or diseased organs – for that study, as for every kind of anatomopathology, dead bodies are needed! Since the autopsy must allow for the simultaneous evalua-

<sup>50</sup> The expression *kimélő barakk* (literally “sparing barrack”), used here and four paragraphs below, is likely Nyiszli’s translation of the German *Schonungsbaracke* (or *Schonungsblock*), a term used in the camp system for a building where convalescent prisoners could rest and thus “spare” (*scho-nen*) their health.

tion of detected anomalies, the twins have to die at the same time! And die they do, in an experimental barracks of K.Z. Auschwitz, in Sector B.III of the camp [*a B.III. táborrészben*], by the hand of Dr. Mengele.

Here occurs a situation unique in all the world in the history of medical science! Twins die together, at the same time, and there is the possibility of subjecting them both to an autopsy! Where in free life does the marvelous situation ever arise that twins should die together at the same time? Even twins are separated by their life circumstances. Often they live at a great distance from one another and they are not accustomed to die together, but rather one dies at ten and the other at fifty, to speak by way of example. There is no possibility, thus, of a comparative autopsy! In the Auschwitz camp there are many hundreds of twins, with many hundreds of possibilities!

For this Dr. Mengele separates out the twins and the dwarves while still on the ramp. For this they go to the right, to the convalescence barracks! For this their excellent provisions! For this they are able to wash themselves, so that they should not die ahead of one another by contracting different diseases! They must die in good health and at the same time!

The head *Kapo* of the *Sonderkommando* comes to me to report that an SS soldier is waiting at the crematorium gate with a corpse-transport *Kommando*. I go out to the waiting group. They are not permitted to enter the courtyard. I receive the accompanying documents from the SS soldier. I take in hand the dossier of two twins. The *Kommando*, which is made up of women, places a blanket-covered stretcher before me. I lift the blanket. It covers the bodies of two two-year-old twins. I call over two of my *Sonderkommando* men to carry the bodies in and place them on the dissecting table.

I open the dossiers and leaf through them. State-of-the-art clinical examinations, write-ups, photographs, X-rays and artistic drawings give back a clear reflection of the little twins' gemellological features. All that is missing is the autopsy report! Preparing it is my job! The two little twins have died together! They lie side by side on the big dissecting table! By their deaths, by the sufficient laying bare of their little bodies [*testecskéjük*]<sup>51</sup> through dissection, they must reveal the secret of the multiplication of the race!

Promoting the multiplication of the superior race chosen for mastery is a "worthy goal." By such means perhaps one day every German woman will bear twins!

The plan is madness! Its formulators are the sick-brained racial theorists of the Third Reich. The performance of the experiments has been entrusted to the

<sup>51</sup> Or perhaps "their minutest parts." Hungarian *testescke* is a diminutive of *test* ("body"), but is also used to mean "corpuscle."

chief physician of K.Z. Auschwitz, the highly trained “criminaldoctor”<sup>52</sup> – that is, *criminal doctor*<sup>53</sup> – Dr. Mengele.

Among criminals and evil-doers, the most dangerous type of all is the *criminaldoctor*! Especially with the kind of power that is placed in Dr. Mengele’s hands! He sends millions [*milliókat*] to their deaths because according to their [*sic*] racial theories<sup>54</sup> they are inferior beings harmful to humanity! This same criminal doctor sits for long hours beside me among the microscopes, flasks and test tubes, or stands for long hours at the dissecting table in a bloodstained lab coat, with bloody hands, and examines and researches like one possessed! The goal is the multiplication of the German race! The end goal, in turn, is that there should be enough Germans to replace the Czech, Hungarian, Polish, Dutch peoples, condemned to extermination, in the areas inhabited by these peoples and now declared *Lebensraum* [*életterének*] for the Third Reich.

I finish the autopsy of the two little twins. I prepare the protocol, a standard, minutes-style autopsy report about them. I have done my job well! My boss, it seems, is pleased. He has a little difficulty reading my block-capital handwriting. I became accustomed to writing this way in America! I remark to him that if he wants a nice, neat report I will be in need of a typewriter, because I write on one even at home. He asks what kind of machine I am used to. I answer: “Olympia Elit.”<sup>55</sup> “All right then! You will get a typewriter! I will send it to you tomorrow. I want to receive neat work, because these [reports] are going to be sent from here to the institute for racial and developmental biology in Berlin-Dahlem.” From this I learn that the experiments here are being reviewed by medical authorities of the highest standing in one of the most illustrious scientific institutions in the world!

The next day an SS soldier brings me a typewriter, an Olympia! And again I receive twin corpses. Four pairs of twins have been brought over from the Gypsy camp’s twins group. They are the corpses of Gypsy children under ten years of age.

<sup>52</sup> Printed thus in the original, including quotation marks. The correct German spelling would be *Kriminaldoktor*; compare its appearance at the end of Chapter 15.

<sup>53</sup> Literally “evil-doing doctor” (*gonosztevőorvos*). The compound *Kriminaldoktor* is not in regular use, and indeed is not correct German, as the word *Doktor* is used as a title (e.g., “Doktor Mengele”) but not as a generic word for “physician” (for which *Arzt* would be correct). However, it appears that what Nyiszli (if only provisionally and ironically) intends here by the compound is something like “forensic pathologist” (i.e., a medical professional specializing in *criminal* investigation – in correct German, *Gerichtsmediziner*), in an analog of words like *Kriminalbeamte* (“police detective”) or *Kriminalgericht* (“criminal court”). He then deliberately mistranslates this invented compound for his Hungarian readers, taking *Kriminal-* in its literal or basic sense – a practice which he continues to follow in his subsequent uses of the word below, whether spelling it *criminaldoctor* or *Kriminaldoktor*.

<sup>54</sup> The possessive ending here (*fajtedőriájuk*) is for the third person plural (“their”). Presumably Nyiszli intends to refer to National Socialists in general and not the Jews themselves.

<sup>55</sup> Thus in the original. Nyiszli has presumably “normalized” the English spelling for his Hungarian readers here.

I perform an autopsy on a pair of twins, recording every phase of the autopsy process in the protocol. I remove the skullcap. I extract the brain together with the cerebellum. I examine everything. Next comes the opening of the thoracic cavity, the extraction of the sternum. Then I remove the tongue through an incision made below the chin. Together with it comes the esophagus. Then follows the trachea with the two lungs. I wash the organs so I can see them clearly. There's blood everywhere! The most insignificant-looking little spot or change of color can furnish important data. I slice open the pericardium, ladle out the exudate fluid [*izzadmányfolyadékot*]. I take out the heart as well! I hold it beneath the tap, wash away the blood. I turn it over in the palm of my hand. In the outer wall of the left ventricle is a tiny, round, pale-red spot, caused by a pin prick, it barely stands out against the surrounding color. I can't be wrong! The pinprick could have been made by a very fine needle. Naturally a hypodermic needle! The child received an injection, but for what reason? Someone might receive an injection to the heart in the case of an emergency due to cardiac insufficiency perhaps. I soon figure it out. I open the heart, expose the left ventricle. In an autopsy, one would normally ladle out and weigh the blood in the left ventricle of the heart. That's not possible to do here, because the blood has coagulated into a hard, clotted mass. With tweezers I pull the blood clot apart, sniff it. The characteristic, powerful smell of chloroform hits my nostrils. The child received a chloroform injection to the heart! For no other purpose than that the blood in the left ventricle of the heart should coagulate due to the injected chloroform and, depositing against the heart valves, provoke immediate cardiac arrest.

My knees shake with excitement. I have discovered the Third Reich's darkest medical secret [*Felfedeztem a III. Birodalom orvostudományának legsötétebb titkát*]. So they kill people here not just with gas, but also with injections of chloroform administered to the heart! Sweat bathes my forehead. It is fortunate that I am alone. In front of others I would scarcely have been able to conceal my emotion. I finish the autopsy. I assess the anomalies discovered and put them down on paper, but the chloroform, the coagulated blood in the left ventricle and the pinprick in the exterior wall of the heart do not appear in my report. This was a careful precaution on my part. Dr. Mengele's dossiers about these twins are in my hands as well. They contain precise test data, X-ray images, the finely executed drawings already mentioned, but circumstances of death and cause of death do not appear under the headings for them. So I do not fill in this column in the autopsy protocol either. It would not be good to exceed the permissible limits of knowledge and speak of what I've learned here. Especially not in this place! I am not cowardly by nature. My nerves are strong. I have clarified [the causes of] innumerable deaths already in my lifetime. People murdered, some out of revenge, some out of jealousy, or killed for financial gain. I have clarified suicides, and deaths from disease. I have grown accustomed to the searching out of well-hidden causes of death. I have



come across breathtaking surprises many times, but now a chilling fear runs all through me. If Dr. Mengele were to suspect that I know the secret of the injections [*injekcióinak titkát*], ten doctors of the political SS would be on hand to determine my time of death!

According to orders, after the completion of the autopsy, I must hand over the bodies to the crematorium men, who must then cremate them immediately. The scientifically interesting parts I must keep, so that Dr. Mengele will be able to view them. Things that might interest the anthropological institute in Berlin-Dahlem I must preserve! They receive appropriate packaging for shipping by mail, and in order that they be transmitted promptly, the package is stamped with the words "Urgent, important war material." I sent countless such packages to Berlin-Dahlem during the course of my activity in the crematorium, and I received replies about them with exhaustive scientific commentary or instructions. I set up a separate dossier to keep the correspondence. In their letters to Dr. Mengele they always expressed their grateful appreciation for the rare material sent to them.

I perform autopsies on the other three pairs of twins as well. I assess the anomalies discovered. The cause of death for these also is a chloroform injection to the heart. I make a curious observation. In three of the four pairs of Gypsy twins, the eyes are differently colored! The one eye is blue, the other is brown. This phenomenon occurs in non-twins as well, but in this case it can be observed in six out of eight twins. Without question it is an interesting collection of anomalies. In medical science this is called heterochromia, that is, different-coloredness. I cut out the eyes, place them separately in formalin solution, precisely note down their data so that they will not get mixed up together. During the autopsies I ran across another interesting finding among the four pairs of twins. Pulling back the skin on both sides of the neck, I discover a round, nut-sized abscess above the upper end of the sternum. I press it with my forceps and a thick secretion of pus comes out. It is very rare, but it is a symptom known to medical science. It is called a Dubois abscess, a symptom of hereditary syphilis. It is present in all eight of the twins. I cut out the abscessed parts *in sano*,<sup>56</sup> that is, together with the surrounding healthy tissue. These too go into a bottle of formalin. In two pairs of twins I also find active cavernous tuberculosis. I put it all down in the protocols. Again I leave the column for cause of death blank.

In the afternoon Dr. Mengele comes for a visit. I report to him about the completed work. I hand over the protocols for the ten twins. He sits down, reads them through carefully one by one. The phenomenon of heterochromia in the eyes interests him greatly; the Dubois abscess interests him still more. He instructs me that I should pack it all up for shipping, enclosing the proto-

---

<sup>56</sup> Nyiszli uses a Hungarian equivalent of the traditional Latin tag: *egészségesben* (literally, "in health").

cols, but that I should fill in the columns for cause of death which have been left empty. He leaves it to me! I may write in whatever I see fit, so long as they are all different. Almost apologetically he remarks that these children, as I myself was able to see, were infected with syphilis as well as tuberculosis; they would not have been viable anyway, so... He says no more! With that he has said everything. He has justified the killing of ten children. I make no comment. I have accepted that in this medical environment tuberculosis is not treated with pulmonary insufflation, nor syphilis with neosalvarsan, but rather the patients are killed with a choloroform injection.

My hair almost stands on end when I think of all that I have accepted during my brief life here and all that I must still accept, wordlessly, hereafter until the end arrives for me as well. I knew it when I entered here, but now that I am in possession of so many secrets, I have no doubt that I am a dead man walking. Is it conceivable that Dr. Mengele or the Berlin-Dahlem Institute should allow me to live?

## Chapter IX

It is already getting on towards evening. Dr. Mengele has departed, I am alone with my heavy thoughts. Moving almost mechanically I put the instruments used in the autopsies back in their places, wash my hands, pass through into the laboratory and, lighting a cigarette, sit down to relax a little.

A blood-curdling scream splits my brain. Immediately afterwards I hear a muffled crack, then the heavy fall of a body. I listen intently, tensely awaiting the minutes to follow. Another horrible scream, another crack, the heavy fall of another body, not even a minute later. I count seventy dying screams, seventy cracks, as many falls. Heavy footsteps move away, everything grows still. The scene where the horrible tragedy has played out is a room next to the dissection hall with a separate entrance from the foyer. It is a bare, half-dark room with a concrete floor. An iron-barred window looks out on the back courtyard. I use it as a mortuary chamber. I keep the corpses there until it's their turn to be autopsied, and I place them there after autopsy too until they are cremated. Heaped before the entrance to the room in a pile on the floor lie dirty, tattered women's clothing, battered wooden clogs, eyeglasses, stale pieces of bread, typical personal effects of women in the K.Z. I enter the room. I was prepared for a rather extraordinary sight after what I had heard, but a horrifying picture unfolds before my eyes as I look around the half-darkened room. The bloodied remains of seventy young, naked female bodies lie before me. The bodies lie every which way, slumped over one another, covered in one another's blood. I move closer and with still greater horror I see that not everyone who is lying here is dead! Some among them are still alive, they make slow movements with their arms and legs and keep trying to lift their bloodied heads, eyes opened wide.

I lift one of the still-moving heads, then a second one, then a third, and it is clear to me that apart from cyclon gas [*ciklongáz*] and chloroform injection, there is also a third form of mortality here, the shot to the back of the neck! The entrance hole reveals that it originates from a 6-millimeter, so-called small-caliber weapon; there is no exit-wound hole. This suggests a soft lead bullet. These can flatten out inside the skull so much that they remain inside. Sadly, I am an expert; within minutes I take everything in and clearly see the situation in all its horror. I am no longer surprised either that the small-caliber bullets did not cause immediate death for all the victims, even though the shots were fired from a distance of 3-4 centimeters, as the burns on the skin show, straight in the direction of the brain stem. It appears the gun was off by 1-2 millimeters, and thus it did not cause immediate death.

I take that in too, but I do not think about it. I am afraid I will go mad. I go out into the courtyard. I ask one of the *Sonderkommando* where the seventy unfortunates came from. They are the selected [*kiszelektáltjai*] from camp section C, he replies, every evening at seven a truck brings seventy over. They all get a shot to the back of the neck.

With a heavy head, almost dazed, I walk along the gravel paths of the green-lawned crematorium courtyard. I watch the *Sonderkommando*'s evening roll call. At the moment there is no change of shift for the night. Crematorium I is not in service today. I look across: the chimneys of Crematoria II, III and IV are spewing forth flames [*lángot szórnak*].

It is still too early for dinner. The *Sonderkommando* men bring out a regulation soccer ball. The teams take the field, "SS versus SK." The crematorium's SS guards stand on one side, the *Sonderkommando* on the other. They kick the ball. The sound of hearty laughter fills the courtyard. The audience, made up of SS and *Sonderkommando* men, root for their sides, cheering the players on like they were at a peaceful small-town sports ground. Astounded, I take this in too, but I do not wait for the end of the game. I retire to my room. I eat my dinner and get to sleep with two 0.10 [*sic*]<sup>57</sup> tablets of Luminal. I was in great need of it in order to do so. I sensed that I was on the verge of nervous collapse. Luminal-induced sleep is the best antidote!

## Chapter X

In the morning I wake up a little dazed. I pass through into the neighboring room, furnished with a shower bath, and for half an hour I allow the icy water of the Vistula to wash over me. I feel it doing good for my shattered nerves. My Luminal daze disappears as well. How orderly these Germans are! Here at the disposal of the *Sonderkommando* stands a white-tiled, ten-man shower

---

<sup>57</sup> Nyiszli does not name a unit; presumably he means grams.

bath. Those who work with corpses must wash themselves frequently. Bathing twice a day is mandatory, everyone does it with pleasure.

I carry with me my elegant doctor's bag. A *Sonderkommando* man brought it for me from the undressing room, from the pile of clothing of some doctor colleague of mine gone to his death by gas. Inside are a blood-pressure gauge, a stethoscope, fine-quality syringes, instruments, injections necessary for first aid. I can make very good use of it in outside practice. Here outside practice means the four crematoria. I begin my rounds here! I take a turn first through the SS quarters [*SS. szállást*], I examine anyone who comes forward. There are always a few! Here everyone eagerly reports sick for 3-4 days so they may rest up a little after their demanding service. However, there are more serious cases as well! The treatment of the sick encounters no difficulties, for in the matter of medicine supplies we can compete with the best pharmacy in Berlin. There is a separate *Kommando* here whose task is to open the hand luggage of the transports who go to the gas chambers, before it is shipped out together with the clothes and shoes, and to collect any medicines found there to hand over to me. I put them in order, grouping them according to their effects. It's a big job, for the transports arriving from various countries of Europe bring with them their own medicines, and these thus are fitted with labels in the respective countries' languages. I have a lot of trouble with the ones in Greek, Polish, Czech and Dutch. As a curiosity, I note that the large majority of the drugs found with the transports belong in some way to the class of sedatives. This typifies the nervous condition of Europe's persecuted Jewry.

After I finish my patient rounds in the SS quarters, I go up to the *Sonderkommando* quarters. Here I have to look after a few burns. They are a common occurrence among the stokers. Organic diseases proper do not turn up much among the men of the *Sonderkommando*. Their beds and clothing are clean, their food is good, one could even say excellent. Besides, they are all carefully selected young men of robust physique. More common are psychological cases. The horrifying consciousness that their own brothers and sisters, their wives, their children, their aged parents and their entire people are perishing here, that every day they drag thousands of dead bodies in front of the cremation furnaces and thrust them into the cremation muffles [*hamvasztószekrényekbe*], provokes serious psychological depression and melancholy. Everyone here has a past which he thinks on with pain and a future which he thinks on with terror. The future of a *Sonderkommando* is a period which can be expressed in very brief units. According to the experience of four years, a *Sonderkommando* lives for four months. Once these have passed, a large detachment of the political SS appears one day and herds the men of the *Sonderkommando* into the rear courtyard of the crematorium. A burst of gunfire, and half an hour later the newly established *Sonderkommando* arrives. They strip the clothes from their dead colleagues, and within another hour all

that remains of the latter is a pile of ashes. Their first job is the cremation of their predecessors.

On every occasion when I do patient rounds in their quarters, there are always a few who call me aside and ask me for a rapid, surely lethal poison. I refuse them all. Today, however, I regret having done so. They all died, rapidly and surely, just as they wanted to die, but not by their own hands, as would have been better, but rather at the hands of their executioners!

## Chapter XI

The next stop on my patient rounds is Crematorium number II. A meadow path and the dead-end tracks of the “Jews’ ramp” [*zsidórámpa*] separate it from Crematorium Number I. The building is constructed following exactly the same plan as number I. The undressing room, the gas chamber, the cremation hall, the SS quarters and the *Sonderkommando* quarters all match number I; only the room corresponding to the dissection hall is occupied here by a gold refinery [*aranyöntöde*]. Everything collected in the four crematoria winds up here, gold teeth, jewelry, gold coins, precious stones, platinum objects, cigarette cases, as well as every object made of a precious metal which is gathered from the clothing and luggage or off the bodies of the transports. Three goldsmiths work here. They first sterilize, then classify the jewelry. They remove the precious stones. Thus prepared it goes into the smelter. The weight in pure gold of the gold teeth and jewelry “extracted” from the four crematoria and smelted here each day is 30-35 kilograms [*30-35 kiló*].

Casting takes place in a disk-shaped graphite form about five centimeters in diameter. The weight of one gold disk is 140 grams. I know exactly. I weighed it myself on the dissection-hall scale.

The dentists who remove the teeth from the corpses lying before the furnaces do not throw every gold bridge or tooth into the bucket filled with hydrochloric acid, but rather a part thereof, sometimes more, sometimes less, accordingly as the SS guards draw near to or move away from the work site, winds up in their pockets. The same thing is done with jewelry, precious stones sewn into clothing and gold coins by the *Kommando* that works in the undressing room as they glean valuables from the hand baggage and clothing left behind. This is a very risky, indeed life-risking operation, for the SS guards are present everywhere and they keep strict watch over the valuables that have come into the Third Reich’s possession, especially over precious stones and gold.

At first I did not have a firm opinion on the moral and legal propriety of the *Sonderkommando*’s gold acquisitions, but after a few days, once I became better acquainted with the situation, I acknowledged the *Sonderkommando* as the rightful owners and heirs of any gold that arrives here.

The men of the *Sonderkommando* brought the gold they acquired to the smelter too. Even the most stringent surveillance still left a way for them to get it in and then back out into their hands again as 140-gram disks. More difficult was the operation of actually using the gold, that is, its fair exchange for value. No one ever entertained the idea that one might save gold here, for every one of them was a dead man walking with a four-month term! Yet four months is horribly long in this situation! To be sentenced to death and to carry out such work is a situation that wears down body and soul and drives many to madness! One must make life easier, more bearable for this brief period! Even here that can be had with gold.

Thus arose among the first *Sonderkommando*, and thus remains even today among the twelfth, a new instrument of exchange, the 140-gram gold disk. In the smelter there is no smaller graphite crucible, so there is no smaller gold disk either. What the price of the purchased items would be in the outside world is of no significance here, for he who gives the gold has already forfeited his life when he entered here, and he who gives something in return for the gold puts his life in play twice: the first time when, passing through the four-fold SS guard chain [*a négysoros SS. őrláncon*] which surrounds the K.Z., he brings in items hard to get even outside and only obtainable with a [ration] ticket, the second time when he carries the gold out through the guard chain. As upon entering, so upon leaving, there are searches.

The gold thus travels up to the crematorium gates in the pockets of one of the *Sonderkommando* men. There it stops! The *Kommando* man goes to the SS man who is standing guard, exchanges a few words with him. The latter turns and moves away from the gate. A group made up of 20-25 Polish track workers with a foreman is working on the railway line that runs in front of the crematorium. At a nod of the head, the foreman quickly brings over a folded bag, takes away the piece of gold, wrapped in paper. The bag is inside the gate. The railway man has a new order for the next day.

The *Sonderkommando* man goes to the guardhouse beside the gate. He takes a hundred cigarettes and a bottle of schnapps from the bag. The SS man enters the hut. He quickly pockets the bottle and the cigarettes and is content, for the SS get only two cigarettes per day, and no schnapps at all. However, cigarettes and schnapps are a much needed stimulant and narcotic drug here. The SS smoke and drink. So do the *Sonderkommando* as well. By this route all sorts of necessary goods flow in, principally butter, ham, onions and eggs. The transports do not bring such things. Gold procurement happens on a collective basis, so distribution of the smuggled goods happens collectively as well. The crematorium commander as well as the other non-commissioned officers all get their share of cigarettes, schnapps and food in abundance. Everyone acts as if they know nothing of anything, indeed they do not want to, for there's advantage in it for everyone. The SS guards in the crematorium are very easy to handle one by one. They are afraid only of one another. The

*Sonderkommando* will not sell anyone out, of that they are sure. It is for this reason that the *Sonderkommando*'s agent hands over the cigarettes, schnapps and food allotted to the SS to each of them individually, one on one.

By the same route every morning the *Völkischer Beobachter*,<sup>58</sup> the Third Reich's official newspaper, arrives at the gate. Again, a railway foreman brings it. The price of subscription is one piece of gold. Anyone who will bring a newspaper into the K.Z. for a prisoner for 30 days has earned it.

Ever since I've been in the crematorium I have received the paper. I read it through in a secure hiding place and relate the daily news to the *Kommando* clerk. He passes it along to his comrades. Within a few minutes everyone knows the latest events.

The *Sonderkommando* are the nobility of the K.Z. They sleep in a heated, airy, clean room, on clean beds with soft pillows, under warm blankets, they have excellent provisions and excellent clothes. They have plenty to smoke and eat. Consequently they do not become brutalized like the people wallowing among the lice in the filthy boxes [*bokszáiban*]<sup>59</sup> of the camp, driven wild by hunger, who tear at each other with their teeth over a dropped piece of bread or half a potato.

They are noble in their behavior as well. They give something to everyone they come near. For days now a 500-member female road-building *Kommando* has been working in front of the gate. Two SS men and 3-4 bloodhounds guard them. They carry stones for the road. Some men of the *Sonderkommando*, with the permission of their own guards at the gate, make contact with the guards of the women's *Kommando*, passing a case of cigarettes across to them. Everything is arranged! Three or four of the women come up to our gate with pieces of stone in their hands as if they were working there, and receive the sweaters, shoes and pieces of clothing prepared for them. They also get cigarettes, bread, smoked lard. Group by group, the women come to the gate, group by group the *Sonderkommando* men hand out the gifts. This is a duty of honor. No one knows any of the women, yet hundreds of pieces of clothing, stockings, sweaters and cigarettes and soap are there for them to happily take away, only to repeat the scene the next day. In the crematorium's gigantic storeroom [*a krematórium óriási raktárában*] there are plenty of clothes, shoes, stockings! I would place the number of those whom the *Sonderkommando* helps in the thousands. Nor do I hold back from the action myself. I stuff my pockets with vitamin tablets, sulfamide powder for wounds, bandages, vials of tincture of iodine, I hasten back to my room three times, four times, to refill my emptied pockets with these precious, life-saving materials and deliver them to those who are so much in need of them.

---

<sup>58</sup> In German in the original.

<sup>59</sup> See Note 29 above.

After Crematorium number II, I carry out my patient-visiting duties in Crematoria III and IV. In number III, Greeks and Poles work alongside nearly 100 Hungarian deportees in the *Sonderkommando*. In number IV there are mostly Poles and Frenchmen.

Everywhere operations are in full swing. The Jews' ramp pours its death-marked victims forth from itself in a rushing frenzy, like a swollen river split into four branches [*mint négy ágra szakadt, duzzadt folyó*]. Shuddering, I observe everywhere the harmony, the machine-like efficiency, the order with which the murders are carried out. As if it were settled in for eternity. If I should ever become free again, whom could I tell of all the things that I see here, such that they might believe me? Spoken or written words cannot convey any idea of what is happening here. How futile, then, this effort of mine to photograph these things in my mind and record them in my memory!

## Chapter XII

I have a *Petit Larousse*<sup>60</sup> dictionary as well, in the map section of which I look up the place names that I read in the newspaper. Sitting in my room I study the situation on the western, southern and eastern fronts. Heavy steps approach; I quickly turn the page with the map on it. I look expectantly toward the door. My visitor is the commander of the crematorium. He tells me that an important commission is arriving at two o'clock this afternoon; the dissection hall should be made ready!

A lacquer-black, closed funeral hearse arrives first. It brings the deceased, the body of an SS captain. I have them place it on the dissecting table just as it is, in uniform.

The commission arrives at precisely the appointed time, all high-ranking officers in splendid uniforms. An SS doctor with the rank of colonel, a prosecutor, an examining magistrate, two inspectors from the Gestapo and a military court clerk make up the commission's membership. A few minutes later Dr. Mengele arrives.

I offer seats to the officers. They engage in a brief discussion. The inspectors present the circumstances of the body's discovery. The gunshot wounds testify to murder or assassination. The dead officer's pistol, still hanging in its holster on his belt, excludes the possibility of suicide.

One might assume murder by a fellow officer, or by a subordinate who had a grudge for some reason. Still, the possibility of assassination, which is a common enough partisan activity in majority-Polish Gleiwitz and its surroundings, comes more readily to mind.

---

<sup>60</sup> A French publisher of dictionaries. In French in the original.



The autopsy must determine, did the shot come from in front or behind? what type and what caliber of weapon was used? from what distance did the murder or assassination occur?

At the moment there is no forensic pathologist in Gleiwitz. As a result the corpse has been brought to the crematorium's dissection hall for the performance of the autopsy. The distance between Auschwitz and Gleiwitz is just 40 kilometers. This is the closest [facility].

I took part in the commission's discussion at a respectful distance as a listener, and waited with the patience of a K.Z. prisoner for Dr. Mengele's instructions.

That it might be permitted to me, a detainee in the K.Z., a Jewish prisoner, to contaminate by my touch the corpse of an SS officer, let alone to dissect it, I did not even dare to dream. After all, in this time of racial laws, even in my civilian life, I was banned from the medical treatment of Christian, or rather, Aryan patients.

I am very surprised, therefore, when Dr. Mengele turns to me and orders me to perform the autopsy. First of all one must undress the corpse, which is not an easy operation. In particular, pulling off the boots is a two-man job. I ask permission to call some people to carry this out. The commission keeps up a lively conversation and only absent-mindedly observes the undressing.

With the first incisions I must overcome a feeling of inferiority and stage fright. I make a transverse incision across the scalp and with rapid movements I pull one half over the corpse's face, the other below the neck. After that follows the more difficult task of sawing around and removing the top of the skull. The prescribed incisions proceed one after another in quick succession.

Next in order is the examination of the two gunshot wounds. In every gunshot injury two wounds are produced if the projectile passes through the body: the entrance wound and the exit wound. In the majority of cases they are easily distinguishable by specialists since the entrance wound is smaller than the exit wound. In the present case two exactly uniformly sized wounds are present, one below the left nipple and one at the top edge of the scapular region of the back.

The case is starting to become complicated and thus interesting. What could the reason be for the uniformity of the entrance and exit wounds? This is a circumstance in contradiction to practical experience, there must be an explanation for it. Dr. Mengele suddenly raises a possibility. Perhaps it was not one shot that passed through the body, but rather two shots, one from in front and one from behind, or vice versa. That might have happened if, after the first shot, he received the second shot while fallen and lying on the ground. The bullets never exited, so there are two entering shots, and hence two uniform wounds. A very natural conclusion. It must be tested. To that end I explore the wound canal. The shot, having passed through the myocardium and grazed the left side of the spinal column, proceeded at a 35-degree angle to the

top surface of the left scapula where, breaking off a small piece, it exited the body. – The situation is perfectly clear! There was one shot, in all probability from the front, since the wound canal proceeds at a 35-degree angle upwards from below, from front to back. The surface wounds are the same because in its trajectory the bullet grazed the spinal column, broke off a piece from the scapula and, thus spent, did not tear a larger wound when it exited the body.

No one shoots downwards from above at a 35-degree angle! To fire a shot like that one would have to raise one's arm straight up. That's too complicated. Nor did a partisan do it. There'd be no point, they can shoot straight. It thus is clear to me that the shot did not come from behind but rather from in front, from a revolver pointed upward at close range by an acquaintance or stranger who stopped him in his path for some reason. That, however, is a matter for further investigation. It seems that they are satisfied with even that much, indeed they declare that from now on all autopsy cases will be sent here for the purpose of evaluation.

They find that a very convenient and sound solution. Following this autopsy I thus became K.Z. forensic pathologist charged with performing forensic medical duties for the Gleiwitz district. Such a position could exist nowhere else in the world!

## Chapter XIII

Early one morning orders come to me by telephone that I should immediately proceed to the pyre and bring the medicines and eyeglasses gathered there to Crematorium I; from there, after sorting, they will be shipped out.

The pyre [*máglya*] lies behind the little birch forest of Birkenau [*a birkenau-i kis nyírfaerdő*], at a distance of five to six hundred meters from Crematorium IV [*a krematórium IV-től öt-hatszáz méter távolságra*] in a clearing surrounded by a stand of firs [*egy fenyőerdővel körülvett tisztáson*]. It lies outside the K.Z.'s electrical fences, between the first and second guard chain. My freedom of movement does not extend out there. I ask for written permission at the office [*irodában*]. I obtain a *Passierschein*<sup>61</sup> valid for three people. I'm taking with me, namely, two men who will assist me in bringing the packages here. We start off in the direction of the thickly billowing, dense, black column of smoke. Everyone whom misfortune has brought to this place sees this column of smoke. It is visible from every part of the camp. The terrified gaze of all who descend from the wagons and line up for selection immediately falls upon it. It was visible every hour of the day and night. During the day it covered the sky above the Birkenau woods like a dense cloud; at night it lit up the surroundings as if it were the flames of hell.

---

<sup>61</sup> "Exit pass." In German in the original.

On our way we pass alongside the crematorium. We reach open road; as soon as I show my pass to the SS guard on duty at the wire we pass through without difficulty. A bright, green, grassy clearing, it seems like a peaceful landscape, but my searching eye soon picks out the men of the second guard chain, stretching along about a hundred meters away from us, as they stand or sit in the tall grass next to their machine guns, accompanied by their enormous bloodhounds.

Crossing the clearing, we come to the entrance of the little stand of firs [*kis fenyőerdő*] that bounds it. Again we arrive before a barbed-wire fence and a barbed-wire-covered wooden gate. On the gate is a large warning sign with the same text as the signs hanging at the gates to the crematoria: "Entrance to this area is strictly prohibited to outsiders, even to outside SS personnel."<sup>62</sup> We, men of the *Sonderkommando*, just walk on in. We do not even have to show our pass. The crematorium SS perform the guard duties here, and doing the work are sixty men from Crematorium II, *Sonderkommando* men assigned to this place. This is the day duty group. They work from seven in the morning until seven in the evening, when they are replaced by the sixty men of the night shift, who are provided by Crematorium IV.

Passing through the gate we come to a courtyard-like area, in the midst of which stands a long, shabbily plastered, thatch-roofed house. Its little windows are covered over with wooden boards. It is built in the familiar form of a rural German peasant house. It is at least one hundred and fifty years old. That much is shown by the ancient, black, thatched roof as well as the many layers of plaster peeling from the walls. The German state appropriated the village of Birkenau near Auschwitz for the construction of the K.Z. They tore down all its houses with the exception of this one, and relocated the population elsewhere.

What was the actual purpose of this house before? As a dwelling? One with rooms separated from one another by walls, which had been converted into a single long room [*egyetlen hosszú helyiséggé*] for its new purpose by the removal of the partitions? Or was it indeed built originally as one large room, as a warehouse, or for another similar purpose? I do not know! Now it is an undressing room [*vetkezőhelyiség*]: those bound for death on the pyre take their clothes off here.

Those transports which will not fit into the four crematoria are directed here from the Jews' ramp. Theirs is the most terrible of ends. Here there are no water taps with which they might at least quench their burning thirst. There are no deceptive signs to dispel their forebodings. There is no gas chamber [*nincs gázkamara*] which they believe to be a shower room. Here there is only a thatch-roofed farmhouse, once painted yellow [*sárgára*], with shuttered

<sup>62</sup> In Hungarian in original: "Ezen területre a belépés idegennek, sőt idegen SS személyeknek is szigorúan tiltva van."

windows, and behind it in turn, an enormous column of smoke rising to the sky, diffusing the scorched smell of burning human flesh and hair.

A crowd of around 5,000 souls is standing in numb terror in the courtyard. Surrounding them stands a thick chain of SS with enormous bloodhounds on leashes. They go into the undressing room three to four hundred at a time. There, driven along in a hail of truncheon blows, they quickly lay aside their clothes and exit by the door on the other side of the house, making room for those following after them.

Stepping out the door, they do not even have time to look around them and realize the horror of their situation, for right away the *Sonderkommando* seize them by each arm [*karon is ragadja őket egy-egy Sonderkommandós*] and take them between a gauntlet of SS guards along a tree-lined, winding path about 150 meters in length to the pyre [*egy fáktól szegélyezett, kanyargós, körülbelül 150 méter hosszú úton a máglyához*], which they only catch sight of at the very end of their journey, as they emerge from the wooded path.

The pyre is a ditch 50 meters long, 6 meters wide and 3 meters deep, filled with hundreds of burning corpses. Along the edge of the pyre facing the wooded path, at a distance of 5-6 meters from each other, SS soldiers stand with weapons in their hands, 6-millimeter small-caliber weapons used for the shot to the back of the neck. As they emerge from the wooded path, two *Sonderkommando* men working at the pyre grab the unfortunate victims by the arm on either side and carry them before one of the SS shooters' weapons, 15-20 meters away. Amid the horrid screaming, here too the shot sounds out with a muffled crack. The shot sounds out, and the victim, generally only half dead, is thrown into the sea of fire in the ditch. Fifty meters from this ditch there is another identical ditch in full operation.

Here at the pyres the commander is *Oberscharführer* Moll. As a doctor and eye-witness [*mint orvos és mint szemtanú*], I affirm that he is the Third Reich's cruelest, coldest, most fanatical murderer. Even Dr. Mengele occasionally displayed a human side. When, during selection on the ramp, he observed that some vigorous young woman wanted at all costs to go with her mother to the left, he would yell at her roughly and order her back to the right. Even *Oberscharführer* Mussfeld, the chief shooter of Crematorium I, would shoot one more round into those victims who did not die immediately from the shot to the back of the neck. *Oberscharführer* Moll wastes no time on such things. For the most part people wind up in the fire alive, and a thousand times woe to the *Sonderkommando* man by whose fault the human conveyor belt flowing from the undressing room to the pyre should get stuck somewhere and some of the shooters standing at the edge of the pyre [*a máglya szélén álló*] thus be forced to wait a few minutes for their next victim.

Moll is everywhere, moving tirelessly around the pyres and along the path from the pyres to the undressing room. The majority of those led from the undressing room to the pyres allow themselves to be moved along without re-

sistance. They are so paralyzed by numbness and fear that perhaps they do not even know what is happening to them. Such, in large part, are the elderly and children. However, there are young people who wind up here too. They try to resist with all the desperate strength of their instinct for self-preservation. If Moll notices such a scene along the line of the human conveyor belt he draws his gun from his always-open holster. A loud shot, often at a distance of 40-50 meters away, and the troublemaker drops, dead, from the *Sonderkommando*'s hands. Moll counts as a master shot. He has shot through the arm of many a *Sonderkommando* man if he has been dissatisfied with his work, but always only the arm, all without any shout or prior warning.

The daily capacity of the two pyres is 5,000-6,000 dead [*a két máglya napi teljesítménye 5-6 ezer halott*], a little more than a crematorium's, but the death of those who wind up here is a hundred thousand times [*százezerszer*] worse. They die a double death here, death by a shot to the back of the neck and death by fire.

After death by gas, by chloroform injection and by a shot to the back of the neck, this is the fourth type of death which I have encountered, the combined death [*a kombinált halál*].

I gather up the medicines and eyeglasses left behind. With my brain in a fog, with legs trembling with emotion, I start for "home," Crematorium I, which to use Dr. Mengele's words, "is no sanatorium, but a man gets on quite tolerably there." After the pyre, he's absolutely right!

Arriving home, I head for my room. I do not group the medicines today, I do not organize the eyeglasses. I take some Luminal and go to bed. Today's dose of Luminal is 30 centigrams. Perhaps it will be effective against pyre disease.

## Chapter XIV

The next day I awaken to be witness to another incident. Every day here has its incident, some horror never imagined by me before. I hear from one of the *Sonderkommando* men – they know everything – that there is a complete barracks lockdown [*teljes barakkzárlat*] in the K.Z., which means that not a soul can leave the barracks. The SS soldiers and their police dogs make sure of this, for today they are liquidating the Czech section of the camp.

The Czech camp was formed from fifteen thousand people brought here from the Theresienstadt ghetto. It had the character of a family camp, like the Gypsy camp. They did not undergo selection upon their arrival. Old, young, children, all in their own clothes, they were able to live a difficult but still tolerable life together. They performed no work.

Thus they had lived for two years [*két évig*], until the moment of destruction arrived for them too. K.Z. Auschwitz is an extermination camp! It is only a question of time when the final hour will strike for its inhabitants.

One after another, the Hungarian Jewish transports arrive at the ramp. It often happens that two trains will arrive together and pour forth from their insides thousands of people.

What Dr. Mengele does at the ramp cannot even be called selection anymore. His arm moves in only one direction. To the left! Entire trains [*egész vonatok*] thus go, without remainder, into the gas chambers or onto the pyres.

The quarantine camp, Camp C, Camp D, the Fkl<sup>63</sup> sector, all are crammed with people despite the daily transports of thousands [*többezres*] heading out to other, more distant camps.

The elderly of the Czech camp, its youth, weakened by the sufferings of two years passed in the K.Z., even its children, wasted away to skin and bones, now had to give up their places to new arrivals capable of work.

There had already been a worsening in their situation in the preceding weeks. Their food rations had to be reduced after the arrival of the first Hungarian transports, and a few weeks later, when huge crowds now filled the camp and their provisioning confronted the camp commanders with an almost impossible task, provisioning of the Czech camp ceased almost entirely.

They were truly mad with hunger! Their systems, already so weakened otherwise, fell apart completely in days. Diarrhea, dysentery and petechial typhus decimated them! Every day they had 50-60 dead. This intelligent people lived through indescribable suffering in the last few days until the hour of liberation arrived for them, the hour of annihilation!

The barracks lockdown was declared already from early morning across the whole area of the camp. Several companies of SS soldiers surrounded the Czech camp and forced the people to form ranks. As they were loaded onto trucks, the screaming of those awaiting transport was terrible to hear. They knew what was awaiting them; they had lived for two years in the K.Z. The number of inhabitants in the Czech camp on the day of the liquidation was twelve thousand. Fifteen hundred men and women still capable of work and eight doctors were selected out from among them; the rest ended up in Crematoria II and III. The next day, the Czech camp, inhabited for two years, was deserted. In Crematoria II and III also everything was still. I saw a truck loaded with ashes pull out from the crematorium and make its way in the direction of the Vistula River.

The camp's numbers had been reduced by ten thousand heads, and the K.Z. archives had been increased by one piece of paper. On the piece of paper stood a brief report: "The section of Concentration Camp Auschwitz inhabited by Czechs, the so-called Czech camp, has been liquidated due to a high inci-

---

<sup>63</sup> Abbreviation in the original. It stands for *Frauenkonzentrationslager*, or "women's concentration camp."

dence of cases of petechial typhus!” Signed: Dr. Mengele, *Hauptsturmführer*, *I. Lagerarzt*.<sup>64</sup>

The eight doctors from the Czech camp, whom Dr. Mengele allowed to live at the intercession of Professor Dr. Epstein, some completely shattered in health and nerves from the physically and mentally grinding work of the last weeks, in which they displayed for their patients a care which knew neither fear of danger nor fatigue, some infected with petechial typhus themselves, wound up in the Camp “F” hospital barracks as patients. The day after the liquidation I went on official business into Camp “F,” where I chatted with them, and so with the renowned Prague physician Dr. Heller, former chief physician of the Czech camp, as well. From him I heard recounted the sufferings and ruin of the finest flower of Czech Jewry. Since that day, the eight doctors have died as well. They were true doctors! With profound respect I pay tribute to their memory!

## Chapter XV

Located next to the Czech camp is Camp C, the camp for Hungarian women; the number of its inhabitants often reaches 60,000, despite the transports transferred each day to more-distant camps. In this overcrowded camp it happened one day that the doctors found symptoms of scarlet fever among a few of the inhabitants of one of the barracks. On Dr. Mengele’s orders, this barracks as well as the ones lying to its left and right were placed under lockdown. The barracks lockdown lasted from morning to evening, when trucks arrived and took the inhabitants of all three barracks to the crematorium. Such were the effective measures ordered by Dr. Mengele for containing the spread of epidemic disease.

The Czech camp and the three barracks of Camp C thus fell victim to Dr. Mengele’s actions to contain the epidemic. Fortunately, the barracks doctors caught on in good time, and if an infectious disease raised its head anywhere, they were careful not to bring it to the attention of the SS medical authorities. If possible, they hid such patients in some out-of-the-way box<sup>29</sup> in the barracks and cared for them according to the meager means available, but they did not refer them to the hospital because there the SS doctors check the patients every day, and the emergence of an infectious disease could bring on the complete liquidation of the patient’s respective barracks, as well as 2-3 of the neighboring barracks. In the medical jargon of the SS, this method is known as broad-based epidemic containment. The result of an action is 1-2 truckloads of ashes. During my time as a public-health official at home, I too used this

---

<sup>64</sup> Signature in German in original. *Hauptsturmführer* is an SS rank equivalent to captain; *I.* here is a Roman numeral, the period indicating that the number is used as an ordinal (“first”); *Lagerarzt* means “camp physician.”

expression. The practice of broad-based epidemic containment was implemented such that, for example in a case of typhus or diphtheria, the patient discovered to be infectious would be isolated and the area surrounding the patient's home, often the inhabitants of one or two streets, would be provided with preventive vaccinations. Other countries, other customs!

After these preliminaries, one morning a couple of female corpses are brought over from the hospital in Camp B II, sent by Dr. Mengele to be autopsied. As usual, I simultaneously receive descriptions of the deceased women's disease progress as well as their treatment charts. I read them over carefully. Entered under the heading for diagnosis is abdominal typhus [*hastifusz*],<sup>65</sup> under the heading for cause of death, heart failure, in both cases accompanied by a question mark.

I am not the overly deliberate type, someone who first weighs everything up and then acts. I decide quickly and I act quickly, especially in important matters. It does not always turn out well! I have my quick thinking to thank for my existence here after all.

Now too I decide quickly. It would never do for Dr. Mengele to obtain a diagnosis of typhus from me as a result of the autopsy of the two corpses! The description of the two deceased women's illness is full of holes, the diagnosis is marked as a question. Dr. Mengele is not sure of himself in this matter! The autopsy findings will be decisive for him. That is why he sent the two corpses for dissection.

I perform the autopsy; the small intestines of both corpses display the ulcerous condition of third-week abdominal typhus. The spleens are swollen in both of them as well. In both cases it's clearly typhus.

At the usual hour, around five in the afternoon, Dr. Mengele arrives, and with his cheerful face which hides so much cruelty, comes to me and asks me eagerly about the results of the autopsy. The two corpses are lying on the table, open. The small and large intestines as well as the spleens from both corpses, washed and opened, are in separate vessels, ready for examination.

I announce the diagnosis: inflammation of the small intestine, with diffuse ulceration of the intestines. I give a talk to Dr. Mengele about the ulcerous condition of third-week-stage typhus, comparing it with the formation of ulcers which likewise occurs in inflammation of the small intestine. I point out to him that swelling of the spleen is also frequent in inflammation of the intestines, so this is not typhus, but rather a severe inflammation of the small intestine, probably arising from botulism.

Dr. Mengele is a race biologist, not a pathologist. It was not difficult to get him to accept my diagnosis. The confusion, however, irritated him, and turn-

<sup>65</sup> An older name for typhoid fever, a waterborne disease distinct from typhus, which is spread by lice. Nyiszli uses *hastifusz* and *tifusz* ("typhus") indistinguishably in discussing the disease in the paragraphs that follow.



ing to me he expressed his opinion that those women doctors who commit such serious errors in the diagnosis of illnesses would be of far greater use to the K.Z. carrying rocks than in the hospital where, as a result of incorrect diagnoses, patients who might have been saved end up dying.

He takes the autopsy protocol with him, but before he places it in his briefcase he writes a note on the margin of the file. I am standing behind his back; I read over his shoulder: *Rücksprache m. Aerztinnen*,<sup>66</sup> which freely translated means, calling to account of the women doctors. I regret very much that I quite innocently have put my female colleagues in a difficult situation, for indeed they produced a magnificent diagnosis. Now they could lose their posts and wind up in a road construction *Kommando* doing hard physical labor. I will be the cause of it all should Dr. Mengele carry out his threat.

I'm too self-critical! I admit, I have violated the medical ethics in force beyond the electrified barbed wire. I have placed two or three people in a difficult situation. However, on what sort of "broad base" might Dr. Mengele have carried out his usual methods of typhus-epidemic containment had I not done so?

The next day I receive reassuring news regarding the women doctors. Doctor Mengele chewed them out; nothing else happened. They continued to do their jobs. Plenty of corpses still came to me with plenty of patient records, but after that not one had the box for diagnosis filled in. I wanted it that way myself; it was for the best.

Dr. Mengele's indignation over the fact that it was not possible to save the lives of two unfortunate women on account of a mistaken diagnosis troubled me for days afterward. Such cynicism coupled with such evil, in a man who is a doctor! More than a doctor, an evil-doing doctor, a *Kriminaldoktor*!<sup>67</sup>

## Chapter XVI

One morning I receive a message from Dr. Mengele that I am to join him immediately at the Camp "F" commandant's office. I obey the order with pleasure. For a few hours I can free myself from the oppressive atmosphere of the crematorium. A little walking would not hurt. After the stench of the dissection hall and the crematorium, the fresh air will do me good. It fills me with pleasure as well that I will be able to reacquaint myself with my Camp "F" colleagues, who were so kind to me when I was their guest during the first days of my K.Z. career. I prepare for the trip, an act which consists of stuffing my pockets with valuable medicines and grabbing a few packages of cigarettes. I do not want to visit my former lodgings, Hospital Barracks 12, with empty pockets. That would not do for a *Sonderkommando* man.

<sup>66</sup> In German in the original. Literally translated, "consultation with [the] women doctors."

<sup>67</sup> In German in the original. See Note 53 above.

I pass through the crematorium's iron gate; the guard standing there records my number, I set off in the direction of Camp "F." I do not hurry; I want to enjoy this short outing. As I pass along the wire of the "FKL" women's camp, I see thousands upon thousands of women coming and going among the camp's barracks. They are all alike and repulsive with their shaved heads and tattered clothing. I think of my wife and my 15-year-old daughter, the rich curls of their wavy hair and their clothes, carefully planned in long family discussions. It is already three months [*három hónapja*] since we parted from each other on the ramp! What has happened to them since then? Did they stay together? Are they still here in some part of the K.Z. Auschwitz women's camp, or have they gone on to some more-distant camp of the Third Reich? Three months is a long time! In the K.Z. it is an immensely long time, and yet I somehow feel they are here, but where? Which is the wire fence, among so many, that keeps them imprisoned? A difficult question. Wherever my eyes look, it is nothing but barbed wire to the horizon here, plus concrete posts and warning signs. The whole K.Z. is nothing but barbed wire, the whole of Germany is nothing but a barbed-wire fence, a giant K.Z.

I arrive before the gate of Camp "F." A *Blockführerstube*,<sup>68</sup> that is, a camp guard office, controls entrance at the gate. A rough-faced SS NCO and a private are on duty here. I walk up to the guardroom's little window, roll up the sleeve of my jacket, and in regulation form announce my number – "A-8450" – the number on my tattoo. As I roll up my sleeve one can see I have a wristwatch, the wearing of which counted as one of the most serious of crimes in the K.Z.; however, I have permission from Dr. Mengele, I need it for my work. Like an angry tiger, the SS NCO comes springing out of the guardroom and in a hoarse roar demands to know at once what am I looking for in Camp "F" and how dare I wear a wristwatch? Three months in the crematorium is a real education! I stand unflinching and, looking him right in the eye, I respond: "I am not looking for anything here, I'm coming to the camp on the orders of Dr. Mengele. He wants to speak to me, but if it's not possible to enter then I will return to the crematorium and telephone him."

Dr. Mengele's name is a magical name! Everyone is afraid of him. My SS man becomes tame again in an instant, and he asks politely, how long would I like to stay in the camp? He has to write it down, you see. I look at my watch – no comment from him now – it shows 10 o'clock. "I will stay until 2 p.m., until I finish the job for Dr. Mengele," I say, and taking from my pocket a package of twenty cigarettes I give him a few out of it so he'll have something to smoke till I get back! He accepts them happily. Now we salute one another quite amicably, he all but tells me that he'd be glad to see me again.

<sup>68</sup> In German in the original. Literally, the room (*Stube*) of the *Blockführer*, the non-commissioned SS officer in charge of a single barracks (*Block*) of prisoners.

At any rate, Dr. Mengele's name, the crematorium and the cigarettes have worked their effect on the SS slave. Now I can spend a couple of hours in the company of my colleagues undisturbed. First, however, I must get done with Dr. Mengele.

I enter the commandant's barracks; I wait in the anteroom until the man on duty asks me what errand brings me there? He indicates a door, I pass through it into a well-furnished study. The walls are covered with charts which show the population make-up of the K.Z. at various periodic intervals. On one wall is a photograph of a bespectacled Himmler, a large rotogravure print in an ornate frame. Three men are sitting in the room, Dr. Mengele, *Hauptsturmführer* Dr. Thilo, chief surgeon, and *Obersturmführer* Dr. Wolff,<sup>69</sup> chief of internal medicine. Dr. Mengele explains to Dr. Wolff, who has not met me before, that I am the crematorium's forensic pathologist. Wolff begins to talk to me. He tells me that he is very interested in anatomical pathology and would have gone to the crematorium before now to watch an interesting autopsy here or there, but he has not had the time for it. Now, however, he is working on a most significant scientific study; indeed he has summoned me precisely so he can discuss it with me. In the camp, he explains, chronic diarrhea is terribly common and has a 90% fatality rate. Clinically speaking he is thoroughly versed in the course of the disease; he has performed many thousands of examinations to date. He keeps extremely precise records of them. His work, however, is not yet perfected, for along with clinical examination during the processing of a large patient cohort, an indispensable condition for it is the anatomopathological processing of large numbers of individual corpses dead from diarrhea. Everything is clear to me now. So Dr. Wolff too is a researcher? Amid the atmosphere of steaming blood and crematorium smoke at K.Z. Auschwitz, he too wants to profit from the disease symptoms of the many hundreds of thousands [*sokszázezer*] of shrunken, 30-kilogram human wrecks stricken with diarrhea, and through the autopsy of large numbers of corpses he wants to reveal those internal manifestations of the disease that have to date remained elusive to medical science.

Dr. Mengele wants to reveal the secret of the propagation of the species through the processing of the unlimited human material available, namely, twin material. Dr. Wolff researches the causes of diarrhea. And yet these causes are known to all. The recipe for producing diarrhea is as follows. Take a person, a woman or man or an innocent growing child, tear them from their home, put a hundred of them in a freight wagon, and having plundered them of everything they own send them on a journey, after six weeks in a ghetto, with a single bucket of stagnant water to Auschwitz, then cram them with thousands of others into barracks originally designed as stables for horses, give them 700 calories per day of moldy bread made from horse chestnuts

---

<sup>69</sup> No doctor of this name is recorded in contemporary documents.

[*vadgesztenyelisztből*], margarine made from lignite [*lignitszénből*], and 30 grams worth of watery salami ground from the flesh of mangy horses [*rühes lovak húsból*]. The victim washes this down with half a liter of nettle or turnip soup, cooked without fat, flour or salt; thus in 4-5 days the diarrhea is ready, and in 3-4 weeks the victim is "better," having died despite all efforts at medical intervention.

Dr. Wolff expresses the view that, for the anatomopathological part of his scientific work, autopsy material from at least 150 corpses will be necessary. Dr. Mengele joins in our conversation as well, reckoning that I get through 7 autopsies per day so I should be able to prepare the 150 corpses in three weeks. I do not share their view on this, and I declare in the most explicit terms that, if they want serious, accurate work, which I do not doubt, then under no circumstances would I undertake the processing of more than three corpses. On this we agree.

I am dismissed with a brief nod of the head. I seek out my colleagues in hospital Barracks 12. They receive my medicines with thanks, they smoke my cigarettes, but in their faces and in their words I sense the symptoms of depression and fatigue. They are still under the effect of the Czech camp's sad end. Little by little the hopelessness of their fate is beginning to overcome them, even as happened to me, though with this difference, that it became apparent to me not little by little but rather in an instant, when I stepped through the crematorium gate.

I encourage them; I urge them to persevere. I describe to them the military situation, which is developing ever more favorably for us. I read the newspaper every day. I have the means to inform them exhaustively.

We say goodbye with a warm handshake. In the K.Z. parting and saying goodbye always signifies a little act of dying.

In any case I owe my vanity this much that I note that I am a strong personality indeed if, in my current situation, I am able to encourage others.

## Chapter XVII

One after another, the corpses of *Obersturmführer* Dr. Wolff's dead diarrhea patients go under the scalpel. I have reached the thirtieth autopsy already; I summarize the results of my work so far. In every case, the mucous membrane of the stomach displays an inflammatory process, the consequence of which is the burning out, or rather complete atrophy, of the glands which excrete digestive juices, and stomach acid in particular. In the absence of digestive juice there is no digestion, but worse, there is fermentation! As the result of my second observation I note the inflamed condition of the mucous membranes of the small intestine, together with a complete thinning out of the intestinal wall. My third observation concerns the most important digestive juice in the small intestine, bile, an indispensable factor in the digestion of fats. Upon opening

the gall bladder, in place of yellow-green bile I find a colorless, slimy liquid; it scarcely tints the stool; it is incapable of fulfilling its digestive function. My fourth observation is the inflammation of the mucous membranes of the large intestine and the complete atrophy of the intestinal walls, their thinning and fragility, like cigarette paper. These are no longer digestive channels, but rather sewage channels: if something is poured in above, it exits below a few minutes later. These observations constitute, in broad terms comprehensible to laypersons, my findings. A very monotonous, uninteresting job! That much is my business! The bacteriological tests are probably carried out by an institute established in the town of Reisgau<sup>70</sup> some two to three kilometers from the crematorium, which is known officially as the "Institute for Hygiene and Bacteriology of the Waffen-SS" and where one of my companions in misfortune, the celebrated Professor Dr. Mansfeld,<sup>71</sup> a teacher at the Bacteriological Institute at the University of Pecs, is in charge of operations.

## Chapter XVIII

I am taking my afternoon break in my room when *Oberscharführer* Mussfeld opens the door and enters pushing three unfamiliar men in prison garb before him. He informs me that I am getting some new colleagues from Dr. Mengele and, extending an arm toward them, casts a pitying glance on the unfortunate fellows.

The poor fellows are a pitiable sight as they stand there in their dirty prisoners' clothes, in a silence born of deadly numbness, abashed by the novelty of the environment. They too immediately realized the hopelessness of their situation as they passed through the gate to the building.

I extend a friendly hand to them; we introduce ourselves. The first whose hand I shake is Dr. Görög Dénes, a private university lecturer and pathologist at the State Public Hospital of Szombathely. He is a short, thin man of about forty-five years of age who wears thick glasses. He makes a good impression on me. I have the feeling that we will be good friends. The second is a short, stocky individual of about fifty years of age, with a hunched back and a very ugly face. He is Fischer Adolf,<sup>72</sup> autopsy assistant for twenty years at the Prague Institute of Anatomy. As a Czech Jew, he has been an inmate of the K.Z. for five years already. The third is Dr. Körner Józef, a physician from Nice, inmate of the K.Z. for four years already. A taciturn but qualified young man, he is only thirty-two years old.

In order to facilitate the rapid completion of the expanded work, Dr. Mengele has fished them out of the filthy barracks of Camp "D" and sent

---

<sup>70</sup> In German in the original; no such town exists. Nyiszli has mistaken Polish "Rajsko" ("Raisko"), the name of a village some three kilometers southwest of Auschwitz, for a German name.

<sup>71</sup> Gezar Mansfeld, doctor at the *Häftlingskrankenbau* (inmate infirmary) of Camp Section BIIf.

<sup>72</sup> Nyiszli gives the three men's names Hungarian-style, last name first.

them to me as assistants for the performance of the ever-growing number of autopsies. I will remain the leader responsible for research work going forward, only the preparation of correspondence, archives and autopsy protocols will be my primary task from now on. The two doctors will help with the autopsies, and the autopsy assistant, in keeping with his calling, will prepare the corpses. He will saw off the skullcap, remove the individual organs and prepare them for examination. After the autopsy he will clear away the corpse. He will keep the dissection hall and the laboratory in order. It seems I have gotten some considerable assistants for my work, which means a big relief for me. There's just one problem! At Dr. Mengele's express order, I also have to share my room with the three of them!

The change brings with it numerous disadvantages of every kind. With four people, the previously spacious room becomes crowded. It means the surrender of most of my comforts, but undeniably there are advantages to the new situation as well. After all, we are sharing, social beings, in this case, sharing in misfortune.

## Chapter XIX

I have finished my morning rounds visiting patients. In all four of the crematoria operations are in full swing. Last night they burned the Greek Jewry of the Mediterranean island of Corfu, one of the oldest faith communities in Europe. For twenty-seven days [*huszonhét napi*] they were hauled along, first on barges, then in closed freight cars, without food or water. When they arrived at the ramp of Auschwitz extermination camp and the wagons were opened so that they could disembark and line up for selection, no one got out! Half of them were dead and the other half were in a state of unconsciousness, dying. The entire transport, right to the last man, went to Crematorium II. All night long the plant worked at full capacity. In the morning nothing remained of them but a great pile of dirty, ragged clothes in the crematorium courtyard. It was a heart-rending sight as it soaked in the drizzling rain. My glance wanders over the crematorium chimney: the lightning rods placed at the square chimney's four corners, all heavy iron rods, have melted from the terrible fire and are now bent downwards.

During my rounds at Crematorium IV today I had serious work to do. One of the *Sonderkommando* stokers had taken a large quantity of Luminal with the intention of committing suicide. This is the most common form of suicide here. The *Sonderkommando* men come by Luminal easily. Plenty of it is collected every day from the baggage left behind by the victims. I approach the patient's bed and to my dismay I recognize in it the "Captain." That is the only way he is known to everyone in the *Kommando*, no one knew his name. At home, in Athens, as a captain in active service he was tutor to the King of Greece's children. An endlessly polite, intelligent man, he has been a resident

of the K.Z. for three years. His wife and two children went to the gas upon the hour of their arrival. He is lying in his bed unconscious, in a deep sleep. He took the poisonous substance some hours ago, it appears; he has already absorbed it. I do not take his condition to be life-threatening, not for the moment. At first the *Sonderkommando* men standing around the bed ask me quietly to let the Captain “go on his way,” to not do anything, for with his survival we would only be prolonging the psychological torments, which he wanted to escape from. The twelfth *Sonderkommando*’s life term expires in a couple of weeks anyway! When they see that their arguments have no effect on me and that I am going to inject some medicines, a few of the older K.Z. residents become quite angry and in a none-too-gentle tone express their contrary views regarding my life-saving intentions. I let them complain. So long as he does not catch hypostatic pneumonia, the captain should pull through in four to five days. For a few more weeks he will shovel coke and stoke the hellish fire [*éleszteni a pokoli tüzet*] beneath the dead bodies [*holttestei alá*] of thousands of his tortured and overworked brethren sent to die in the gas, and when a certain day arrives, the last day of the *Sonderkommando*, he too will join the line. A hail of fire, and he falls bloodily beside his dead comrades, a mixture of terror and astonishment in his eyes. Now that I am away from the patient’s bed and his suffering face does not call on the twenty-years-a-doctor “me” for help, the human “me” must admit that the captain’s comrades were completely in the right. I should have let him “go on his way,” not before the cold barrels of steely-blue machine pistols, but rather in a Luminal stupor, free from psychological torture and pain.

My rounds are completed. I return to Crematorium I. I look in on the dissection hall; my new men are dissecting Dr. Wolff’s diarrhea corpses with the diligent zeal of beginners. They are freshly shaven, their shirts are clean, their clothes are new, they have fine shoes on their feet, they have been given back their human form. As they stand around the dissecting table in their white lab coats, yellow rubber aprons around their necks, rubber gloves on their hands, the dissection hall and laboratory could create the impression of a serious scientific institute in a specialist unfamiliar with the work carried on here. I am an expert and I have been working here for three months now! This is not a scientific institute, but rather a pseudoscientific institute! A pseudoscientific institute built on false theories! Just as race research is built upon a false theory, the idea of a superior race is pseudoscientific; so too is Dr. Mengele’s twin-research work pseudoscientific and based on a false theory. False as well, and leading to massacre here, is the degenerative theory of dwarves and cripples with which they hope to prove the inferiority of the Jewish race. Not now, and not to today’s generation of Germans – they still might not believe it – but after the victorious conclusion of the war! In the airy halls of great museums there will stand the dwarves and cripples massacred here, the owners, by right of birth, of the skeletons prepared for this purpose, fitted with supports and

provided with precise labels indicating name and age. Every year on the anniversary of the Third Reich's gloriously concluded racist war for *Lebensraum*, the students of the thousand-year Reich's schools will file into these museums under the guidance of their teachers. The teachers will explain the significance of the day, the day of victory. With this victory, called to greatness by the superiority of their race, not only have they confined the neighboring French, Belgian, Russian and Polish peoples within limits appropriate to their inferiority, but they have completely eradicated from Europe a people, the Jewish people, which, despite counting six thousand years of history, has had no right to exist for centuries now, because in the course of their thousands of years of existence they have degenerated into dwarves and cripples. With the admixture of their blood they had profaned and threatened with degeneration the one pure race, the Aryan race!

With the admixture of their blood they had become harmful to the great race! They had become dangerous because their brilliant scientists, writers, businessmen and financiers had amassed such power by then that they were poised to force Europe beneath their complete domination! For this the first *Führer*<sup>73</sup> of the Third Reich had inscribed his name in the book of immortals and gained the gratitude and respect of the entire civilized world, because he had exterminated this race!

On the basis of such false theories they carry on their war against an entire world and exterminate, right down to the suckling infants, the Jewish population of Europe, brought here for that purpose. Everything in this country is false! They call the bloodbath of war a crusade. In their eyes, the whole of Russia is a wild Mongolian steppe! France is the land of a people drowned in syphilis and in the midst of dying out! The English, from the Prime Minister on down, all have *delirium tremens* from too much Scotch whisky! On the other hand, the Japanese people, the most slant-eyed of Mongol stock, are honorary Aryans, because their interests for the moment require it. Their whole life is false! Their daughters and war widows can bear children by anyone at all, and give them any name at all from among the innumerable names of those to whom they offer themselves. The multiplication of the race requires it!

Their whole financial system is based on false foundations. Countless times they have trumpeted to the world that the foundational value of the National-Socialist Third Reich is not gold, but work! And yet, in a facility established specifically for this purpose, every day they smelt 30-40 kilos of gold from the teeth of Jews brought here and murdered. But I will not go on, for then I would have to mention the sign found on the facade of the crematoria's underground rooms which falsely declares to the world in seven languages

---

<sup>73</sup> Nyiszli capitalizes *Vezér* ("leader") here, presumably intending it as an equivalent for the German title *Führer*.



that it is a bath here when in fact it is a gas chamber! On the canisters containing the cyclon gas it says that it is a poison for exterminating bedbugs and lice when in fact it kills humans within a few seconds [*néhány másodperc alatt*]! Another thought comes to mind! Perhaps the warnings on the signs hanging on the K.Z.'s electrified barbed wire are false as well! Perhaps there really is no current in the supposedly 6000-volt wire! And yet this one thing must be true, for I saw with my own eyes how *Oberscharführer* Mussfeld's giant police dog once touched the wire beside the crematorium gate and instantly died.

Speaking of signs, I should mention the sign, read by every former prisoner of the K.Z., that exhorted: "Work makes you free" [*A munka szabaddá tesz*].<sup>74</sup> This, as I saw, translated into real terms such that on one occasion three wagons stopped in front of the crematorium, and a group of men with lemon-yellow faces, all wasted away to skin and bones, staggered down from them. They numbered three hundred. When they entered the crematorium courtyard I struck up a conversation with them. They told me that they set out three months ago from Auschwitz Camp "D" in a transport of three thousand people. They had worked in a sulfuric-acid factory; many of them had died from various diseases. They themselves, the three hundred, had gotten sulfur poisoning, hence their lemon-yellow complexions. They had been selected out and set *en masse* to go to a rest camp.

A half hour later I saw their bloodied corpses laid out before the cremation furnaces. Work makes you free! A rest camp! Are these not infernal proceedings? There are a few more of them! In June or July, it happened that 100,000 postcards were handed out among the inhabitants of the overcrowded barracks, everyone being required to write one to an acquaintance. They were given strict orders that they should write as return address not Auschwitz or Birkenau but rather "Am Waldsee"!<sup>75</sup> The only place with such a name is on the Swiss border! The postcards went out, replies even arrived for them. I was an eyewitness as they burned the letters sent in reply, about 50,000 of them, on a bonfire set in the crematorium courtyard. It would not have been possible to deliver them anyway, for the addressees themselves had been burned before the replies to their postcards arrived. Thus was it all contrived. The goal was to reassure and mislead world public opinion.

## Chapter XX

In the gas chamber of Crematorium I, 3000 corpses are lying in a heap. The *Sonderkommando* men are already picking apart the dead bodies clasped together in the tower of corpses [*hullatorony*]. From my room I hear the rumble of the elevators [*felvonók*], the banging of their doors. The work proceeds at a

<sup>74</sup> Nyiszli translates the German phrase "Arbeit macht frei."

<sup>75</sup> Literally, "at Waldsee." In German in the original.

rapid tempo. The gas chamber must be freed up. The arrival of a fresh transport has been announced!

The leader of the gas *Kommando* [gázkommandó] practically runs through the door to me and excitedly informs me that during the separation of the corpses they found a woman still alive at the bottom of the heap.

I grab my always-packed doctor's bag and race with him down to the gas chamber. Directly next to the wall near the entrance to the enormous room, half-buried by corpses, a young woman's body writhes and gives off gasping noises. The men of the gas *Kommando* stand around me in agitation. Such a thing has never happened in their horrible work! We free the still-moving body from the corpses lying on top of it. I take it in my arms. I carry it, the slight body of a young girl, into the room next to the gas chamber [*a gázkamara mellett levő helyiségbe*]. Here the gas *Kommando* was accustomed to change for their work. I lay the child on a bench, I reckon she is 15 years old. I pull out my injection kit and I give the scarcely breathing, unconscious girl three injections one after another in her arms. My men cover the ice-cold body with a heavy coat. One of them runs to the kitchen [*konyhára*] to bring hot tea or soup. Everyone wants to help, as if she were their own child. And our efforts have an effect too! A fit of coughing which seizes the child brings forth a thick lump of mucus from her lungs. She opens her eyes and stares up at the ceiling of the room. I intently observe every sign of life. Her breathing grows ever deeper. Her gas-tortured lungs hungrily gulp down air. As a result of the injections I gave, her pulse is already beating quite noticeably. I wait patiently: the injections have not yet been completely absorbed, but I already see that in just a few more minutes she will come around. And so it happens. Her fine-featured little face becomes flushed from the ever increasing circulation of blood, her eyes take on conscious intelligence. She looks around with great astonishment, her gaze running over us. She closes her eyes again; she still does not know what is happening to her. She still cannot understand the present. She does not even know, is this reality? Clearly a veil of fog still clouds her understanding! In some more-lucid patch of her young brain she remembers a long line of wagons with which she arrived here. Then she got into line and before she was even aware of it she was being dragged along with the great crowd. She arrived in a brightly lit, large underground room. Everything happened so quickly! She also remembers that everyone had to undress! This gave her a very bad feeling, but everyone had done it. Thus, naked, she was borne along into another large room. Everyone suddenly became very nervous. Here too the lights were very bright. Fearfully, she runs her eyes over the closely huddled crowd. She cannot find her family. Pressing herself against the wall, she waits for what will happen. Suddenly complete darkness surrounds her. Something burns her eyes, stifles her throat. She collapses! Here the light of her memories is extinguished.

Her movements become more and more vigorous. She raises her arms, her head, she looks left and right with jerking movements of her face. She grabs my coat by the collar, clutching it spasmodically, she uses all her strength to try to sit up. Numerous times I lay her back down, but again and again she renews her efforts. She has fallen into an acute hysterical condition. Gradually she calms down, she lies back completely exhausted. Thick tears shimmer in her eyes, but she does not weep.

I get the first response to my questioning. I do not want to fatigue her, I do not ask much. I learn that she is 16 years old and that she arrived with her parents in a transport from Transylvania.

She receives some hot broth in a cup. She drinks it all. The *Sonderkommando* men bring every kind of food, but I do not let them give her any. I cover her up to her neck and tell her to sleep a little.

Thoughts whirl dizzily in my head. I turn to my companions. We reflect, we puzzle over the problem. Now we come to the hardest part of the matter. What will become of the child? We know! She cannot stay here long!

Crematorium! *Sonderkommando*! What can be done here with a young girl? I know the history of the crematoria; no one has ever gotten out of here alive, not from the transports, not from the *Sonderkommando*, which is now the twelfth *Sonderkommando* in succession.

There is not much time left for thinking things over. *Oberscharführer* Mussfeld is arriving, as per his custom, to look around at the work. As he passes by the open door of the room he notices the group of us. He enters, he asks, "What is going on here?" He soon spots the girl lying on the bench. I motion to my comrades that they should leave. I will attempt the impossible myself.

Three months spent beneath the same roof have developed a state of confidence between us. Besides, the Germans have the virtue of respecting, even in the confines of the K.Z., those individuals who are knowledgeable in some matter which they have need of. So it goes for shoemakers, tailors, carpenters and locksmiths as well. In the course of our frequent encounters I have often observed that he respects my professional competence when it comes to my forensic medical activities. He knows that my employer is Dr. Mengele, chief physician of the K.Z., the person most feared in everyone's eyes, a man whom, with the vanity of his race, he holds to be a great representative of German medical science. He considers the sending of hundreds of thousands of Jews to death by gas a patriotic exercise. The work in the dissection hall stands in the service of the advancement of German medical science. I profit from this too, as co-worker of the dissection hall. He frequently comes into the dissection hall, and we talk often of politics, the war situation, and much else besides. I gather that the reason he respects me is because he sees the dissection of corpses as a kindred profession to his own bloody work. He is the commander of Crematorium I and its chief shooter, together with three others.

They perform liquidations by a shot to the back of the neck on such as have been selected out from the camp or who are sent from other camps here to the "rest camp," provided their number does not exceed five hundred! They liquidate them with a shot to the back of the neck because they resort to the large-scale operations of the gas chamber only for the elimination of larger crowds. The same amount of gas is necessary whether the gas chamber is filled with 500 persons or 3,000. There's no need for the Red Cross car to come with the gas canisters and the two gas executioners. Nor is it worth the trouble for a separate truck to come for the clothes of such a small number of victims. On the basis of such considerations, they had adopted the shot to the back of the neck.

I calmly describe the young girl's terrible situation to him. I sketch for him the scenes that this child suffered through in the undressing room and before the death in the gas chamber. When everything turned to darkness around her, she too inhaled a bit of the cyklon fumes, but only a bit, because her frail body, at a push from the crowd in its death throes, fell face first into a small space on the damp concrete floor. This small bit of humidity prevented the gas from choking her lungs. You should know that cyklon gas is not effective in a humid medium [*a cyklongáz nedves médiumban nem hatásos*]!

So I argue, and I ask him to let us do something for the child. He hears me out seriously and asks me how I would like to resolve the matter. I know it from myself, but I see from his face as well that I have placed him in a difficult situation. She cannot stay here in the crematorium! There might be one solution, namely, that we take her outside the gate. A large female *Kommando* is always working on road construction there. She could join in with them, and when they march into the camp in the evening, she could enter one of the barracks and keep silent about everything that has happened to her. Among so many thousands no one will even notice, hardly anyone knows one another here.

If the girl had been 3-4 years older the thing might have succeeded. A twenty-year old girl already has so much levelheadedness and caution that, recognizing the fortunate circumstances of her survival, she would not speak of them with anyone, but rather would wait for better times as so many thousands are doing. But Mussfeld's point of view is this: a 16-year-old child, in her naiveté, would tell the first person she met where she had been, what she had seen and what she had lived through! Such a thing will spread and get out and all three of us will be lost.

"There's no helping it," he says. "The child cannot remain alive!" Looking at it from a crematorium point of view I realize he is right!

A quarter of an hour later they escorted her, or more accurately, took her by the arm up to the vestibule of the furnace hall [*a kazánterem előcsarnokába*] where not Mussfeld, but rather another sent in his place, shot her in the back of the neck.

## Chapter XXI

On the first floor<sup>76</sup> of Crematorium I, separate from the men's<sup>77</sup> accommodations, there is a carpentry workshop in which three carpenters perform the work that crops up in the course of plant operations. At the moment, however, they are working on a private order. *Oberscharführer* Mussfeld, taking advantage of the possibilities here, has given the carpenters orders for the urgent construction of an enormous, two-person, *recamier*-style<sup>78</sup> sofa bed. They have undertaken to do it, a task which is not very easily managed in a crematorium. Orders, however, do not recognize the impossible! They collected the necessary wood from among the leftover construction materials in the area of the crematorium. They culled the springs needed for upholstering the sofa from the armchairs which the arriving transports brought with them in the wagons for the use of their sick and elderly. There are dozens of them in the crematorium courtyard. We used to sit around in them in the evenings.

Thus the sofa is built as ordered! It became an object of daily interest for me. It took form and moved toward completion before me each day [*Előtte megformálódott és készült el egy napon*]. It received its springs, its upholstery was prepared from a Persian carpet. Two French electricians fitted it with a reading lamp as well as a cabinet for a radio. It took a coat of coral-red paint and looked quite handsome. In a petit bourgeois apartment in Mannheim, it will look even prettier than here in the attic [*padlásán*] of the crematorium. Indeed, at the end of the week, the sofa is going to be sent to Mannheim as bulk goods to *Oberscharführer* Mussfeld's home. There it will stand and wait until the *Oberscharführer* victoriously returns after his hard battles, and relaxes upon it from his exertions.

During this week I was in his room and noticed about half a dozen pairs of silk pajamas ready for packing. No doubt he will send these home as well, as a stylish accessory for the sofa bed. Beautiful imported goods! In Germany today it is possible to get anything only on the point system. Here it is possible to come by things much more easily! They are ready for the taking in the undressing room, packed and waiting! They can be had for a point. The point goes from *Oberscharführer* Mussfeld's 6-millimeter pistol onto the pajamas owner's life.<sup>79</sup>

<sup>76</sup> That is, the second floor. See note 28 above.

<sup>77</sup> That is, the *Sonderkommando*'s.

<sup>78</sup> In English, *recamier* (from French *récamier*) is typically used to designate an asymmetrical couch or divan, often backless, with a high headrest and low footrest. In Hungarian, however, the word (spelled, as here, *recamier* or *rekamié*) more typically means a sofa bed, often of the pull-out or folding variety.

<sup>79</sup> That is, the bullet serves as final punctuation mark ("point") to the victim's life. The Hungarian word *pont*, like German *Punkt* from which it is derived, means "point" in the sense of a mark or counter, but not in the sense of the sharp end of a weapon. Nyiszli's pun here functions on an abstract, not a concrete, level.

By means of such points here they obtain jewels, leather coats, women's furs, silk clothing, fine shoes. Not a week passes that they do not send home packages!

In such packages there is tea, coffee, chocolate and preserves by the kilo! Everything is available in the undressing room! These unlimited possibilities gave *Oberscharführer* Mussfeld the idea of the building and sending home of the sofa bed.

In the days since I began observing the construction of the luxurious bed I have had an idea. The idea slowly becomes a plan!

After a few more weeks the *Sonderkommando*'s four-month term [*a Sonderkommandó négyhónapos terminusa*] will expire. We will all perish here, on that point we are entirely clear! We are long since used to this idea, we know there is no escape. One thing, however, will not leave me in peace, namely, that so far 11 *Sonderkommandos* have perished here and taken with them the terrible secret of the crematoria and the pyres. It must not happen that way again this time! Even if we do not survive we will ensure that the world comes to know of the cruelty and banal wickedness, unimaginable to the human mind, of a people that holds itself to be superior.

A message must go out to the world from here! Perhaps it will be found sooner, perhaps later, after years. Even then it will proclaim their guilt. The 200 members of the Crematorium I *Sonderkommando* will sign the message in the consciousness of their approaching death. And the sofa bed will take it out to the world beyond the barbed wire, to *Oberscharführer* Mussfeld's apartment, for now, in Mannheim.

The message is completed. It exhaustively describes the horrors perpetrated here in the last few years. We name the executioners of those who perished here. We report the approximate number of the dead. We make known the method and instruments of extermination. The message is written on three large sheets of parchment. The *Sonderkommando* clerk, a painter from Paris [*egy párizsi festőművész*], wrote it in beautiful characters, and to ensure that the writing would not fade, it was written on the model of old parchment scrolls with India ink. The fourth sheet contained the 200 signatures of the *Kommando*. The parchment sheets were stitched together with fine silk thread. Rolled into a scroll, it was placed in a thin, cylinder-shaped metal canister made by one of our tinsmiths [*bádogosaink*] which was then soldered shut to make it air- and watertight. Our carpenters placed this case in the wool stuffing between the springs of the sofa.

Another such message with the same text and signatures, also in a soldered metal canister, was buried in the courtyard of Crematorium II.

## Chapter XXII

By now it is an ordinary thing for me that, each evening around seven o'clock, a truck passes through the crematorium gate and brings seventy to eighty women or men for liquidation. They are the daily selections of the K.Z. They arrive here from the barracks and the hospitals. They are K.Z. residents of many years, or at least many months, so they see their fate with complete clarity. The courtyard is filled with horrible screams and cries of mortal fear as the truck turns in at the gate. They know that there is no escape from the shadow of the crematorium chimney! I do not want to watch these daily scenes so I am accustomed to withdrawing to the most distant part of the crematorium courtyard. There is a grove of small fir trees [*egy kis fenyőfákból álló lugas*] there where I sit down. Here I do not here the crack of the guns, the screams reach my ears only faintly.

This evening I was unlucky. I have been at work in the dissection hall since five in the afternoon, I have to do an unscheduled examination in the case of an *SS-Oberscharführer's* suicide. The corpse was sent from Gleiwitz. An SS captain court-martial judge [*SS hadbírószázados*] and a clerk have come for the dissection. At around seven o'clock I am dictating the dissection protocol to the SS clerk when a big truck turns in with its load, stuffed with men. The dissection hall's two large windows, iron-barred and covered with green wire mesh, look out onto the crematorium's front courtyard [*előlső udvarára*]. The truck stops not far from the windows. Its unfortunate passengers behave very calmly. From this I conclude that they were selected not from the barracks but from the hospitals. All gravely ill! They do not even have the strength to scream, let alone descend from the truck's high platform. The SS guards shout, goading them. No one among them moves. The driver, an NCO, loses patience. He gets back into the cab and sets the truck's motor running in neutral. The enormous load bed slowly rises with its front part in the air and suddenly dumps the people out. The unfortunate, half-dead sick tumble head first, face first, knees first onto the concrete or upon one another. A terrible cry comes forth from their throats as they writhe on the ground in their agony.

A horrible scene! The SS court-martial judge, an outsider, is distracted from his work by the wailing and cries and he asks me: "What is going on out there in the courtyard?" He comes to the window as well and I explain the scene to him. It appears that he is unaccustomed to such sights for he turns away from it in disgust and observes reproachfully: "Still they should not do that!"

The *Sonderkommando* gathers the victims' rags and puts them in a heap in the courtyard. The unfortunates, on the other hand, are taken into the cremation hall and lined up in front of *Oberscharführer* Mussfeld, who is standing there before the furnaces. Today it is his turn to do the shot to the back of the neck! Gun in a rubber-gloved hand! One after another the bodies fall to make

room for the next in line. In a few minutes he has knocked down – as he is wont to say, *umgelegt*<sup>80</sup> – all eighty. Half an hour later they are reduced to ashes [*elhamvadtak*].

Later, the *Oberscharführer* visits me in my room and asks me to examine him. His heartbeat is irregular and he has a headache as well! He takes off his shirt. I measure his blood pressure, take his pulse, even listen to his heart! I give him a reassuring report on his complaints. I find no abnormality of any kind in his heart. His pulse is a little irregular. My opinion is that this is the consequence of the little job that he performed an hour ago in the furnace hall [*kazánteremben*]! I had wanted to calm him, but I achieved the exact opposite. He leaps up from his seat almost indignantly, stands before me: “Your diagnosis is incorrect,” he says, “for I am equally unagitated whether I shoot dead 80 or 1000 people. You know why I am agitated? I’ll tell you! It’s because I drink a lot!” He departs, looking disappointed!

## Chapter XXIII

I am in the habit of doing some reading after going to bed in order to put myself to sleep. I do so tonight as usual, but I cannot get much reading done, for the electric light suddenly goes out and soon I hear the K.Z.’s air-raid siren as well. On such occasions, heavily armed SS guards accompany us down to the *Sonderkommando*’s shelter [*a Sonderkommandó óvóhelyére*], the gas chamber. So it goes tonight too. We put our clothes on and set out.

With heavy hearts we enter the dark gas chamber. There are two hundred of us! The entire *Kommando*. It is a terrible feeling to be in this room knowing that so many hundreds of thousands of people have found a painful death here. We also know that the *Sonderkommando*’s term is drawing to an end and that such an occasion might come in handy for the SS to slam shut the doors of the gas chamber and, pouring four canisters of cyklon gas down on us, easily be done with us. The SS are capable of anything!

It would not be a first! A similar case has occurred before. A part of the ninth *Sonderkommando* was taken to the men’s camp of the K.Z., to Barracks number 13 of Camp “D.” This was an isolated barracks. The *Kommando* was told that, on superior orders, their quarters henceforth were not to be in the crematoria but rather here in the camp. From here they would go out to the crematoria in two groups. That same evening, they were taken to a bath in Camp “D” to bathe and get a change of clothing. After bathing they entered, nude, into the next room, where they were to put on disinfected clothes. This was a real disinfecting room [*fertőtlenítő helyiség*], capable of being completely hermetically sealed. Here they used to disinfect the lousy clothes gath-

<sup>80</sup> In German in the original. Literally “laid out (i.e., on the ground),” the word is used colloquially to mean “killed.”



ered from the camp. Four hundred [négy száz] *Sonderkommando* men met their deaths here by gas. The corpses were carried by truck to the pyres.

Not without cause, then, do we anxiously await the end of the air-raid alert. The alert was three hours long! We come back up out of the darkness of the gas chamber! The arc lamps on the barbed wire, the camp's kilometers-long chains of light, are lit again. We lie down. I try to sleep. It will be difficult.

The next morning, I am in Crematorium II on my patient-visitation rounds. The head *Kapo* of the *Sonderkommando* there informs me confidentially that in the darkness of last night's air-raid alert some partisans approached the camp. They cut through the wire fence enclosing the crematorium courtyard at a less conspicuous spot and slipped three machine pistols and ammunition along with 20 hand grenades through the resulting opening. The *Sonderkommando* men found them in the early morning hours and brought them to a secure hiding place.

An understandable confidence began to gain ground against the hopelessness of our situation. We knew that the rescuing hands which supplied the weapons to us could not be far away. Judging from many observations, we guessed the partisans' encampment was 25-30 kilometers from the crematoria. We were confident that at the next opportunity during an air-raid alert they would bring weapons for us again. Recently there have been air-raid alerts every day, indeed several times a day, but only a long nighttime blackout can bring us help from our unknown but devoted comrades. Three or four more nighttime blackouts would be enough for the partisans to supply us with the necessary quantity of weapons, and then we could attempt a breakout.

The resistance organization derives from Crematorium III and weaves the threads of its web throughout the other crematoria.

All of this is done with great caution and circumspection. Death lurks for us here in the machine pistols of our guards. We want to live! We want to escape from here, and even if it does not work out for all of us, even if it is only one or two, we still will have won, for then there will be someone who can take the dark secrets of these terrible factories as a message to the world.

Those who die, on the other hand, will not die like trampled worms at the filthy hands of their executioners, but rather will be the first in the history of the German K.Z. who, though outgunned a thousand to one, fall with heads held high as they deal out death themselves.

## Chapter XXIV

One day I am chatting with *Oberscharführer* Steinberg. He is a frequent visitor of mine in the dissection hall. Under the Second Reich he was a traffic cop in Berlin, under the Third Reich he joined the SS. I know him for a very dangerous man, both intelligent and evil! He tells me that four of them will be going away for a few days to an SS resort home located in the mountains of Sile-

sia. In the company will be himself for one, then *Oberscharführer* Seitz second, *Rottenführer* Holländer third and *Rottenführer* Eindenmüller fourth. I know them all well; they are the cruelest executioners of the crematoria. They are going away, as they say, for five days of rest and recuperation.

I have been in the *Sonderkommando* for three months [*három hónapos Sonderkommandós vagyok*]. If an SS man says of something that it is black, and I even see so myself, I still do not believe him. If *Oberscharführer* Steinberg speaks to me of recreation, it is quite certainly something special, the execution of some bloody task. I believe this all the more because the crematorium's SS personnel may not even leave their posts here lest, after a few glasses of liquor when mixing with people, they should reveal to them all the matters that are to be kept secret. They can only depart from here as a closed group under the command of an officer and they must return here that way! With a few differences they too are *Sonderkommandos*. From what I know, after two years on duty they are sent to an SS camp. In this camp the Third Reich is accustomed to dealing with, that is, liquidating, SS men who are insubordinate or who know too much.

Five days later *Oberscharführer* Steinberg and his three companions return from their "recreational leave." I do not ask anything. They do not say anything. Still on the day of their return I went up to the *Sonderkommando*'s kitchen [*felmentem a Sonderkommandó konyhájára*], where Michel the French cook always had some tasty morsel for me. He is a valuable and respected member of the *Sonderkommando*. This was his profession in civilian life as well. He was a cook on a luxury ship traveling the Brazilian route of a French shipping company.

Now too it is with the goal of getting some tasty tidbit to eat that I seek out the good Michel in his little kitchen [*kis konyhájában*]. He is not so friendly as on other occasions. It is plain to see that something has happened to him, for his ever-smoking seaman's pipe is in his mouth now as always, jutting out stiffly to one side, but it is not lit. If he does not notice this, how very agitated he must be! I am right too, for as soon as I step into the kitchen he closes the door behind me and takes me by the arm, leading me to a corner where a galvanized-steel tub filled with water is standing on a chair. He draws a green SS shirt out of the water between two fingers, then a second and a third. All three shirts are covered with huge blood stains. Only in a slaughterhouse could someone get himself so bloody. *Oberscharführer* Steinberg and his companions were in a slaughterhouse for five days. A human slaughterhouse! I learn from Michel that they gave him the shirts for washing as soon as they returned.

I was not exaggerating, thus, when I declared that I would not believe the SS that something is black even if I myself see that it is.

## Chapter XXV

The hour of annihilation arrived for the 4500 inhabitants of the Gypsy camp as well. The measures taken were the same as for the liquidation of the Czech camp. Barracks lockdown [*barakkzárlat*]. Numerous SS guards marshalled with dogs. They bring the Gypsies out of the barracks and line them up. Bread and salami rations are distributed. Everyone receives three portions, food for a three-day journey. As far as the Gypsies know they are being taken to another camp, and as two-year residents of the K.Z. they actually believe it. A very simple but very effective means of deception. No one thinks of the crematoria, for they would not be given travel rations to go there.

It is not consideration toward those who are going to die that leads the SS authorities to deceptive methods but rather simply the requirement that a relatively small number of SS guards be able to conduct a large crowd, as indeed in this case, without disorder or delay to the gas chamber.

And so it went, too! All through the night the chimneys of Crematoria I and II spewed flame from themselves [*Egész éjszakán át szórták magukból a lángot az I-es és II-es krematóriumok kéményei*]. Their glare lit up the entire camp! The bustling Gypsy camp has become silent and empty. Only the wire of the fences still hums, and the doors and windows, left open, of the abandoned barracks bang to and fro as the wind passes across them blowing in from the Volhynian steppes.

Tonight once more Europe's nation of pyromaniacs has arranged some fireworks for itself. As ever, the stage is Concentration Camp Auschwitz! The victims thrown into the flames on this occasion were not Jews, but rather Christians! Catholic Gypsies from Germany and Austria!

The fires had gone out by morning [*Reggelre kialudtak a tüzek*]. In each crematorium courtyard there arose a small, silvery, glistening mound formed from the victims' ashes. The corpses of twelve pairs of twins did not go into the furnaces. Before their death in the gas Dr. Mengele had written two letters on their chests with leather chalk: Z.S., letters referring them for dissection.<sup>81</sup>

Pairs of twins of nearly every age, from newborns to 16-year-olds, are included in the corpse collection. The bodies of the brown-skinned, black-haired children lie on the concrete floor of the mortuary hall [*hullakamara*]. Putting them in order makes for wearying work; I group them so that sibling is laid beside sibling. I am careful that they should not get mixed up, for Criminaldoctor [*sic*] Mengele would make me pay with my life if these incomparably precious and rare specimens for his twin-studies work should become unusable.

Just the other day it happened that I was sitting at my laboratory table with him. We are leafing through the dossiers of the twins processed so far when he

---

<sup>81</sup> The letters stand for *zur Sektion* ("for dissection"). See Chapter V.

notices a faint grease stain on the light blue cardboard cover of one of them. I often take them in hand during autopsies, and so it may have happened that one got a little grease stained. He looks at me reproachfully and asks quite seriously: "How can you deal so carelessly with these dossiers which I have so lovingly collected?" The word "love" heard from Dr. Mengele's lips[!]. From sheer amazement not a sound came to my mouth with which I might have answered him.

## Chapter XXVI

I perform the autopsies of the twelve pairs of twins' corpses with the greatest possible care.

As is well known, there are monozygotic and dizygotic twins. Twins originating from a single egg cell are of the same sex in all cases and resemble each other exactly in their external as well as internal traits. We call these concordant twins. Dizygotic twins are more like normal siblings in their external and internal traits and do not manifest identical, but rather differing, discordant qualities, in most cases being of opposite sexes. These observations figure in medical science as laws of heredity for twin biology. These laws are one of the important proofs of the fact that external influences account only in small measure for the constitution, body type, and physical and mental traits of individual humans. Such things as upbringing, good or bad nutrition, and diseases which may develop over the course of the individual's life may have some influence. Much more powerful, however, are those factors which the individual receives in hereditary form from his or her progenitors. If these factors recur repeatedly over the course of generations in a single family we call them dominant, that is, controlling hereditary traits. The forms in which these hereditary phenomena are manifested can be of good or bad effect, such as: strong and healthy teeth; rich, non-thinning hair; the disease known as St. Vitus dance; one type of high blood pressure; diabetes in certain families; and among mental illnesses, manic-depressive psychosis.

Hereditary traits, whether good or bad, manifest themselves in part already from birth. Such are those cases where newborns have a larger or smaller number of digits than normal on their hands or feet. There are other traits which manifest themselves only at a later time and become chronic illnesses, such as: asthma; epilepsy, or St. Vitus dance; the type of high blood pressure already mentioned; certain forms of cancer; and senile cataracts of the eye, this last being a disease of those past seventy years old.

Hereditary traits sometimes display the strange characteristic of manifesting themselves more often in one sex than in the other. The explanation for this is that these are gender-determined hereditary traits. As most frequent among these I might mention color-blindness [*színvakságot*] and anemia [*vér-*

*szegénységet*].<sup>82</sup> These conditions can be observed exclusively in males. They do not occur in women. In the most-frequent hereditary form of anemia [*sic*], transmission proceeds from an affected grandfather through a healthy daughter to the grandsons. Boys never acquire susceptibility to the disease from an affected father. All the sons of an affected father and their descendants, whether male or female, will be healthy. However, the healthy women born to an affected father nonetheless carry the hereditary factors within themselves and each of their female children will pass it along, as I mentioned, to their male children.

The bodies of a pair of fifteen-year-old twins are lying on the dissecting table. I perform a parallel, comparative autopsy of the two siblings.

The two heads in this case show nothing worth assessing. The next step is the removal of the sternum. A singular phenomenon greets my eyes. *Thymus persistens*, the phenomenon of an abiding thymus gland, is present in both twins.

The thymus gland normally appears only in children, extending from the upper edge of the sternum to the heart, a rather extensive form which tends rapidly to atrophy with the onset of sexual maturity and, withering away completely, leaves behind only a small patch of fat with a few remnants of tissue from the former gland.

The thymus gland has a large influence on growth in body height.<sup>83</sup> Among the most important symptoms of prematurely atrophied thymus are dwarfism and extensive fragility of the tubular bones. Hypertrophy of the gland, on the other hand, can often be observed in the autopsies of children who have died suddenly without any disease or explicable causes. Hypertrophy of the gland also has been observed in cases of excessively weak resistance to infectious diseases.

The glands found in the two twins are thus possessed of extraordinary interest, for not only are they present in 15-year-old twin siblings even though they should have disappeared by the age of 13, but they present dimensions much greater than the normal size. I dissect still another pair of fifteen-year-old twins and two pairs of 16-year-olds, all of them monozygotic twins. In each the thymus gland is present in the same enlarged form.

I dissect the lumbar and sacral sections of the spinal column in eight pairs of twins,<sup>84</sup> all monozygotic. The fourth and fifth vertebrae of the lumbar sec-

<sup>82</sup> *Sic*. As his subsequent description of the disease's transmission through the (asymptomatic) female line makes apparent, Nyiszli clearly is thinking here of hemophilia, but in the text here and below he uses *vérzegénység* (lit. "poverty of blood," anemia) instead of the correct *vérzékenység* (lit. "tendency to blood [loss]," hemophilia). (Besides *vérzékenység*, the Greco-Latin medical term *hemofilia* itself may also be used for the disease in Hungarian.)

<sup>83</sup> Literally, body length: *a test hosszúság*.

<sup>84</sup> *Sic*: "Nyolc pár ikernél..." With the change of paragraph Nyiszli introduces a new theme to his discussion. He is not referring here to the eight *twins* identified as having thymus irregularities in the previous paragraph, but rather simply to eight (unspecified) *pairs* of twins, among whom the

tion as well as the sacral section display a developmental disorder which manifests itself such that these parts have not closed with the onset of age 12-13 but have remained abnormally open even at 15-16 years. Doctors call this developmental disorder *Spina bifida* and it is known as a deformity which may involve serious consequences.

The development of the individual occurs in the two directions of the spinal column. The one direction of development is the cranium, the other is the pelvic basin, that is, the direction of the tail bone. The former tendency is called *cranial*, the latter *caudal*, accordingly as one or the other direction is preponderant.

In the present case, the developmental tendency is cranial, not caudal, in the 16 twins dissected, for *Spina bifida* and the persistence of an unclosed sacrum are degenerative symptoms.

I discovered another important developmental anomaly in 5 pairs of twins among the 12 pairs dissected, a fluctuating tenth rib on the right hand side, so called *Costa decima fluctuans*. In normal cases this rib is fixed. Its fluctuation is a developmental anomaly in the caudal, tailbone direction of the spinal column.

The fluctuation of the tenth rib can be diagnosed in regular practice among the living as well. It occurs, naturally quite rarely, in individuals of asthenic type, thin, tall, with weak musculature and low blood pressure, who tire easily.

All of these interesting observations, though in a much more-exhaustive and medically precise form, I commit to paper in the shape of an autopsy protocol. I spend long afternoons with Dr. Mengele on the clarification of this or that obscure problem. In the dissection hall and in the laboratory I explained and defended my own point of view not in the role of a humble K.Z. prisoner, but rather, just as if in a medical conference, as an entirely equally ranked doctor, and I refuted the opinions he expressed if I did not agree with them.

I am a good judge of people and I think that this doctorly comportment of mine, as well as my determined demeanor, my measured speech, and when necessary my silence, were the qualities by which I arrived at it that Dr. Mengele, before whom even the SS trembled at the knees in fear, offered me a cigarette on the occasion of one of our lively discussions and saluted as he departed the laboratory.

## Chapter XXVII

On one occasion I was dissecting the corpse of an elderly man and as an incidental finding I discovered some beautiful gallstone crystals in the gall bladder. I knew that Dr. Mengele was a passionate collector of such rarities. I

---

four pairs already mentioned may or may not be included. This is confirmed by his reference to "the 16 twins dissected" two paragraphs below.

washed and dried them and placed them in a wide-mouth, glass-stoppered phial. I provided the phial with a label containing the autopsy data for the gallstones' owner as well as a qualitative description. The next day during his visit I gave them to him. The beautiful crystals pleased him greatly. He studies them, turning the vial this way and that, and then turning to me with a sudden movement he puts the question to me, do I know the ballad of General Wallenstein? His question was not at all appropriate to the circumstances but I answered him: "I know the story of General Wallenstein but I don't know the ballad." He smiles to himself at this and begins to recite:

*Im Besitze der Familie Wallenstein  
Ist mehr Gallenstein, wie Edelstein.*<sup>85</sup>

Translated, this would go more or less like so:

*In the possession of family Wallenstein  
There are more gallstones than gemstones.*

My boss recited a few more verses of the mock-epic poem and was in such a good mood that I resolved on a large venture myself. I asked him for permission to meet with my wife and daughter. Even as I spoke my request I knew that it was dangerous, but now it is done. He looks at me in astonishment. "You're married and have a child?" he asks. "Yes, captain, I have a wife and a 15-year-old girl," I reply, a little emotionally.

"You think that they are here?"

"I think so, captain, yes, for three months ago [*ezelőtt három hónappal*] when we arrived you selected them to the right, sir."

"It is possible that they have been sent to another camp since," he replies.

I think suddenly of the smoke from the crematorium chimney, perhaps they have been sent with it to a celestial Kommando! He sits at his table, leaning his head on his chin; I am standing beside him. He appears to deliberate. "I will give you a *Passierschein*,<sup>86</sup> you may search for them, but..." he puts his index finger to his lips and looks at me. It's like there is a menace in his gaze. "I understand," I say, "and I am very grateful, sir."

Dr. Mengele departs. With the *Passierschein* in my hands I go happily to my room. I read: "Number A-8450 is authorized to circulate within the grounds of K.Z. Auschwitz without an escort. This authorization is valid until revoked. Dr. Mengele *SS-Hauptsturmführer*." I am completely beside myself with excitement. Such a thing has never happened in the history of the camps, a K.Z. prisoner receiving permission to seek out his family and go without escort into the women's camp. I do not even know where to begin. The women are in camps "C" and "B III" as well as in the "FKL." The majority of the Hungarians, so I have heard, are in Camp "C." There might be 50,000 of them. I will go there first! The next morning I wake up exhausted. I did not

<sup>85</sup> In German in the original.

<sup>86</sup> In German in the original.

sleep all night. Terrible doubts tormented me. Three months is a long time. An hour here is a long time! Since then all sorts of things have happened. I know only too well what happens here every hour of the day.

I go to the SS office, I announce my departure. I take my leave from my companions. Everyone wishes me a good trip. It is a hot August morning [*augusztusi reggel*] as I set off on the three-kilometer way [*a három kilométeres útra*]. Camp C is much closer as the crow flies, but I must move within the large guard chain and bypass several parts of the camp to arrive there. With a thrill of curiosity and fear I step onto the dead zone path leading between two rows of electrified wire. Anyone walking in this zone will not be shot at without warning from the guard towers. SS motorcycle patrols circulate here, shiny copper plates hanging around their necks on chains with the inscription *Lagerpolizei*.<sup>87</sup>

I encounter several camp guards, but they do not check my papers. I reach the Camp C gate, a huge, two-leaved iron gate. The two leaves of the gate are full of heavy porcelain insulators and densely woven with barbed wire. Before it, as before the gate to every part of the camp, stands a guardhouse. Some SS soldiers are sitting on a bench basking in the sun. They look me over. I am an unusual guest, but they do not speak. They do not meddle in the duties of their colleague, who sits in the window of the hut. I approach him and announce my tattoo number. He looks at me quizzically. I take Dr. Mengele's paper from my pocket and hand it to him. He reads it through and gives orders to his companions for the opening of the gate! He asks me how long I intend to remain in the camp. He must write it down so that I depart again at the stated time. It was ten o'clock in the morning when I arrived before the gate; I answered, "Until twelve." That's a long time, but a ten-pack of Josma cigarettes is a good *Passierschein* in every part of the K.Z. I hand them to him and leave.

Along Camp C's main street, which is lined with shabby green barracks, there's a great coming and going. A group of women carries a tinsplate tub full of hot soup. Distribution of lunch here is at ten o'clock in the morning. Another group, a road-repair *Kommando*, carries stones for the roadbed. On both sides of the street many women are lying in the sun. Their bodies are wrapped in rags, their hair is shaved; they present a pitiable sight. Dressed for the most part in fantastical clothes, in floor-length, sleeveless, deep-cut evening gowns, ragged now, they lie on the ground and pick lice from themselves or from their companions. The visible parts of their bodies are covered with dirt mixed with running sores. This is a quarantine camp; the women do not work here. From here the transports headed for more-distant labor camps are selected. Selections are carried out quite thoroughly, as I can see. What remains behind is completely exhausted human material. Happy are those who have gone on!

---

<sup>87</sup> "Camp Police." In German in the original.



They still have some hope of pulling through this period, but the fate of these here is sealed, just as it was for the Czech or the Gypsy camp.

I make my way to the first barracks. Wild shouts and cries greet me from all sides. The clumps of rags lying on the ground come to life and, leaping up from their places, run toward me. There might be thirty who recognize me and inquire about their husbands and children, questioning me with anxious impatience.

They all recognize me because I have a normal, human appearance, but they themselves are very difficult to recognize, these unfortunates. My situation here in the crowd starts to become uncomfortable. They keep coming, ever more and more of them. They all would like to know something of their family. They have lived for three months [*három hónapja*] among the most horrible conditions, in continuous fear. Every week there is a selection [*Minden héten szelekció van*]. Three months in the K.Z. have taught them to bewail the past and to fear the future. The unfortunates all ask me, is it true about the crematorium? What is the great mass of smoke by day [*a nagy füst nappal*], and what is the great fire by night [*a nagy tűz éjjel*]? Are they really burning people? I reassure them as best I can. I deny everything. None of it is true at all. Besides, soon it will be the end of the war and we will go home. I do not believe it myself, but I say it so that they will calm down. I leave them there; I have learned nothing at all of my wife and daughter.

I go into the first barracks. I ask the overseer, a Slovakian girl, to call out their names. In one barracks there are around 800-1000 women pressed together in stacked-bunk boxes [*emeletes boksokban*]<sup>29</sup> ranged on either side. It is difficult to call out names here. The clamor of a thousand women overwhelms the searchers' voices. They return after a few minutes and report on the fruitlessness of their efforts. I thank them for their kindness and enter the next barracks.

Here it is the same situation; the previous scene repeats itself in the same way. No success in the second barracks either. Now I am in the third barracks. I stop in the middle of the hall and ask a woman to call the overseer. I ask her to look for my family. She sends two lively young girls on their way along both sides of the barracks. They call into every box and then suddenly they are bringing my wife and daughter.

They approach with eyes opened wide from fear, holding hands. It is not a good sign if someone is called for in the barracks. Then they have recognized me, they stop as if frozen with surprise. I hurry toward them and embrace and kiss them both at once. They cannot find their voices, they merely weep bitterly. I calm them; already a crowd of the curious is standing around us. I cannot speak with them like this. I ask the overseer to allow us into her little room. At last we are alone!

They tell me all the bitter experiences of their three-month existence here. They speak of the terrible selections which they have lived through, always

trembling in the shadow of the crematoria's chimneys. They are hungry, they are cold in their rags! The rain comes into the barracks and their clothes cannot dry out! Their food is inedible, but what is worst of all, they cannot even sleep! In the box there should be room for seven people, but twelve are crammed in! They tear at, kick, shove one another, women belonging to the so-called better social classes at home, all so they can secure a few centimeters more space for their own comfort at the expense of another. Here everyone has been stripped of their essential decency! Close acquaintances and strangers alike look to their own interests and are unwilling to make even the slightest concession. My little girl tells me that for weeks she has slept sitting on the concrete floor because in the box where her mother lies they do not want to squeeze in a space for her.

My wife asks me where I work. I tell her that I work alongside Dr. Mengele in the crematorium and that I am a member of the *Sonderkommando*. After three months in the K.Z. they too know that the "Sonder" is the *Kommando* of the walking dead. The two of them stare at me, terrified. I reassure them somewhat and take my leave with the promise that I will come again tomorrow.

It was a great sensation in the crematorium that I had found my wife and child! From the clothing department [*a ruhaosztályról*] I packed together warm clothes, underwear and stockings in a knapsack. From the toiletries department [*a toalett-osztályról*] I took toothbrushes, fine soaps, nail clippers, pocket knives, fine-toothed combs, at least ten of everything! I packed medicines, vitamin tablets, ointments for wounds, bandages, anything that might be useful. I took sugar cubes, butter, apricot jam, bread, enough that there would be some for others too! Thus I headed out for Camp "C." I was there every day, always with a full knapsack! All good things, however, come to an end!

For two weeks [*két hete*] I am a daily visitor in Camp "C." Then one day that which I was afraid of came to pass. Already with the liquidation of the Czech and Gypsy camps I had become convinced that annihilation here is only a question of time. Sooner or later it comes for everyone who lives out his miserable days within the wire of K.Z. Auschwitz!

One afternoon I am sitting in the laboratory at my work table. Dr. Mengele and Dr. Thilo are present. They are talking with each other about administrative matters of the K.Z. Dr. Mengele rises from his seat and, as if he has just made up his mind on the question, he says to Dr. Thilo: "I am no longer in a position to feed the debilitated residents of Camp C who are not working. I will liquidate them within two weeks!"

Conversations of this nature are often carried on in my presence. They would discuss the most secret affairs of the K.Z. as if I was not even there. I was a dead man walking who did not count.

Dr. Mengele's decision regarding the liquidation of Camp "C" shook me deeply. This concerned my own family and the lives of thousands of my unfortunate female compatriots. I must act immediately!

Scarcely had Dr. Mengele and Dr. Thilo left the crematorium building than I too was outside the gate. I made my way directly to Camp "D." In this camp was the office of the SS group that managed the forced-labor assignments of foreign K.Z. detainees. This SS group selects and transfers K.Z. prisoners in demand to labor camps and war factories throughout the territory of the Reich. The head of the office is an *Oberscharführer*. I find him alone in his room. I introduce myself and present Dr. Mengele's still-valid *Passierschein*.

I explain to him that my wife and daughter are residents of Camp "C." With the assistance of Dr. Mengele I looked for them and found them. I have helped them a great deal, yet I feel it is very important and urgent that they be sent on from here, for as a crematorium employee I know what sort of fate awaits those who remain here. He fully shares my view and he promises his assistance. This week two transports of 3,000 are leaving Camp "C" for war factories in western Germany. These factories are the ideal workplace, for the housing, food and treatment there do not aim at extermination, but rather at the maintenance of the workers in good condition for the attainment of as great a work output as possible. I take a box of one hundred cigarettes from my pocket and put it on the table.

He takes the box and promises me that if my wife and daughter present themselves to him at the selection he will assign them to a transport. I have achieved what I desired. I hurry to Camp "C"! There my work will be more difficult. I must bring my family to understand that they must depart from here. I cannot tell the truth, I do not want to cause a panic. That would be catastrophic for all of us. I call my wife and daughter into the overseer's little room, I tell them that this is hard for me, but the course of events requires that they depart from here. They will have to give up the lifeline of my support. I too will have to give up seeing them and looking after them. This week there will be a selection here for the formation of two large transports. They must volunteer for one of them, preferably the first! I explained to my wife that serious reasons compelled me to advise this. I also asked her to tell all her acquaintances that they should volunteer for one of the two transports. She should not say anything else! The situation during selections, namely, is that the SS selection commission puts volunteers on the transports first, and only if the number is not complete do they then use forced selection. Volunteers, however, rarely appear, for no one is willing to exchange the advantage of the present situation – of not having to work – for another situation. Hardly anyone is willing to go do hard labor on rations that are inadequate even for life here in the quarantine without working.

Short-sighted women! Poor things! If they understood the K.Z. mentality of the Third Reich, they would know that anyone who does not work may not live!

My wife and daughter could see that there might be a well-founded reason for this serious decision of mine and promised that they would volunteer at the first selection. I took my leave with the promise that in two days I would visit them again and bring warm clothes and food for the journey.

The two days passed and I went to Camp "C" to say goodbye. I carried with me warm clothes and plenty of food, but I did not go alone! I did not dare carry so much baggage through the Camp "C" gate. It could happen that high-ranking SS personnel are lurking nearby. For this reason I asked one of our crematorium SS, a former patient of mine whom I recently cured of a serious case of pneumonia, to come with me and help with the tossing of the packages! I did not seek out my family in the barracks on this occasion, but rather called them to the fence and spoke to them there. With my SS companion I then tossed the packages over to them. Fortunately the surroundings were so deserted that no one noticed. Between us stood the wire fence; we were not even able to hug one another! We talked for a few minutes. My wife tells me that the registration went smoothly. It was not even necessary that she present herself before the selecting *Oberscharführer*. They registered both of them. I was glad to hear that, on my wife's advice, many had volunteered.

## Chapter XXVIII

Three days later I visited Camp "C" again. I wanted to confirm their departure on site. Everything had gone as I had hoped. The two 3000-person transports had departed the Auschwitz camp. They too had gone with them. I do not know what the future has in store for them, yet I feel a great sense of relief. Here certain death awaited them; in a new location, with a little luck, liberation! I can see from numerous signs that the war is nearing its end. The Third Reich's grave is being dug already. Those who depart from here may hope; within myself, however, awareness of the hopelessness of my own fate grows with renewed strength!

It fills me with deep satisfaction that I have been able to direct their steps, and that they have been able to deviate from the path which ends at the pyres while I go on to certain death! It is not despair, it is not fear which shapes this into consciousness before me, but rather the bloody tragedy of eleven *Sonderkommandos* and the cold objectivity of my own logic, devoid of all sentimentality!

I leave Camp "C"; my eyes run over the somber barracks in parting. With deep, aching sympathy my gaze takes its leave of the misshapen figures – heads shaved, dressed in rags, stripped of all human dignity – of our once well-groomed, beautiful girls and women. A chill runs all through me and

shakes my whole body as I step through the gate. Only now as I pull my jacket together more closely do I perceive that it is autumn. It is the end of September! The north wind [*északi szél*] blows from the already snow-covered peaks of the Beskids,<sup>88</sup> it shakes the barbed wire of the K.Z. and agitates the flames of the crematoria chimneys [*a krematóriumok kéményeinek lángjait*]. Here and there crows flap about, the only bird that lives in this place. The wind brings me puffs of smoke from the crematoria built to last forever, the now-familiar stench of the burning flesh and singed hair of the dead.

My days and nights pass in paralyzed inactivity and anxious sleeplessness. I have no words, no desires! Since my family went away I feel like the loneliness is strangling me. Helplessness tortures me.

For days, silence and an immense monotony have lain over Concentration Camp Auschwitz. A bad sign! My premonitions never deceive me. The great silence is an omen of further bloody events to come. The twelfth *Sonderkommando* has already used up three and a half months of its fixed four-month lifespan. The sand is running quickly in the hourglass of our lives; the time is two weeks now!

Dr. Mengele carried out his decision. The liquidation of Camp "C" began. Fifty trucks requisitioned for this purpose brought the victims to the crematorium [*a krematóriumba*] every evening in groups of four thousand. The long line of floodlit trucks made for a terrible spectacle as they turned in to the crematorium [*krematórium*] courtyard with their cargo, frenzied and screaming in terror or paralyzed into silence by the fear of death. One after another, before the entranceway leading below ground, they unloaded the already-naked unfortunates, and these were then driven down into the gas chamber. Every one of them was aware that they were going to their deaths by gas here, but the rigors of their four-month imprisonment and their body- and soul-killing sufferings, the slow collapse of their nervous systems, had deadened in them all sensation and capacity for the display of will. They let themselves be driven without resistance into the gas chamber where, weary of their broken, worn-out lives, they awaited death, that they might exchange for it their now-purposeless lives, which only gave them immeasurable physical and mental suffering. How long was their journey leading here! How much suffering surpassing human imagination did each stage of this journey bring them! Their warm, peaceful family homes suffused with love were ravaged and plundered! With their husbands, with their children, with their aged parents, they were hauled away to brick factories located outside their cities where they lay for weeks in pools of spring rain. This was the ghetto: from here they were brought in groups each day to the specially equipped torture chambers, where they were tortured and beaten with thumbscrews and rubber truncheons until,

---

<sup>88</sup> Traditional name for that section of the Western Carpathian Mountains lying along the Slovak-Polish border.

half-fainting from pain, they told where they had hidden, or to whom they had given, their valuables. Many had died from the tortures. Those who remained were almost relieved when they were put into the wagons, even if with 80-90 others like themselves!

Thus they traveled for four or five days, in the company of those who died along the way, until they arrived at the Jews' ramp of Concentration Camp Auschwitz. What happened to them there we already know. Separated from their husbands, their parents, their children, they went half mad from the pain in their childlike, wifely, motherly hearts as they were selected rightward into the barracks of Camp "C." Before they entered these halls of filth, lice and infectious disease they had to pass through one last phase, a procedure for the divestment of human dignity, the bath.

Rough hands cropped their well-groomed tresses and stripped the clothes from their bodies. After the bath they were given others, but of a sort which even a roadside beggar would have thrown away in disgust. Along with these clothes they received the Third Reich's first benefits allotment: lice.

After such preliminaries they began their shadowy lives enclosed within the barbed wire of the K.Z. Their poor diet of watery swill did not let them die of hunger, but neither did it let them live. Protein was completely lacking from their diet, the deficiency made their legs heavy like lead. The lack of fat made their bodies swell. Their regular menstrual cycle fell away. The consequences of this were nervousness, headaches, frequent nosebleeds. The lack of vitamin "B" provoked constant drowsiness and forgetfulness, which reached the point that they forgot even the name of the street they lived on and the number of their house. Only in their eyes did some life still appear, but there glimmered in them not the bright flame of intelligence, but rather the hazy, smothered fire of a consciousness dimmed by hunger and physical and mental pain.

In such conditions they stood through to the end of the hours-long *Zählappell*,<sup>89</sup> the roll call, and if they dropped out of the line fainting, the first thing their glance fell upon when they came to from the cold water poured on them was the smoke billowing over the K.Z. [*a K.Z. fölött gomolygó füstre*] and the blazing flames of the crematorium chimneys [*a krematórium kéményeinek lobogó lángjára*]. These two signs, the smoke and the flames, let them know at all hours of the day that they were standing at the gates to next world.

For four months the inhabitants of Camp "C" had lived before the gates of the crematoria and it took ten days before those going to their deaths had all passed through them. The souls had departed from forty-five thousand [*negyvenötezer*] tormented bodies, and over Camp "C," the temporary home of so many bearers of tragedy, there now falls an immense silence!

---

<sup>89</sup> In German in the original, correctly *Zählappell*.

## Chapter XXIX

Thus the *Sonderkommando* awaits the final blow of destiny! Days, weeks, months had passed, it hangs continuously over our heads; soon the horror will arrive. Execution, when everything falls into darkness and turns to ashes! We are ready. Every hour of the day we expect that the SS executioners will open up on us.

In the morning hours of October 6, 1944, outside the neutral zone between the small and large guard chains, a weapon rang out from one of the guard towers and a K.Z. prisoner fell to the ground dead. The prisoner, a former Russian officer who had been sent here from a prisoner-of-war camp as punishment for an escape attempt, in all probability was attempting escape here as well, and thus wound up in front of the guard's weapon. A commission of the political SS headed by Dr. Mengele rushed to the scene in order to investigate the incident on site. It was an ordinary incident, the sort that happened every day. If the victim had been a Jew, he would simply have gone to the mortuary hall and from there to the crematorium without any formalities, but as a Russian officer he was registered, complete with name and personal data. In order to justify the violent death an autopsy report was needed. At the end of the on-site inspection, Dr. Mengele had the body brought to the crematorium and ordered its forensic-medical autopsy! According to his orders, the report must be ready by two-thirty in the afternoon. He wants to pick it up in person and confirm its results on the corpse.

The time was about nine o'clock in the morning when Dr. Mengele left the dissection hall. I had the corpse placed on the dissecting table, I could have been done with the dissection and the autopsy protocol in thirty to forty minutes, but it was the sixth of October, the second-to-last or last day of the *Sonderkommando's* term [*de október 6. volt, a Sonderkommandó terminusának utolsóelőtti, vagy utolsó napja*]. We did not know for certain, but I sensed the nearness of death. I was incapable of working. I left the dissection hall and withdrew to my room. I took a large dose of Luminal and smoked one cigarette after another. I did not have the patience to stay there either, so I went into the cremation hall [*égető terembe*]. The men of the day shift performed their work only sluggishly, even though several hundred corpses lay before the furnaces [*a kazánok előtt*]. Huddling together in small groups, they talked quietly. I went upstairs to the staff quarters, where the strangeness of the situation immediately became apparent to me. Usually the *Sonderkommando's* night shift ate breakfast after morning roll call and went to sleep. Now it is ten a.m., and everyone is on their feet. I also notice that the men are in sports clothes, pullovers and boots, though a bright, warm October sun is shining outside. They bustle about this way and that, they pack and repack their suitcases, talking quietly. Even so I sense the enormous tension which fills everything here. Something is afoot here, I sense it clearly. I enter the

head *Kapo*'s separate little room; he is sitting at the table. Around him the foreman of the night shift, the mechanical engineer, the chief stoker and the commander of the gas *Kommando* take their places.

No sooner have I sat down than they pour me out half a tumbler from a bottle of brandy that sits on the table, already half empty. The strongest Polish liquor, the famous fennel-seed brandy, fills my glass. I drink it down in one gulp! In the final hours of the *Sonderkommando*'s four months it may not be a lifesaving remedy, but it's a great medicine against the fear of death!

My companions inform me in detail about our situation. According to the signs and information acquired, the liquidation of the *Sonderkommando* could only follow the next day, possibly the day after, but all necessary measures are in place so that the 860 men of the *Sonderkommando* can break out of the crematorium tonight. Heading: the Vistula River, which meanders along two kilometers away and which now, at the end of summer, is so shallow that it can easily be waded. At a distance of eight kilometers from the Vistula there then follows a wooded region which extends across the whole of Poland [*mely átnyúlik egész Lengyelorszáig*]. Here we will be able to stay safely for weeks, even months. We are certain to meet partisans as well.

Our weapons supply is sufficient for the execution of the plan. In the last few days, around a hundred boxes of high-explosive ecrasite<sup>90</sup> have arrived from the Auschwitz Unio<sup>91</sup> factory, a large plant which exclusively manufactures munitions and which employs Polish-Jewish women prisoners. The Germans use these boxes for blowing up railway tracks. Besides these, there are five machine pistols and twenty hand grenades in the weapons cache. This is sufficient for the execution of the plan, for we intend first to secretly approach the solitary night watch guards at their posts and render them harmless with knives. Thus taking by surprise the SS sleeping in their room [*a szobájukban*], we intend to force them to come with us for as long as we see fit...

The signal for the breakout will be given with an electric hand lamp from Crematorium I to II, and so on to III and IV. To my mind, the plan seems all the more feasible in that today, with the exception of Crematorium I, there are no cremations anywhere. They will be finished here too by six o'clock in the evening, so the *Sonderkommando* does not have to supply a night shift today. On such occasions the SS night shift is smaller as well. In each crematorium the watch consists of three men.

<sup>90</sup> *Ecrasite* (Hungarian *ekrazit*, German *Ecrasit*) is the name of an explosive material developed in Austro-Hungary at the end of the nineteenth century, originally for use in artillery shells. It is described in a contemporary source as "a bright yellow solid... [which] ignites when brought into contact with an incandescent body or open flame, burning harmlessly away unless strongly confined, and is insensitive to friction or concussion. It is claimed to possess double the strength of dynamite and requires a special detonator... to provoke its full force." (Sanford 1906, p. 159). The boxes referred to by Nyiszli would presumably have been fairly small; the Hungarian word in question, *szelence*, usually indicates a small, decorative metal box, like a snuffbox or cigar case.

<sup>91</sup> *Sic*. The plant in question was officially known as the Weichsel-Union-Metallwerke.



We part with the agreement that until the signal everyone is to perform his work as usual and avoid all such actions as might arouse suspicions.

I head back to my room; again I have to go through the furnace hall [*kaz-ántermen*]. The men are doing their work, though a little slowly. I inform my two doctor colleagues about the situation. I say nothing to the autopsy assistant. He is a long-time prisoner of the K.Z.; I do not trust him. The accomplished facts will sweep him along with themselves soon enough.

Slowly the time for lunch arrived. We ate our food quietly and went out into the autumn sun to bask a little in the crematorium courtyard with our comrades. It struck me that I cannot see anyone from our SS guards. They are probably staying in their room. This has happened on other occasions as well. The gates are closed. Outside, the camp SS are attending to their duties. They are at their posts. Thus I do not attach any importance to this. I quietly smoke a cigarette. The knowledge that tonight we would be beyond the wires and free again has lifted from me the terrible pressure that has weighed upon me for four months now. If it fails, I still will have lost nothing!

I look at my wristwatch, its hands show half past one. I stand up and call my companions in for the completion of the autopsy so that at half past two, when Dr. Mengele arrives, we will be ready. Without a word they follow me into the dissection hall. We immediately get down to work. Today one of my fellow doctors performs the autopsy. I sit at the typewriter and write the protocol. We have been working quietly like that for about twenty minutes when a huge explosion shakes the air, followed by a dense clatter of machine pistol fire. I look out the large, green-screened window and see that the huge, red-tiled roof of *Krema III* [*a III-as kremá*]<sup>92</sup> is lying open together with its beam structure; an enormous plume of flame and black smoke ascends high into the sky. Barely a minute later a clatter of machine pistols rings out directly in front of the dissection hall door. We have no idea what has happened. Our plans spoke of tonight. It could only be that we have been betrayed, and the SS has intervened in time, or that a large number of partisans has attacked the crematoria! The wail of alarm sirens sounds out from Auschwitz I and Auschwitz II. The explosions and the clatter of machine pistols grow ever stronger. Now heavy machine guns break in as well. I decided quickly. I held that it would be most sensible, whether a betrayal or a partisan attack has occurred, that we stay in the dissection hall. We will await the development of events here at our posts. Through the window I note the arrival of 8-10 trucks [*nyolc-tíz teherautó*]. They brake in front of *Krema I*, our crematorium, and half a battalion worth of soldiers jump down from them and draw up in lines in front of the barbed-wire fence...

<sup>92</sup> *Sic.* Readers may recall here that Nyiszli numbers the Birkenau crematoria with the Roman numerals I to IV, in contrast with modern practice, which reserves the number I for the disused crematorium at the Auschwitz Main Camp, and gives the Birkenau crematoria numbers II through V. The "*Krema III*" mentioned here thus is actually Crematorium IV. See Note 15 above.

The situation is clear to me now. The *Sonderkommando* has seized control of Crematorium I; it is shooting and launching hand grenades at the lines of SS mustering before the gate. The defense appears to be effective, for I see several SS soldiers collapse, wounded or dead. This soon led the besiegers to resort to more-effective methods. They bring forward forty or fifty trained bloodhounds and incite them against the defenders inside the crematorium, but to my amazement the dogs, at other times so eager and fierce, do not move; indeed they cower, whining, behind their SS masters' backs. I explain this by the fact that the dogs are trained against prisoners in striped clothing; here there are no such uniforms, though there is something else which is unfamiliar to the dogs. In the crematorium and its surroundings a penetrating stench of blood, burnt flesh and bone is pervasive. And of that the bloodhounds, with their exquisite sense of smell, were afraid. When this attempt of the SS proved unsuccessful, though still under continuous fire [they brought up two cannons] from an anti-aircraft battery<sup>93</sup> and began to put them into position pointed at the crematorium building.

The *Sonderkommando* could not withstand such superiority in numbers and weapons. A powerful shout of "hurrah" shook the building and the *Sonderkommando* rushed out the back door of the crematorium [*a krematórium... hátsó ajtóin*]. They break out through the previously cut electrical wire, and at a running pace, firing continuously at the SS standing along the guard chain line, they aim their flight toward the bend of the Vistula. An extremely intense firefight sprang up between the SS and the escapees. I hear clearly as the heavy machine guns of the guard towers break in among the clatter of guns and the detonations of hand grenades and explosives boxes. It probably did not last ten minutes, and then everything was still.

Now the SS standing in lines on the front side of the building also start to attack, without using the two cannons. With bayonets fixed, they attack the building from several sides and pour into every room on the ground and first floors. A group of ten barged into the dissection hall. With weapons drawn against us they surrounded us and under a hail of blows from their rifle butts led us, hands held high, into the courtyard, where they ordered all four of us face down on the ground. "Anyone who moves or lifts his head, gets a bullet in his head!" the order rings out. A few minutes later, I hear from the sound of feet that a large group of *Sonderkommando* men are brought over and made to lie down beside us. How many could they be? I do not know, for I lie motionless, face pressed against the ground, in a single line with the new arrivals. Three or four minutes later they bring a new group; these lie down behind me.

<sup>93</sup> Nyiszli's original 1946 text is defective here, lacking the bracketed material and thus leaving unclear precisely what the SS were putting into position. The missing text can be supplied from two paragraphs below, where an otherwise inexplicable reference is made to "the two cannons" (*a két ágyút*).

As we lie there motionless we continuously receive blows from rifle butts, or kicks with boots to the head, back and waist amid a thick torrent of abuse. I feel the warmth of the blood which pours from my head, my face, the taste of salt, the salty taste of blood which flows over my lips. I only feel the first few blows. My head buzzes and spins. I do not think of anything. My sense organs begin to renounce their duties. I feel as if I am dissolving into the indifference of annihilation.

For twenty or thirty minutes we lie there like that and wait for the bullet from the gun of the SS soldier standing behind us. I knew that in this situation they would shoot us in the head. That is the quickest and easiest kind of death. I should know. A professional matter! I can almost see my brains splattering under the hydraulic pressure of the bullet penetrating from point blank and my skull falling apart into a thousand pieces.

I hear the roar of an automobile. It can only be Dr. Mengele arriving! The men of the political SS have been waiting for him. I cannot look up, but I recognize his voice. He speaks with the SS commander standing before our front line. Suddenly I hear a loud shout. An SS yells at us: "Doctors stand up!" We obey the order. All four of us stand up. Standing at attention we wait for what is to happen next. Dr. Mengele motions me over to him. My face and shirt are bloody, my clothes are muddy; I stand thus before him. Next to him stand three SS officers, heads of the political SS. Dr. Mengele asks what we have been up to. "Nothing," I reply. "We were merely executing the *Hauptsturmführer's* orders. We were dissecting the Russian officer's corpse when the trouble occurred. Half the autopsy was left to do at the time, and the protocol is in the typewriter. It is possible to check that! We stayed at our posts the entire time, they found us there." The SS commander confirms all this. Dr. Mengele looks at me and says: "Go, clean yourself up and get back to work!" I turn on my heels, my three companions follow as well. We head for the crematorium door. We have taken scarcely twenty steps when bursts of rapid gunfire ring out behind our backs. The *Sonderkommando* lies dead on the bloody pavement stones [*kövezeten*].

I did not turn around but rather hastening my pace I went to my room. With trembling hands I tried to roll a cigarette. I tore three papers before I succeeded. I lit up and, drawing a deep puff of smoke, staggered to my bed and lay down. Only now did I begin to feel, in my head and in all the parts of my body, the pain caused by the blows and kicks that I had endured.

All these many things had happened today, and yet it was only three in the afternoon. My salvation caused me neither joy nor relief. I realize that I have only gained a reprieve. I know Dr. Mengele and the SS mentality. I am conscious of the importance of my sphere of work and I know as well that I am irreplaceable. Apart from me, there is no forensic pathologist in the K.Z. who could answer to the local requirements. Even if there were some such person, he would be careful not to reveal his professional abilities and thus fall into

Dr. Mengele's clutches, ending his life four months later as a *Sonderkommando*.

When my utterly jangled nerves had calmed a little, I got up from my bed and went out to look around. I wanted to know what had really happened this afternoon. Was there in fact a traitor among us and had the SS prevented the planned insurrection with the destruction of the *Sonderkommando*? Even by looking they could not have found a better occasion and pretext for the liquidation of the *Kommando*. On another theory, the four-month term simply expired today. The political SS had received an order for the executions! They had gone into action to carry it out, but the twelfth *Sonderkommando* had not complied with the order that they should line up in the courtyard, as if they were being called together for the purpose of counting or issuing orders, but in reality simply so they could be shot. Our *Sonderkommando*, in the awareness of all this, chose armed resistance.

In the cremation hall, stripped naked, my dead comrades lie in long lines before the furnaces. One after another I recognize the bodies of my comrades who broke out of Crematorium I. The collected corpses were brought in on hand carts from the guard-chain line where they had fallen. Lying here also are those comrades who were executed in the courtyard after my three companions and I were removed from their lines. These were brought from Crematoria II, III and IV to Crematorium I after the crushing of the uprising, to be done away with here and cremated together with the others. Today the furnaces are lit only here, and only thirty hastily assembled new *Sonderkommando* members are available.

I am standing beside an SS NCO who is recording the numbers from the arms of the corpses, turned with their faces upward. I do not ask him, he tells me of his own initiative that twelve men are missing from the *Sonderkommando*; the others, with the exception of seven men, are dead. Of the seven men, four are us, the three doctors of the dissection and hall and the laboratory assistant. Also still alive are the operator engineer for the dynamos [*a dynamók*] and the fans, a chief stoker, and a *Pipel*,<sup>94</sup> that is, an errand boy in the personal service of the SS who keeps their clothes, boots and cutlery in order and besides this also performs telephone duty. Twelve succeeded in escaping.

From the *Pipel* I learned in detail the events of the day today. There was no hint of betrayal. Seventy members of the political SS arrived by truck [*teherautón*] at Crematorium III at half-past one in the afternoon. Their commander ordered the *Kommando* to fall in, but no one among them moved. They guessed what would follow. The SS officer decided that it would be easier to achieve the goal by initiating a diversionary action; they are masters in the art of lies. To that end, he stood himself in the middle of the courtyard and deliv-

<sup>94</sup> In German in the original, correctly *Piepel*. The word is a dialectical and slang form which means "young boy" or, euphemistically, "penis."

ered a speech with all the primitivity and concision of the SS: "Men, since you have worked sufficiently here, by superior orders you will be going in a transport to a labor camp. There you will have good clothes, plenty of grub and easy work. So anyone whose tattoo number I read out should step forward from among you and fall in line." He began reading. There are one hundred Hungarian *Sonderkommando* men in Crematorium III; he reads them out first. These are the youngest residents of the K.Z.; they line up unresistingly. Their fear is greater than their courage. An SS platoon immediately leads them away out of the courtyard. They lock them all in Barracks number 13 of Camp "D."

Meanwhile at Crematorium III the reading of the tattoo numbers went on. It became the turn for those of Greek nationality. These do not fall into line so readily when the SS officer shouts out their numbers. The Polish group comes next. Murmurs and impetuous, heckling shouts are heard from the crowd. The SS shouts out a number. Nobody moves! As he looks around expectantly, a mineral water bottle falls in front of his feet. A terrible explosion follows. Seven SS lie in their own blood, wounded or dead, the commander among them. The bottle was filled with ecrasite. The Poles had thrown it. The SS open fire murderously on the mutineers. The latter race into the crematorium. From there they throw bottles of ecrasite into the courtyard. A group of SS mow down all the Greeks still standing in line in the courtyard with their machine pistols. A few among them tried to escape. They too were shot down by the gates.

Shooting continuously, the SS advance toward the crematorium entrance. It is a difficult task, for the Poles put up stiff resistance. One after another the mineral water bottles fall into the courtyard from the building's windows [*ablakaiból*] and their powerful explosions keep the entrance to the building clear, until an explosion surpassing all others so far cuts to the ground those SS soldiers who have gotten near by now. The crematorium's enormous roof structure blows open and hundreds of rafters fly up into the sky among smoke and flames. Four steel barrels full of gasoline had exploded and turned the great building into a pile of ruins burying the *Sonderkommando* beneath itself. A few among the survivors still resisted, but the machine guns of the SS mowed them down. The others, those who were able to walk despite their wounds, came out the door with their hands held up, but the hail of bullets made an end of them too. They knew what was waiting for them, but fire was raging inside the building and they chose the easier death instead. The one hundred Hungarian *Sonderkommando* men taken to Camp "D" were also brought back and shot without exception.

Thus the uprising began in Crematorium III. In Crematorium I, work went on quietly until Crematorium III blew into the air. At the sound of the explosion the tension reaches its peak in the already strained atmosphere of waiting. For a few moments nobody knew what had happened. The stokers leave the furnaces and, huddling in a group at one end of the hall, they discuss the pos-

sibilities. They only have a few moments' time for this, for one of the SS guards shows up among them and with a hoarse shout calls the chief stoker to account, for his men are not working and have left the furnaces [*kazánokat*] to themselves. The chief stoker replied to him with something which must not have been a satisfactory explanation to him for the cessation of work. With his heavy cane – for all the SS guards have one, and use it for the coercion of the *Sonderkommando* – he struck him in the face with all his might, naturally with the curved end. Another might perhaps have collapsed dead with a shattered skull from such a blow; the chief stoker, the toughest man of the *Sonderkommando*, merely staggered. Blood poured down his face. From the leg of a boot he draws forth a long, sharp knife and thrusts it into the SS NCO's chest. The latter would have collapsed, but two other stokers are already on him. The door of the first furnace [*az első kazán ajtaja*] opens and they throw him head first into the fire. All this happened in an instant, but another SS guard hurrying into view of the group from the far end of the hall had managed to catch sight of the booted feet of the SS man. At a run he makes straight for the first furnace [*az első kemencéhez*] to open its door. He wants to see who has been thrown into the furnace [*a kazánba*] fully clothed and wearing boots. It can only be an SS soldier or a *Sonderkommando* man! He never learned which of the two it was. Leaping forward, a *Sonderkommando* man stabbed him in the chest and with the help of two others shoved him into the furnace [*a kazánba*] beside his comrade [*társa mellé*].

Within moments, machine pistols and grenades and blasting boxes were in all hands. Heavy gunfire and explosions sound from every side of the great cremation hall. At one end stand the SS guards, at the other, the *Sonderkommando* men. A hand grenade falls among the SS. This signifies the incapacitation or death of seven of them. There are wounded and dead on the *Sonderkommando*'s side as well. This makes their attacks even fiercer. A few more men fall among the SS; the others, there might have been twenty or so, find it best to withdraw from the building. They do not stop until the crematorium gate. There they link up with the group of SS brought in meanwhile from the outside that is just now moving into action.

The rest we already know. Seven of us remain in the crematorium! The twelve are also brought back during the night. During the breakout they succeeded in getting beyond the Vistula, but they fell into the hands of a large group of SS. Completely exhausted, they had hidden in a Polish house they thought was safe. Their host had notified an SS detachment prowling nearby; the latter fell upon them by surprise and took all twelve prisoners.

I was already lying in my bed and was trying to sleep after an eventful day. Suddenly the clatter of multiple machine pistols rouses me from my slumber.

After the sound of the shots, heavy steps approach along the corridor [*folyosón*]. My door flies open and two SS stagger through it. Both have bloody faces. The twelve men of ours who were brought back, when they ar-

rived at the crematorium courtyard with their escort, attacked the latter with their fists in order to grab their weapons. Thence the injuries to the SS men's faces. Naturally they immediately shot them all to death, without exception. They charge me with the care and bandaging of their wounds. I comply with their orders.

The loss of the twelve comrades completely crushes me. At the cost of so many lives not a single messenger has succeeded in getting away from this cursed place in order to tell of what is happening here.

As I later ascertained, however, news of the rebellion did get out. Some K.Z. prisoners who were working together with civilian laborers passed it along. There was someone among the SS as well who talked. This was a great event! Unique in the history of the K.Z.'s! Eight hundred and fifty-three prisoners had died. Seventy SS soldiers were killed. Among them were an *Obersturmführer*, seventeen *Oberscharführer* and *Scharführer*, and fifty-two *Sturmmann*,<sup>95</sup> that is, simple privates. Crematorium III had burned to ashes and Crematorium IV was put out of operation as a result of the destruction of its machinery.

## Chapter XXX

I wake up tired after a very restless night. I am in a state of severe nervous excitement. The muted chatter of my roommates, even the clicking of their shoes irritates me.

In a foul mood, I head to the dissection hall with my companions. We pass through the cremation hall. The concrete floor in front of the furnaces [*kazánok*] is clean. Our comrades were all cremated while it was still the middle hours of the night. The furnaces are already in the process of cooling; they give off only a tepid warmth. The thirty new *Sonderkommando* men, all of them horrified by the bloody tragedy of their first day spent in the crematorium, sit in frozen silence or lie in the beds of their dead comrades.

This state of affairs lasts only a few days. Soon signs of life, smaller and greater, will appear even in them. The appetite for a tasty morsel. Smoking relieves the pressure weighing on them too. In brandy, however, they discover the most effective, most blessed of remedies. For a few hours it cures a man of crematorium disease. It causes one to forget the past, and allows one to think of neither present nor the still-more-dreadful future. They have put on that which they had been so in want of until now in the barracks of the K.Z.: good clothes. They can practice cleanliness as much as they like as well. Here there is water and a bath, there is soap, and above all there are towels. I view them

<sup>95</sup> *Sic*, all ranks in German in the original. Hungarian does not mark plurals on nouns following a number and so the singular forms are not out of place. The correct plurals would be (*Ober*)*scharführer* (no change) and *Sturmmänner*.

as an old army-camp resident views new recruits. They'll soon get used to everything!

For lack of other business in the cremation hall, *ut aliquid videatur* – that is, so something may be seen – I give work to my men. I make them wipe the dust off the jars of museum specimens. I make them put the instruments in order, and I also have them patch together the screen over the window which was ripped by the bullets of yesterday's battle. I seat myself at my work table and make lists in my head, stuck all over as it is with bandages, of the complaints and requests to be made to Dr. Mengele.

I will explain to him that the crematorium does not have even a single room suitable as a dissection hall, for the screams of the thousands going to their deaths reach everywhere, piercing to the very marrow of one's bones. Either death by gas, or a shot to the back of the neck awaits them. I cannot concentrate on my research work, for starting from the day of my arrival here I have been conscious of the fate of the eleven *Sonderkommandos* brought here, and every hour and minute of the day for four months I have awaited the culmination of the fate of my own *Kommando*, the twelfth. I will also ask him to be reasonable and not require too precise a job from me, for just yesterday, October 6, 1944, he commanded that I should dissect the corpse of a Russian army officer and write up the autopsy protocol. Crematorium III blows into the air before my eyes [*szemem előtt*], an SS battalion attacks. Cannons and bloodhounds are deployed. Hand grenades explode. SS soldiers with fixed bayonets force their way into this hall of science that is directed by me. Amid constant blows they lead us out to the courtyard; there they make us lie in the mud, and for a few moments I am transformed from a medical examiner into a subject for execution. It is true that he, Dr. Mengele, took me out of the line of those sentenced to death, but I have only returned to the death house again for a new, four-month term. I will also ask him to consider the absurdity of the situation which arose last night. I provided medical assistance to two SS NCOs who just yesterday ordered me to the ground, kicked me repeatedly, hit me with the butts of their rifles wherever they could. With their guns pointed at my head, they were merely waiting for the signal to shoot their murderous bullets into me.

These are the complaints and concerns which I intend to present to my boss. My hope, in turn, is that he will transfer us, the four-member dissection-hall *Kommando*, along with the dissection hall itself, to a suitable location in the K.Z.

By the time I have done formulating what I want to say, Dr. Mengele is already opening the door. As per regulations we stand to attention, and as first in rank I announce: "Captain! Three doctors and one laboratory assistant at work at their jobs!"

His gaze glides over me and comes to a halt on my head, stuck all over with adhesive bandages. "What happened to you?" he asks in a half-



sympathetic, half-amused voice. From the question I gather that he does not want to remember the events of yesterday afternoon. I do not even answer it. I only say what little remains from my pile of complaints, now melted away into mist: "Captain! This environment is not suitable for the performance of scientific research work. Might the relocation of the dissection hall not be practicable?" He looks at me. His face hardens. "Perhaps you have some sentiments to share?" he asks with icy brevity.

I reproach myself for having so forgotten the prudence which I have adopted thus far and for having criticized this environment where my addle-brained, research-obsessed boss feels most at home.

The blazing flames of the pyres send their light here [*Idevilágít a máglyák lobogó tüze*]. The smoke from the chimneys of the four crematoria is pervasive here [*Itt terjeng négy krematórium kéményeinek füstje*]. The air is heavy with the smell of burning human flesh and singed hair. The screams of those going to their deaths and the explosive report of shots to the back of the neck make the building's walls tremble. He returns here after every selection and bloody fireworks display.

He spends all his free time here in this atmosphere of horrors, and with a silent fury he makes me open the corpses of hundreds of innocents sent to their deaths. Bacteria propagates itself in the electric incubator on a growth medium prepared from fresh human flesh. He sits before the microscope for hours at a time and seeks after the cause of phenomena such as none will ever decipher, the cause of multiple births.

Today, however, he appears tired. He has come from the Jews' ramp where he stood for hours in the pouring rain and selected the inhabitants of the Riga ghetto who have been brought here [*a Riga-i ghettó idehurcolt lakóit*]. But this was no selection, for all went to the left. The two functioning crematoria and the huge ditches of the pyres [*a máglyák óriási árcai*] are filled with them. Due to demand, the *Sonderkommando* stands at four hundred and sixty men.

He sits at the laboratory work table in his wet coat. He does not even take his hat off, though drops of rain water still fall from its visor. He does not even notice perhaps.

"Captain!" I say. "Allow me to take your coat and hat into the furnace room [*kazánterembe*]. They will be dry in five minutes."

"Leave it," he replies. "The water can only go as far as my skin."

He asks for the autopsy protocol for the Russian army officer who was shot. I turn it over. He takes it in his hands, reads a few lines from it and gives it back. "I'm very tired. You read it!" Surprised, I take the protocol and start in with the reading of it. I only get as far as four or five lines. He interrupts. "Leave it, it's not necessary," he says and stares at the window with a gaze that looks into infinity but sees nothing.

What can have happened to this man? Perhaps he has had his full of the surfeit of horrors? Has he received bad news, from which he has realized that

there's no sense in going on? I also consider it possible that the exertions of the last months have worn him out.

In our life together he has never given an opportunity for a personal conversation. Now, however, he seems so broken down that I take courage and ask:

"Captain! How long will the exterminations go on?"

He looks at me and replies:

"*Mein Freund! Es geht immer weiter, immer weiter!*"<sup>96</sup>

My friend! It goes ever on, ever on!

I sense a quiet resignation in his words.

He gets up from his seat and leaves the laboratory. With his briefcase in my hands, I accompany him to his car.

"In the next few days you will have a part in some interesting work," he says and gets into his car.

With a cold shiver I realize that interesting work means the death of another group of twins.

## Chapter XXXI

The crematoria are in a state of readiness. The men of the *Sonderkommando* replace the refractory linings [*samottbéléseket*] in the furnaces' fire boxes [*kemencék tűzszekrényeiben*]. They paint the heavy iron doors of the furnaces [*kazánok*] and oil their hinges. The dynamo and fans [*a dinamók és ventilátorok*] run all day. Experts check their functioning. The arrival of the Litzmannstadt ghetto [*a litzmannstadt-i ghettó*] has been announced. One should know about this ghetto that the Germans established it in the winter of 1939. The number of its inhabitants at the beginning was 500,000 souls. The ghetto's inhabitants worked in enormous war factories. In payment for their work they received ghetto marks, but they could exchange this currency only for extremely narrowly defined rations. It follows of itself that the disproportion between superhuman work performance and nutrition brought about their destruction en masse. Frequent epidemics also decimated them. In this way, the 500,000 souls melted away to 70,000 by the autumn of 1944.

Now the end has come for these as well. Each day [*napi*] they arrive at the Jews' ramp of K.Z. Auschwitz in groups of ten thousand [*tízezres csoportokban*]. The selection sent ninety-five percent to the left, five percent to the right. Cast out, bowed down by the weight of the tragedy of their accursed race, tortured by the spirit-killing desolation of five years of life in the ghetto, aged by decades by the slave labor imposed upon them, they have exhausted their capacity to experience good or evil. They pass through the crematorium

---

<sup>96</sup> In German in the original.

gates with indifference, though it is no secret to them that they have arrived at the last stage on the journey of their fate.

I go down to the undressing room. Their clothing and shoes lie scattered about on the concrete floor. One could hardly hang these rags and these scraps of wood used as shoes up on hooks. The cloakroom numbers do not interest them. They drop their luggage where they stand. The *Sonderkommando* men working on the sorting open a few of the packages and show them to me. A flatbread made of corn flour, water and a bit of linseed oil, and one or two kilos of oatmeal flour were all their provisions for the journey.

During the arrival of one of their transports, it happened that Dr. Mengele spotted a hunchbacked man of about fifty years of age among those lined up for selection. The cripple was not alone. Beside him stood a handsome-faced, tall youth of fifteen or sixteen years of age whose right leg was deformed, and corrected with a frame made of steel plates and a thick-soled orthopedic shoe. They were father and son.

Dr. Mengele believed he had found a textbook example of his theory of the degeneracy of the Jewish race in the physical defects of the hunchbacked father and the cripple-legged son. He immediately takes them out of the line. He motions an SS NCO over to him. He tears two pages out of his notebook, jots something down on them, and has the two unfortunates accompanied to Crematorium I by the SS soldier.

The time is getting on to twelve noon. Crematorium I is not in operation today. I am not busy at the moment. I am passing time in my room. The SS soldier doing day duty comes to find me there. He summons me to the gate. Standing there already are the father with his son, with the SS escort behind them. I receive one of the written messages, which is addressed to me. It says in it: "Dissection hall, Krema I. – The Number 1<sup>97</sup> will examine both clinically. Take precise measurements of father and son. Prepare clinical examination pages precisely containing within themselves all findings, particularly with regard to causes for the emergence of the observed deformities."

The other note is addressed to *Oberscharführer* Mussfeld. Even without reading it I know what is in it. I hand it to a *Sonderkommando* man; he will deliver it to him.

Father and son, moldering images of the terrible years in the Litzmannstadt ghetto, look at me with an inquiring gaze, with a sense of anxiety, with lips mutely expressive of foreboding. I pass with them across the sunny courtyard. With a few reassuring words I escort them into the autopsy hall. Fortunately no corpse is lying on the dissecting table; that would have been a terrible sight for them!

---

<sup>97</sup> *Sic*: "A No. I..." By this Mengele presumably is addressing Nyiszli as the "Number 1" of the dissection-hall staff.

Out of respect I do not examine them here, in this pervasively foul-smelling, gloomy room, but rather in the bright, warm laboratory. The father, as I learn from his account, was an eminent textiles wholesaler in Litzmannstadt who during the years of peace had often sought out distinguished Viennese professors of medicine for the treatment of his son.

First I examine the father with exhaustive thoroughness. The curvature of his spine is the consequence of a late-developing *rachitis*, or rickets. Even upon the closest examination I do not otherwise observe symptoms of any disease in him.

I reassure him as well that from here he will certainly be going to some labor camp or other.

Before I conduct his examination I also chat with the son – pleasant faced, intelligent seeming, but psychologically completely shattered. Trembling with fear, he recounts in a monotone voice the innumerable horrid, painful and tragic events of five years of life in the ghetto. At ten years of age he had gone behind the ghetto wire with his parents. His mother, a frail-bodied, tender-hearted woman did not long endure the ordeals that descended upon them. She fell into a state of melancholy and depression. For weeks she hardly took any nourishment for herself so that more of the already tightly rationed, unpalatable food should go to her husband and son. This true Jewish wife and Jewish mother, who loved her child to the point of madness, died a martyr in the first year of their ghettoization. Thus bereaved, the widowed husband and motherless child lived the tragic life of the ghetto.

Now they are in Crematorium I. What a horrible drama of our Jewish existence that I, a Jewish doctor, must examine them with precise clinical methods before they go to their deaths, and then dissect their still-warm bodies. I feel this horrible irony of our Jewish destiny with such passion that my nerves, in my impotence, are strained almost to the point of madness.

By whose will has this series of horrors descended upon our unfortunate people? Perhaps by God's! He has long since hidden himself in shame, then, for even He did not will this much.

I gather up every last little bit of my disintegrating energy. I examine the boy too. On his right foot I observe a congenital defect involving the incomplete development of certain joints. The scientific name of this deformity is hypomelia. As I observe, brilliantly gifted hands have performed repeated operations on it, in consequence of which his leg has become shortened, but with bandaging and an orthopedic shoe he is fully capable of walking. I did not observe any other deformities on his body.

I ask them whether they want anything to eat. They are very hungry, they say. I tell one of the *Sonderkommando* to bring food for them. They immediately receive a plentiful portion of meat stew with macaroni. Only the *Sonderkommando* has such food. They immediately start in on it and greedily consume the fine food which they have not tasted for so long. They do not know,

though I do, that they are consuming their death-house meal, their "last supper" [„utolsó vacsorát”].

Scarcely half an hour later *Oberscharführer* Mussfeld and four *Sonderkommando* men appear. They lead the two men into the furnace room [*kazántérembe*]; there they make them remove their clothes and the *Oberscharführer*'s gun fires twice. Father and son lie dead on the bloody concrete. *Oberscharführer* Mussfeld has carried out Dr. Mengele's order.

Now it is my turn again. The two corpses are brought into the dissection hall. I feel such nausea at the horror of it that I entrust performance of the autopsies to my companions; I write the protocol. The autopsies do not even furnish any additional data to the store which I have already established "*in vivo*" [„élőben"]. Ordinary cases, but useful propaganda material in support of the theory of the degeneracy of the Jewish race.

In the evening, after he has sent at least ten thousand people to their deaths in this one day, Dr. Mengele arrives. He listens with great interest to my report on the *in vivo* and autopsy data from the two physically defective victims.

"These corpses must not go for cremation [*elégetésre*]," he says. "They will be prepared and the skeletons will go to the anthropological museum in Berlin."

He asks me what methods I know for the perfect cleaning of skeletons. "I know two methods," I reply. "One is the dissolving method, which consists of placing the corpse in a calcium chloride solution; within two weeks this will burn away all soft parts. After that the bones go into a gasoline bath, which dissolves the grease from them, thereby leaving them dry, odorless and snow-white in color. The second method, the cooking method, is shorter. It consists of simply cooking the body in water until the fleshy parts are easily and smoothly removable from the bones. Afterwards, here too we employ a gasoline bath for the degreasing and bleaching of the bones."

Dr. Mengele orders the employment of the shorter method, cooking.

Orders in the K.Z. tend to be quite short. Here they do not say how, they do not say where the K.Z. prisoner is to procure the tools necessary for the execution of the order. It has to be carried out! I am in just such a bind myself. I have to cook two corpses. In what shall I cook them, and where? I turn to *Oberscharführer* Mussfeld, he will be of assistance to me! I tell him that I have to cook two corpses but I do not have any suitable vessels. Even he listens to my relation of events with horror. He reflects a little, and two tinplate barrels which are lying unused in a storeroom [*egy raktárhelyiségben*] come to his mind.

He puts these at my disposal and recommends that I have stoves [*tűzhelyeket*] built from bricks in the courtyard. I do so. The stoves are prepared, the tinplate barrels are placed over them with their terrible contents and the cooking begins. Two *Sonderkommando* men are assigned as wood carriers and stokers. Five hours later, after repeated tests, I ascertain that the soft parts sep-

arate from the bones smoothly. I put a stop to the fires, but the barrels will remain in their places until cooled.

In the absence of better occupation, I sit down in a small grove near the barrels and read. A pleasant silence surrounds me. Today nothing is in operation. Four stonemason prisoners brought here from Auschwitz I are repairing the crematorium's chimney [*a krematórium kéményét javítja*].

It is getting on toward evening. The barrels should be cooled, and I am just about to get up from my resting place for the emptying of them when one of my men comes running up from among the barrels' guards and attendants and, quite beside himself, shouts: "Doctor! The Poles are eating the flesh from the barrels!" I leap quickly from my seat and rush over. Four unfamiliar prisoners in striped clothing are standing, immobilized, around the barrels. They are the Polish stonemasons who, having completed their work, are waiting for their guards to take them back to their quarters in Auschwitz I. Half-starved men, they were searching about in the courtyard for something to eat and thus came across the barrels, left unguarded for a few minutes. They believed that the meat cooking in the big barrels was for the *Sonderkommando*. They sniffed, took out a few large pieces of skinless flesh, cut some pieces from it with their knives and began greedily to eat, but not for long, for the two stokers showed up and spotted them. They were almost paralyzed with terror when they learned what sort of flesh they had eaten.

After the gasoline bath, the dissection hall assistant puts the bones together with great expertise. They lay spread out on the laboratory table, where I examined them alive one day ago.

Dr. Mengele was very satisfied. He brought several highly ranked medical colleagues along with him for the examination of the skeletons. They fiddled self-importantly with a few pieces. They tossed around scientific expressions. They behaved as if the deformities in the skeletons of the two victims were unparalleled medical findings. What they are engaged in is *Pseudowissenschaft*,<sup>98</sup> pseudoscience. There is no extraordinary anomaly here. What there is can be seen in hundreds of thousands of people in every part of the world. It is a frequent observation even in a medical practice in contact with a quite small cross-section of the public. Still, it is magnificently useful for propaganda purposes, for by its very nature pseudoscience<sup>99</sup> does not shrink from blatant lies dressed up in scientific garb. Those in turn who view the propaganda material and read the text normally are not possessed of critical spirit, but rather take everything as it is served up to them.

The two skeletons go into long, sturdy paper bags, and in this manner travel to Berlin with the accompanying data. Onto this shipment also went the

<sup>98</sup> In German in the original.

<sup>99</sup> The subject here is not explicitly expressed in the original and must be supplied from context. It might also be "propaganda" or even (with a change of pronouns in the preceding clause in translation, i.e., "by *his* very nature") "Dr. Mengele."

“Urgent, important war shipment” stamp<sup>100</sup> I was relieved when they were out of my sight. They had caused me extremely bitter hours, both in their lives and in their deaths.

A week had passed [*elmult egy hét*]; the liquidation of the Litzmannstadt ghetto has ended. The late October sunshine gives way to cold autumn rain. Fog and gloom cover the barracks of the K.Z. My past slowly becomes foggy and my future is dark. The rain pouring down for days on end, the damp cold that penetrates to the bone, the silence all only increase the bitterness that has accumulated inside me. Wherever I go, wherever I look, everywhere there is only electrified wire, reminder of the vanity of all hope.

Three days following the liquidation of the Litzmannstadt ghetto the head *Kapo* of the *Sonderkommando* brings a woman, soaked to her skin, and two dripping, shivering children in from the crematorium courtyard. Guessing the worst, they had sneaked away from the last transport marching in to die, and hidden behind the large pile of firewood standing in the crematorium courtyard [*a krematórium udvarán álló nagy tűzifarakás mögött*]. Before their eyes, their transport went below the ground,<sup>101</sup> and they were able to observe that no one came back out from there. Frozen in terror, they waited for some chance that could be of help to them, but nothing occurred. They had waited like that for three days in the cold wind and pouring rain, without food, soaked to the skin in ragged clothes, until the head *Kapo* came across them half unconscious while doing his rounds. There was nothing he could do; he brought them before *Oberscharführer* Mussfeld. The woman, bone thin, around thirty years of age but looking more like fifty, fell to her knees before the *Ober* with a last exertion of strength, clasped his boots and with heart-rending despair pleaded for the lives of her two children, aged 10 and 12 years, as well as for her own. She said that she had worked for the German army for five years in a clothes factory in the ghetto. She still wants to work after this. Let them spare their lives. There was no helping it! They had to die! And indeed they died, but time has managed to wear down even the *Ober*; he sent another in his place for the completion of the murderous task.

## Chapter XXXII

We forgot even this bloody episode, for we had to forget if we did not want to go mad from the horrors we lived through and the desperation of our dark future. In this, the forgetful hours of Luminal stupor helped a great deal. I often think of the past as if I had lived through my life before the K.Z. in a dream. To forget everything, that alone is my goal, and to think of nothing.

<sup>100</sup> See Chapter VIII, where the stamp is introduced as saying “Urgent, important war material” („Sürgős, hadi fontosságú anyag”) rather than “shipment” (*küldemény*), as here.

<sup>101</sup> That is, into the semi-underground undressing room.

It is November 1, 1944, the Day of the Dead [*halottak napja*].<sup>102</sup> The snow is falling thickly in large flakes. It is scarcely possible to see as far as the guard towers, for everything is confounded in the vast whiteness. Only the crows, gaunt from hunger, take to their wings when the booming north wind shakes the wire of the fences.

Though the weather is unsuitable for it, I go for a short walk in the evening twilight, and the cold wind refreshes and soothes my jangled nerves. I walk around the courtyard several times; my path leads me before the entrance down into the gas chamber. I stop there for a few moments. It occurs to me that today is the day of the dead! [*Eszembe jut, ma halottak napja van!*] All around a ghastly silence lies over everything. The cold stones of the concrete stairs disappear in the darkness of the entrance down into the gas chamber. Four million [*négymillió*] innocent people said farewell to their lives here with a last, painful glance, that they might then descend into their unmourned tomb. I stand here alone, on the last step of their lives. To me thus falls the sad duty to commemorate [*emlékezzek*] them with profound sympathy in place of relatives living all over the world.

I leave this place and return to my room. When I open the door I am surprised to see that the usual bright electric lamp is not on; in its place flickering candlelight gives faint illumination to the room. For a moment I suspect an electrical fault. My colleague, the assistant lecturer from Szombathely, is sitting at the table holding his head propped in his hands, staring into the flame of the candle standing before him. He does not even notice my entrance. The flickering flame of the candle illuminates his face. He appears older than his years. I place my hand on his shoulder and, attuning myself to his mood, I quietly ask: "Dénes, for whom have you lit a commemorative candle [*emlékgyertyát*] in this place?" I receive a confused reply. He speaks of his father-in-law, his mother-in-law, they have been dead for fifteen years. Of his wife and child, who were lost here in Crematorium I – there are eyewitnesses to this in the *Sonderkommando* – he makes no mention. I immediately recognize the symptoms of melancholic depression and retrograde amnesia, that is, a deficiency in recollection.

I embrace him, take him to his bed and make him lie down. "My poor friend! You, a frail-bodied, soft-spoken, fine-souled, deeply learned doctor who, in place of the care of the sick, have fallen into the service of death and become a subject of its empire. For long months you have been witness to tragedies and horrors such as no human mind could comprehend and no person living would believe. It is just as well that your nerves have renounced

<sup>102</sup> Nyiszli presumably intends to refer here to the traditional Christian celebration of All Souls' Day (in remembrance of the dead), though technically this falls on the second of November; it is the related All Saints' Day (in honor specifically of the saints of the church) which falls on the first.



their duties and that a beneficent veil of fog clouds over your brain. At least you will not feel the things that are still to come.”

## Chapter XXXIII

After several days of silence, the usual din once again dominates the area of the crematoria. The motors of the big fans [*a nagy ventillátorok motorjai*] drone, the fires in the furnaces are revived [*élesztik a kazánót tüzét*]. The arrival of the Theresienstadt ghetto has been announced.

During the period of the Czechoslovak Republic, Theresienstadt was specifically a garrison town. The Germans terminated the garrison's status, removed the civilian population and established a model ghetto in the town. Its inhabitants were Jews deported from the territory of Czechoslovakia, Austria and Holland. Their number approached seventy thousand. Until now they lived under fairly good conditions. They were able to freely practice their professions. They received mail and Red Cross aid packages. Red Cross delegates from neutral states visited the town several times and on each occasion reported favorably on conditions there. The Germans had achieved their goal with the establishment of the model ghetto, for the reports neutralized and classified as malicious slanders the rumors which were circulating about the horrors of the K.Z.'s and the crematoria.

The Third Reich, on the eve of its collapse, no longer cares about world public opinion; it throws off its mask of seeming humanity. They begin the total extermination of the Jews still alive in their hands.

And so the model ghetto of Theresienstadt's turn for extermination has arrived.

REICH SS COMMISARIAT [*kormánybiztosság*]

DEPLOYMENT AND ALLOCATION OF COMPULSORY LABORERS  
CONSCRIPTION NOTICE

The Jew X. Y. of the *Reichsprotektorat*<sup>103</sup> is hereby notified that by order of the above-named authorities he has been assigned to total labor service [*totális munkaszolgálatra*].<sup>104</sup> The conscript is required to present any tools used in the practice of his profession, his instruments, his winter clothes, bedding and provisions for one week to the delegates of the above-named authorities prior to start of group departures. The date of departure will be communicated by posted notices.

Theresienstadt... date.

<sup>103</sup> Short for *Reichsprotektorat Böhmen und Mähren*, administrative name for the Czech portion of the former Czechoslovakia incorporated into the Reich as a protectorate in March 1939.

<sup>104</sup> Nyiszli does not capitalize this phrase, and it is uncertain whether he intends a proper name by it, as previous translators have assumed (e.g., Seaver's 1960 English translation, "Service of Obligatory Labor"). (Notably, Nyiszli does not put the Hungarian definite article *a* before the phrase, suggesting that he is indeed using it generically.) It does not appear, at any rate, to correspond to the actual name of any specific program of the time.

Signature.

With these conscription notices, the work-capable men of the Theresienstadt ghetto arrived in the Auschwitz crematoria. The deployment to total labor was an unspeakably vile deception. It was merely a pretense for the smooth execution of the liquidation action and for the acquisition of fine instruments, tools and winter clothing.

Twenty thousand [*húszezer*] vigorous, work-capable men died in the gas chambers and burned to ashes in the fire of the furnaces [*a kazánok tüzében*]. The extermination lasted for two days [*Két napig tartott a megsemmisítés*]. Afterwards, a silence lasting for days lay over the crematoria.

Fourteen days later, long trains arrive one after the other at the Jews' ramp. Women and children descend from them. There is no selection; all go to the left.

On the undressing room floor lie hundreds of summons notices with the following text:

REICH SS COMMISARIAT

DEPLOYMENT AND ALLOCATION OF COMPULSORY LABORERS  
SUMMONS

The above-named authorities hereby permit the wife and children of X. Y., Jew of the *Protektorat* deployed to total labor, to travel to the work location of the aforementioned Jew and to live with him in familial union for the duration of his compulsory labor. Appropriate accommodations are available. Winter clothing, bedding and provisions for one week are required.

Theresienstadt... date.

Signature.

The destruction of twenty thousand [*húszezer*] wives hoping to make their husbands' lot easier and children pining after their fathers followed in the wake of this summons formulated with such diabolical cunning.

## Chapter XXXIV

In the early morning hours of November 17, 1944, an SS NCO opens the door to my room and confidentially informs me that by order of the *Reichsführer*<sup>105</sup> the killing of people in any fashion within the grounds of the K.Z. has been strictly prohibited. I could not give credence to this statement; I have already been witness to so much deception. I even expressed my doubts to the bearer of the good news, but he insisted and repeatedly stated that such an order had arrived by radio [*rádión*] in the crematorium as well as at the Political SS command. We will see then! What truth is there to it?! This too, perhaps, is another deception.

<sup>105</sup> Properly, *Reichsführer-SS*, title of Heinrich Himmler as head of the SS.

Still in the morning hours, I am convinced of the truth of the news. A train composed of five wagons came to a halt on the rails between Crematoria I and II. It brought five hundred exhausted, sick prisoners, with the destination “rest camp,” before the gates of the crematoria. I am an eyewitness as a committee of the Political SS welcomes them; the SS escort negotiates with their commander. The result of the negotiation is that the five wagons turned back from before the gates of death with their cargo and all were accommodated in the hospital barracks of Camp F. It is the first instance since I have been in the crematorium that a transport sent to Auschwitz with the destination “rest camp” has lain, within an hour of arrival, not on the bloody concrete floor of the furnace room [*kazánterem*] shot in the head, but rather in the care of doctors, in beds in one of the barracks of the hospital camp.

Not even a full hour later another train arrives. Five hundred Slovakian Jews – old, young, children, men, women mixed together – form the transport. They descend from the wagons. I observe the proceedings intently. Lining up and selection are the usual formalities on the Jews’ ramp, but what I now observe is completely unprecedented. The weary passengers descend from their wagons; they do not leave their larger luggage behind, but rather keeping it in their hands they all set off like that to the right, into Camp “E” of the K.Z. Mothers push children in front of themselves in their carriages. The young assist the old and the sick in their walking.

Exulting, I register the truth of the news. No doubt about it, the gates of the crematorium will never open again before the transports of those sent to die.

A happy event which awakens hope for the prisoners of the K.Z., it is a change which signifies the approach of death to the *Sonderkommando*. I have no doubt about it; the end will come for us even sooner than the expiry of the four-month term. A new life begins in the K.Z.’s. There is no more violent death, but the bloody past must be hidden: the crematoria are to be demolished, the pits for the pyres filled in [*betömik a máglyák gödreit*], and every eyewitness and participant to the horrors must be destroyed without exception. In full consciousness of the approaching end, we welcome the great change with grim resignation but also with joy in our hearts.

Even if it had arrived very late, there are still a few thousand alive from among the six million [*hatmillió*] souls whom Europe’s addle-brained, mad pyromaniac, Führer of the Third Reich, hauled away from every part of Europe and reunited with each other, not one hour before their deaths, on the rail platforms, lit by the flames of cremation pyres, of Majdanek, Treblinka, Auschwitz, Birkenau.

As it is nearing twelve noon, driven by uneasy feelings I seek out the SS NCO radio operator who brought us the good news early that morning in his room. I want to know what orders have arrived during the course of the morning. Are there any directives with respect to the fate of the *Sonderkommando*? Fortunately I find him alone in his room. I lay out my questions. The *Sonder-*

*kommando*, he says, will be going in a few days to do heavy labor in a secured underground war factory somewhere near Breslau.

I did not believe a word of it. I know now that he lied, not for the purpose of deception but rather out of consideration, for I once cured him of a serious illness.

## Chapter XXXV

My watch showed two p.m. It is after lunch and I am looking apathetically out our window at the darkly swirling clouds of snow when a loud shout disturbs the silence of the furnace-hall corridor [*a kazánterem folyosójának*]. “*Alle antreten!*”<sup>106</sup> sounds the order. We hear it two times a day, morning and evening, for the customary roll call, but in the afternoon it is of ominous significance. “*Alle antreten!*” it sounds again, still sharper, still more impatient.

Now heavy footsteps resound at the door to our room; an SS man opens it and shouts: “*Antreten!*” Here’s trouble! We head for the courtyard. We step out into a large circle of SS guards; our comrades are already standing there. There is not the least surprise here, not the least noise. The SS units stand silently with machine pistols trained on us and wait patiently until everyone is in the group. I look around. The young fir trees of the little grove [*a kis lugas fiatal fenyőfái*] stand unmoving, covered in white. Everything is so silent!

A few minutes later we are ordered to face left and we start off between the close-ranked lines of armed guards. Leaving the crematorium courtyard, our escort does not lead us onto the road, but rather across the road, in the direction of Crematorium II standing opposite. Sure enough, we advance through its courtyard. We know now that this is our final journey. We are all herded into the crematorium’s furnace hall [*kazántermébe*]. Not a single SS guard remains inside. They stand around the building, at the doors and windows, with machine pistols ready for firing. The doors are locked; heavy iron grills cover the windows. There is no way out here. The comrades from Crematorium II are here as well! A few minutes later the ones from number IV are brought in. Four hundred and sixty men [*négyszázhatvan ember*] stand together and wait for death; only the method of execution still constitutes a matter for conjecture. Here there are specialists who know all of the death-bringing methods of the SS. The gas chamber? That would be impossible to carry out smoothly with the *Sonderkommando*! Shooting? That is a method that is scarcely feasible here, inside!

The most likely scenario is that they will blow us up together with the building in the interest of achieving two goals at once. That would be genuine SS method, or perhaps we will receive a few phosphorus grenades through the

<sup>106</sup> “[Everyone] fall in!” In German in the original.

window. Such are what the people of the Milo Ghetto [*a milói ghettó népe*]<sup>107</sup> received immediately after embarkation in the wagons [*közvetlenül bevagonirozása után*]. The train had not even set off with them and already they were all dead. They arrived like that at the Auschwitz crematoria.

In mute silence, wordlessly – if someone says something to his companion, he does so in a whisper – the *Kommando* men hunker down wherever they have found places on the concrete of the furnace hall floor. Suddenly the silence is broken: one of our comrades, a black-haired, tall, slim man wearing glasses, about thirty years of age, leaps up from his place and in a ringing voice, so that all can hear, begins to speak. He is a “dayan” [*“dájén”*],<sup>108</sup> which is a sort of auxiliary priest [*segédpapféle*] in a little Jewish community in Poland. He is an autodidact with a great store of religious and worldly knowledge at his command. He is the ascetic of the *Sonderkommando*, a man who, in order to abide by the dietary prescriptions of his faith, eats nothing from the bountiful kitchen of the *Sonderkommando* [*a Sonderkommandó bő [bő] kenyhájáról*] but bread, margarine and onions. His assignment was to have been stoker on a cremation furnace [*égetőkemencénél*], but as he is a man of fanatic faith I have arranged with *Oberscharführer* Mussfeld that he should receive an exemption from this horrible work.

I justified my request to the *Ober* with the observation that the man is not employable in a job demanding great physical strength because from ritual considerations he hardly ever eats anything, indeed is completely weakened, and furthermore is not suitable to the place given that he only impedes the work when bodies are being slid into the fire box [*a tűszekrénybe*], as in every instance he mumbles the prayer for the dead first. This happens several thousands of times per day [*Többezerszer történik ez napjában*].

I had no other arguments. The *Ober* accepted them, and at my suggestion the man was sent to the so-called Canada rubbish heap [*úgynevezett Canada szemétdomb*]<sup>109</sup> burning in the courtyard of Crematorium II. One should know of this rubbish heap that they bring here all the personal effects and spoiled food, as well as identification papers, diplomas, documents concerning military honors, passports, marriage certificates, prayer books, phylacteries, and

<sup>107</sup> The identity of the “Milo Ghetto” referred to here by Nyiszli is uncertain. In normal usage the word *milói* occurs almost exclusively in the specific proper name “*A milói Venus*” (“The Venus of Milo”), and thus refers to the Greek island of Milos (*Milosz* in modern Hungarian). Naturally this seems an unlikely candidate for the location of a ghetto full of Jews embarking on a train to Auschwitz, but this is indeed how previous translations have generally interpreted the word. Exceptionally, Angelika Bihari’s German translation interprets it as referring to Milan (“*aus dem Mailänder Ghetto*”), though this would require amending the Hungarian text to read *milánói*.

<sup>108</sup> Quotation marks in the original. The word is written with a small “d” here, but capitalized in later mentions.

<sup>109</sup> In Auschwitz camp slang, “Canada” (or “Kanada”) was the name given to the complex of buildings established for the sorting and storage of prisoner effects at Birkenau. It was located in the northwest corner of the camp, some 250 meters beyond the outer fence line of the Crematorium II (i.e., III) compound.

Torah scrolls which the transports sent to the gas chambers brought with them from home but which were condemned to be burned as useless items by the SS's evaluative criteria.

The Canada rubbish heap was a constantly burning mound [*Folyton égő dombhalom volt a Canada szemétdombja*]; in this place hundreds of thousands of photographs of married couples, elderly parents, attractive children and beautiful girls burned in the company of thousands of prayer books. Often I have taken in hand this or that photograph or prayer book. In almost every single prayer book I found, written in pen, entries with the anniversary dates of the deaths of deceased parents. Pressed flowers from all the Jewish cemeteries of Europe, plucked from the graves of dead beloved relatives and piously preserved. Prayer shawls and phylacteries, of fine and simple make, lay here in a large heap [*nagy halomban*] waiting to be burned.

Here the "Dayan"<sup>110</sup> worked, or rather did not work but merely watched the fire, but he was dissatisfied even with this when I inquired how he was doing. It did not comport with his religious ideas that he should collaborate in the burning of prayer books, phylacteries, prayer shawls and Torah scrolls either. I sympathized with him, but I had no means to provide him with an easier job. In the end we were in a K.Z. and *Sonderkommando* men in a crematorium!

This was the "Dayan" who began to speak.

"My Jewish brothers! An inscrutable will has sent our people to its death. Fate has reserved the cruelest duty for us, that we should assist in their destruction and accompany their passing to the end, to the very ashes of their bodies, vanished in the flames. Not once did the heavens open, no showers fell to extinguish the flames of the pyres piled with people. With Jewish resignation we must acknowledge that it had to be thus for them! It is a judgment from God! Why? It is not for us, unworthy men, to ask!

Such a judgment has been imposed on us as well! Do not be afraid of death! What value would life have for us if, by some extraordinary accident of fate, we should survive? We would return home to our towns and villages. Cold, looted homes would await us there. In every corner of the rooms the memories of our perished families would hover before our tear-filled eyes. Without families, without kin, we would roam about finding comfort and rest nowhere, as mere shadows of our selves and of our pasts, wandering here and there."

Flames flashed in his eyes; his lean face was transfigured; perhaps he was already in contact with the world beyond when he said these things. There was mute silence in the hall, the only sound the hiss of matches being struck when somebody lit a cigarette, or deep, heavy sighs expressing farewell to the living and the dead.

---

<sup>110</sup> Nyiszli writes Dajén, the Hungarian way of spelling this term. We use the English spelling here.

The heavy doors spring open. *Oberscharführer* Steinberg enters the hall, accompanied by two guards with machine pistols. “*Aerzte heraus!*”<sup>111</sup> he shouts in an imperious voice. I leave the hall with my two doctor colleagues and my laboratory assistant. Steinberg and the two SS soldiers stop with us on the road between the two crematoria. The *Ober* gives me some sheets of paper covered with numbers which he has been holding in his hands until now and tells me to find my number and cross it out. In my hands is a list of the tattoo numbers of *Sonderkommando* members. I take out my fountain pen; after a quick search I find and cross out my number. When I have done this, he tells me to cross out my companions’ numbers as well! This too is done. He accompanies us to the gate of Crematorium I. He orders us to retire to our rooms and not to move from there! We do so.

The next morning a column made up of five trucks arrives in the crematorium courtyard. They dump out corpses from themselves. The corpses of the *Sonderkommando*. A newly constituted group of thirty carries the victims into the cremation hall [*égetőterembe*]. They are laid out in front of the furnaces [*a kazánok előtt*]. Horrible burn lesions cover their bodies. Their faces are burned beyond recognition, their burned and tattered clothes make identification impossible. Even the numbers burned onto their arms<sup>112</sup> are illegible for the most part.

After death by gas, death at the pyres, death by chloroform injection to the heart, the shot to the back of the neck, death in the flames of the pyres and death by phosphorus grenade, this is the seventh type of death I have met with.

They took my poor comrades to a nearby forest [*egy közeli erdőbe*] during the night and did away with them with flamethrowers [*lángszórókkal*].

If the four of us survived, the underlying motive still was not the sparing of our lives, but rather just the necessity of our survival for as long as our positions needed filling. It was neither joy nor even relief this time, merely respite, which Dr. Mengele afforded us in leaving us alive.

## Chapter XXXVI

The *Sonderkommando*, thirteenth in order in the bloody history of the crematoria, has been annihilated. After them, our days pass in an immense silence. Finding no place for ourselves, we come and go aimlessly between the cold, mute walls. The ringing of our footsteps is almost painful to me in the vast silence! There is nothing at all to keep us occupied! The days pass idly, and the nights in watchfulness. Four of us remained in the building [*Négyen marad-*

<sup>111</sup> “Doctors out!” In German in the original.

<sup>112</sup> *Sic*: “*Még a karjaikra égetett szám...*” Nyiszli of course is referring to the numbers made on the prisoners’ arms by *tattooing*, a process which involves no burning or branding. Apparently, he has allowed dramatic context to color his description here.

*tunk az épületben*]. The thirty temporary workers are not a *Sonderkommando*; their quarters are in the K.Z. and they come here only every other day for the cremation of those who have died in the camp hospital.

Mutely, sunk into ourselves, we waited for the end. It was a bad sign for us that *Oberscharführer* Mussfeld, as if transformed, avoided real contact with us. Perhaps he too sensed that he had played his part now. The bloody tragedy was at its end and the fate of the secret-bearers would overtake him too. All day long he sat in his room with the door closed and drank with an insatiable thirst, so that in his alcoholic stupor he might not remember the bloody past nor guess at the future!

One day, quite unexpectedly, Dr. Mengele arrives. He seeks us out in our room; he guesses that we will not be in the dissection hall where, for days now, we have had nothing to do. He tells us that, by higher orders, K.Z. Auschwitz is to be completely liquidated – not the inhabitants in this case, he means the institution itself. Among the crematoria, two will be demolished; the third will remain for the time being for the cremation of the camp's dead. We four will be moving with the dissection-hall equipment, the museum specimens and the archives to Crematorium IV. It will remain in operation. I and II are marked for immediate destruction! Crematorium III of course burned to ashes on the occasion of the *Sonderkommando* revolt of October 6.

It was at once a historic and a happy moment when, the next morning, a detachment of prisoners deploying a thousand men [*ezer embert*] arrived in the courtyard of Crematorium I and, divided into groups, began the demolition of the building with the bloody past.

In a sense I can feel the destruction of the Third Reich as the massive, red-brick walls fall to the ground one after another following the explosion of each charge of dynamite. Jews built it, Jews are tearing it down! I see from their faces that K.Z. prisoners have never worked with such zeal as they do now in the hope of a better future!

In the dissection hall and the laboratory everything that can be moved has been packed! We are taking only the marble slab from the dissecting table; it will get new concrete legs in its new location. In the space of a few hours the move is finished. We pass the night in Crematorium IV.

We install the dissecting table, set up the racks, put the prepared sections of museum interest in their places. Thus the dissecting hall along with the laboratory stand ready for the performance of new assignments. For days on end nothing happens! Here too we continue idly to sink into ourselves or to wander without aim. The habit of seeking refuge in drunken stupor now completely overwhelms our SS guards. There are hardly any sober moments in their days!

On one occasion we are sitting at our dinner when *Oberscharführer* Mussfeld enters our room [*szobánkba*], leans unsteadily over our table and says, in the plodding speech of drunks: "*Guten Abend Jungs! Ihr werdet bald alle kre-*



*pieren, nachher aber kommen wir.*"<sup>113</sup> (Good evening boys! You're all going to croak soon, but we're coming after!") From the drunk man's candid words I learned what I had only guessed until now. Our guards will die together with us!

I offer the *Ober* some hot rum tea; he drains the glasses with great pleasure. He sits down at our table and, as if wanting to make up for missed opportunities, he begins to speak. He speaks of his wife, gone missing during a bombing raid, of his son, killed on the Russian front.

"It is the end of everything!" he says. "The Russians are forty kilometers from Auschwitz, all of Germany is wandering the roads! Everyone is fleeing from the border areas!"

These were comforting words and, seeing the desperation of the *Ober*, a spark of hope began to glow in me. Perhaps it will turn out that we survive after all!

## Chapter XXXVII

Amid such doubts and hopes, the first of January 1945 arrived. New Year's! [*Újév!*] As far as the eye can see there is snow everywhere, an endless whiteness covers the land. I take a short walk in the crematorium courtyard. The rumble of a heavy engine interrupts the silence. Just a few moments pass, and already K.Z. Auschwitz's large, closed, brown-colored prisoner transport wagon is turning in at the gate. The K.Z. folks call it "Brown Tony" [*,barna Tóni'*]. A high-ranking SS officer gets down alongside the driver. I immediately recognize him and salute him as per regulations. It is Dr. Klein, SS Surgeon-Major, one of the more bloody-handed, dark figures of K.Z. Auschwitz. In Barracks number 10 of the K.Z. is the prison block [*A K.Z. 10-es számú barakkjában van a börtön*]. Now he is bringing 100 victims from there. "I am bringing some New Year's work for you," he says to the *Ober*, who comes rushing up.

The latter is so drunk that he can barely stand on his feet. He rather thoroughly celebrated Sylvester's Night.<sup>114</sup> Who knows, perhaps he was preparing himself for the eternal night. I can see it in his face; he is not pleased that they should trouble him with bloody work even on New Year's morning. A hundred Christian Polish prisoners are waiting here for death! They are all men in the group. SS guards accompany them into the empty room beside the furnace hall [*a kazánterem melletti üres helyiségbe*]. There they receive an order to

<sup>113</sup> In German in the original, followed in parentheses by Nyiszli's translation into Hungarian, as reproduced above.

<sup>114</sup> *Szilveszter éjszakáját*, Hungarian name for New Year's Eve; from the fact that St. Sylvester's feast day falls on December 31. Variants of the name are common in other European languages as well, including German.

undress immediately! Dr. Klein walks around the courtyard with the *Ober*. I go into the undressing room [*a vetkezőbe*] and question the men there.

One of them tells me that he gave lodging to a relative in his Krakow apartment for a night. The Gestapo declared him a harbinger of partisans and hauled him before a military tribunal. He had been awaiting the verdict in Barracks 10 of the K.Z. They have sentenced him to death; that is why he is here, but they have not told him that! He imagines that he has been brought here to take a bath and that from here he will go on to forced labor. Another with whom I speak wound up in the K.Z. prison block on account of profiteering. He had bought half a kilo of butter without a ticket. That was all of his crime! A third wound up here because he wandered into a forbidden zone. His classification was as partisan and spy! So it went on, for all one hundred! Trifling pretexts and baseless accusations had brought them here.

There is no *Sonderkommando* now; the SS guards lead the victims before the *Ober*'s gun.

Again I hear the roar of an automobile. "Brown Tony" is coming back. It is bringing new victims! One hundred well-dressed women descend from the vehicle. They too are herded into the undressing room; they too are forced to take off their clothes. One after another they go before the *Ober*'s gun. They were all Christian Polish women. They too have paid with their lives for minor offences.

The SS carries out the cremations. They ask me for rubber gloves for the work. Once he had personally confirmed the deaths of the two hundred prisoners Dr. Klein departed. There is no contradiction whatsoever between the order of November 17 which prohibited any sort of violent killing and the occurrence of today's executions, for this was an action carried out pursuant to the verdict of a military tribunal.

## Chapter XXXVIII

Our days went by quietly, without incident. Dr. Mengele, so we heard, had departed from Auschwitz. There's a new doctor at the K.Z., which, starting from New Year's Day, has officially ceased to be a K.Z. and become an *Arbeitslager*,<sup>115</sup> that is, a labor camp. Everything here is in ferment and decay!

On January 10, a newspaper comes into my hands from which I learn of the launch of the Russian offensive. The distant rumble of heavy artillery makes the windows of my room [*szobám ablakait*] tremble. The front line draws ever nearer! The evening of January 17 I went to bed early, though I was not tired. I wanted to be alone with my thoughts. I soon fell asleep from the pleasant warmth of the coke stove. It might have been around midnight when I was suddenly jolted from my sleep by powerful explosions, blinding

---

<sup>115</sup> In German in the original.

lights and the clatter of machine guns. I hear a door slam, hurried steps move away along the concrete corridor [*a betonfolyosón*]. I leap out of my bed; I want to know what is happening around me. I rip open the door of our room; the lights are on in the furnace hall [*a kazánteremben*]! The doors of the SS men's rooms [*az SS.-ek szobáinak ajtói*] are thrown open, sign of a sudden departure.

The big oak double door of the crematorium is open as well. None of the guards are anywhere! My glance wanders over the guard towers surrounding the building. After eight months here, I see empty towers now for the first time.

I run back into my room and roughly wake [*felverem*] my companions, and we quickly begin to dress ourselves for the great journey! The SS have fled! We will not remain a moment longer in this place where every hour for eight months we have awaited certain death! We cannot wait for the Russians, for we cannot be certain that we will not wind up in the hands of the rear guard of the retreating SS here. If they find us here they will do away with us for sure!

We get dressed! We have excellent clothes, pullovers, winter coats and what is most important in cold of 18 below, first-rate shoes. Each of us takes with him a kilogram of canned meat. Medicines and cigarettes fill our pockets.

With a happy feeling of liberation, we start on our way. Direction: K.Z. Birkenau! It is at a distance of two kilometers from the crematorium [*Két kilométer távolságra van a krematóriumtól*]. The flames of great fires flicker on the horizon! Probably the K.Z. is burning! We run through the furnace hall [*átrohanunk a kazánterem*]; we pass beside the open door of the gold chamber [*az aranykamara nyitott ajtaja mellett megyünk el*]. Riches worthy of Croesus lie in the crates pillaged by the fleeing SS. They were only able to carry away a tiny part of the treasures. We are running for our lives; it does not even enter our heads that we should stop for a moment and take something with us. We have learned that everything is fleeting and everything is endowed with only relative value. There is only one exception to this: freedom!

We pass through the large door; no one bars our way. The sudden change is almost unbelievable for us. Our path leads through the little Birkenau woods [*kis birkenaui erdőn*], clad in white from tip to toe. We move along the way taken by so many millions [*annyi millió*] to their deaths. We pass alongside the tracks of the Jews' ramp, buried in snow. I think of the millions of innocents [*millió ártatlanok*] who climbed down from their trains here. Here, with sorrowful glances, those going to the right took their leave from those going to the left, and it was only a question of sooner or later, but all of them would die.

The fires are indeed burning in K.Z. Birkenau! A few of the camp's guard buildings are burning along with the documents piled up inside them. A dark crowd stands outside the camp gate. They are in marching columns. They are waiting for the order to depart. I estimate the number of prisoners at about

three thousand. Without thinking we line up among them. Here in this crowd nobody knows me. I have ceased to be one of the *Sonderkommando*! I am not a known bearer of secrets! I do not have to die! I am a simple K.Z. prisoner standing in line and I will march with the crowd. I find that to be the best solution! My companions accept it as well. Everyone is fleeing from here. They will not haul us very far. The Russians will catch up in one or two days. The SS surely will leave us to ourselves somewhere. For now the surest thing is to go with them between the front lines stretching on this side and that.

The time is getting on to about one a.m. The last SS man leaves the camp. He closes its iron gate [*vaskapuját*]. With a central switch located next to the gate he turns off the camp's lighting: Birkenau, the great cemetery of European Jewry, is plunged into darkness. My eyes rest at length on the camp's barbed wire and the outlines of the barracks standing out in stark relief. I take my leave from the graveless graves of dead millions [*elhalt milliók*].

A battalion of SS surrounds us and we depart! With our unknown companions we discuss events so far and matters still to come. We guess at what tomorrow will bring us. Will the SS succeed in taking our transport onward, or will they leave us to ourselves when the moment has arrived?

We have only gone five kilometers when the left flank of the column becomes the target of murderous fire. Russian advance guards had approached our column and, thinking us troops on the march, attacked the transport. One of their small tanks and a few machine guns joined the action. The SS order us to get down. We all lie down in the ditch by the side of the highway. They return fire. The shooting is lively on both sides. Afterwards silence reigns! We march onward through the barren, snow-covered Silesian landscape.

It begins to grow light. We have covered about 15 kilometers in the course of the night. Our path now continues over trodden snow. Scattered everywhere along the road lie eating utensils, blankets, wooden clogs fallen from feet. A women's transport is marching ahead of us. We can see that they are women from the K.Z. by their abandoned belongings. A few kilometers later we see still more! At a distance of 40-50 meters from one to the next, bloody-faced corpses lie in the roadside ditch. The picture does not change for kilometers! Corpses! Every fifty paces a dead body! They could not endure the march; anyone who dropped out of the line was simply shot in the head.

Once more I encounter a form of violent death! It appears the SS have orders such that they leave no one behind alive! Not a reassuring thing to know! The long line of bodies has an effect on everyone, we move our feet more quickly. We are marching for our lives!

The first shots soon go off in our transport as well. The dead bodies of two of our comrades are left behind in the ditch. They could not endure any more; they sat down. They each received a shot to the head. So it goes from then on,

every ten minutes. Towards noon we arrive in Plesow,<sup>116</sup> we rest for the first time there.

We pass an hour in a football field. Whoever has something eats a bit. We smoke a cigarette and with renewed strength we proceed along the snow-covered road. Passing nights under the open sky, hungry and thirsty, we covered some 200 kilometers. By the time we arrived in Ratibor,<sup>117</sup> our number had dwindled to 2000 heads. Around 1000 people from our transport were shot to death along the difficult way. Everyone breathes almost happily when we see a train made up of open wagons prepared for us.

Our loading onto the wagons goes swiftly. After a night of waiting, we depart. I did not count how many frozen comrades we dumped from the wagons during the course of our five-day journey! By the time we arrived at K.Z. Mauthausen, our number had shrunk to 1500 heads. Included in the shortfall, no doubt, were also some escapees who found a suitable moment for slipping away.

## Chapter XXXIX

K.Z. Mauthausen, the end station of our voyage, sits like an ancient castle with its walls of dreary granite atop a conical hill that broods over the pretty little town of the same name. This castle-like extermination camp [*e várszerű megsemmisítő tábor*] was built with many hundreds of thousands of granite stones. Its turreted ramparts and the yawning gun ports in the battlements reveal to those arriving, from far away, that this is a fortified place.

The scene would be picturesque if a patina of centuries covered its stones, but they shine with a glaring whiteness and disturb the color harmony of this landscape wreathed about with dark forests.

The stones are white; the castle has just been built! It was built in the Third Reich period, with the designation K.Z. Forty thousand Spanish freedom fighters who had taken refuge in France were brought here after its occupation, along with a hundred thousand German Jewish men. These worked in the terrible Mauthausen Quarry: they carved out and carried the stones over the seven-kilometer mountain path where previously only wild goats had gone, and joined them one to another until mighty walls rose around their wood-barracks death house.

With sufferings inconceivable to the human imagination they built the castle, but they were not to be its inhabitants. They died without remnant [*maradéktalanul elpusztultak*] in this sea of stone and concrete!

<sup>116</sup> Polish *Plaszów*, a suburb of Kraków.

<sup>117</sup> Polish *Racibórz*, a small town near the Czech border, approximately seventy kilometers west of Auschwitz.

The extermination camp did not remain uninhabited. Thousands of Yugoslav freedom fighters, members of resistance movements from all the conquered nations of Europe, and crowds ten-thousand strong of Jewry, condemned to extermination, filled the castle barracks within days and waited, at short notice, for the end of their lives.

Our transport, tortured by hunger, by marching, by freezing cold, climbs with difficulty up the long, snow-covered road. With the last remnants of our strength we pass through the gate of the K.Z. We line up on the *Appelplatz*<sup>118</sup> in the evening twilight.

I count my companions. Fischer, the dissection-hall laboratory assistant, is missing! I last saw him in Plesow, he was lying exhausted in the snow at our resting place. In the distorted features of his face I saw the signs of his imminent end. He was a fifty-year-old man, a five-year resident of the K.Z.; his constitution could not endure the long march and the tribulations of the freezing cold.

Dr. Körner, the young physician from Nice, is worn out but in tolerable condition, Dr. Görög Dénes, the private lecturer from Szombathely, stands beside me in terminal condition. The confusion of his mind is now even more pronounced than in the days at the crematorium. Already there the constant concealment of his deficiency caused me trouble. I did everything to make sure Dr. Mengele did not meet with him face to face. Mussfeld too was a dangerous observer. My poor friend would not have remained alive even a few minutes longer if his uselessness had been discovered.

Already in the crematorium he had made his will and imparted his wishes to me.

"Miklos," he said on one occasion, "you have such a strong will, you will surely make it home, but I have the feeling I will not live to see the end of things. My wife and my little girl died here in the gas chamber, I am sure of that. I hid a small boy with the brothers of the Kőszeg Monastery; he is my child, little 12-year-old Sándor. Take him in, if you make it home; this is my wish, in the certain consciousness of my death." I readily promised him that I would act according to his wishes.

By a lucky twist of fate we have arrived far from the scene of our certain deaths and now, at the end of a long journey, before the goal, when the hope of freedom has filled our inner selves, that he should have to die now, this is more than a tragedy!

After roll call we are herded into a narrow alleyway leading to the bath. We mix with people brought from other camps; they too are waiting to be bathed. There might be ten thousand of us crowded together in the narrow space. A terrible wind howls between the walls of the high fortress. We are on a mountaintop, in the foothills of the Alps. The winter here is very harsh!

---

<sup>118</sup> In German in the original. Correctly *Appellplatz*.

They let people into the bath in groups of forty. Such is its reception capacity. I perform a quick calculation and realize that it will take three days for everyone to have a turn!

The *Reichsdeutsche* criminals [*a birodalmi német bűnözők*]<sup>119</sup> perform the firefighting duties here; they are the SS's most faithful servants. They do the assembling of groups for bathing. The turn for the Aryan prisoners comes first; there are so many of them that the Jews will have to wait three days to go through the bath. After so long a journey, however, this is here a question of life and death! Only by way of the bath can a prisoner get into a barrack and appear on the provisioning list. In the meantime he stands, hungry and thirsty, in the terrible cold, exhausted from the ten-day journey, and waits for as long as he feels strength in his legs and his weary eyes can fight off sleep. If his strength gives out, he lies down in the snow and never gets up again. There might be three hundred who are already lying thus around me.

No one takes any notice of them! Here everyone cares only for himself! In the end we are fighting for our lives here!

I take stock of my situation and come to the conclusion that I cannot endure a night of waiting without serious harm. I must get into the bath tonight! Poor Dénes wanders here and there, bare-headed, without his glasses. The intelligence is disappearing from his face. Barely conscious, he circles about like an automaton speaking unintelligible words. I take him by the arm and drag him with me, if only we can manage to get into the bath that means life! After a few steps he stops; already I have lost sight of him; he is hidden by the drifting crowd. I call out in vain, in the wind I can barely hear my voice myself.

Sensing the danger I force my way through the crowd; with dogged tenacity I approach the entrance down into the bath. There I stand already, in the front row of the great crowd!

A few SS men and firefighters with rubber truncheons are standing in front of the group. It is a group of forty which is waiting, ready to enter. They are all Aryans. With sudden decisiveness I step out of the crowd, stand before an SS *Oberscharführer* and report to him in a determined voice:

"*Oberscharführer*! I am the doctor of the transport from K.Z. Auschwitz, please let me into the bath."

He looks me over. My good clothes, or my determined bearing, or perhaps my speaking flawless German made an impression on him, I don't know, but he loudly yells across to his comrade standing guard by the stairs to the bath:

"Let the doctor go down!"

<sup>119</sup> During the NS period, the term *Reichsdeutsche* referred to those Germans living within the borders of the German Reich proper, as opposed to ethnic Germans living elsewhere in Europe (*Volksdeutsche*). Criminal convicts of German background formed a separate category of prisoners within the concentration-camp system.

I descended alone; I even preceded the group of forty already assembled. I was saved! It went quite easily! It is often good to be a man of quick decisions after all.<sup>120</sup>

In a few minutes the warm air of the baths magically restores life to my limbs, gone numb from the cold. After ten bitter days I am in a heated room. The bath itself also has a positive effect on my general well-being. Our clothes are considered contaminated items; they will remain here! I regret the loss of the fine winter coat, the excellent clothes, the warm pullover. Still, I am very happy all the same, for they let me keep my shoes. Shoes in the K.Z., if they are good ones, are half an assurance of life.

I pull them on and march, naked, with the group of those who have finished bathing, out onto the road in front of the bath, where we still must wait for half an hour in the freezing cold until the group marching to the barracks is complete. After a warm bath, to stand naked [*meztelenül*] for half an hour in cold of 18 below and cutting wind is tempting death!

The succeeding group of forty joins up and finally we set off! Our SS escort orders a double march and putting five hundred meters behind us we soon arrive at Barracks 23 of the quarantine camp.

At the entrance is standing a green-badged ruffian, the barrack supervisor. He hands a quarter loaf of bread to each person entering. A barracks duty man puts a tablespoon of greasy canned meat on top of the bread, and pours us a quarter liter of hot black coffee besides.

It is a princely meal after ten days of privation! I bolt it down in minutes and go look for a place to lay myself down. I find a spot in a corner where I lie down. This has the advantage that my fellow prisoners do not walk over me in coming and going. Naturally I lay on the floor; there were no beds in the quarantine. Thus I slept without interruption until morning reveille.

I think of my poor comrades who are still standing in front of the baths, if they are still able to stand!

For three days we sat or wandered idly about the rooms of the barracks, we received passable food and rested up as best we could from the strains of the journey.

On the third day it comes about that an SS officer arrives accompanied by a camp clerk<sup>121</sup> and calls on all those who have worked in the Auschwitz crematorium to present themselves. The blood runs cold within me! Do they have a list of us[?]<sup>122</sup> They are so damned precise and well organized, it is

<sup>120</sup> Nyiszli presumably is referring here to his earlier reflections on rapid decision making and how it "does not always turn out well." See Chapter XV.

<sup>121</sup> The original edition here has the word *tábornok* meaning "general" (as in the military rank), and this wording is reflected in earlier translations (cf. Seaver's 1960 English translation, "accompanied by a general"), but it most likely is an error for *táborírnök* ("camp clerk") or some close variant thereof.

<sup>122</sup> The original edition uses an exclamation mark here, but subsequent context makes it likely that a question is intended.



very likely! I think it over and come to the conclusion that it is merely an attempt at fishing out the secret bearers from the great crowd. If they had a list they would look at our tattoo numbers. No one here knows me! In mute silence I wait as the anxious minutes pass. I have won! I have again won life!

Still on that same day, after nightfall, we received striped canvas clothing and started on our way over the mountain road toward the Mauthausen railway station. There we were loaded onto wagons, and we set out in a transport of seven thousand for the concentration camp of Melk an der Donau. We managed the trip comfortably in closed wagons, sitting on the floor. We arrived after a journey of three hours.

K.Z. Melk also dominates its surroundings from the top of a high hill. Originally it was a pioneers' garrison named after the Freiherr von Birabo.<sup>123</sup> Its enormous barracks guarded as many as fifteen thousand prisoners within their walls. The wonderful beauty of the landscape lightened the gloomy heaviness of our situation a good deal. The enormous baroque palace of the Melk Abbey, built upon a rocky outcrop, and the valley of the Danube meandering below the camp present a wonderful picture to the spectator. The Danube is a Hungarian river too; we feel almost at home with ourselves.

## Chapter XL

Spring arrived early in 1945. Already by the beginning of April the trees were turning green in the ditches that bordered the electrified fence of the Melk concentration camp. On the banks of the Danube meandering below us, the melting snow gives way to green grass. For eight weeks I live through the good and bad days of K.Z. life in this place. I am already exhausted and weak; only the hope of approaching liberation holds me back from the abyss of lethargy.

Everything here is in a state of disintegration. The final phases of the collapse of the Third Reich pass before our eyes like in a film.

Defeated armies march in endless columns toward the interior of their homeland, now reduced to smoking ruins. On the Danube, swollen from the spring thaws, hundreds of boats and barges evacuate the inhabitants of abandoned cities.

All things pass away! The dream of a Third Reich established for a thousand years has vanished. The faith placed in the superiority of the race and the consciousness of a calling to domination have given way to bitter disillusionment.

No longer are the freedom-loving peoples of Europe menaced with the danger that their cities will be obliterated and their valuables hauled away, and

---

<sup>123</sup> Correctly, von Birago, name of a famous Austrian military engineer ("pioneer") of the nineteenth century.

that finally despoiled of everything, they will have a number burned onto their arms [*számot égetnek karjaikra*] and be forced to perform slave labor surrounded by death's-head SS men and trained bloodhounds.

The pyromaniacal people of the Third Reich<sup>124</sup> is disappearing from the world stage; they started such fires that a whole world was seared by their flames, but they themselves are now passing away in them.

The hoarse corporal's voice which shouted "*Deutschland über alles!*"<sup>125</sup> over the radio waves into the home of every inhabitant of the world has gone silent.

The freedom-loving peoples have smashed the haughty pride of the Third Reich and established a new direction for the life of peoples.

Three great men form and shape the character of the peoples of the world and ensure their future: Stalin! the genius leader of the Russian people, Roosevelt Franklin Delano,<sup>126</sup> wise president of the United States, and Churchill, the British lion.

On April 7, 1945, the chains of arc lamps along the posts supporting concentration camp Melk's barbed-wire fences were not turned on! Darkness and an immense silence settled over the forsaken place. The camp was evacuated, its gate was closed and its seven thousand inhabitants were hauled away again. By ship, then on highways crowded with refugees, and even over mountains covered with snow, the weary column marches for seven days until it arrives at the end of its journey.

The Ebensee Concentration Camp is the fourth in the series of K.Z.'s whose gates we enter.

Here the first number on the program is roll call, which lasts hours. The second is the bath, the third is the filthy quarantine barracks, with their rubber-truncheon executioners.

I went through all three numbers. A biting, cold wind blows, icy rain soaks my flimsy clothes during the long *Appels*.<sup>127</sup> A wild bitterness burns within me. I am certain that it is only a question of days and we will be liberated. We wait impatiently for something to happen, but then it might not happen only to our benefit. The end of our imprisonment could also be a bloody tragedy. They could exterminate us before our liberators arrive.

<sup>124</sup> Unlike English, Hungarian distinguishes lexically between "people" in the sense of a national or ethnic collective (e.g., "the German people"), for which the word *nép* is used, and "people" in the sense of a mere group of individuals (e.g., "the people in charge"), for which *emberek* would be expected. By his use of the word *nép* here ("*a III. Birodalom piromániás népe*"), Nyiszli thus asserts that it is the German people itself, and not merely its leadership, which is disappearing from the world stage as a result of its "pyromania."

<sup>125</sup> "Germany above all things," first line of the German national anthem. In German in the original.

<sup>126</sup> Nyiszli gives Roosevelt's name Hungarian-style, last name first.

<sup>127</sup> Correctly, *Appells*. In German in the original.

It would be a fitting end for us in the captivity of the Third Reich, in a state beyond the protection of human law, after a life of twelve months in the death house.

It did not happen thus! On May 5, 1945, a white flag flutters on the tower of Ebensee Concentration Camp. The spring sun shines with dazzling whiteness. It is over! They have laid down their arms! Around nine o'clock a little American tank arrives with three soldiers and takes over the camp. We are free!...

## Epilogue

The state of being beyond the protection of all human law gave way to the consciousness of freedom, to a desire for great spaces which all at once reawakens my disintegrating energies.

Sick, broken in body and soul, I start on the way toward home. The satisfaction of nostalgia does not make my way any easier, for in the place of flourishing cities I am greeted everywhere by charred ruins and cemeteries full of mass graves.

I dread the reality that my parents will not be waiting for me in my ruined family home, that I will be without the comforting love of my wife, my child, my sister.

The humiliations, the sorrows, the horrors of the crematoria and the pyres, the eight months of life in the death house in the *Kommando* of the walking dead, have dulled the perception of good and evil within me.

I feel it! I must rest, collect my forces. But the question is, is there any sense in going on?

On the one hand the fever of my illness burns me, on the other, the bloody past freezes my heart.

My eyes followed two million innocent people to the gas chambers, and I was witness to the horrors of the pyres [*Kétmillió ártatlan embert kísérték szemeim a gázkamarákig és voltam tanúja a máglyák borzalmainak*].

I opened hundreds of corpses [*hullák százait*] at the orders of an at once brilliant and quietly mad doctor so that a science founded on false theories might profit from the crowds of millions sent to die in the gas or on the pyres.

I cut the flesh from the dead bodies of healthy young girls and prepared rich nutritive media from them for Dr. Mengele's bacterial cultures.

I put the corpses of cripples and dwarves in a bath of calcium chloride or cooked them for days at a time so that clean skeletons might go to German museums, where they are required to demonstrate to future generations the necessity of the extermination of a people.

Two times I felt the touch of the wind of death as I lay before the weapons of execution squads. I took my leave from the bloody bodies of one thousand

three hundred of my companions [*ezerháromszáz bajtársam*], that I alone might remain as witness [*hogy egyedül maradjak hírmondónak*].

I marched for hundreds of kilometers over snow-covered fields, fighting off icy death, that I might be the inhabitant of yet other extermination camps. I have come a long way to get here!

I find no place for myself in my apartment. I pace aimlessly back and forth between the silent walls. My past is full of bloody memories and deep sorrows, and the future before me is dark.

I wander through the familiar streets like a restless shadow of myself. I am only ever shaken out of my profound lethargy if I think I glimpse my loved ones among those who come and go.

Mutely I endure the pains of my illness and, sunk into myself, I count the passing of the months. It is already October. Six months have passed since my liberation.

Feeling chilly, I sit one prematurely gloomy afternoon waiting for solace from the warmth of the stove in the darkness of my room.

Suddenly the bell rings and the door opens. My wife and daughter walk in through it. Bergen-Belsen, the infamous extermination camp, was their place of liberation, from which they have now returned home in good health. So much they told me; the rest they sobbed out over hours, but even so I understood and learned everything.

Now there is a reason to go on! I have a for-whom and a why! I want to work again. The satisfaction of being able to help will be a good feeling, but as for the dead, I will not dissect them any more.



## Part 2:

### Other Documents

by and about Miklós Nyiszli



## 2.1. Miklós Nyiszli's Declaration of July 28, 1945

Charles D. Provan states that, while reading Robert Jay Lifton's book *The Nazi Doctors*, he ran across a quotation from a statement by Nyiszli dated July 28, 1945. It is titled "Deposition: Miklof Nyifcli [sic]. A Physician from Nagyvarod in Hungary." Provan received the English translation of this statement from Lifton, and discussed it in his article on Nyiszli mentioned earlier. Lifton does not provide any archival information about Nyiszli's statement, merely asserting that it was made "before the Budapest Commission for the Welfare of Deported Hungarian Jews" (Lifton 1986, Note 31, p. 527). I will return to this commission later, whose Hungarian name was *Magyarországi Zsidók Deportáltakat Gondozó Bizottság*.

This post-war institute collected and recorded testimonies of deported Hungarian Jews. Nyiszli's testimony is number 3632. The original text (see Document 2) and an English translation of Nyiszli's testimony are available at the DEBOG website.<sup>128</sup> It is introduced by an information card that says:

*"Protocol Nr. 3632*

*Name: N. M.*

*Gender: male*

*Occupation: physician /Nagyvárad/"*

The original statement is devoid of any identifying element, and has the registration date of July 29, 1945, so it is without doubt a subsequent transcript of the document mentioned by Lifton and Provan.

I quote below the English translation of this declaration as taken from the website mentioned, but with variations in crucial points based on the original Hungarian text:

*"On May 22, 1944, along with 26 of my colleagues (all medical doctors taken by force), I was sent from the Aknaszlatina ghetto to Auschwitz. Following selection, I was sent to the right and, after a 24-hour stay in Auschwitz, I was transferred to Buna with an inmate population of 14 thousand. There I worked for about 12 days in the 197th concrete commando [betonkommandónál] when the chief medical officer of the Buna Camp (an SS Hauptsturmführer) summoned all physicians to appear before him. We lined up, all fifty of us. They told us that professional pathologists could volunteer for light work. Of the fifty physicians, two stepped forward; I was all the more eager to volunteer as I had already realized I could not have continued the hard concrete work. Following a thorough oral examination and an interview, the two of us were accepted. I studied medicine in Germany and practiced as a pathologist for many*

<sup>128</sup> Deportáltakat Gondozó Országos Bizottság: National Assistance Committee for Deported; <http://degob.org/index.php?showjk=3632>; last accessed on Jan. 24, 2018.



years. I easily passed the test, as did my colleague who worked in a Medical School in Strasbourg. Within one hour, accompanied by two armed SS guards, we were put in a well-equipped Red Cross ambulance. To my horror, we were driven to the courtyard of Crematorium 1 in Auschwitz where our documents were handed over to the commander of the Crematorium, Oberscharführer Mussfeld. They immediately gave us precise instructions what we may and may not look at. Then we were led into a clean room, and Oberscharführer Mussfeld let us know that it was equipped specifically for us at the orders of Dr. Mengele. The crematorium staff, known as the Sonderkommando which consisted of some two hundred inmates, lived on the second floor. The Oberscharführer immediately requisitioned for us a full set of clothing and underwear of excellent quality taken from gassed victims.

Dr. Mengele arrived after a few hours and put us through another oral examination lasting about one hour. He then gave us our first assignment: it involved the medical examination of selected individuals with some form of abnormal development. We took measurements of these people, then Oberscharführer Mussfeld shot them in the head with a 'Kleinkaliber,' i.e., a 6-mm gun, after which we were ordered to perform an autopsy and prepare a detailed report. Subsequently, we applied chlorinated lime to the abnormally developed corpses and sent the thoroughly cleaned and packed bones to the Anthropological Institute in Berlin-Dahlem.

These experiments were repeated sporadically, until one day at midnight SS officers woke us and led us to the dissecting room, where Dr. Mengele was already waiting for us.

In the laboratory next to the autopsy room there were 14 twins under SS guard, sobbing bitterly. Without saying a word, Dr. Mengele prepared a 10-cm<sup>3</sup> and a 5-cm<sup>3</sup> syringe. From a container he took out Evipan, from another he took 20-cm<sup>3</sup> chloroform vials and put them on the table. Then the first twin was brought in, a girl of around 14 years of age. Dr. Mengele ordered me to undress her and place her on the autopsy table. Then he administered an intravenous injection of Evipan into the right arm. After the child lost consciousness, he palpated for the left ventricle and injected 10 cm<sup>3</sup> of chloroform. The child died after a convulsion, and Dr. Mengele had her taken to the morgue. The murder of all 14 twins happened in the same way that night.<sup>[129]</sup>

Dr. Mengele asked us whether we could perform 7-8 autopsies. To this we replied that to do precise scientific work, we could dissect an average four corpses a day. He accepted that. We received subjects for our scientific autopsies either from the camp or recently arrived transports. In the months of May, June and July an average of 3-4 Hungarian transports arrived at the Auschwitz Judenrampe. The selections were performed in shifts by Dr. Mengele and Dr. Thilo. Ability to work was the sole selection criteria [sic], and at times it was quite capricious.

<sup>129</sup> The underscored passage is the one cited by R. J. Lifton. See Section 5.2.2.

*As part of the selection process, newly arrived transports were divided into two groups – one to the right, the other to the left. The right side meant life, the left side the crematorium. In terms of percentage, 78-80% were sent to the left: children, mothers with small children, the elderly, pregnant women, handicapped and disabled servicemen. In a few minutes, the crowd on the left started to move slowly to the left, carrying their personal belongings. The crematoria were around 200 meters from the Judenrampe, and the crowd of approximately 2000 people passed under the gate of Crematoria 1, 2, 3 or 4 as ordered. At the crematorium, they descended 10-12 concrete steps and entered an empty, underground room with a capacity of 2000 [people]. The first row stopped instinctively at the entrance, but once they read the signs 'Disinfection' and 'Bath' printed in all major languages, they were reassured and descended the steps. They were immediately ordered to undress; there were benches and numbered clothes hooks along the walls of the room. As part of a careful misinformation strategy, the SS suggest that everyone memorize their number to make sure they will find their clothes after the bath without problem. The crowd was reassured, although the fact that men, women and children were made to undress in front of each other caused discomfort for many. After about ten minutes the crowd of 2000 [persons] was herded more roughly into the next concrete room with a capacity of around 2000 [persons] without any furnishing or windows. This was the gas chamber. The heavy oak doors were shut behind them, the lights were turned off, and in a few minutes a luxury car with the Red Cross insignia arrived. A doctor with the rank of captain and his assistant unloaded four metal containers weighing approximately 1 kg each. They removed the four concrete lids covering the ventilation shafts leading to the underground bunker; they put on their gas masks, punctured the lid of the metal containers, and dumped the bean-sized, purple [or rather] burgundy-colored chlorine pellets into the four openings. Then they immediately covered the openings with the concrete covers.*

*On one occasion I chanced to hear the SS doctor urging his assistant: 'Gib schon das Fressen den Juden!' ['Give the fodder to the Jews!']*

*The gas pellets fell, and right on contact with air developed chlorine gas that caused the most-cruel death by suffocation within 5 to 10 minutes.*

*After thirty minutes, the ventilators were switched on, members of the Sonderkommando on duty opened the door of the gas chamber, and there were lying 2000 corpses covered in blood (from bleeding noses) and feces. Instead of being spread out evenly on the bunker floor, they were piled up on top of each other one story high, explained by the fact that the chlorine gas reached the higher [air] layers with some delay. The Sonderkommando washed the corpses with a hose, and the bodies were then loaded in an elevator and hoisted to the furnace room. The furnace room consisted of 15 furnaces, each equipped with its own electric blower. A trained unit dragged the corpses by hooking the curved end of a walking cane into their mouths. Three bodies were stacked in each furnace at a time, and it took twenty minutes to reduce them*

*into ashes. Before the cremation, a dentist commando removed golden teeth from the dead bodies.*

*The so-called 'ash commando' was ordered to remove the ashes from time to time and crush the bones that did not burn completely. Once a week the ashes were dumped into the nearby Wistula River.*

*On November 17, 1944, cremations at the crematoria were prohibited in the entire country [sic], and no inmates were murdered anymore after that date. However, in order to eliminate eyewitnesses to the darkest secrets of the political SS, members of the Sonderkommando of Crematoria 1, 2, 3, and 4, counting 846 [inmates], were executed between 1:30 and 2:30 p.m. the same day. The victims included one hundred Hungarian Jews, as well as forty Russian military officers, and the rest were Jews from France, Holland, Belgium and Poland. We doctors were there among our comrades facing the machine guns, but Dr. Mengele – whose work on race biology had not been completed yet – pulled us out from among the condemned. We continued our work quietly in the deserted crematorium – without gassing and summary executions – until January 18, 1945, when the Russians broke through the German lines at Varanovice<sup>[130]</sup> and Krakow, and by midnight they were within 6 km of Auschwitz. The SS fell into a panic; they brought us into the camp where they left us to our fate. Mixed in a crowd of around 4000 inmates, no one knew that we were members of the Sonderkommando. The same night unknown SS guards took us on a forced March to Mauthausen."*

---

<sup>130</sup> No such place exists. Nyiszli possibly referred to Wadowice, a town some 25 km south-east of Auschwitz and some 35 km south-west of Krakow.

## 2.2. Miklós Nyiszli's "Testimony" at the I.G. Farben Trial

### 2.2.1. The "Testimony"

As mentioned earlier, the 1964 edition of Nyiszli's book, *Orvos voltam Auschwitzban*, contains an appendix with useful information worth reporting (p. 193):

*"In what follows we publish passages of the verbal testimony made under oath by Dr. Miklós Nyiszli during the criminal proceedings against the executives of the I.G. Farbenindustrie A.G. before the International Military Tribunal in Nuremberg.*

*We have collected the passages on the basis of a typed text and a sworn statement that is in the possession of the author's widow.*

*The author published his testimony in the form of articles titled 'I Was a Witness at Nuremberg' in the April [and May] 1948 issues of the Budapest newspaper 'Világ'.*

*In 1947, Dr. Miklós Nyiszli, driven by a sense of moral duty, approached the International Tribunal conducting the trial against war criminals, and asked to appear as a witness. At the written request of the Tribunal, he swiftly went to Nuremberg, where he took part as a witness during the trial against the executives of I.G. Farbenindustrie. He was present at seventeen audiences. His interrogation was conducted by the chief prosecutor E.E. Minskoff [Minskoff] representing the Soviets at the tribunal. He handed over his written statement to U.S. chief prosecutor Benvenuto van Halle. At the end, the statement's text has this authentication: [...] The International Tribunal of Nuremberg retains a copy of the original document in its archive.*

*In his testimony, Dr. Nyiszli had to answer the following questions, among other things: What was the treatment of prisoners working at the I.G.-Farbenindustrie plant? What do you know of experiments made on living people, of gases used for the mass extermination of people? What medical diagnosis was made to adduce the cause of death by gas? What observations did he make regarding the frame of mind of officers, non-commissioned officers and soldiers? What was their behavior, their attitude while perpetrating homicides? Etc.*

*The passages of the testimony that are cited provide the answer to these questions.*

*We consider the following information necessary. The book is titled 'I Was Dr. Mengele's Forensic Pathologist in the Auschwitz Crematorium.' During the trial, the Tribunal asked for a copy of Miklós Nyiszli's book, and later the experts examined it in detail and compared his statements with the documents available to the trial, with numerous unknown details, [and] considered the*

*book a documentation that demonstrated everything perfectly, and they treated it as a document.*

*This is not mentioned in the book [which follows], so the reader needs this clarification: after his deportation to Auschwitz, Dr. Miklós Nyiszli one day went to the Monowitz labor camp and stayed there only two weeks, after which he was assigned to the Auschwitz crematorium as a forensic pathologist on the order of Dr. Mengele. According to a statement by the author's widow, Dr. Nyiszli, by omitting the part about Monowitz, aimed at maintaining the uniformity of the book's structure, since he did not want to break the main argument; in the Auschwitz death camp they saw the immortalization.<sup>[131]</sup> We must accept this procedure; it does not affect the book's credibility at all, as is shown by the many new data of this testimony."*

Several excerpts of Nyiszli's 1948 articles follow, but the text's style is heavily edited and has omissions that are not indicated.

## 2.2.2. "Tanú voltam Nürnbergben" – "I Was a Witness at Nuremberg"

With this title, the newspaper *Világ* (World) published a series of articles by Nyiszli in April and May 1948, as mentioned above (see Document 3). They appeared in 27 sequels, subdivided into 12 chapters, which are in turn divided into several paragraphs. The following list has the relevant information.

- |                                       |                                       |
|---------------------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| 1. April 18, 1948, p. 6               | 15. May 6, 1948, p. 4                 |
| 2. April 20, 1948, p. 4 / Chapter I   | 16. May 8, 1948, p. 4 / Chapter VII   |
| 3. April 21, 1948, p. 4               | 17. May 9, 1948, p. 6                 |
| 4. April 22, 1948, p. 4 / Chapter II  | 18. May 11, 1948, p. 4 / Chapter VIII |
| 5. April 23, 1948, p. 4 / Chapter III | 19. May 12, 1948, p. 4                |
| 6. April 24, 1948, p. 4               | 20. May 13, 1948, p. 4                |
| 7. April 25, 1948, p. 6               | 21. May 14, 1948, p. 4 / Chapter IX   |
| 8. April 27, 1948, p. 4               | 22. May 15, 1948, p. 4 / Chapter X    |
| 9. April 28, 1948, p. 4 / Chapter IV  | 23. May 16, 1948, p. 6                |
| 10. April 29, 1948, p. 4              | 24. May 19, 1948, p. 4 / Chapter XI   |
| 11. April 30, 1948, p. 4              | 25. May 20, 1948, p. 4 / Chapter XII  |
| 12. May 1, 1948, p. 6 / Chapter V     | 26. May 21, 1948, p. 4                |
| 13. May 4, 1948, p. 6 / Chapter VI    | 27. May 22, 1948, p. 4                |
| 14. May 5, 1948, p. 4                 |                                       |

<sup>131</sup> This sentence's subject is unclear, as is its meaning; perhaps the author intended to say that Nyiszli and his wife wanted to immortalize in particular the memory of the Auschwitz-Birkenau Camp.

Nyiszli's account is not a simple chronicle of events, but wanders off into historical and philosophical diversions and divagations. He himself states that he has used the following works when compiling his articles:

- Ilya Ehrenburg, *New Century* (Hungarian edition);
- Eugène Aroneau, *Le crime contre l'humanité* (The Crime against Humanity);
- *Das Urteil von Nürnberg* (The Nuremberg Verdict);
- *Grundlage eines neues Völkerrechts* (Foundations of a New International Law)
- The publication of the Nuremberg Archives;
- *Psychiatrische Monatshefte Breslau. Psyche und Verbrechen* (Breslau Psychiatric Monthly. Psyche and Crime).

In his introduction, Nyiszli writes:

*"The dead don't come back to life.*

*Under the title 'I Was Dr. Mengele's Forensic Pathologist in the Auschwitz Crematorium,' I wrote a book that was published a year and a half after the end of the war. Its pages are red with blood, and black with mourning. Doubtlessly I disturbed my companion of misery in his pain. I cannot deny that, as a result of my writing, many wounds have been reopened. However, I had to bring to light my own experiences. I cannot share the opinion of those who, in describing the great historical processes, assume a historical perspective. In my opinion, what is needed is not the historical perspective, but FREEDOM, if the writer wants to convey his argument. I am a free citizen of a democratic state, and as such I have written my book on Auschwitz. I was able to learn about crimes of doctors perpetrated on a vast scale with perverse sadism and their power based on violence."*

Nyiszli reportedly made himself available to testify at the "Nuremberg International Tribunal" in the autumn of 1947.

He claims to have sent the following letter to the court:

*"The Declaration. [...]*

*To the International Tribunal at Nuremberg.*

*The undersigned, Dr. Miklós Nyiszli, MD, Oradea, resident of Nagyvarad, Romania, former detainee of the KZ [concentration camps] with number A-8450, declare the following:*

*In May 1944 I was dismissed from the administrative medical services and deported to Auschwitz with my family and with my mother and my sister. There our transport was subject to a selection. The selecting physician was an SS Hauptsturmführer named Josef Mengele, who at that time served as a medical officer at the Auschwitz Concentration Camp and the 40 sub-camps in the area.*

*We were about fifty doctors. They lined us up. Dr. Mengele asked us: 'Is there a doctor among you who has completed studies at a university of the German*

*Reich and who has perfect knowledge of forensic pathology? Is there an expert anatomist among you whose oral and written German skills are perfect?'"*

Nyiszli stepped forward. Dr. Mengele interviewed him, and, satisfied with the answers he received, he sent him to Barracks #12 of Camp Section F. As reported in the book, Nyiszli was examined in the presence of an SS medical commission in the local dissection room, and had to dissect corpses for five days. Then he was sent to Crematorium II.

*"Inside the death factory.*

*Already on the sixth day in Auschwitz's Crematorium I, it occurred to me with a shock that fate had dragged me into a death factory of the Third Reich. I was finished in the sinister circle of the Kommando of the living dead, the Sonderkommando, marked as S.K. Already a few minutes after my arrival I encountered the Third Reich's darkest secrets and, as a keeper of them, I did not doubt even for a moment that anyone who had entered it would not get out alive.*

*Dr. Mengele determined the sphere of my work and handed me the keys to a highly modern dissection room and a laboratory. The Sonderkommando's staff consisted of 860 inmates. The men were lodged in a large communal accommodation in the crematorium. Dr. Mengele was also the director of pretended scientific research. This research included the following fields:*

*1. Study of twin phenomena on living people. This research was carried out by Dr. Epstein, ordinarius at the University of Prague, who had been in custody for five years now.*

*2. After the examination of the living twins had been completed, the protocol of the medical examination, the radiographs and the drawings were placed in their folder, and then the twins were killed in couples with an intracardiac injection, i.e. into the heart (chloroform, I.G. Farben, special packaging). The injections caused immediate death. The bodies were marked with the letters Z.S. written with blue chalk on the skin of the left side of the chest. The symbol Z.S. is the abbreviation of zur Sektion [to dissection]. At the same time, the information was communicated to the dissection [team]. In this way the corpses arrived at the dissection room of Crematorium II.*

*3. With a precise work of forensic pathology, we had to evaluate the internal twin phenomena. In the protocol, all the phenomena that could be revealed had to be reported. We had to add the protocol to the material contained in the folder from the live exam. Another task of mine was to study the phenomena of Jewish degeneration, first on the living, then on the dead.<sup>[132]</sup>*

*4. Human material to support the theory of Jewish degeneration from a medical point of view. Already on the arrival of Jewish transports, Dr. Mengele chose the material when [the deportees] lined up for selection. Right from the ramp, Dr. Mengele selected individuals or pairs. For example, father and son, mother and children, siblings. The SS guards accompanied them separately to*

---

<sup>132</sup> Világ, April 18, 1948, Part 1, p. 6.

the crematorium, where, after their examinations 'in vivo,' they were finished off with a shot into the nape of their neck (official name: *Obergenickschiitze*<sup>133</sup>). Oberscharführer Mussfeld killed them with a shot into the nape of their neck (with a small gun of 6 mm). After that, the bodies arrived at the dissection room, where the degenerative phenomena had to be evaluated from the point of view of pathological anatomy.

5. It was forbidden to cremate corpses with a conspicuous deformative genetic anomaly. Their skeletons had to be prepared with precise work, and they all had to be shipped with a dispatch note stating 'Urgent Shipment of Military Importance.' The recipient was the Institute for Genetic and Racial Research in Berlin-Dahlem.

6. I also prepared many other forensic protocols: in cases of death through bludgeoning, high voltage electricity, shooting, injuries, and in many [other] cases, I had to write a false diagnosis in the respective protocols, such as the cause of death. In many cases of murder, I was ordered to forge the causes of death in order to conceal a huge crime.

7. I was an eyewitness of all four crematoria and of the pyres during all the phases of the extermination activity.

8. With this request of mine, I recall with appreciation the names of my former inmate comrades who are still alive and, as direct subordinates of Dr. Mengele, can fully confirm my accusations listed in the points outlined above.

Prof. Dr. Epstein A., university professor, Prague (Auschwitz II, Zigeunerlager [Gypsy Camp])

Dr. Bendel, J., physician, Paris (Auschwitz II, crematorium)

Dr. Lewy, Robert, university professor, Strasbourg, (Camp Sector F)

Dr. Körner, József, physician, Nizza (Auschwitz, Crematorium II, dissection room).

Dr. Nyiszli Miklós. "

Nyiszli then reports the result of his request:

"Not before long, the answer came. I received the invitation [to appear] before the court. I presented and attended 17 hearings as a witness."

In the following paragraph titled "The Nuremberg Tribunal," Nyiszli lists the members of the International Military Tribunal (Donnedieu de Vabres, Justice Geoffrey Lawrence, Iona T. Nikitchenko, Alexander F. Volchkov, Francis Biddle, John I. Parker, Justice Norman Birkett) and "prosecutors authorized to receive testimony," such as Joseph F. Tubridy, George G. Taylor, and Ian D. McIlwraith, and also Emanuel Minskoff and Benvenuto von Halle,<sup>134</sup> who were all members of the International Military Tribunal, except for the last two, who only participated in the I.G. Farben Trial.<sup>135</sup>

<sup>133</sup> German in the original, "chief neck-shooter."

<sup>134</sup> Nyszli always writes "van Halle."

<sup>135</sup> *Világ*, April 20, 1948, Part 2, p. 4.



This is followed by historical and philosophical digressions on Nuremberg and Germany in Nyiszli's typical rhetoric. This was inspired by his summons to this city by the Office of the U.S. Military Government of Germany.

Nyiszli tells of his trip to Nuremberg, to the Palace of Justice, without giving a date:<sup>136</sup>

*"On the second floor, I look for Room No. 297 in front of dark doors. This is the number given in the summons. I have to go to Room 297. After a short search, I come to the door. On a small white plate I read: E. E. MINSKOFF Chief of Counsel for War Crimes. Two guards, American Negroes, watch the entrance.*

*"The entry ticket, please," says one of the two. I give it to him. They examine my entry ticket.*

*"The folder, please." I open the folder. They take a look, then they salute. I can enter."*

Minskoff gave Nyiszli a questionnaire with the following topics:<sup>137</sup>

*"1. Inhumane treatment of concentration camp inmates who worked at the I.G. Farben construction site.*

*2. The exclusive request for strong detainees fit for labor, the selection and evacuation of the weak from the construction site without [leaving] a trace.*

*3. The medical treatment of inmates which ceased in the event of an illness lasting more than three weeks.*

*4. Did high-ranking staff members of I.G. Farben visit the work sites? Did you witness inhumane work carried out by detainees, that is, with insufficient clothing, insufficient food, regardless of weather conditions?*

*5. Did high-ranking staff members of I.G. Farben visit the Stammlager of Auschwitz and the crematoria?*

*6. Did you know any of them?*

*7. Were you aware of experiments on living people with medicine by I.G. Farben?*

*8. The detainees sent to the crematorium who were taken there from the I.G. Farben construction site, were they marked? Did they arrive with a mark? Can it be established that they came from the [labor] service at the I.G. to be exterminated?*

*9. What do you know about the gas used for the mass extermination of people in the crematoria of Auschwitz?*

*10. How did the gassing process unfold?"*

Two days later, Nyiszli states, he met Minskoff at 9 o'clock:<sup>138</sup>

*"Did you finish the task, Doctor?" He asked me amicably.*

*'Yes, I finished it.'*

<sup>136</sup> Világ, April 21, 1948, Part 3, p. 4.

<sup>137</sup> Világ, April 22, 1948, Part 4, p. 4.

<sup>138</sup> Világ, April 23, 1948, Part 5, p. 4.

*'Then I instantly call in here the American prosecutor van Halle. He is the authorized prosecutor to authenticate statements made under oath, the affidavit.'*

*Soon thereafter, van Halle enters. I introduce myself.*

*'I already heard of your arrival. Can I have the notes?'*

*I give him the writings I have written in German. He takes a look at the notes.*

*'Would you please sign all the pages of the notes.'*

*After my signature, van Halle signs with his signature in the margins. With these notes, the case file is enhanced by 16 affidavits."*

Minskoff asked Nyiszli to stay at the Palace of Justice because in the morning his presence in the courtroom would probably be necessary.

*"At 11 am sharp in Room 284 next to the courtroom where the I.G. Farben case will take place. On the door you can read that it's the 'witness room.'"*

Nyiszli gets there, as he recounts:

*"A few minutes before 11, I am waiting for my turn in the witness room next to the courtroom of the I.G. Farben case. Just a few minutes, and the door to the courtroom opens. An American officer appears in the door and calls: 'Mr. Nyiszli.' [...] He accompanies me into the courtroom and shows me my place. I sit on a chair in the witness stand. In front of me is a small table with a microphone. A headset, a glass and a bottle of water. I have time to look around, to observe. There are journalists, photo reporters, lawyers, visitors from all over the world who do not miss an opportunity to attend at least one day of the hearing of the Nuremberg Trial."*

This is followed by a description of the courtroom. Then he states:<sup>139</sup>

*"Suddenly, chief prosecutor Minskoff lights a little blue electric lamp on the table. His voice can be heard. A subdued whistle breaks the silence as they start an electric recorder.*

*Minskoff gets up from his seat and begins to read the charges:*

*'Here, on the bench of the defendants, there are men who have only recently played a leading role in their fatherland. A group of executives, directors of the I.G. Farben, is now facing the International Tribunal's judges, indicted with the charge of organized and continued crimes against peace and humanity. The number of victims amounts to several million. How were the sons of a European nation capable of committing so many murders?*

*I will give an explanation in three points.*

*1. The suspension of criminal law in the Third Reich and in the territories under its occupation, at the expense and to the detriment of single persons or the masses.*

*2. In this respect being of service to the crimes of the central power.*

*3. The organized extermination approved by the State."*

<sup>139</sup> Világ, April 24, 1948, Part 6, p. 4.

Nyiszli then reports about Minskoff's indictment of the Third Reich as a "rogue state,"<sup>140</sup> thus reaching the crucial point of the narration. Suddenly, Minskoff turned to Nyiszli and pointed at him with his finger, asserting:

*"A physician sits here in the witness stand. On our invitation, he came from Romania before this High Court, and without coercion made a deposition here supported by accurate data, on a multitude of crimes, on a monstrosity, on perpetrated horrors, which alone are sufficient to ascertain the guilt, that is to say, to confirm the defendants' crimes within the crimes against peace and humanity that I have grouped in 16 points as the subject of this trial and that I have read out to you.*

*I also call the prosecutors' attention to the fact that the physician Dr. Miklós Nyiszli has appeared here as a witness. His testimony is interesting also in this regard, and possesses an extraordinary value, since during his imprisonment he stayed more or less long in five concentration camps of the Third Reich. He worked for 8 months as a forensic pathologist in the crematorium of Auschwitz. Thus, he was able to provide a precise report on the life in the Monowitz Concentration Camp, but at the same time also makes a precise deposition about the extermination of transports of exhausted deportees. Such crimes he witnessed in several cases.*

*The prosecutor lifted a copy of my book from his desk.*

*'In that regard, the doctor's statement is also important because he put it in writing in a 1946 volume, thus submitting his experiences. We requested this copy from the author. Our experts have examined its data and, having compared them with the documents available during this trial for the past two years, regard it as documentary material because with its description it has shed light on hitherto still rather unknown details.'*

*Then, Attorney General Minskoff sat down.*<sup>141</sup>

*"In my headphone, Attorney General Minskoff's voice said:*

*'Dr. Miklós Nyiszli! You came here from your home to testify without any constraint in front of the International Military Tribunal. I remind you that giving false testimony is a crime. So, you will report what you know about the attested-to treatment of concentration camp inmates working in I.G. Farben plants.'* *I confess, at this moment I feel a little anxiety. Now I have to talk, and the attention of the whole world is turned on me. I, a simple physician, have ended up with my testimony in the center of an important and complicated world tribunal. But all this lasts only a second. I see the microphone in front of me and, without uneasiness, without anxiety, I begin to talk:*

*'Honorable Prosecutors! I ask permission to make my testimony in German, as I speak this language fluently.'*"

At this point, Nyiszli claims, he read verbatim into the record his "procedural file appearing as document U.S. AGO D4325.32."

<sup>140</sup> *Világ*, April 25, 1948, Part 7, p. 6.

<sup>141</sup> *Világ*, April 27, 1948, Part 8, p. 4.

Actually, this is not a procedural file, but the registration number of the civilian employee Benvenuto von Halle; the actual "procedural file" is Nuremberg Document NI-11710, which will be discussed later.

Then begins the description of the Monowitz Camp, which was 12 km away from Auschwitz:

*"The region, flat, yellow-loamy, barren, serves as a purpose the Silesian coal mines that are found in the immediate vicinity. As is known, gasoline and rubber are produced from coal. Forty thousand inmates are deployed here on the huge construction site. Polish and Russian men and women deported from their homes, a thousand English aviators and about 20,000 deportees. Christians and Jews intermingled. French, German, Dutch, Greek, Hungarian and similarly intermingled. The establishment, that is, the entire construction site is a fenced-in area. Watch towers 30-50 meters apart from one another characterize the concentration camp. SS sentinels guard it on the towers next to heavy automatic weapons, and patrols armed to the teeth circulate in the work area. The prisoner's lodgings are located 4-12 km from the workplace, depending on where the individual Kommandos work. The detainees of the Monowitz Concentration Camp are divided into 200 labor Kommandos; some of the detainees are employed in construction work, the rest in mining coal."*

After the roll call – there were 7,000 were – the camp commander told the deportees that Monowitz was not a "Schonungslager" (recovery camp), but a concentration camp where they had to work with all their effort. "If you don't, you will all croak in the reinforced concrete." At Monowitz, Nyiszli was assigned to Kommando No. 197 at the construction site.<sup>142</sup>

This is followed by a long description of camp life:

*"I remember the Egyptian pyramids, during the construction of which there was a similar toiling. In any Kommando detainees work who, if loaded wagons arrived, have the most urgent task of unloading them. Almost all of Germany's wagons come here – we think –. With all available construction material. Our detainees must unload them, and can do so in a short time only at an inhuman pace. Better is the case if you need to unload bricks, concrete and hardware near the wagons. The murderer imposes this work when it is necessary to bring the heavy building material by hand, on the back or on the shoulders to the workplace located several hundred meters away from the wagons. But we must know that in the concentration camp work is carried out at a pace of running. La I.G. Farben takes advantage of our strength at every moment of working time.*

*Six bricks in one hand stacked on top of each other, a 50 kg cement bag on the shoulders or back, a 4 m long iron tube of 8 cm diameter on two men's shoulders or a long and thick cable [supported] at [a distance of] one meter:<sup>[143]</sup> it*

<sup>142</sup> Világ, April 28, 1948, Part 9, p. 4.

<sup>143</sup> The cable was carried by three detainees at a distance of one meter from each other.

weighs 100 kg. Yes, it would weigh 100 kg if only those walking in front of me and behind me carried a part of the pipe themselves. But it often happens that my companions are of lower stature or simply don't do it. So my grazed shoulders bend under the [weight of the] three parts of the cable. It is not even worth risking to break my head by putting the cap on my chafed shoulders in order to relieve the pressure of the iron pipe. The SS guards, the I.G. Farben engineers in sport suits, the corpulent German master builder and the German co-inmates, the *Kapo*, who serve them for an additional piece of bread, walk among us.

Many despair under the exhausting work performed in privation. Death by heart attack strikes a lot, ending all suffering quickly, kindly. Here the burial of the dead consists of the simple fact that the dead end up in the pits prepared for the cables. They throw soil on top of them, then they place a cable, and finally they pour the concrete. Now, after eight days, I already know what the commander meant during his address when referring to concrete. I also know that about 100,000 deportees met their death here, and [that this has been] their cemetery since the beginning of construction work, from 1942 until today.

It's a cold, rainy morning. Our foremen and our guards at the plant run everywhere around the workplaces, they seek shelter in the erected barracks, well-heated against the moisture penetrating to the bones, against the cold and the rain. Certainly the glowing iron stove gives off a nice warmth.<sup>[144]</sup> The bright, white lamps shine a cozy light all around. We work near a hut, and we watch them through the window: they take a hot tea and smoke their cigarettes with pleasure. Meanwhile, the cheerful conversation continues, and some laughter even reaches my ears.

Kommando 197 does not do its specialty if it's raining. We don't transport concrete to load the concrete mixers, because the powdered concrete would get wet and would be useless. However, for the detainees there is no bad weather! In the concentration camp one cannot sit around idly, so we push the sand tippers. With great care, each one puts on his back, under the striped work jacket, a piece of paper from discarded cement bags to protect us from the torrential rain. The big shovel moves quickly in our hands. The tipper fills up quickly. We rush with this, because at the unloading site we can rest a while, until on the only track arrives the train of [...illegible].

We hold the full tipper back with our shoulders. Certainly, we would let it go rather than hold it back on the inclined path. For a moment, it's all right. But suddenly the piece of wood pressed against the wheel escapes the hand of the braker. The tipper begins to move like a sand tipper can move on a sloping road. Our fear is huge. If they notice it, it will end badly. This is the I.G. Farben's construction site set up at the concentration camp... Pit and cable and cement...<sup>[145]</sup> We hold on to the unleashed tipper with all our strength only

<sup>144</sup> This scene took place in June 1944.

<sup>145</sup> The threat of being buried in a pit with a cable laid on top.

[from behind], we pull at it from between the rails, between the temporarily placed ties. We struggle in vain, until our comrade who had let the brake rod slip out of his hands, with an imprudence resulting from fear or clumsiness, jumps in front of the tipper that runs at increasing speed. He tries to stop it with his arm. The desperate attempt fails. It was a clumsy act. An expert would never have carried out his act. Only an inmate who, in civilian life, was a dentist. Only a concentration-camp prisoner can be so careless. The wagon hit him. He fell to the ground. With a crunching sound, his leg gets shattered by the iron wheels. The tipper turns upside down as well, and our unhappy companion, in a state of beneficial unconsciousness, lies between the rails with his bleeding leg, with cold sweat on his face, with an improbably pale face.<sup>[146]</sup>

We pull him out cautiously and lay him on the sandy ground. It's raining cats and dogs. We stand around him with dismay and consternation. In a concentration camp, initiative or personal action don't exist. It is forbidden to interrupt the work without an order, and even more so to leave the workplace.

Out of the rain, two bright raincoats appear in our midst. They ask us why we interrupted our work. One of them is an SS guard, the other a foreman. They see him lying on the ground.

– *Weiter machen* [continue] – they order.

As they give the order to continue to work, they strangely realize that an inmate has his lower limbs completely smashed, and that the iron wagon full of sand is turned upside down. In their cup there is probably still some hot tea that steams; for them, the pouring rain is a torment. They hurry back to the warm hut. The motionless body, the extraordinarily pale face, the bloody legs remind me of the doctor from the obscurity of my past. Every Kommando at the workplace knows the black sign indicating in which direction and how far away the nearest first-aid station is from the work site. There are countless signs of this kind at the Monowitz work site, as required by the safety regulations for construction work."

Nyiszli identified himself as a physician in order to assist the injured, and asked for permission to take him to the emergency room.

*An SS soldier comes towards me.*

– You're just a filthy, arrogant concentration-camp prisoner here, not a doctor. You're an arrogant guy; you do not even know that first aid and air raid shelters are available only to the Germans of the Reich.

*He began to scream.*

– Do not steal time, because ... you will find out about it immediately! [i.e.: you will have a bad experience].

We already know what he alludes to: 25 lashes in the presence of the doctor. I think about it. We can get back to work at a slow pace, for the smoking ban, but also for this cement paper bag that we put on our shoulders. The thing happened on the Appelpplatz after the return. The lashes were meted out by the

<sup>146</sup> Világ, April 29, 1948, Part 10, p. 4.

concentration camp's official executioner. An SS doctor was present at the punishment, but he often had to establish that death had occurred. Death was caused by the contusion either of the kidneys or of the lumbar vertebrae. The fact is that the number of blows was absolutely not in compliance with the article of the concentration camp regulations about corporal punishment, because one can count them up to 40; the number of lashes was never less when I was an eyewitness of the event.

We put the overturned wagon back onto the rails. We pick up the shovels, and the work continues. It does not seem to be 6 o'clock, meaning 6 pm, but we feel like it; we have worked until eternity when we suspend the work. Our companion arrived on a stretcher made of boards, unconscious due to pain and loss of blood. Our Kommando joins the others, and we walk to our lodgings at the concentration camp. The evening roll call, which lasts 2 hours, is not much for us either. They write down the number of our injured comrade, and he finally is sent to the hospital, to the famous H.K.B., *Häftlingskrankenbau*. I already expect that here they will amputate both legs under the knees with wonderful surgical technique. Meanwhile they test on him some new narcotics of I.G. Farben and other medicines. As soon as his leg stumps heal 'per primam' [by first intention; meaning almost unscarred] his medical record will be filed away, while he himself goes to the transport for the crematorium. For the I.G. Farben he, the amputatee, is nothing but an 'unnützer Esser' [useless eater], but in the Third Reich, these must die.

– These would be my arguments – I concluded – about the treatment reserved for the prisoners of I.G. Farben.

The prosecutors confabulate, argue a bit, the chief prosecutor Minskoff stands up and declares:

– The hearing's morning session has come to an end. We will continue at 3.30pm in the afternoon."<sup>147</sup>

At 15:30, Minskoff announced: "The interrogation of the witness Dr. Nyiszli Miklos continues."

"Forced labor, hunger, the cold, the appeals that last for hours, the long marches and the continuous disruption of the night's rest for weeks also broke down the prisoner who arrived here in the best physical conditions.

After the evening roll call, in front of the reception office of the hospital barrack, there is a large crowd. A group of men in ragged striped uniforms. Poles, French, Hungarians, Greeks, Czechs. Half of Europe is represented here. Every face on which I lay my gaze had contracted the typical disease of the concentration camp, the *sycosis parasitarius* [recte: parasitic], the beard's fungus with its oozing blotches. A few days after arrival, it hits everyone. They are not here for this. Here they wait to be examined [by the doctor] for injuries caused on the job – an open and also dirty wound on the face, on a hand, on a foot – diarrhea, dysentery, abdominal typhus at every stage. They sit quietly,

<sup>147</sup> Világ, April 30, 1948, Part 11, p. 4.

*folded in on themselves, or stand in front of the entrance, numbed by apathy, their gaze lost into infinity. As if the door opened in the Third Reich, and only one step separated them from the door. They would cling even to a twig with one finger."*

Medical treatment, a few weeks of rest, continued Nyiszli, could cure prisoners in most cases, but a disease was recognized as such only starting at a fever of 39 degrees centigrade (102.2°F). Only such inmates received ambulatory treatment who had first- and second-degree frostbite, jaundice free of inflammation of the bladder, abscesses, carbuncles. Getting two days of "*Schonung*" (rest) was already a lot. The inmates who benefited from it were assigned to the camp maintenance service, which was responsible for removing rubbish, cleaning the camp streets, and distributing the rations of bread. This office was called "*Lageraufbau*"<sup>148</sup> [camp construction]. Nyiszli also managed to get two days of "*Schonung*," because the long marches in bad shoes had wounded his feet, and the wounds had become infected; hence he was assigned with another inmate to transport the bread.<sup>149</sup> He recounts:

*"My companion walks slowly between the front poles of the bread crate. I knew he suffered from long-standing heart insufficiency, so we did not hurry. We carried the crate to the rhythm of a funeral procession, and often made our way from the warehouse to the barracks and from the barracks to the warehouse. It was already dark, and the outlines of the barracks faded in the damp humid fog.*

*Suddenly the crate stops. My companion drops his poles rather than put them down. In the dim light I cannot see his face distinctly; I only hear his husky voice:*

*– I've had enough of this!*

*– Me too – I reply.*

*I do not believe that he heard my answer, because immediately a deep rattle erupts from his lungs, and he falls to the ground while half way turning around. A few more fragmentary, incomprehensible words, contorted as if he had been hit on the head, and it's the end. That's how overworked work horses croak, still bridled between the poles of their cart."*<sup>150</sup>

In the subsequent paragraph titled "An old memory," Nyiszli reports about the visit of a pharmaceutical representative from I.G. Farben in his medical office in Hungary. The scene then moves abruptly to Birkenau:

*"The Vistula, like a snaking line here and there, marks the edge of the world outside of the barbed wire. What is inside the barbed wires is Birkenau. A birch grove and a track laid without any railway equipment ending in its vicinity.*

<sup>148</sup> The various units of "cleaners" (*Reiniger*) were part of the *Aufräumungskommando* (tidying-up unit).

<sup>149</sup> *Világ*, May 1, 1948, Part 12, p. 6.

<sup>150</sup> *Világ*, May 4, 1948, Part 13, p. 6.



*Thus abandoned, it reveals nothing to the observers. Neither the grove could conceal it nor the fog could whirl around continuously, and it would not even be possible to see anything from Birkenau. But one cannot even see the four huge buildings that line up next to each other, nor could one see the strangely shaped chimneys.<sup>[151]</sup>*

*One can see the swirling smoke that veils the sky over a grove like a black cloud. It's only for a moment, because a column of flames immediately breaks out like a flaming fountain in the dark. The second, third, fourth column of flames erupts as well. Four columns of fire slowly come together, devour the fog and devour the piece of sky above me. Only the rails laid on the Birkenau ramp, without a sign of a train, shine and stand out even [more] in the flashes of intense light. This is the area of the crematoria and the fog lit by the fire, and the smoke rises into the air like bloody foam.*

*I've lived here for four months, if I could calculate with the calendar. But for a long time I don't have a sense of time anymore. I do not live 'in time' but 'in space.' I do not even have a sense for the horrors of which I have been an eyewitness until now. The fires have been burning here for a long time. A lot of water flows down the Vistula, and many millions of men alight here from the trains.*

*I am the 'doctor' of the Auschwitz crematoria. Underground are the gas chambers, on the ground floor the long row of cremation furnaces. On the second floor, the lodgings of the Sonderkommando, the commando of the living dead. In the air smoke and flames. In these flames there are the souls of millions [of people] who fly away."*

Then Nyiszli suddenly relates a story about the visit of an I.G.-Farben representative.<sup>152</sup> After that he presents another story about Auschwitz titled "A mysterious chief engineer":

*"The cremation furnaces of Auschwitz and their equipment were built in a factory of the time, near the company Topf and Sons of Munich. This name was on the doors of the 60 furnaces of the crematoria of Auschwitz, on the automatic ash-extraction devices, and also on parts of the mechanism of the air-draft register.<sup>[153]</sup> With metal letters welded in a legible way.*

*Once this company sent a specialist to overhaul the devices in the crematoria. He was a person of about 60 and wore the uniform of an SS Oberscharführer. Being a concentration-camp inmate already knowledgeable in these matters, I realized that this man had been wearing the uniform only since recently. He moved in it in a strange, unusual way. The uniform did not even suit him well. He did not even know where to put the heavy revolver hanging from his belt; it was an impediment to him. His age and all his behavior revealed that the SS*

<sup>151</sup> *Világ*, April 30, 1948, Part 11, p. 4.

<sup>152</sup> *Világ*, May 5, 1948, Part 14, p. 4.

<sup>153</sup> Perhaps an allusion to the pressurized-air device (*Druckluftanlage*) which stood next to each of the three 3-muffle furnaces of Crematoria II and III. See Section 3.2.3.

uniform served him only to be able to move freely in the concentration camp and to disguise himself as a person.

I conversed with him several times. In my opinion, he was an engineer dressed as an SS [man] as a member of the big factory Topf and Sons, Munich, who had installed the crematorium.

It is also probable that staff members of the I.G. Farben walked around in the main camp and in the crematoria concealing their identity under the SS uniform.

\*

The director of the hearing announces that the testimony of the witness continues the next morning at 9.00. ”<sup>154</sup>

“The next day...

All take a seat in the audience hall. They read the names of the witnesses and of the defendants present. Today there are also defense witnesses. In a place reserved for the defense sit two well-dressed gentlemen. One is Dr. Wagner, head of the Mannheim branch of I.G. Farben. The other is Dr. Stössel, head of the profit sharing company<sup>[155]</sup> of I.G. Farben of Berlin.

– Minskoff: Doctor Wagner!

– Dr. Wagner: Here I am!

– Your residence?

– I live in Frankfurt.

– How old are you?

– Fifty.

– Your profession?

– From 1937 until the defeat I was director of the so-called GG., Umleitungsstelle 9.

A dramatic dialogue follows. A dramatic hearing.

– Minskoff: Dr. Wagner! GG. means Giftgas, poison gas.

– Dr. Wagner: Yes.

– Minskoff: The Umleitungsstelle 9, however, was a liaison office for I.G. Farben, but also for the armed forces and the RSHA office, i.e. the inspectorate<sup>[156]</sup> [sic] of security of the Reich, one of its largest offices.

– Dr. Wagner: Yes.

– Minskoff: We know that subordinate to this office were the SIPO, the Gestapo, the SS, the SD and the SA, as well as Section IV.<sup>[157]</sup> We know that the latter also dealt with matters concerning the concentration camps. During the hearing we do not want to dwell on all types of gas; we deal thoroughly with another type of gas.”

<sup>154</sup> Világ, May 6, 1948, Part 15, p. 4.

<sup>155</sup> “Érdekeltség,” “profit sharing.”

<sup>156</sup> RSHA: Reichssicherheitshauptamt, Reich Security Main Office; Inspectorate = Inspektion, for instance “Inspektion der Konzentrationslager,” Inspectorate of the Concentration Camps.

<sup>157</sup> SA and SS were troops, not offices, of the RSHA; “Section IV” was Abteilung IV, which was the Gestapo.

Minskoff then asked Wagner what he knew about “Cyclon A” and “Cyclon B,” to which the witness answered:

*“Messrs. prosecutors! I myself, as I said, was a head of department. Through my office, only documents for requesting and allocating various gases have passed. As I mentioned, the Cyklon gases were not part of the group of combat gasses, but of the so-called hygienic gasses. A strong disinfestant like chlorine. I am not able to report on their chemical composition, because they were so-called Geheimmittel [secret means], and even in the chemical department only some chemical chiefs knew their composition.”*

The witness was dismissed, and Minskoff called the witness Stössel.

*“– Minskoff: What can you tell us about the types of Cyclon gas?”*

*– Dr. Stössel: Messrs. Chief Prosecutors, Messrs. prosecutors! I knew the types of Cyclon gas. To the best of my knowledge, the health departments of both the armed forces and the labor service required it in large quantities for disinfestation purposes.*

*– Minskoff: What do you know about their real purpose in the concentration camps?”*

*– Dr. Stössel: In this regard I cannot say anything, because no news about the events of the concentration camps reached the outside.*

*Even if I had run into some uncontrollable rumor, on the one hand I would not have believed it, on the other it would not have been prudent to investigate its authenticity.”*

Minskoff dismissed this witness as well, after which it was Nyiszli's turn.

*“The witness [Stössel] went back to his seat, and the chief prosecutor called me.*

*– Dr. Nyiszli Miklos, what can you tell us about the types of Cyclon gas?”*

*– Mr. Prosecutor! As a doctor, I am unable to account for as secret a composition as the chemical composition of these two types of gas. However, I am able to provide a precise description of the use and effect of the types of gas as an eyewitness to an event. I came to know two ways to use the Cyclon gas types. I have witnessed the emptying of green, enameled tin cans of a volume of about one liter into the disinfestation chamber of Camp F at Birkenau. They poured down the contents of the cans through chimney-like openings onto clothes and blankets piled up in the hermetically sealed disinfestation chamber [that was] here in the hospital camp.”<sup>158</sup>*

*“After waiting for about 2 hours, the electric fans cleared the room of the gas. The staff of the clothing warehouse distributed the clothes to the naked prisoners waiting in front of the premises. I had an opportunity to read the inscription of these cans. The text of the inscriptions was as follows: Cyclon A. Vertilungsmittel für Läuse und andere Ungezieher [sic]. Vorsicht. Gift! (Pest*

---

<sup>158</sup> Világ, May 8, 1948, Part 16, p. 4.

*control agent for lice and other pests. Caution: Poison!). I saw this in section F of the Birkenau Camp!*

*With your permission, I quote literally from my book on Auschwitz the second use [of gas]."*

This is followed by the description of the homicidal "gassing" of his book's Chapter VII, where Nyiszli says that "Cyclon" was chlorine-based. Then he comments:

*"I saw this in the crematoria of Auschwitz. Countless times, during my eight-months' imprisonment. The gas cans were the same, both in appearance and in color, and their inscriptions were the same. Only one letter was different on the two gas cans. The gas cans used in the crematoria were inscribed with Cyklon B instead of Cyklon A. More rarely they also used cans without writing. In these, in my opinion, there was chlorine.*

*By comparing my modest chemical knowledge and my experience of pathological and forensic anatomy with the phenomena that appeared in thousands of bodies of dead who died of gas, I made the following assessment: death occurred in a state of unconsciousness due to paralysis of the respiratory center, depending on the weather (in rainy, humid weather, there is more oxygen in the air) in 2-5 minutes.*

*External phenomena are:*

*Strong swelling of the head, edema (oedema).*

*Bluish-lilac complexion of the whole body, cyanosis.*

*Hemorrhage of the conjunctiva of the eye (hemorrhage conjunctivalis).*

*A fourth important phenomenon of cyanide poisoning is the dilatation of the pupil (mydriasis).*

*My assessment of the chemical composition of the gas referred to as Cyclon B: it is a chemical combination of acidum hydrocyanatum [hydrogen cyanide], chlorine and in all probability nitrogen in a way whose chemical formula is unknown to me.*

*Its dry protective substance<sup>[159]</sup> is calcium silicate. Stabilizing<sup>[160]</sup> it in this substance in a hermetically sealed can, it can be stored for a long time.<sup>[161]</sup>*

*The toxic substance, at the moment of the actual contact with air – probably absorbing its oxygen – becomes gaseous from the solid state and fills the available space very quickly (light gas), leaving the supporting substance unchanged in its external appearance."*

The narration continues with a paragraph headlined "22,000 people a day."

<sup>159</sup> "védőanyag." In the transcription of this passage which was published in the 1964 edition of Nyiszli's book, the term used here is "vivőanyag" instead – carrier substance.

<sup>160</sup> "Suspendava," non-existing verb in Hungarian, perhaps created by Nyiszli from the German and English root word "suspend"; the meaning is unclear.

<sup>161</sup> In the 1964 edition of Nyiszli's book, the text was modified as follows: "In essence there is a hermetically sealed stabilizer in the can, which can be stored for a long time."

*"Mr. prosecutors! Many times I had the opportunity to hold these granules in my hand and examine them after the gassing was over."*<sup>162</sup>

*"Chief Prosecutor Minskoff:*

*– How many cases did you witness, sir?"*

*– I was a detainee at the crematoria for eight months. If I consider that about 22,000 people went into the gas chambers every day, if I also consider that the crematoria were not working every day (repairs, cleaning, etc.), then, all told, during the period of my imprisonment I was a witness to the death by gas of about 2 million people.*

*When telling of these things, a murmur runs throughout the entire room until its end. There are many who understand German, but the murmur is repeated, and after a few seconds there is a great movement among the audience, when they translate it into English.*

*I see journalists taking notes excitedly. I see the judges take off their headphones and talk to one other. Only the defendants sit with indifference, as if all this did not concern them.*

*I tell these things in relation to points 9, 10, 11 and 12 of the indictment, in the file number U.S. AGO D. 4325.36. The blue light bulb goes out on my table. I turn around to sit down in my place."*

Another paragraph is inserted into his story headlined "The extermination of children":

*"Chief Prosecutor Minskoff takes the floor again.*

*– Esteemed court! Messrs. prosecutors! This observation is important in relation to the testimony given by the witness. The testimony given by the witness for the prosecution Dr. Miklós Nyiszli fully agrees with both the technical implementation of the extermination and the large number [of the victims], even with the deposition made before us by Hauptsturmführer Höss. In this regard there are the documents: Transcript p. 7821 and Transcript p. 7822, authenticated affidavits.*

*SS Hauptsturmführer Höss was commander of the Auschwitz Concentration Camp from 1 May 1940 to 1 December 1943. According to his deposition, 2,500,000 people were killed in the gas chambers in this period, and 500,000 died as a result of torture, hard work, hunger and disease. I read extracts from two documents.*

*Transcript p. 7821:*<sup>[163]</sup>

*'we had two SS doctors on duty at Auschwitz to examine the incoming transports of prisoners. The prisoners would be marched by one of the doctors who would make spot decisions as they walked by. Those who were fit for work were sent into the Camp. Others were sent immediately to the extermination plants. Children of tender years were invariably exterminated since by reason*

<sup>162</sup> Világ, May 9, 1948, Part 17, p. 6.

<sup>163</sup> This is followed by a Hungarian translation of a part of Point 7 of Höss's affidavit of April 5, 1946, PS-3868, which I give here as a translation of the original German text.

*of their youth they were unable to work. Still another improvement we made over Tremblinka was that at Tremblinka the victims almost always knew that they were to be exterminated and at Auschwitz we endeavored to fool the victims into thinking that they were to go through a delousing process. Of course, frequently they realized our true intentions and we sometimes had riots and difficulties due to that fact. Very frequently women would hide their children under the clothes but of course when we found them we would send the children in to be exterminated.'*

*Thus says Höss's deposition. Now – Chief Prosecutor Minskoff continued – I read Transcript p. 7822:<sup>[164]</sup>*

*'It took from 3 to 15 minutes to kill the people in the death chamber depending upon climatic conditions. We knew when the people were dead because their screaming stopped. We usually waited about one-half hour before we opened the doors and removed the bodies. After the bodies were removed our special commandos took off the rings and extracted the gold from the teeth of the corpses.'*<sup>[165]</sup>

Nyiszli's tale continues with his Chapter VIII, which is headlined "The sterilization of three hundred young women." Minskoff asked him:

*"Dr. Nyiszli, what do you know about the human experiments that SS doctors carried out with medicines or Röntgen rays,<sup>[166]</sup> as well as in the operating room or otherwise?"*

The witness answered by talking about experiments carried out by Dr. Thilo and Dr. Wolff.

*"On the defendants' bench sat Dr. Thilo, the deputy of Dr. Mengele of the Auschwitz extermination camp."*

According to Nyiszli, Dr. Thilo was sometimes also present on the ramp, but was mainly occupied with surgical work. Dr. Thilo worked in the well-equipped surgery room in the hospital of the camp's Sector F, but did not work to save the lives of the inmates. He was very skilled in the use of medicines and narcotics, at asepsis and antisepsis, carried out a masterly work with the specialists assigned to him, SS doctors and inmate doctors. He experimented with narcotics, the medicines sent by IG-Farben, perfected the surgical methods and introduced new risky methods. In many cases there were also 10-12 successful interventions a day. Then the doctors removed the stitches from the operated prisoners and painstakingly recorded the illness and the medical operations performed on the medical record. The patient, after a successful operation and a careful and cordial treatment, received the ration due to him the following day, following the concentration camp regulations.

<sup>164</sup> This passage is taken from Point 6 of PS-3868.

<sup>165</sup> *Világ*, May 11, 1948, Part 18, p. 4.

<sup>166</sup> German term for x-rays.

*"Half an hour later, he passed through the door of one of the crematoria with his SS escorts. Within a few minutes, he lay dead with his eyes wide open on the cement of the cremation hall, with a 6-mm lead bullet in his head. This was the surgical activity of Hauptsturmführer Dr. Thilo in the hospital barracks of Sector F field of the Birkenau Camp. I was an eyewitness of these cases several times."*

This was followed by a description of Dr. Wolff's activities:

*"Another doctor sitting there on the defendants' bench, Obersturmführer Dr. Wolff, was the primary internist at the Birkenau Concentration Camp. Thousands and tens of thousands [of prisoners] died of a disease. What was the disease? Diarrhea."*

Dr. Wolff, continued Nyiszli, also omitted the most basic medical intervention that would have prevented the mass perishing of prisoners. Had he put salt into the prisoners' food, this simple measure would have decreased the number of diseases. A liter of 5% hydrochloric-acid solution would have healed diarrhea sufferers from all sections of the camp within a few days. The cost of this one-liter solution was only 1 Reichsmark.<sup>167</sup> Just as Dr. Thilo, Dr. Wolff also carried out research work. He studied with great care the course of various species of diarrhea, and even sent the corpses of 150 diarrhea victims to the dissection room of Crematorium I (II in today's numbering).

Next, Nyiszli brought up Dr. Eduard Wirths, who had been SS garrison physician (SS-Standortarzt) at Auschwitz with the rank of SS Sturmbannführer:

*"Messrs. prosecutors! A third SS physician sits here on the defendants' bench! Dr. Wirts [sic]. I can also report on his activity. His complete rank [was]: 'SS Hauptsturmbannführer Dr. Wirts' [sic]."*

His sphere of activity was the "Experimental Barracks No. 10." Three hundred young women were sterilized with X-rays in this building, Nyiszli claimed.<sup>168</sup>

Then Minskoff asked Nyiszli the following question:

*"Dr. Nyiszli! What observations did he make, as a physician, on the mental disposition of the Nazi murderers?"*

Nyiszli spoke of his contacts with SS members in the crematoria, in particular with Oberscharführer Mussfeld, with whom he had frequent conversations. Once he asked Mussfeld with what right the SS exterminated the Jews, and in his Chapter IX ("A massacring pastry chef") he even reported an alleged answer in German:<sup>169</sup>

*"Well... I give you an answer! The Führer gives us the right to do it. And in a National-Socialist sense, killing Poles and Jews isn't even murder. It is the sacred assassination!"*

<sup>167</sup> Világ, May 12, 1948, Part 19, p. 4.

<sup>168</sup> Világ, May 13, 1948, Part 20, p. 4.

<sup>169</sup> Világ, May 14, 1948, Part 21, p. 4.

In Crematorium I (II of today's numbering), Nyiszli reports, there was also "the painter D. Olleé" (David Olère) who drew illustrated postcards that were ordered, among others, by *Oberscharführer* Seitz. Nyiszli describes him this way:

*"D. Olleé was a stoker at the 15th cremation furnace of Crematorium I during the day shift, and during the night shift he shoveled coke under the corpses of thousands of people. [...] The 15th furnace is the last of the row of sinisterly aligned furnaces in the cremation hall. Here, at the end of the great hall, D. Olleé shovels the coke."*

Nyiszli then provides other information not contained in his book:<sup>170</sup>

*"The sector of the Birkenau Camp, the infamous 'Menschenlager' [meaning male camp], consisted of 32 barracks. 32,000 detainees are kept inside a fence charged with 6,000 volts. The inmates of the camp are divided into 40 Kommandos. The S.K. (Strafkommando) [penal unit] and Z.K. (Zerlegkommando) [dismantling unit] were the two who had the force majeure."*

Then he elaborates on the tasks of the various *Kommandos*.<sup>171</sup> In Chapter XI ("Without Defendants") Nyiszli lists four Auschwitz criminals who had not yet been put on trial:

*"1. Together with a non-commissioned officer, an SS captain of the health service brings the gas cans to the crematoria with a luxury Red Cross vehicle. During the gassing operation, he controls the emptying of the cans into the chimneys that are used to spread out the gas granules. 3,000 who are sentenced to extermination await their death in the gas chamber. The SS captain for some reason shakes off his contemplative calmness and impatiently snarls at the non-commissioned officer:*

*– Gib schon schneller das Fressen den Juden! [Make haste giving the Jews their fodder!]."*

This captain was not Dr. Mengele, whom Nyiszli names later as a third criminal.<sup>172</sup>

"Prosecutor" von Halle authenticated Nyiszli's declaration and gave a copy of it to the other prosecutors and to the defendants, and attached this note to it (I quote Nyiszli's text with all the errors):

*"Sworn to and signed before me this 8th day of October 1947 as known by the person making the above affidavit. Benvenuto Van Halle, U. C. Civilian Agv D. 43.2532.*

*This was the file reference number."*

Nyiszli then launches into a general exposition on the Third Reich from the sources indicated earlier; among other things, he says:<sup>173</sup>

<sup>170</sup> *Világ*, May 15, 1948, Part 22, p. 4.

<sup>171</sup> *Világ*, May 16, 1948, Part 23, p. 6.

<sup>172</sup> *Világ*, May 19, 1948, Part 24, p. 4.

<sup>173</sup> *Világ*, May 20, 1948, Part 25, p. 4.



*"I.G. Farben delivered thousands and hundreds of thousands of Cyclon cans. The gas went to Majdanek, to Treblinka and to the place of greatest consumption, to Auschwitz."*

This is followed by more irrelevant historical-philosophical digressions. At the end, Nyiszli tells us that he learned only after having written his book that there were other companions of misfortune:

*"Dr. Körner József, physician, Nice, France, dissection room of Crematorium I.*

*Prof. Dr. Lewy Robert, Strasbourg, France, Barracks No. 12 of Camp F.*

*Prof. Dr. Epstein A., Prague, Experimental Barracks No. .10.*

*Dr. Bendel József, Paris, physician of the Kommando of Crematorium I.*

*Bennamia Daniel, Athenian, Athens, rue Sokrates 8, stoker of Crematorium I."*

Three of these had already testified "before the Nuremberg court."<sup>174</sup> Of these, only Bennamia is not named in Nyiszli's book. The detainees who had already testified – at the I.G. Farben trial, as we will see – were Epstein and Bendel; no one knows who the third is and where he testified, if at all.

### 2.2.3. Nyiszli at Nuremberg: The Affidavit of October 8, 1947

As is well known, the Nuremberg Trial, in English called "Trial of the Major War Criminals before the International Military Tribunal" (IMT), unfolded at Nuremberg between November 14, 1945, and October 1, 1946. After its conclusion, the Americans staged 12 more trials on their own accord as follows:

I – "Karl Brandt, et al." (The Medical Case)

II – "Erhard Milch" (The Milch Case)

III – "Josef Altstoetter, et al." (The Justice Case)

IV – "Oswald Pohl, et al." (The Pohl Case)

V – "Friedrich Flick, et al." (The Flick Case)

VI – "Carl Krauch, et al." (The I.G. Farben Case)

VII – "Wilhelm List, et al." (The Hostage Case)

VIII – "Ulrich Greifelt, et al." (The RuSHA Case)<sup>175</sup>

IX – "Otto Ohlendorf, et al." (The Einsatzgruppen Case)

X – Alfred Krupp, et al. (The Krupp Case)

XI – "Ernst von Weizsaecker, et al." (The Ministries Case)

XII – "Wilhelm von Leeb, et al. Procedure" (The High Command Case)

The I.G. Farben Trial, properly called "United States of America v. Carl Krauch et al.," was staged from August 14, 1947 to July 30, 1948. Initially, the defendants were 24 top managers of the I.G. Farbenindustrie AG: Carl Krauch, Hermann Schmitz, Georg von Schnitzler, Fritz Gajewski, Philipp Heinrich Hörlein, August von Knieriem, Fritz ter Meer, Christian Schneider,

<sup>174</sup> *Világ*, May 22, 1948, Part 27, p. 4.

<sup>175</sup> *Rasse- und Siedlungshauptamt*, SS Race and Settlement Main Office.

Otto Ambros, Max Brüggemann, Ernst Bürgin, Heinrich Bütefisch, Paul Häfliger, Max Ilgner, Friedrich Jähne, Hans Kühne, Carl Lautenschläger, Wilhelm Mann, Heinrich Oster, Karl Wurster, Walter Dürrfeld, Heinrich Gattineau, Erich von der Heyde, Hans Kugler.

The charges against Max Brüggemann were dropped due to reasons of health. The "Prosecution Counsel" consisted of the following individuals:

- Chief of Counsel: Brigadier General Telford Taylor
- Deputy Chief Counsel: Mr. Josiah E. DuBois Jr.
- Chief I.G. Farben Trial Team: Mr. Drexel A. Sprecher
- Associate Counsel: Mr. Morris Amcham, Mr. Jan Charnatz, Mrs. Mary Kaufman, Albert G.D. Lewy, Mr. Emanuel Minskoff, Mr. Randolph Newman, Mr. Virgil van Street.

The proceedings of the I.G.-Farben Trial (English edition) consist of 43 volumes with a total of 15,834 pages of hearing transcripts, and moreover 2,300<sup>176</sup> prosecution documents ("Prosecution Exhibits").<sup>177</sup>

Nyiszli claims to have attended precisely this trial.

Friedrich Herber, in the short text "The Life of Dr. Miklós Nyiszli," which appears in the appendix to the 1992 German edition of Nyiszli's 1946 book, reproduces the Hungarian doctor's writ of summons as issued by the "Office of Chief of Counsel for War Crimes U.S. Army" dated October 9, 1947 (but this must read September) and signed by a major Milton A. Sewell. Point 1 of it reads (Nyiszli 1992, p. 184; see Document 4):

*"To: Nyiszli Nicolaus (Romanian)*

*1. Verbal order of Commanding General authorizing and inviting above named individual to proceed on or about 25 Sept 47 from Str. Vlahutz # 44 Oradea, Roumania to Nurnberg, Germany for a period of thirty (30) days to appear as Voluntary Witness at Nurnberg Trials, is hereby confirmed and made of record the exigencies of the matter having been such as to preclude the issuing of orders in advance. Upon completion of duty individual will return to Oradea, Roumania."*

Nyiszli actually went to Nuremberg, where he submitted to Benvenuto von Halle, "U.S. Civilian AGO D432532 Office of Chief of Counsel for War Crimes U.S. War Department," the following German-language affidavit on October 8, 1947, which became Prosecution Document NI-11710 (see Document 5 & 5a):

<sup>176</sup> The highest number on the list of documents is 2,354, but no documents bear the numbers 2271-2299.

<sup>177</sup> National Archives Collection of World War II War Crimes Records, Record Group 238.5.3 Official Records of the Trials before U.S. Military Tribunals. In microfilm: National Archives Microfilm Publications, Microfilm Publication M892, Rolls 1-5 & 16-35, Washington, 1976.

Declaration under Oath

*I, Dr. Nyiszli Nikolae, physician, residing at Oradia-Mare, Str. Vlahuta 44, Romania, born on June 17, 1901 in Simleul-Silvaniai, after I have been made aware that I am liable to prosecution due to a false declaration, I hereby declare under oath, voluntarily and without compulsion the following:*

*1) Until my arrest on May 15, 1944, I worked as a regional district medical practitioner. On May 19-20<sup>[178]</sup> 1944, I went with a large transport from Hungary to the Auschwitz Concentration Camp. There I was deloused, my belongings were taken away, and I received a new inmate suit. On May 20-21<sup>[179]</sup> 1944, I went to Monowitz, the concentration camp of the IG-Farben factory Auschwitz. At Monowitz we were again deloused, the new inmate clothes were taken away from us, and we received old and torn inmate suits. The next day I was in the quarantine tent. The following day I was assigned to Block 8, Concrete Kommando 179,<sup>[180]</sup> to work at the IG-Farben construction site. After about 2 weeks came the order that doctors (pathologists) no longer had to leave for work with the Kommandos. We two doctors were taken to Birkenau, Field F, Block 12. There we were deloused and received civilian clothes from others. Shortly afterwards, SS Hauptsturmführer Dr. Mengele ordered me to work in the crematorium of Birkenau as a pathologist.*

*On January 18 1945, in the course of the evacuation of the Birkenau Camp, I was taken to Mauthausen. From there I was transported to Melk/Danube. In early April 1945 I came to Ebensee, where I was liberated by the Americans on May 5 while being seriously ill.*

*2) Upon arrival at Monowitz on May 20-21, 1944, – as I said, we were about 6,000 detainees – a speech was given. We were told that we were in the concentration camp of the IG-Farbenindustrie at Monowitz and that we were here not to live but to croak in the concrete. I did not know what the word concrete meant. After a couple of days, I found out from older detainees that on the IG-Farben construction site, especially at the cable units, 20-25 inmates had previously been shot or beaten to death during work. These detainees had been thrown into the trenches that had been excavated for cables, and had been covered with concrete. A larger number of detainees, especially from Breslau and Berlin, is said to be lying underneath the concrete.*

*3) The engineers of IG-Farben split up the work among all the 200 detainee units employed there at the I.G. construction site. They gave instructions to foremen on the basis of drawings.*

*4) I was an eyewitness to several accidents at the construction site, even of the most serious nature, where no first aid was provided. The sick or injured inmates had to remain lying at the construction site until all the units had re-*

---

<sup>178</sup> In the Hungarian text: May 19.

<sup>179</sup> In the Hungarian text: May 20.

<sup>180</sup> In the Hungarian text: 197.

turned, and only after the appeal, which sometimes lasted for hours, they were brought to the inmates' hospital.

5) It was generally known that after 3 to 4 weeks, if the sick did not heal, they were put on a transport, that is, they were sent to be gassed at Birkenau or to be shot at Birkenau.

6) When I was active in the Birkenau crematorium, I convinced myself in three cases that transports numbering some 2-300 detainees from Monowitz went to be gassed, hence inmates who had worked for IG-Farben. Even the SS men talked openly about it.

7) The inmate transports from Monowitz sent to Birkenau for extermination were not marked in any special way, because all transports destined for extermination left their camp with utterly ragged clothes and shoes.

8) In my capacity as a pathologist in the Birkenau crematorium, I frequently had to take over inmates killed in an accident on the IG-Farben grounds with accompanying paperwork and had to dissect them. I had to compile precise reports about the causes of death. With this seemingly lawful exactitude of taking care of the inmates in individual cases, the IG directors, in agreement with the SS, wanted to conceal the traceless disappearance of thousands of detainees.

9) After a completed gassing, I held Zyklon B granules in my hands. The green enameled cans were brought on site with a Red-Cross car by an SS Hauptsturmführer and an SDG, and thrown by them into the gas chambers. After the cans had been emptied, they were washed with water by detainees and carried away by the two persons mentioned first.

10) On the gassing of prisoners with Zyklon B in the underground gas chambers of Birkenau I can say the following: According to my personal observations – I often had to carry away medicines and eye glasses from the dressing room next to the gas chamber after searching the purses of those gassed – I know that the doors were closed and the light was extinguished centrally, as soon as the mass of people was in the gas chambers. At this time a black-painted red-cross car arrived. An SS officer and an SDG alighted from the car. They held 4 green enameled cans in their hands. They went to the small concrete chimneys that were covered with concrete lids and donned gas masks. The cans were opened and the contents of the can – Zyklon-B in granular form with pink-lilac color<sup>[181]</sup> – was thrown into the openings. The granules did not spread out in the gas chamber because they fell down through perforated pipes,<sup>[182]</sup> and they immediately released gas due to contact with the air.<sup>[183]</sup> Since the gas granules fell on the floor, the gas developed first in the lower layers of air and then gradually rose higher. This is how I explain that after the termination of the gassing the corpses were not scattered out in the room

<sup>181</sup> Also in the Hungarian text: "rózsaszín és lilás."

<sup>182</sup> In the Hungarian text: "lukacsos csöveken hullottak" – "they fell into perforated tubes."

<sup>183</sup> In the Hungarian text: "és levegővel való érintkezés után azonnal gázt fejlesztettek" – "the gas developed immediately after actual contact with air."

but were lying in tower-shaped piles. The stronger ones probably threw the weaker ones down, climbed on those lying below in order to prolong their life by reaching [air] layers still free of gas. This way women, children, and the elderly usually ended up lying at the bottom. As a physician, the following diagnosis imposed itself: death by central respiratory paralysis.

11) I do not know any leading IG-Farben employees by name. A professor of chemistry worked at Monowitz who must have been a leading individual of the IG. However, leading IG individuals must have been aware of the extermination operation, because most of them lived in the town of Auschwitz, and the fires of the crematoria and of the two open graves that burned day and night could be seen up to a distance of 30 kilometers.<sup>[184]</sup>

12) There were often visits to the Auschwitz Main Camp, even to the crematoria. But they [the visitors] always wore SS uniforms, so [they were] not known [recognizable]. For example, the furnaces of the crematoria were provided by the specialized factory Topf & Söhne. This name was cast<sup>[185]</sup> onto each oven. On one occasion this factory sent a specialist to review the devices. He was a man of at least 60 years. I exchanged a few words with him, in my opinion he was an engineer in the uniform of an SS Oberscharführer. This way it was also possible for IG people to show up at Auschwitz and to remain unrecognized.

13) Of the crematoria's Sonderkommando, food carriers went to the Birkenau Camp every day, where they – despite strict regulation – had continuous contact with local prisoners. Thus, the crematoria's activity was known to every detainee.

I have carefully read and countersigned each of the five (5) pages of this statement under oath, made the necessary corrections in my own handwriting, and countersigned them with my initials, and declare herewith under oath that, to the best of my knowledge and conscience, I have stated the absolute truth in this statement.

[Signature]

Dr. Nyiszli Nikolae

[In English:] Sworn to and signed before me this 8th day of October 1947 at Nuremberg by Nyiszli NIKOLAE,  
known to me to be the person making the above affidavit.

[Signature]

BENVENUTO VON HALLE

U.S. Civilian AGO D432532

Office of Chief of Counsel for War Crimes

U.S. War Department”

<sup>184</sup> In the Hungarian text: “krematóriumok kémenyeinek és a két nyitott maglya tüzei pedig Birkenautól 30 kilométerre is látszottak és éjjel nappal égtek” – “the flames of the crematorium chimneys and of the two outdoor fires were still visible 30 km from Birkenau, and they burned night and day.”

<sup>185</sup> In the Hungarian text: “öntve,” cast.

## 2.2.4. Nyiszli's "Testimony" at the I.G. Farben Trial: an Unheard Imposture

Nyiszli's participation in the I.G.-Farben Trial was actually limited to this affidavit. His entire story about him testifying in court, Minskoff's questions and his answers, all this was completely invented. Nyiszli was never called to the witness stand.

In his articles, as mentioned earlier, he even confuses the International Military Tribunal at Nuremberg with the I.G. Farben Trial, and lists the judges and prosecutors of both trials as if they had been one single trial. Not only that, but he lets Minskoff state that Nyiszli showed up "in front of the International Military Tribunal"!

This false information misled the editor of the 1964 Hungarian edition of Nyiszli's book, who wrote that Nyiszli's "interrogation was conducted by the chief prosecutor E.E. Minskoff [Minskoff] representing the Soviet Union," although Minskoff was merely a U.S. civil servant with the identification number "AGO D 230991."<sup>186</sup> Misunderstanding Nyiszli's intentionally convoluted references, the same editor wrote (Nyiszli 1964, p. 196.):

*"According to the author's [Nyiszli's] notes, the part of [his] testimony concerning the actual treatment of sick inmates, the use of toxic gases and the experiments performed on living persons are located in the procedural files with the respective references U.S. AGO-D 4325.33, U.S. AGO-D 4325.36 and U.S. AGO-D 4325.37."*

Friedrich Herber repeated this misinformation while adding further confusion. After having received the summons mentioned earlier, Herber states, Nyiszli went to Nuremberg in October 1947:<sup>187</sup>

*"and put on record his knowledge about the treatment of the sick, the use of toxic gas in the mass murder of people. According to his remarks, his statements are written down in the files of the preliminary investigation (protocol numbers U.S. AGO-D 4325.33, U.S. AGO-D 4325.36 and U.S. AGO-D 4325.37). A revised version [of the declarations] appeared in large newspapers as a series titled 'I was a witness at Nuremberg.'"*

As mentioned earlier, reference numbers of this type did not at all refer to procedural files, but were the identification numbers of U.S. civil servants, in the above case, "AGO D432532" referred to Benvenuto von Halle, while E.E. Minskoff had the ID number "AGO-D 230991."

Nyiszli claimed to have participated as a witness in 17 sessions of the I.G. Farben Trial, but he never indicated the date of any of these sessions, nor the

<sup>186</sup> On April 12, 1948 Minskoff signed an affidavit about Gerhard Peters which he signed precisely with "E.E. Minskoff AGO D 230991." NI-15124.

<sup>187</sup> F. Herber, "Der Lebensweg des Dr. Miklós Nyiszli," in: Nyiszli 1992, p. 185.

pages of the transcript where his testimony can be found. The few references he made merely make his imposture even more obvious.

He reports Minskoff's alleged interrogation of "Dr. Wagner," who, Nyiszli claims, testified "the next day," hence right after Nyiszli's testimony. Dr. Hans Wagner testified indeed as a prosecution witness, although he had not been questioned by Minskoff, but rather by Drexel A. Sprecher. The interrogation took place at the hearing on September 9, 1947.

A certificate produced by Charles D. Provan (to which I will return in Section 5.2.2.) informs us that Nyiszli arrived in Nuremberg on October 3, 1947, and that he was handled by Minskoff on behalf of Sprecher.<sup>188</sup> It is therefore clearly impossible for Nyiszli to have testified right before Dr. Wagner. Not only that, but the whole dialogue of Wagner's interrogation is, again, completely invented. Nyiszli even managed to mangle the name of the office where Dr. Wagner had worked as a chemist from 1938 to 1945: it was not the "GG department, Umleitungsstelle 9," but the "Vermittlungsstelle W," which was the I.G. Farbenindustrie's liaison office to the Wehrmacht. Sprecher, in his interrogation, never referred to toxic gases and in particular not to "Cyklon A" and "Cyklon B."<sup>189</sup>

Nyiszli also gave an excerpt from the alleged interrogation of a certain Dr. Stössel, but no such person participated in the I.G. Farben Trial.

Another element of pure imagination is Minskoff's supposed quotation of a statement by Höss, for which Nyiszli gave as reference:

*"Transcript p. 7821 and Transcript p. 7822, authenticated affidavits"*

As mentioned earlier, the text of the two quoted excerpts belongs to the affidavit (*Eidestattliche Erklärung*) of the former Auschwitz commandant of April 8, 1945, which was recorded as Document PS-3868 and read into the IMT's record during the session of April 15, 1946.<sup>190</sup> The two page numbers mentioned by Nyiszli refer to the official transcript of the IMT's hearings as summarized in the subsequently published volumes. Nyiszli puts in Minskoff's mouth the words "the deposition *made before us* by *Hauptsturmführer* Höss," as if the former Auschwitz commandant had testified during the I.G. Farben Trial. Document PS-3868 is contained in Book 82 of the prosecution's documents (see Section 4.3.1.). Two more affidavits by Höss, dated May 20, 1946 (Document NI-034, Exhibit 1424) and March 12, 1947 (NI-4434, Exhibit 1293) were also introduced during the I.G. Farben Trial.

Telford Taylor was the only one who, during the I.G. Farben Trial, indirectly mentioned PS-3868 by referring to the content of its Point No. 2 during

<sup>188</sup> Provan 2001, p. 28. See Document 6.

<sup>189</sup> Official Record. United States Military Tribunals Nürnberg. Case No. 6, Tribunal 6. U.S. vs Carl Krauch *et al.* Volume 2, Transcript (English), pp. 549-576.

<sup>190</sup> IMT, Vol. XI, pp. 414-418.

his opening speech at the hearing of August 14, 1947, yet without explicitly mentioning the document.<sup>191</sup>

*"In August 1941, the use of a lethal gas known as Zyklon B was tried experimentally on a group of Russian officers at Auschwitz; the method proved highly successful and Hoess proceeded to exploit it. This decision made Hoess famous as the most monstrous mass murderer in history. Special gas chambers were erected at Birkenau and a series of crematoria were constructed to take care of the corpses. Hoess himself estimated that at least 2,500,000 Auschwitz inmates were executed in the gas chambers and exterminated in the crematoria, and that another half million inmates died from starvation or disease. He added that the total of three million represented about 70 or 80 percent of all the persons who came to Auschwitz, and that the remainder were picked out and used as slave workers for the industries located near the camp"*

Nyiszli's statements are even more bewildering than that, however, for he pretended that Dr. Thilo and Dr. Wirths were present as defendants during the I.G. Farben Trial:

*"On the defendants' bench sat Dr. Thilo, the deputy of Dr. Mengele of the Auschwitz extermination camp."*

*"A third SS physician sits here on the defendants' bench! Dr. Wirths. I can also report on his activity. His complete rank: 'SS Hauptsturmbannführer Dr. Wirths.'"*

SS *Hauptsturmbannführer* Dr. Heinz Thilo, who had been a camp physician (*Lagerarzt*) in the Quarantine Camp (BIa), the Gypsy Camp (BIe) and Birkenau's Hospital Camp (BIIf), died on May 13, 1945, hence it would have been difficult for him to participate during the I.G. Farben Trial, which began over two years later.

SS *Sturmabführer* Dr. Eduard Wirths (for Nyiszli "SS *Hauptsturmbannführer*") had served as Auschwitz garrison physician (SS-*Standortarzt*) from September 1942 to January 1945 and committed suicide while incarcerated by the British in September 1945, so his participation in the trial is equally absurd.

Of course, it is also false that the International Military Tribunal had taken a copy of Nyiszli's book into the record. As a matter of fact, not the slightest trace of Nyiszli's book can be found in the Tribunal's documentation; it was not examined, and its veracity was not verified.

Considering the enormous historical importance that Nyiszli attributed to his own book, it may well be that he took a copy of it along to Nuremberg. But if that is so, one has to wonder not only why it wasn't mentioned during the trial, but also why Nyiszli wasn't allowed to testify as a witness. The reason is that his story was in blatant contradiction to the allegations that had al-

<sup>191</sup> Official Record. United States Military Tribunals Nürnberg. Case No. 6, Tribunal 6. U.S. vs Carl Krauch *et al.* Volume 2, Transcript (English), p. 176.



ready been evaluated by the prosecution, whose highlights regarding gassing allegations were the reports published by the “War Refugee Board” in November 1944 as well as the testimonies of Pery Broad and Charles Sigismund Bendel. I will return to this in Section 4.3.1.

Nyiszli claims to have attended the first hearing of the trial, when Minskoff read a 16-point indictment into the record. Right after that, Minskoff allegedly called Nyiszli into the witness stand.

In fact, however, the indictment, which consisted of only 5 points – 1) war of aggression, 2) crimes against humanity through plunder and spoliation, 3) crimes against humanity through slavery and mass murder, 4) membership in a criminal organization (SS; only for three defendants), 5) common plan or conspiracy against peace (NMT, Vol. 7, pp. 14-60) – was read into the record during the first hearing on August 14, 1947 by General Taylor.<sup>192</sup> As mentioned earlier, Nyiszli arrived at Nuremberg only on October 3, 1947.

Regarding his phantom deposition, Nyiszli provides a detail he had undoubtedly learned indirectly and incorrectly: there was an “electric blue light bulb” in the witness stand which, when turned on and off, gave the signal of the beginning and end of a testimony.

During the interrogation of Charles Sigismund Bendel, to whom Chapter 4.2. is devoted, Minskoff instructed the witness as follows:<sup>193</sup>

*“Before you, there are two signal lights which are connected with the sound system. It is necessary that there be a slight pause between questions and answers, so that the English translation may be made. The yellow light, when it is flashed, is an indication that you are going too rapidly and it is a request that you slow down. The red light is a stop signal, and when it is flashed you will stop completely and not resume your answers until you are notified.”*

The bulbs therefore had different colors and different functions.

The narration contains further errors, which I mention briefly.

Birkenau’s male camp was not called “*Menschenlager*” but “*Männerlager*,” and as far as is known never accommodated 32,000 detainees. Based on extant inmate labor-deployment records (*Arbeitseinsatz*), the maximum strength of 23,286 inmates was reached on October 3, 1944. The number of labor units (*Kommandos*) was not 40, but 77.<sup>194</sup> Furthermore, “S.K.” did not stand for *Strafkommando*, which did not exist, but rather for the *Strafkompanie* (penal company). A “*Zerleg[e]kommando*” did not exist either, but rather a group of inmates working for an armaments plant called “*LW. Zerlegebetriebe – Ost*.”

The pertinent records reveal that from September 10, 1942 to February 23, 1943, 11,246 surgical interventions of various types were performed in the

<sup>192</sup> *Ibid.*, Vol. 1.

<sup>193</sup> *Ibid.*, Vol. 26, p. 9586.

<sup>194</sup> APMO, D-AII/3a, pp. 91-93.

hospitals of the Auschwitz camp complex (Mattogno 2016c, p. 52). Nyiszli's claim that detainees, especially those who had suffered amputations, were killed shortly afterwards since they were "useless eaters," and for this reason they had to die in the Third Reich, is a simple fairy tale like all the others. In the various reports on the number of inmates and their labor deployment at the Auschwitz-Birkenau Camp, the heading "inmates unfit for work and deployment" (*Nicht arbeits- und nichteinsatzfähige Häftlinge*) occurred invariably, which included, among others, the entry "Invalids" (*Invaliden*). This entry appears in about seventy reports from January 15, 1944 to January 16, 1945. From the end of July to September 7, there were between 132 and 148 invalids in the male camp alone; on January 16, 1945, there were 400 of them (*ibid.*, pp. 76f.).

Apparently none of the orthodox Holocaust historians ever bothered examining Nyiszli's "testimony" published in the newspaper *Világ*, and none of them therefore considered it important to check whether he had really testified during the I.G. Farben Trial.

## 2.3. The Correspondence between Paul Rassinier and Miklós Nyiszli

### 2.3.1. The Correspondence between Paul Rassinier and Albert Paraz

Albert Paraz (1899-1957), a French novelist and newspaper journalist, wrote the foreword to the first, 1950 edition of Paul Rassinier's book *Le Mensonge d'Ulysse* (*The Lie of Ulysses*). Paraz maintained a friendly relationship with the founder of historic revisionism until his own death. In the correspondence between these two individuals, some letters deal specifically with Nyiszli. It was Paraz who reported to Rassinier the references of the French press to the Hungarian physician.

The following letters<sup>195</sup> show that Paraz had a critical sense that was somewhat unusual for the era. It should be noted, however, that the available historical knowledge was very limited at that time, which has an impact on the object of Paraz's and Rassinier's criticisms as well as on the quality of their criticisms. The same is of course also true for Gerald Reitlinger, the most prominent orthodox holocaust historian of the time, as a demonstrate in Chapter 5.1.

The importance of this correspondence lies above all in the fact that it shows how Rassinier's interest in Nyiszli was born, and it exhibits the facts of his letter exchange with him, which I will deal with in the next section.

#### Paraz to Rassinier, March 30, 1951

*"My dear Rassinier,*

*I would like you to read in 'France Soir' of March 28, on page 2, 'New in medicine – The most terrible document of the half century' – 'A Hungarian medical specialist miraculously surviving Auschwitz tells how the Nazis killed 6 million innocents' – of Médecus.*

*This document, it seems, has 'dispelled from now on all doubts.' So there were still any?*

*He claims to have seen 3,000 people come into a room that 10 minutes later had to be completely stripped. – To be able to undress you must be at least<sup>[196]</sup> 4 per square meter, this room therefore measured 750 square meters, i.e. 20 m x 37 m.<sup>[197]</sup> – Immediately behind it there was another one in which the naked*

<sup>195</sup> The letters' text has been taken from: Archives Paul Rassinier 2016, pp. 346-351, 357, 369, 376, 395. Documentation on Nyiszli is in these Archives Paul Rassinier, archived at *Bibliothèque de documentation internationale contemporaine* at Nanterre.

<sup>196</sup> The text has "au moins" (at least), but from the context it should say "at most."

<sup>197</sup> These figures only serve to exemplify the size of the room. The alleged "undressing room" of the Birkenau Crematoria II and III was 49.49 m long and 7.93 m wide; its surface area was therefore 392.5 m<sup>2</sup>. See Chapter 3.3.

*people who were killed in 5 minutes were admitted, but it was necessary to start the ventilation apparatus 20 minutes later, and several hours later the people entering the gas chamber to see the horrible spectacle, they are forced to wear gas masks. All this seems to me really a very suspicious testimony especially for Auschwitz, where the witnesses say that there was no gas chamber, it was in Birkenau.*

*You should perhaps write them, I cannot. You know that I am in conflict with them for the Carmen affair, and I am not a specialist in the camps, but it seems quite certain that this story is almost the story of a provocateur who persuades the Germans that everything that has been said about the camps is a lie."*

#### Rassinier to Paraz, March 31, 1951

*"[...] Seen in France-Soir, the history of the gas chambers. Most likely, this guy did not see anything. He is in contradiction to the other deportees who say that the gas chambers were based on the model of the shower rooms. And then, at the rate of 3,000 people every 'some hours,' it must have taken some time to asphyxiate 6 million people: this makes a year at least, without stopping, night and day. I wait until I have read 'Les Temps Modernes,' which published the original, to make up my mind.*

*We can already say:*

*1 °) – that the description of the gas chamber as the one he claims to have seen is more in keeping with the reality than those given by other witnesses: he complies at least with what are the disinfection chambers in the laundries;*

*2 °) – that there is at least one naivety: the aforesaid doctor claims that he would have been killed if it had been known that they were killing with injections to the heart; yet one could not possibly think that he was unaware that they were killing with gas, because he says he was sent to count the corpses...*

*3 °) – the other witnesses – except Kogon, who found only one witness and moreover behind the iron curtain – claim that all the deportees who were involved in the asphyxiation operations were eliminated by the SS;*

*4 °) – this guy – and he himself says so – belonged to the camp services, and this alone makes him suspicious. [...]"*

#### Paraz to Rassinier, April 11, 1951

*"[...] Regarding the 'France Soir' affair, it is quite clear that if you calculate just a little, you realize that it is all the more impossible that no deportee has ever seen these chambers that had to measure at least 60 m by 30 m, and if it was necessary to have all these corpses removed by people wearing a mask, we need to reckon with at least two good teams of some ten musclemen, how come these guys would not have spoken about it? But the legend is well rooted, and in the correspondence of the days that followed it in F[rance]S[oir]<sup>198</sup> there are letters from readers that find this perfectly logical.*

<sup>198</sup> That is, in the subsequent issues of the newspaper.

*In my booklet I also talk about the legend of the devil and the subsequent devils, Franco, Hitler, Mikado, Joseph [...].”*

#### Rassinier to Paraz, April 12, 1951

*“There is nothing serious anymore. The cook of Les Temps Modernes has not even noticed that it would have taken the world, and lots of space, to construct halls 200 meters in length, 8 of them, grouped in twos. He did not even see the contradiction between 6,000,000 corpses during 5 years and 20,000 per day [...] we live among madmen.”*

*“I sent these arguments to Les Temps Modernes. In my usual style and not on the fly as for you. Of course, they will not take them into account.”*

#### Paraz to Rassinier, April 14, 1951

*“[...] Very good, your criticism of Nyiszli, but couldn't you, in addition, be amazed by this witness who comes 6 years later, who did not say anything at Nuremberg. And to insinuate, to remain in the dialectic line dear to the 'Temps Modernes,' that a Hitlerian provocateur would not act any different in order to trouble honest minds.”*

#### Rassinier to Paraz, October 4, 1951

*“[...] I had sent a clarification to Les Temps Modernes about the Miklos Nyiszli affair. I received a letter from the latter which lowers the six million gassing victims of Paris-Presse and the 40 million of Les Temps Modernes according to Kremer to ... 2,500,000 as having indiscriminately perished of gas, hunger, cold and ill-treatment. As you can see, there is progress. Since Les Temps Modernes asked me for my opinion on this response from their (Hungarian) coworker, I have proposed to them a general clarification that takes into account:*

- the first article published by them and echoed in an amplified manner by the entire press;*
- the new data from Miklos's letter.*

*It's been 15 days: no answer. I suppose they are embarrassed because:*

- 1. Miklos proves me right along the entire line, except for the gas problem, to which he clings tenaciously.*
- 2. Because he assures that his figures:*
  - a) have been inflated in the translation;*
  - b) that he has seen the chambers and may have been mistaken about what he says about them;*
  - c) he does not state categorically that he has seen [them] in action ([he] limits himself to generalities). There you have it!”*

#### Rassinier to Paraz, August 13, 1952

*“[...] No, I do not know Mr. Aroneau's book. I knew that of Dr. Nyiszli Miklos brought to the public's attention by Sartre. Then I sent a response to Les Temps Modernes. Not published, of course, but the Nyiszli in question has sent*

*me a personal letter in which he quibbles enough to fail to conceal the rupture.<sup>[199]</sup> He pays me tribute, by the way (sic!).”*

#### Rassinier to Paraz, April 17, 1953

*“[...] Regarding the 6 million deaths of Auschwitz, this figure was launched by Paris-Presse when the book by Nyiszli Miklos appeared, about which we have corresponded. Paris-Presse had translated 9 million. For this camp, Nuremberg set the total figure at 3 million (approximate to the 100,000). I believe the exact figure given is 2,950,000 (I should look it up in my documents). Now, I wrote to Les Temps Modernes, who had published an excerpt from Miklos's book. Merleau-Ponty replied that 'I was perhaps right, but objectively, when discussing the figures, I minimize the damage of fascism and prove our common adversaries to be right.' Miklos himself wrote to me: 'At the Nuremberg Trial, Hauptsturmführer Hoess declared (confession registered S. 7821) 'that during this period, 2,500,000 people were annihilated in the gas chambers (of Auschwitz-Birkenau) and that another 500,000 died from hunger, of ill-treatment' and exhausting work. So, the figures I gave are completely justified' (Reply transcribed word by word).*

*From which we must conclude that, when the author of a book says 2,500,000, Paris-Presse translates it as 9 million, and Merle as 6 million... Already this number shuffling undermines their sincerity, you see!*

*In fact, if I believe that about 3 million deportees died in Auschwitz, I do not believe that 2,500,000 died in gas chambers. It would take pages to prove it mathematically. The same must happen for Auschwitz as is happening for Struthof, where 87 people were asphyxiated<sup>[200]</sup> while thousands and thousands (tens of thousands) died at the camp.*

*That's all I can tell you about this affair: 9 million who become 6 and then 2 and a half. When looking into it well, we would still get to tell Miklos, the originator of the hoax, that his figure is exaggerated. I did it in a second letter: he did not answer me!!!*

*You can use this information and especially the text of Miklos's letter, which is very characteristic.”*

### 2.3.2. The Correspondence among Paul Rassinier, *Les Temps Modernes* and Miklós Nyiszli

On April 30, 1951, Tibor (Tibère) Kremer, who had translated from the Hungarian the excerpts of Nyiszli's book published by *Les Temps Modernes*, replied to a letter from Rassinier dated April 2, which apparently has not been preserved, in which Kremer informed Rassinier that he would transmit its contents to Nyiszli.

<sup>199</sup> “la coupure”; this reference is unclear.

<sup>200</sup> See in this regard Mattogno 2016e, Chapter 14, “The Gas Chamber at the Natzweiler Camp” (Struthof), pp. 205-223.

On September 14, Kremer wrote to Rassinier:

"Sir,

*by letter dated 2 April, which came to me through the magazine Les Temps Modernes, you conveyed to me certain observations and remarks concerning the book by Dr. Nyiszli.*

*On 30 April, I confirmed to you the receipt of this letter, informing you that I [would] forward a copy to the author.*

*For various reasons, I can only now send you the answer of the latter. I believe, however, that despite the delay, this answer is still relevant and does not ignore any of the points you have raised.*

*As a matter of form, please be so kind as to let me know the reception of this reply from the author, of which I enclose a copy here.*

*I do not know whether you yourself have kept a copy of your letter to remind you of these terms. If you do not have it, I could send you one, because I had it copied in many copies [sic].*

*While waiting to read from you, I beg you, Sir, to accept my best regards."*

Evidently Rassinier had not kept a copy of the letter of April 2, since Kremer sent him a copy attached to the letter of October 24, 1951.

In the Rassinier Archive, Nyiszli's letter in question appears without date in French translation, undoubtedly performed by Kremer. I append the original French text with the permission of the sons of Rassinier (see Document 7), and report here the English translation:

*"People of different orientation read the touching facts related in my book with divers feelings. One with sympathy, another with indifference, and a third with animosity. There are also [some] who read, like Mr. Rassinier, with a benevolent cavil. But there are many who pass over the essentials and consider unimportant details through a magnifying glass or rather an ultra-microscope, and so, without even intending to, flatten and minimize the series of crimes unique in their kind that are related in it. In what follows, I respond briefly to the questions raised by Mr. Rassinier.*

*1. I thank him for acknowledging that my work is the first to give a precise description of the operations of the annihilation factories of Auschwitz and Birkenau, as well as the technique of death effected by gas. This was also recognized not only by the International Tribunal of Nuremberg, but also by 17 organized public debates in the presence of several thousand deportees.<sup>[201]</sup>*

*2. With regard to the figures I have given, I have the honor to inform you that they are exact. This was recognized by one of the main defendants of the Nuremberg trial, the Hauptsturmfuehrer Hoess, who was the commandant of the camp from May 1, 1940 to December 31, 1943, and who, according to his confessions recorded 'transcript S 7821,' declared that during this period 2,500,000 people were annihilated in gas chambers, and another 500,000 died due to hunger, ill-treatment and exhausting labor. It is therefore wrong to say*

<sup>201</sup> There is no record of these alleged 17 public debates.

that the gas chambers resumed [sic] their operation in 1942, and that the Auschwitz-Birkenau Camp had already been evacuated in March 1944.

Finally, we other Hungarian deportees arrived there in May 1944, and by the end of July already 550,000 Hungarian Jews had perished in the gas chambers. It was exactly in 1944 that the annihilation took the most important proportions, because after Stalingrad the Russians pushed back the German armies on a front of thousands of kilometers, and the still unconsidered prospect of a defeat hastened the collection [evacuation] of all the still existing ghettos and hastened the operation of the crematoria. I have written enough in this regard and in a sufficiently explicit manner.

3. Hence, the figures I have given are completely justified, and those of the critic are completely erroneous. We evacuated Auschwitz-Birkenau on January 18, 1945, and the few deportees who survived called this evacuation: the death march; it ended in Mauthausen, as I also indicate in my journal.

4. The number of Crematoria. Whether there were 4 or 5 is a useless quibbling. However, to affirm this, I inform you that there were 4 in Birkenau and one in Auschwitz, 3 kilometers away. Soon I will send you the original and authentic plan of the Birkenau Camp, on which appears every barracks and also every crematorium. You will be able to determine the exactness of the figure of the 4 crematoria.

5. Duration of the cremation. It is totally useless to refer to the specialists of Père Lachaise,<sup>[202]</sup> because the experts of this crematorium are only small craftsmen compared to those who operated the furnaces coming from the firm Topf & Soehne, a company specialized in the construction and installation of crematoria. Moreover, I think I can claim the title of the most qualified expert in this matter. I had the opportunity to directly and closely follow the operation of the crematoria for 8 months. At a moment of sentimental grip, I even asked the following question to Oberscharfueher Mussfeld: When they will have enough of me, and by order of Dr. Mengele he will have to liquidate me with a shot into the nape of the neck, pray he does not do it in the dark corridor of the hall, but at the first furnace. So on that day, my shift mate will not have to drag me with a belt tied to my wrists across the concrete floor, thus ripping the skin off my face and turning me into a disfigured corpse. Instead, they can, according to the expression in use, 'einschieben' [push in<sup>203</sup>] me in the furnace right where I died.

6. So the duration of the cremation is one thing at the Père Lachaise, and another at Birkenau. This can last an hour in the first case, while it lasted no more than twenty minutes in the second. The explanations are as follows: The bodies of Père Lachaise were generally adequately nourished before their death, and their incineration is accompanied by a solemn ceremony. Moreover, the duration of incineration is directly proportional to the intensity of the heat, and inversely to the hygrometric degree [water content] of the object to

<sup>202</sup> The largest cemetery in Paris, with a crematorium since 1888.

<sup>203</sup> A handwritten note by Kremer says: "In German in the text = *informare* [put in oven]."



*be incinerated. The corpses of Birkenau, due to the presence in ghettos, concentration camps, and due to inhuman work, were only skin and bones, walking skeletons, so to speak. The furnaces were heated with coke, and next to each a blower was installed that had the height of one story, driven by a powerful electric motor. The incineration itself was not a ceremony, but an 'Entloesung' [recte: Endlösung], a conveyor-belt annihilation where everything was used that modern technology can provide. The annihilation continued day and night. Very rarely did a crematorium stop for a short period of time when repair or maintenance work was really indispensable.*

*7. The criticism only speaks of the periodic selections involving 300 people but completely leaves aside the destruction of the transport. These transports consisted of about 5 to 6 trains a day, each of 40 to 50 cars, brought in from every corner of Europe, specifically to be destroyed here. Only by way of curiosity do I mention that these trains were very often composed of old and antiquated French cars. These trains carried an average 4,000 deportees each (90 people in a car). Of these 4,000, at best 1,000 were sent to the right, the others directly to a crematorium. Besides, I have also spoken of two pyres that my critic seems to have completely forgotten in his calculation.*

*8. As for the size of the undressing room and the gas chamber, I am willing to admit that I have not measured them. Furthermore, I am neither an engineer nor a technician who could simply establish the size of a place following an estimate. As I said in the very preface of my book, I had not written with a reporter's pen, but with that of a physician. It may also be that in 1946, when I wrote the book, under the avalanche of horrors and under the weight of the most intense impressions, my vision was not as clear as that of someone who comes from the outside with a scrutinizing eye. It could therefore be that the halls were only 100 or 120 meters long. This does not change anything about the facts, and cannot possibly challenge the authenticity of the data. I cannot even get myself to accurately give the size of my own room. Finally, I thank Mr. Rassinier for occupying himself with the data I have provided, and for having found them unique in their essential points. I agree with my critic when he says that many publications contain false data and thus contribute to raise doubts about the authenticity of events. However, I know for sure that anyone can check my writings both in their medical and technical aspects. There can be found only an image of incorruptible fidelity to the events without any exaggeration and without any passion, as I have stated it, by the way, in my statement signed with my own hand. I can be confident, however, that all I have written is only a fragment, a glance thrown into the fleeting flash of lightning. I could write a thousand times if I were not oversaturated by horrors."*

Some comments impose themselves.

In 1951, Nyiszli repeated the lie of his book's recognition as an important historical document by the International Military Tribunal at Nuremberg, which he consistently confused with the I.G. Farben Trial. In the six years

since the publication of his book, he still did not know the rank of Rudolf Höss, whom he continued to qualify as *Hauptsturmführer* (captain), when in fact the former Auschwitz commandant was known to have been an SS *Obersturmbannführer* (lieutenant colonel), and he did not even wonder how a simple captain could have been the commandant of a huge camp such as Auschwitz. Nyiszli knew nothing about Höss's return to Auschwitz in the spring and summer of 1944 as SS *Standortältester* (commander of the garrison) in order to coordinate the arrival and processing of the transports of Hungarian Jews. Indeed, Nyiszli's ignorance went so far as to present Höss as "one of the main defendants of the Nuremberg trial," while it is well known that the former Auschwitz commandant was requested by Kurt Kauffmann, the defense attorney of Ernst Kaltenbrunner – the former head of the RSHA after Reinhard Heydrich's assassination – as a defense *witness*. In that capacity, Höss appeared during the hearing of April 15, 1946. In this context, Nyiszli's insists on referring to Höss's affidavit of April 8, 1945 with the fanciful name "transcript S 7821," that is, "Transkript Seite 7821" instead of its classification number PS-3868.

I will address other revealing aspects of this letter in Part Three.



Part 3:

Critical Analysis

of Miklós Nyiszli's Statements



### 3.1. From Hungary to Camp BIIf at Birkenau

#### Caveat

In order not to extend the text unnecessarily, I use below the following abbreviations for Nyiszli's writings as quoted earlier:

D45: declaration of July 28, 1945

MBV: "Dr. Mengele boncolóorvosa voltam az auschwitz-i krematóriumban"

NI-11710: affidavit of October 8, 1947

TVN: "Tanú voltam Nürnbergben"

PR: letter to Paul Rassinier (1951)

#### 3.1.1. The Journey

Nyiszli was deported from the ghetto of Aknaszlatina to Auschwitz. Aknaszlatina, which is currently named Solotvino, lies near the border between Ukraine and Romania and was, at that time, on Hungarian territory.

The route followed by Nyiszli's train to reach Auschwitz is nothing short of amazing (MBV, Chapter I):

*"The Tatra Mountains are behind us. We race at full speed toward Lublin, then comes Krakau."*

The Tatra Mountains are divided into two mountain ranges. The northern chain (High Tatras) is located on the border between Slovakia and Poland, about 100 km south of Krakow. Aknaszlatina was part of the district of Máramarossziget. From this location, Jewish transports could get to Auschwitz via any of the following three railway lines (Gilbert 1995, Map 255, p. 197):

1. Máramarossziget – Stryj – Lwów – Rzeszów – Tarnów – Auschwitz
2. Máramarossziget – Beregsas – Sanok – Przemyśl – Rzeszów – Tarnów – Auschwitz
3. Máramarossziget – Beregsas – Prešov – Tarnów – Auschwitz

Lwów (Lemberg), Przemyśl, Rzeszów, Tarnów and Kraków were on Railway Line 582, which ran close to the 50th parallel, from east to west (and vice versa).

Having crossed the Tatras, Nyiszli's train crossed the third railway line, in the north-west direction, but, having reached Tarnów, instead of turning west to reach Krakow (about 75 km away), it went to the north-east to Lublin, in order then to return back toward Tarnów (about 450 km)!

### 3.1.2. Nyiszli's Arrival at Birkenau

Nyiszli is not particularly precise about the date of his arrival at Birkenau. He mentions two different dates: May 20 (NI-11710) and May 22, 1944 (D45). The first seems to refer to the departure of the transport, rather than to its arrival at Auschwitz:

*"On May 22, 1944, along with 26 of my colleagues (all medical doctors taken by force), I was sent from the Akenaszlatina ghetto to Auschwitz."*

The second date, however, refers without doubt to his arrival at Auschwitz:

*"On May 19[-20] 1944, I went with a large transport from Hungary to the Auschwitz Concentration Camp. There I was deloused, my belongings were taken away, and I received a new inmate suit. On May 20[-21] 1944, I went to Monowitz, the concentration camp of the IG-Farben factory Auschwitz."*

According to a transport list published by Randolph L. Braham, the only transport from Akenaszlatina to Auschwitz left on May 25, 1944 and contained 3,317 deportees (Braham 1981b, Vol. II, p. 514).

According to the "List of Transports of Jews," Nyiszli's registration number was assigned on May 29th,<sup>204</sup> which is roughly compatible with the transport arriving there on May 25. On average, transports from Hungary to Auschwitz lasted 3 days. It is possible that Nyiszli's train arrived at Auschwitz on the 28th, after which he was disinfested and registered in Camp Sector BIIf, where he arrived either during the night of the May 28 or during the morning of May 29. This means that both dates given by Nyiszli are inaccurate.

Nyiszli claims to have been transferred to Monowitz the day after his arrival, hence either on May 21 or 23, where he claims to have remained for 12 (D45) or 14 days.

In his book, Nyiszli makes no mention of his transfer to this camp. As noted earlier (see Section 2.2.1.), the editor of the 1964 edition noticed this fact and tried to explain it with a statement by Nyiszli's widow that, "by omitting the part about Monowitz, [Nyiszli] aimed at maintaining the uniformity of the book's structure, since he did not want to break the main argument;" the editor opined that this procedure "does not affect the book's credibility at all." That is clearly arguable, because it introduces right from the start an irremediable contradiction.

### 3.1.3. The Monowitz Camp (Buna)

Nyiszli spent 12 or 14 days in Monowitz. As noted earlier, contrary to his statements, he left Hungary on May 25 and was registered at Auschwitz on the

<sup>204</sup> *Liste der Judentransporte*, APMO, microfilm 727/30, p. 16: on May 29, the numbers 7741-9740 were assigned to Hungarian Jews.

29th; if he spent only one day in this camp, he was transferred to Monowitz on May 31. The circumstances he wrote down above all in D45 are reflected, if only as a presumable effect, in the only known Auschwitz document that mentions his name. It is a "transfer notification to B II f" (*Verlegungsmeldung nach B II f*) of the *Häftlingskrankenbau* (inmate infirmary) of Monowitz dated June 27, 1944, which lists three transferred detainees "as physicians on behalf of the first camp physician Concentration Camp Auschwitz III" (*"als Ärzte im Auftrages 1. Lagerarztes KL Au. III"*). The inmates in question, all three Jews, are:<sup>205</sup>

1. Marcus Wind, registration number 167695
2. Jecheskiel Körner, registration number 169840
3. Nikolaus Niszly (sic), registration number A 8450

The document is signed by an SS *Unterscharführer* of the health service (S.D.G., *Sanitätsdienstgrad*), whose name is illegible. Because of its structure and its content, it had to be part, at least originally, of the series of lists concerning the transfer of detainees from Monowitz to Auschwitz and Birkenau which were collected in the series of documents filed at Nuremberg as NI-14997, in which, however, it is not to be found. In this documentation, transfers to Sector BIIf of the Birkenau Camp are also attested. The first extant transfer document of this kind has the date of May 5, 1944, and concerns inmate no. 173050, Wasil Belowus. The header reads "*H-Krankenbau Arbeitslager Monowitz*," the subject is "*Verlegungsmeldung. Nach dem HKB B II f*" (Transfer notification. To Inmate Hospital B II f). The illegible signature is by an SS *Unterscharführer* (NI-14997, p. 568).

Polish historian Antoni Makowski wrote that, from March 5 to May 18, 1944, 82 doctors, dentists, pharmacists and x-ray operators were transferred in 12 groups from the Monowitz inmate hospital to Sector BIIf of the Birkenau Camp, in addition to two other groups who were transferred on January 14 and June 27, 1944. He refers for this to an "Überstellungsliste" (transfer list) stored in the archives of the Auschwitz Museum with the ID number (sygnatura) "D-AuIII-5/3"; he gives four page numbers for these documents, page 580 among them (Makowski 1974, p. 117.). This is precisely the page number that appears in the Nyiszli transfer sheet dated June 27, 1944, which means that the source must be the aforementioned transfer list. It is unknown to me whether it contains other documents related to Nyiszli.

It is a fact, however, that the aforementioned transfer sheet establishes that Nyiszli, together with Dr. Körner, was a member of the *medical staff* of the Monowitz inmate hospital. It follows from this that his story is necessarily false, both regarding the date (if we follow his timeline, he would have been transferred on June 14 at the latest: 14 days after May 31), and regarding the circumstances of the transfer, that is to say, the Auschwitz camp's chief phy-

<sup>205</sup> Document published by F. Herber in: Nyiszli 1992, p. 180; later also by Kubica 1997, p. 385.



sician's drafting of about 50 doctors who were present in Monowitz 12 or 14 days after May 31. Nyiszli also claimed to have been assigned to the cement-bag-carrying Kommando 197, and did not name the inmate infirmary (*Häftlingskrankenbau*) at all.

In Document NI-11710, Nyiszli states that he was transferred to Monowitz with 6,000 inmates (in TVN with 7,000). As newcomers, they were told that they were there in order to "croak in the concrete." This is not reflected in any document and indubitably must therefore be false, because the maximum force reached by this camp – in mid-1944 – was about 11,000 prisoners (Wagner 2000, p. 146), and it is not credible that 6,000 were transferred from Birkenau to Monowitz on one day, *i.e.*, on May 30, 1944.

He states and repeats that there were 200 Kommandos in Monowitz, and that he was employed in Kommando number 197. This isn't true either, because the 11,000 Monowitz detainees mentioned above were divided into 110 "*Häftlingskommandos*" (*ibid.*).

Makowski reports the average occupancy of the Monowitz Camp month by month from November 1942 (2,300 inmates) until December 1944 (10,500 inmates). In June and July, the occupancy was 10,100 inmates, reaching a peak in August with 11,500 inmates (Makowski, p. 134).

In TVN, Nyiszli lets his fantasy run wild by asserting that 40,000 inmates worked at the huge I.G. Farben construction site, and that 100,000 inmates had died in Monowitz from 1942 to June 1944. As for the first point, the camp's maximum occupancy, as just mentioned, was about 11,500 inmates. In D45, Nyiszli contradicts himself by claiming that, on his arrival at the Monowitz camp, there were not 40,000, but "only" some 14,000 inmates.

And what about the 100,000 dead? Makowski summarizes in a table the prisoners who perished in Monowitz from November 1942 to December 1944, divided into two categories: the camp itself and the inmate hospital. Overall, 264 inmates died at the camp (presumably due to accidents at work), while 1,361 passed away in the hospital (*ibid.*, p. 137). In the month of June, during which Nyiszli was in Monowitz until the 27th, there were only 5 deaths at the camp and 26 at the hospital. His tale of exhausted prisoners who died in the camp or during work having been buried in cable ditches is both false and senseless; false because the prisoners who died in Monowitz were regularly registered in the Auschwitz mortuary registry (*Leichenhallenbuch*). The extant documentation goes from October 7, 1941 through August 31 1943, and contains the deceased inmates on a daily basis, giving their registration number and their origin. During August 1943, for instance, 15 prisoners died in Monowitz according to Makowski's aforementioned table: 3 in the camp and 12 in the hospital. For the same month, the mortuary registry lists 17 inmates who died at Monowitz (listed as "Buna"), two on the 9th (nos. 114990 and 117850) and on the 12th (nos. 127047 and 125042), one on the 14th (no. 128072), two on the 16th (nos. 1177786 and 4368-E) and 18th (nos. 126629

and 106760), three on the 21st (nos. 5140-E, 5694-E and 5655-E), one on the 25th (no. 116625), 28th (no. 129108) and 30th (no. 116820), and again two on the 31st (nos. 125465 and 117567).<sup>206</sup> Nyiszli's statement is nonsensical, because a registered prisoner could not disappear from the camp without leaving documents behind (of his death or transfer).

In NI-11710, no doubt in response to a specific question, Nyiszli also wrote about the "gassing" of Monowitz inmates in Birkenau:

*"6) When I was active in the Birkenau crematorium, I convinced myself in three cases that transports numbering some 2-300 detainees from Monowitz went to be gassed, hence inmates who had worked for IG-Farben. Even the SS men talked openly about it.*

*7) The inmate transports from Monowitz sent to Birkenau for extermination were not marked in any special way, because all transports destined for extermination left their camp with utterly ragged clothes and shoes."*

According to Danuta Czech's *Kalendarium*, however, the only "selection" that took place at the Monowitz Camp leading to the selectees being "gassed" at Birkenau is said to have occurred on October 17, 1944 and involved 2,000 inmates.<sup>207</sup> In his book, Nyiszli writes about the alleged events of October 1944 in Chapters XXX ("yesterday, October 6, 1944") and XXXII ("It is November 1, 1944"), but here he never even hints at this alleged gassing event.

In TVN, Nyiszli talks about the punishment with 25 blows, among other things, "also for this cement paper bag that we put on our shoulders," but this was not punishable at all, indeed it was even recommended by the leaders of the SS. On October 26, 1943, Oswald Pohl, the head of the WVHA, issued a directive on improving the living conditions of concentration camp inmates. Regarding the clothing, he ordered (Mattogno 2016c, pp. 17, 299):

*"Newspaper is an effective protection against the cold (because it keeps in the heat). Therefore, if necessary, have several layers of newspaper worn on the chest, belly and kidney area. You must give attention to procuring a sufficient amount of paper.*

*If need be, inmates may make their own paper waistcoats. Shredded paper in socks is also a good protection against the cold. If no hat is available, allow close-fitting paper caps to be made as well. In this case, hair may be kept long as well to retain heat."*

In this context Nyiszli added in TVN:

*"An SS doctor was present at the punishment, but he often had to establish that death had occurred. Death was caused by the contusion either of the kidneys or of the lumbar vertebrae. The fact is that the number of blows was absolutely not in compliance with the article of the concentration camp regula-*

<sup>206</sup> AGK, OB-385, pp. 220-228.

<sup>207</sup> Czech 1989, p. 908. The data is taken from a list of "gassings" compiled by Leib Langfus, whose mendacious nature I have exposed in Mattogno 2016c, Subsection 5.4.4.7., pp. 135f.

*tions about corporal punishment, because one can count them up to 40; the number of lashes was never less when I was an eyewitness of the event."*

Punishments with "a single-tail leather whip" or *Zuchtrute* (stick) were governed by the concentration camp regulation and documented on a special official form. An inmate could receive between 5 and 25 lashes only on the unexposed (clothed) buttocks or thighs, and the inmate to be punished could not be tied down. The camp physician (*Lagerarzt*) had to first draw up a medical report on the prisoner's condition and send it to the WVHA, where a superior then decided whether or not to authorize the administration of the whip or stick. The form was signed by the detainee who carried out the punishment, and by the witnessing SS men, who were the camp commander, the head of the protective custody camp, and the camp physician. Precisely because this kind of punishment was so heavily regulated, and therefore eliminated from individual arbitrariness, it is inconceivable that up to 40 lashes or blows were ever administered, unless as a violation of the camp regulations by the camp commander himself!<sup>208</sup>

Precisely at the I.G. Farben Trial, the defendant Walter Dürrfeld presented in his defense an affidavit by a former Jewish Auschwitz inmate, Gerszon Waksman. He had been interned at Birkenau in August 1943 (registration number 150150), and in March 1944 he was transferred to the Monowitz Camp. Since he provided an image of this camp that is antithetical to that drawn by Nyiszli, a juxtaposition is pertinent. I translate here the essential passages of his testimony:<sup>209</sup>

*"The inmates of this camp were employed at I.G. Farbenindustrie Inc., Auschwitz. I was doing better there than at the Birkenau Camp. Order and cleanliness at the Buna camp were a fundamental principle. For us detainees it was of advantage to come into contact with free civilians, because we had better treatment due to this and we were not exposed to prison psychosis as in other camps. The camp itself was the best concentration camp I have ever known. Each inmate had his own bed. That 2 or 3 prisoners together always had to share one bed is absolutely erroneous. Each inmate had two blankets; later there were even padded blankets. The stuffing of the straw bags could always be replaced when necessary. We had to keep our beds always in impeccable condition, and as a side job I was a 'bed-builder.' We had to wash ourselves every day and take a bath every week. Cleanliness was valued so much that comrades who had rashes, such as beard lichen, were not allowed to go to work. [...]*

*At normal performance, we received so-called premium vouchers of an average value of 1.-- to 2.-- RM, which were very welcome by us, because in the*

<sup>208</sup> Mattogno 2016c, pp. 28-20 and Documents 8f., pp. 307-310.

<sup>209</sup> Dürrfeld Documents, Doc. No. 1075, Exh. 210, *Eidesstattliche Erklärung* by Gerszon Waksman, January 16, 1948. National Archives Microfilm Publications, Microfilm Publication M892, Roll 66.

camp canteen we received cigarettes, drinks, potato salad, herrings, etc. for them.<sup>[210]</sup>

The working time was 9 hours, with a lunch break of 1 hour. In winter the working time was much shorter, because at sunset we had to be at the camp. It was similar in case of fog or foggy weather.

At the construction site, I saw young prisoners between 14 and 16 years old. They were apprentices and were trained as masons, carpenters, electricians, etc. In addition, the youngest of them, the so-called 'Piepels,' were with the Kapos and had to organize for them [meaning that they served as their valets]. I have never seen an employee of the IG or another company mistreating an inmate. On the contrary, I was with these people on terms more or less like workmates. In our factory, they did not beat us otherwise either. Once, however, I was beaten by a prisoner foreman – because I had been caught smoking at the construction site. The Kapos as well as the inmate foremen punished inmates in this way when they had done some mischief or shirked from work. But it was not the fault of the IG, which was a staunch opponent of mistreatments and therefore had forbidden it to its people. [...<sup>211</sup>]

The IG's foremen never denied help to comrades who got injured or had an accident. In the case of minor things, such as abrasions or the like, they were bandaged and not used in jobs that could have aggravated their wounds. In the event of an accident, the detainee in question was taken to the plant's health center and treated there. If it was serious, the Kapo communicated the incident to the SS labor-deployment leader, which provided transportation to the camp – if necessary on a stretcher or with a vehicle. At the infirmary he was given medical care and given the necessary medicines. If one of us got sick, he communicated it to the block eldest, who then had to see to it that the patient got to the infirmary. As far as I know, this did not cause difficulties, and the patient could recover there with adequate treatment. At Buna, they were generally very generous with granting sick leaves and convalescence time. In my workshop, a weak inmate once returned from the infirmary; during work he could still take it easy until he had regained his strength. The foremen generously disregarded this, asking only that appearances be saved. [...]

<sup>210</sup> Productivity bonuses (*Leistungsprämien*) were a standard practice at Auschwitz. On the basis of extant documents from July 16, 1943 to November 30, 1944, 214,119 Reichsmarks were awarded in bonuses. See Mattogno 2016c, pp. 30ff.

<sup>211</sup> Mistreating detainees was forbidden even to SS men. In case a prisoner violated any regulation, SS guards were required to file a disciplinary report (*Meldung*) that was forwarded to the camp headquarters, which decided on the punishment to be imposed, if any. See Mattogno 2016c, pp. 22-28; Document 7 (p. 306) is a *Meldung* of the Jewish inmate of the Monowitz Camp David Jsef of January 22, 1944, who had left his workplace without permission. The prohibition of mistreatment also applied to so-called prominent inmates; if they mistreated a prisoner, they, too, were punished. See *ibid.*, Documents 5 and 6 on p. 305. Document 5 is a request by the SS garrison physician Wirths to investigate and, if applicable, punish the culprit of the "mistreatment of inmate 115385 Richard Jedrzkiewicz," who had been beaten by a block eldest at the Monowitz Camp (July 7, 1943).

*The inmates' food, breakfast and a thick evening stew, was administered by the SS. At breakfast there was coffee, 300 grams of bread with margarine, lunch meat or jam as toppings. Once a week, as a supplement, there was 'Buna bread' (600 grams) and a double piece of margarine. For lunch, the IG also provided a soup, made mostly of potatoes and vegetables. On Sundays this soup was even better. The food corresponded roughly to that of the current average German consumer. When an [inmate] also received second servings – and this often happened – then he had even more [food] than this. Thanks to this extra food we were also able to cope with labor demands.<sup>[212]</sup> What was most depressing was not even the work, but only the many roll calls of the SS in the camp.*

*In winter, the IG helped us with a lot of extra clothing. Those working outdoors in general had in addition to their coat and gloves also a padded sleeveless 'Auschwitz waistcoat.' I wore wooden clogs, stockings and foot rags, because the wooden clogs were the warmest. Coke stoves were burning scattered throughout the factory, at which we could warm ourselves. This was very pleasant during the winter cold.*

*Unlike the Main Camp, there was no crematorium at Monowitz, and neither were there any gassings. We were therefore all glad to be at the Buna Camp, because we were treated there much better by the IG. I do not know whether the plant management knew of the gassings at Birkenau; if so, they could not have done anything about it either without being themselves locked up in a concentration camp."*

As for the alleged gassings, the witness evidently picked up the rumors that circulated in the camp and were bandied about in the post-war court rooms.

Similar to this testimony is the deposition made by Jakob Lewinski in 1958 during the investigations leading up to the Frankfurt Auschwitz trial of the 1960s.<sup>213</sup> According to his testimony, Lewinski, who was classified as a half-Jew by the Nuremberg Law because he was the son of a Jewish father, was sent to Auschwitz because he had refused to divorce his wife, who was classified as a full-Jew. His wife was apparently deported at the same time he was, but not with him, and he never heard from her again. She was later declared legally dead, but no one has ever found out what her fate had been.

Lewinski claims that he heard only after the war that the sorting on arrival at Auschwitz supposedly meant the difference between life and death in the gas chamber. While in Auschwitz, he was evidently unaware of it.

<sup>212</sup> Food supplements were also standard practice. For example, the request for "Additional food for the concrete squad of the Central Construction Office's unit" (*Zusatz-Verpflegung für das Bauleitungs-Kommando Beton-Kolonne*) was written by the head of the Central Construction Office on November 10, 1943, because the aforementioned prisoner squad had to perform "urgent and hard work" (*dringende und schwere Arbeiten*). RGVA, 502-1-256, p. 129.

<sup>213</sup> Staatsanwaltschaft beim LG Frankfurt (Main), Strafsache beim Schwurgericht Frankfurt (Main) gegen Baer und Andere wegen Mordes, ref. 4 Js 444/59, Vol. 2, pp. 305-310 cf. Rudolf 2003, pp. 356f. Subsequent page numbers from there.

Having been interned at the Monowitz Camp, he described his living conditions there as “humane” (p. 305):

*“Inside the camp there was a bordello with 10 women, but they were only available to Reich German prisoners. The prisoners received up to 150 DM [should be RM-Reichsmarks] in scrips per week for their labor, with which they could purchase mustard, sauerkraut, red beets and so on [...]*

*The camp had generally good sanitary facilities, bathing and showering rooms and an excellent health-care facility. [...] For provisions we received 1/3 [loaf of] commissary bread three times a week, 1/2 commissary bread 4 times, and additionally a bowl of coffee in the morning, 20 grams of margarine 5 times, one time a small amount of jam and one time a piece of cheese. In the afternoon at work there was the so-called Buna soup, nutritionally worthless. In the evening there was a thicker soup, partly beets, partly cabbage etc.” (p. 305R)*

Lewinski stated that because of the 12-hour workday with insufficient nourishment there was initially a high death rate, but conditions improved and the death rate was substantially reduced.

*“Our camp commander was SS Obersturmführer Schöttl, who was sentenced to death at Dachau, supposedly for crimes he had committed before he came to our camp, because as camp commander of our camp he would never have deserved the death penalty.” (p. 306)*

### 3.1.4. The Hospital Camp BIIf at Birkenau

I mentioned earlier that Nyiszli's transfer to Monowitz and his presence there create an irremediable contradiction. In fact, in Chapter I of his book, Nyiszli claims that Dr. Mengele ordered the physicians on his transport to step forward already during the initial “selection” upon arrival at Auschwitz:

*“Dr. Mengele orders the doctors to form a group to one side. When this is done, he approaches the group, about fifty doctors in all, and calls on any doctors who did their studies at a German university, are thoroughly versed in pathological anatomy, and who also practice forensic medicine to step forward.”*

Nyiszli responded to the invitation. Mengele was satisfied with his answers, and during the night he drove him to Camp Sector BIIf, where he was disinfested, tattooed with the number A-8450, and given civilian clothes. That would have happened on the same day as his arrival, hence May 20 or 22 according to Nyiszli, but, as I explained earlier, this number was actually assigned on May 29.

Strangely, this story, without any mention of the transfer to Monowitz, also appears in the “Declaration” that Nyiszli claims to have sent “to the International Tribunal at Nuremberg,” where, he claims, he was essentially interrogated precisely about this labor camp (see here starting on page 141). In fact,

of the ten questions that Minskoff allegedly put to him in writing, eight concerned the I.G. Farbenindustrie (see here on page 144).

In D45, Nyiszli wrote that after 12 days in Monowitz, the chief medical officer of the camp, who was an SS *Hauptsturmführer*, summoned all the inmate physicians, who were a group of fifty, just as in his book. He volunteered with his colleague “who worked in a Medical School in Strasbourg.” From the transfer order of June 27, 1944 mentioned earlier, we know that Nyiszli went to Sector BIIIf with two other doctors, Jecheskiel Körner (No. 169840), and Marcus Wind, (No. 167695), but in TVN he speaks only of the first in these terms:

*“Dr. Körner, József, physician, Nizza (Auschwitz, Crematorium II, dissection room).”*

This must therefore have been Nyiszli's colleague, but the only doctor from Strasbourg he mentioned was Robert Lévy (TVN; see Section 4.1.2.):

*“Dr. Lewy, Robert, university professor, Strasbourg, (Camp Sector F)”*

In Monowitz, the two inmate physicians underwent a thorough examination, evidently by the local medical officer, and were accepted. According to his book, only Nyiszli was subjected to an examination, but right at his arrival in Birkenau and by Dr. Mengele himself. According to D45, Nyiszli and Dr. Körner were loaded onto a Red Cross ambulance and taken directly to Crematorium II. In his book, however, Nyiszli says that, before going to the crematorium, he spent at least five days at Camp Sector BIIIf, as can be seen from the chronology of his story: on his first day, he received two corpses to dissect; on the next day, he received three more, and remained inactive for the next three days. On the fifth day, he was picked up by Dr. Mengele and transferred to the crematorium (MBV, Chapters Vf.).

In D45, Nyiszli and his colleague were given a clean room as their lodging, after which Dr. Mengele subjected them to another one-hour examination. In his book, this exam disappears, just like the colleague: Nyiszli was completely alone in his room. Dr. Körner appears only in Chapter XVIII, when Dr. Mengele sent three assistants to Nyiszli into his room:

*“The first whose hand I shake is Dr. Görög Dénes, a private university lecturer and pathologist at the State Public Hospital of Szombathely. He is a short, thin man of about forty-five years of age who wears thick glasses. He makes a good impression on me. I have the feeling that we will be good friends. The second is a short, stocky individual of about fifty years of age, with a hunched back and a very ugly face. He is Fischer Adolf, autopsy assistant for twenty years at the Prague Institute of Anatomy. As a Czech Jew, he has been an inmate of the K.Z. for five years already. The third is Dr. Körner József, a physician from Nice, inmate of the K.Z. for four years already. A taciturn but qualified young man, he is only thirty-two years old.”*

Nyiszli met Dr. Körner on this occasion for the first time. But when did the meeting take place? In Nyiszli's intricate narrative, there are two statements allowing us to pinpoint it: both before and after that first meeting, he mentions that he had been in Birkenau for three months:

*"It is already three months since we parted from each other on the ramp!"*  
(Chapter XVI)

*"I am an expert and I have been working here for three months now!"* (Chapter XIX)

Hence, the meeting took place at the end of August or in early September 1944. This would mean that Dr. Körner was transferred from Monowitz to Crematorium II of Birkenau together with Nyiszli at the end of June 1944, but that Nyiszli met him for the first time in this crematorium only two months later!

In Chapter II of his book, Nyiszli describes the registration procedure in Camp Sector BIIf:

*"I proceed to the third barracks, alone with my escort. There the sign reads 'Bath and Disinfection'."*

Here he was washed, shaved, disinfested and tattooed. In Chapter III he specifies:

*"From the bath building, accompanied by a new escort who carries my card in his hand, I pass into the barracks which stands opposite and which bears the number 12 on its front. It's a building around 100 meters long. The interior forms a large hall. Along both sides of the hall run lines of three-tier bunks made of rough-sawn beams and planks, divided into compartments crowded with patients. I am in Camp 'F,' Hospital Barracks 12."*

The most detailed study of Birkenau's hospital camp in Sector BIIf is probably D. Czech's 1974 long article "The Role of the Hospital Camp for Males at Concentration Camp Auschwitz II." She gives a detailed description of the barracks (or blocks) making up this sector, and also reproduces a blueprint. From this blueprint we discern that Barracks 3 was not in front of Barracks 12, but was located between Barracks 1 (to the north) and 5 (to the south); in front of it, there was Barracks 2 (to the east); on the other side, at a greater distance, was Barracks 14 (see Document 8).

The length of the barracks – about 100 meters – is another mistake. From aerial photographs of 1944 we can glean that Barracks 12 of Camp Sector BIIf was slightly longer and wider than a horse-stable barracks (*Pferdestallbaracke*), the most common type of barracks in Birkenau, which measured 40.76 m × 9.56 m. It was therefore probably a *Luftwaffenbaracke* (air-force barracks) measuring 41.39 m × 12.64 m.



## 3.2. The Birkenau Crematoria

### 3.2.1 Terminology

By his own account, Nyiszli spent months in the Birkenau crematoria, and in Chapter VI of the book, he even boasts that he spoke better German than certain SS guards he met:

*“It impresses them that I speak their language more perfectly than they do.”*

As such, one might expect him to demonstrate an accurate knowledge of the relevant German terminology for the crematoria.

Nyiszli had indeed studied medicine in Germany, where he lived for ten years during the 1920s. His various statements are replete with German terms, starting with the names for SS ranks. The terms which recur most often undoubtedly are *Sonderkommando* and *Kommando*, written with the Hungarian long-vowel accent over the final -ó. Apart from certain geographical names, names of newspapers, institutions and the like, and apart from some rather improbable dialogues which he recounts with evident satisfaction (but which he would have had to have recorded or stenographed to report accurately), the terms relative to concentration camp life which appear in the book are as follows: *Arzt* (doctor), *Appel* (recte *Appell*, roll-call), *Appelplatz* (*Appellplatz*, roll-call square), *zur Sektion* (for autopsy), *S.D.G. Sanitätsdienstgefreiter* (private in the medical service; the meaning was actually *Sanitätsdienstgrad*, leaving the military rank (*Dienstgrad*) open), *Kriminaldoktor* (“criminal doctor”<sup>214</sup>), *Passierschein* (pass, permit), *Fkl* (*Frauenkonzentrationslager*, women’s concentration camp), *I. [erster] Lagerarzt* (chief camp physician), *Lagerpolizei* (camp police), *Zählappel* (*Zählappell*, numbering roll call), “*Antreten, alle antreten*” (“Fall in, everyone fall in”; order to line up for roll call), *Arbeitslager* (labor camp) and *K.Z.* (*Konzentrationslager*, concentration camp).

In TVN, he uses still other terms: *Obergenickschütze* (literally chief neck-shooter), *Stammlager* (Main Camp, i.e., Auschwitz I), *Schonung* (convalescence), *Schonungslager* (convalescence camp), *H.K.B.*, *Häftlingskrankenbau* (inmate infirmary), *Giftgas* (poison gas), *Menschenlager* (recte *Männerlager*, men’s camp), *Strafkommando* (penal unit), *Zerleg[e]kommando* (disassembling unit).

When it comes to the crematoria, however, the only German term Nyiszli used (in his letter to Paul Rassinier) is the verb *einschieben* (insert, push in), which is also the primary definition given in any dictionary for the Italian verb *informare* (lit. “put into a furnace/oven”). This usage, apart from not being

<sup>214</sup> See Note 53 on p. 46.

commonly attested to in other sources,<sup>215</sup> was not the one usually used in formal writings, for contemporary sources make clear that the normally preferred term for loading corpses was *einführen/Einführung* (introduce/introduction). Thus, for example, the device for introducing corpses into a cremation muffle<sup>216</sup> was called a *Leicheneinführungs-Vorrichtung* (corpse-introduction device) and later *Einführtrage* (introduction stretcher); the door to the muffle itself was called an *Einführungstür* (introduction door); even the metal slide rollers installed in front of the door to the muffle were known as *Einführrolle*.<sup>217</sup>

With the sole exception of *krematórium*, a word which moreover was known to all prisoners in Birkenau, Nyiszli never utilizes any of the numerous German terms in common use for describing cremation or the cremation furnaces and their elements, such as: *Einäscherung* (incineration, cremation), *Verbrennung* (burning, combustion), *Ofen* (furnace), *Einäscherungs-ofen* (cremation furnace), *Dreimuffel-Einäscherungs-ofen* (triple-muffle cremation furnace), *Muffel* (muffle, cremation chamber), *Einführungstür* (introduction door), *Schamotterost* (chamotte grill, i.e., the refractory-brick grill which formed the floor of the muffle), *Aschenraum* ("ash" [i.e., bone fragment] collector beneath the refractory-brick grill), *Generator* (gasifier), *Feuerung* (hearth), *Rauchkanal* (smoke channel, flue), *Druckluftanlage* (forced-air system), *Druckluftgebläse* (forced-air blower), *Trage* or *Einführtrage* (corpse-introduction stretcher), *Beheizung* (heating of the furnaces), *Verbrennungsraum* (cremation room), *Ofenraum* (furnace room), *Schornstein* (chimney), *Schamotte* (chamotte, refractory clay), *Koks* (coke) and *koksbeheizt* (coke-fired), *Heizer* (stoker) and *Rauch* (smoke).

Instead, Nyiszli exclusively uses Hungarian terms in this context, some of them rather odd. Here are just the principal ones used:

- *kemence*: "furnace" (*Ofen*)
- *égetőkemencek*: "cremation furnaces" (*Einäscherungsöfen*)
- *kazán*: literally "boiler" but used by Nyiszli in the generic sense of "furnace," as is clear from the two terms which follow
- *kazánterem*: literally "boiler room" but here "furnace room" or "oven room" (*Ofenraum*)
- *égetőkazán*: literally "cremation boiler" but here "cremation furnace"
- *tűszekrény*: "fire cabinet" or "fire chamber" (from the context – the substitution of the refractory linings, in Chapter XXXI – this may refer to either

<sup>215</sup> Known exceptions are, for instance, Fritz Sander's letter of Sept. 4, 1942 (Doc. 242 in Mattogno/Deana 2015, Part 2, p. 402): "[...] *die Leichen müssen von vorn durch diese Tür in die Muffel eingeschoben werden.*" And the *Leicheneinführungs-Vorrichtung* itself contained a *Verschiebewagen* (Doc 215, *ibid.*, p. 367)!

<sup>216</sup> The term *muffle* (or sometimes *retort*) is used to denote the individual furnace compartment in which a corpse is cremated, in distinction to the cremation furnace as a whole.

<sup>217</sup> Mattogno/Deana 2015, Part 1, pp. 234 ("Einführrollen"), 272.

the “cremation chamber” (muffle) itself, or to the coke hearth (*Feuer[ungs]raum*)

- *hamvasztószekrények*: “cremation cabinets” (from the context – the description of the *Sonderkommando*’s work loading corpses in the furnaces in Chapter X – here clearly muffles)
- *kémény*: chimney (*Schornstein*, *Kamin*)
- *samottbélés*: refractory lining (*Schamottefutter*)
- *tüzelők*: stokers (*Heizer*); the “chief stoker,” however, curiously is the *generálfűtő*

A document titled “Operating Instructions for the Topf Coke-fired Triple-muffle Cremation Furnace” (*Betriebsvorschrift des koksbeheizten Topf-Dreif-muffel-Einäscherungssofen*) has survived the war, and has even been reproduced in some translated editions of Nyiszli’s book (for instance in Nyiszli 1992, p. 33, and in Nyiszli 1961a). It is reproduced as Document 9 in the Appendix at the end of this study.

On September 24, 1941, the Topf firm wrote to the Auschwitz Construction Office with regard to similar operating instructions for the Topf double-muffle furnace, attached to the letter in three copies, and regarding the Topf forced-draft device, that a copy of these instructions had to be posted in the furnace hall protected by a glass pane to ensure that the equipment be used correctly.<sup>218</sup> Although this refers to the cremation devices installed at Crematorium I at the Auschwitz Main Camp, it is a reasonable inference that the same requirement for posting the operating instructions in the furnace hall is true for the triple-muffle furnaces installed in the Birkenau Crematoria II and III in 1943. It is impossible to believe that Nyiszli, who claimed to have spent at least seven months in Crematorium II, would not have read it. It contained a great many terms relative to the triple-muffle furnace which a witness in that situation could hardly have remained ignorant of. But then again, how could he have read it, given that it was located in a furnace hall equipped with *five triple-muffle furnaces*, when he maintained that he had “seen” *fifteen single furnaces* there?

Nyiszli attributes to the crematoria a series of non-existent rooms and devices (such as the dynamos, *dynamók*, mentioned in Chapters XXIX and XXXI); on the other hand, he takes no notice of such important locations and equipment as the corpse chute (*Rutsche*), the trash incinerator (*Müllverbrennungssofen*) and the fuel storage area (*Brennstofflager*).

Nyiszli never mentions a number of German terms which are in common use in the testimonial literature on the “gassings,” such as *Gaskammer* (gas chamber), *Auskleideraum* (undressing room), and *Aufzug* (elevator), for which

<sup>218</sup> APMO, BW 11/1/3, p. 1. The two sets of instructions are largely the same, minor differences relating to the change from a double- to a triple-muffle system notwithstanding. For the double-muffle instructions see Mattogno/Deana 2015, Part 2, Document 210, p. 358 (the triple-muffle instructions as reproduced here are there on p. 382).

he always uses the Hungarian terms *gázkamara*, *vetkezőterem* or *vetkezőhelyiség*,<sup>219</sup> and *teherfelvonógép* (lit. “freight elevator”). For him, Zyklon B is always just *Cyclon* (once) or *cyklon* in his book, even though he claims to have seen the label on a can.

He is ignorant of the term *Bunker* in reference to the farmhouse allegedly transformed into a gassing facility (i.e., Bunker 2)<sup>220</sup> – and the farmhouse that he does describe is not used for gassings at all, but rather is an undressing room for victims to be killed by shooting (MBV, Chapter XIII). He is also ignorant of the term *Verbrennungsgruben* for the cremation pits allegedly used nearby, calling them instead *máglyak* (pyres).

For him a “complete barracks lockdown” is “*teljes barakkzárlat*”; he has no notion of the term, known to every Auschwitz prisoner, of *Blocksperré*.

Finally, while he does know the term “Canada” (*Kanada*), which in the camp’s jargon referred to the *Effektenlager*, a storage facility for prisoners’ effects consisting of thirty barracks, for him the term refers to a rubbish heap burning in the courtyard of Crematorium II (III in today’s nomenclature; see Section 3.7.1.)!

Considering that Nyiszli, writing for a Hungarian audience, nevertheless felt the urge to use many unessential German terms in his text, it is surprising that he never used several of the most common German terms that are much more crucial to his story. For instance, he never used the term “*Vernichtungslager*” (extermination camp), allegedly of common use at Auschwitz at that time. For him, the “extermination camp” was the equivalent Hungarian term “*megsemmisítő tabor*” (annihilation camp). The same is true for the now world-famous motto “*Arbeit macht frei*” spanning the entry gate of the Auschwitz Main Camp, which for him was simply “*A munka szabaddá tesz*” (“Work makes you free,” Chapter XIX).

Even his alleged workplace for at least seven months, the dissection room, is never referred to by its German term (*Sezierraum*) but always with the Hungarian term (*boncterem*); this also applies to the adjacent laboratory (*Laboratorium*), for Nyiszli the “*munkaterem*.” Nyiszli, who spent ten years as a medical student in Germany, must have known the terms, and as a reminder, they most certainly were posted on the doors of these premises.

### 3.2.2. The History of the Birkenau Crematoria

On the very evening of his transfer to Crematorium II, Nyiszli comes to know the history of the crematoria:

<sup>219</sup> More usually spelled *vetkőző*- (“undressing”).

<sup>220</sup> An earlier *Bunker 1* allegedly was demolished in 1943. See Mattogno 2016a, pp. 173f. Note, however, that in D45 Nyiszli does speak of an “underground bunker,” but it clearly is none other than *Leichenkeller 1* (Morgue #1) of Crematoria II and III!

*“Over the course of our conversation I learn the history of the crematoria. How tens of thousands of prisoners built these gigantic buildings out of stone and concrete. How they had to complete them in harsh winter weather. Every stone in these buildings is stained with the blood of tens of thousands of unlucky Jewish deportees. Starved and thirsty, inadequately clothed, nourished with wretched gruel as their only food, they toiled day and night so that these horrid factories of death could be completed and become the cremators of their own bodies. Since then four years have passed.”* (MBV, Chapter VI)

In one of his first articles about Auschwitz, however, French historian Jean-Claude Pressac pointed out the following with regard to the construction of the crematoria (Pressac 1982, p. 108, Note 107):

*“The ‘Jahresbericht für Gesamtarbeitseinsatz’ (Annual report on total labor deployment) indicates, for the work on Crematoria II, III, IV and V (B.W. 30, 30a, 30b, and 30c), 49,793 working days spread out over about six months, which, despite the apparent enormity of the number, represents with regard to one crematorium an effective average of only seventy persons per working day, an observation which is confirmed by the daily hours summaries drawn up by the [participating] firms.”*

A letter from the head of the Auschwitz Central Construction Office (*Zentralbauleitung*) from February 20, 1943 in turn reveals that the two *Kommandos* which worked on the construction of Crematoria II and III were comprised of 200 prisoners each.<sup>221</sup>

The notion that the crematoria were built by “tens of thousands of prisoners” is therefore absurd.

It should also be noted, in the interest of accuracy, that these structures were built of bricks (not stone) and mortar. Moreover, as is universally acknowledged, they were handed over to the camp administration between March and June of 1943, in the following order:<sup>222</sup>

- Crematorium IV: March 22
- Crematorium II: March 31
- Crematorium V: April 4
- Crematorium III: June 25

For Nyiszli, on the other hand, the Birkenau crematoria had to be completed “in harsh winter weather,” since which time “four years [had] passed” – a chronology which would take their construction back to the winter of 1939-1940, before the Auschwitz camp even existed!<sup>223</sup>

<sup>221</sup> APMO, BW 30/34, p. 74.

<sup>222</sup> These dates are derived from the “hand-over negotiations” (*Übergabeverhandlung*) with which the Auschwitz *Zentralbauleitung* handed over control of the completed facilities to the camp *Kommandantur*. RGVA, 502-2-54, p. 25, 77, 84; APMO, BW 30/25, p. 14.

<sup>223</sup> The order for the establishment of the camp, according to D. Czech, was issued by Himmler on April 27, 1940. Czech 1997, p. 8; 1989, p. 30.

### 3.2.3. Furnaces and Cremation Capacity

The history of the crematoria related in Nyiszli's account comes from the stories of his companions in misfortune, and thus is a matter of indirect knowledge. His descriptions of the crematoria facilities themselves, however, are supposedly the *eyewitness* testimony of a person who lived in Crematorium II for months and who crossed the cremation hall innumerable times. And he also went quite frequently to the other crematoria:

*"For ongoing patient care, I am required to visit the individual crematoria once per day – and in case of necessity, even twice – to call on the sick where they lie. I am free to come and go among the four crematoria."* (MBV, Chapter VI)

Notwithstanding this daily frequenting of the crematoria buildings, he knows absolutely nothing about the cremation furnaces, and presents an extremely fanciful description of them.

The cremation hall (*Verbrennungsraum*) of Crematoria II and III, which according to Central Construction Office's Blueprint No. 933 from January 19, 1942 and No. 2136 of February 22, 1943<sup>224</sup> was thirty meters long, is described by Nyiszli as being five times longer:

*"The cremation hall is about 150 meters long, a brightly lit, white-washed, concrete-floored space with enormous, iron-barred windows."* (MBV, Chapter VII)

The hall itself, according to the documents, was furnished with five coke-fired triple-muffle furnaces (*Dreimuffel-Einäscherungsöfen*) manufactured by the Topf Company.<sup>225</sup> A photograph taken by the SS in 1943 clearly shows their structure (see Document 11).

Nyiszli, on the other hand, "saw" *fifteen individual* furnaces, that is, fifteen muffles each built as a separate furnace unit:

*"The fifteen cremation furnaces are installed separately in large red-brick structures."* (MBV, Chapter VII)

*"D. Olleé was a stoker at the 15th cremation furnace of Crematorium I during the day shift, and during the night shift he shoveled coke under the corpses of thousands of people. [...] The 15th furnace is the last of the row of sinisterly aligned furnaces in the cremation hall. Here, at the end of the great hall, D. Olleé shovels the coke."* (TVN)

However, since the furnaces operated on the gasifier principle, the coke was not "shoveled" *under* the corpses at all. In a gasifier (or gas generator) system, coke was subjected to partial combustion in a so-called gasifier compartment in order to produce highly flammable CO gas, which then traveled through a

<sup>224</sup> Reproduced in Pressac 1989, pp. 276f. and 305. See also Document 10 in the Appendix.

<sup>225</sup> I have described these furnaces in detail in Mattogno/Deana, Part 1, pp. 265-279, Part 2, Documents 213-224 (pp. 371-378) and Part 3, Photographs 111-206 (pp. 82-132).

duct into the muffle where it combined with preheated outside air to complete combustion, in the process heating the muffle to cremation temperature. The gasifier itself was a vertical chamber lined with refractory material on the inside, with a hearth in its lower part consisting of a grate on which the coke rested and a door for the admission of primary (partial) combustion air and the removal of ashes and slag. In its upper part the chamber tapered off on one side into the duct through which the partially combusted gas entered the muffle (the “neck” of the gasifier); on the opposite side was a vertical or slanted chute connected to the outside of the furnace through which the gasifier was resupplied with fuel (the gasifier chute). Since the coke was, therefore, in an entirely separate compartment of the furnace at all times – in the case of the Topf double- and triple-muffle furnaces it was located *behind* the muffle – it makes no sense to speak of shoveling it *under* the bodies lying in the muffles.<sup>226</sup>

Curiously, this crude error can also be found in the April 13, 1945 deposition of another alleged *Sonderkommando* member, Stanisław Jankowski (alias Alter Feinsilber), in his description of the Topf double-muffle furnaces of Crematorium I (Czech et al. 1996, p. 37):

*“The bodies lay on grills beneath which coke was burning.”*

Nyiszli continues his description of the cremation hall as follows:

*“From my room I hear loud orders, hurried footsteps. The noise is coming from the furnace hall of the crematorium! They are making preparations for receiving the transport. The whine of electric motors becomes audible. They have turned on the giant blowers which fan the fire to the proper temperature inside the furnaces. Fifteen blowers of this kind are in operation at once! One is installed next to each furnace.”* (MBV, Chapter VII)

According to Nyiszli, there thus were fifteen blowers to fan the flames to the correct temperature inside the furnaces.

In reality, however, the five triple-muffle furnaces of Crematoria II and III were each provided with *one* forced-air blower (*Druckluftgebläse*), located as shown in Document 13: two blowers were installed between Furnaces 1 and 2, one attached to the right wall of Furnace 1, one attached to the left wall of Furnace 2; two more were installed in the same way between Furnaces 3 and 4; and the last was located next to the left side of Furnace 5. There was nothing “giant” about the blowers either; on the contrary, they were quite compact in size, as can be seen from surviving examples of the same type installed on the triple-muffle cremations furnaces at the Buchenwald Camp (see Document 14).

<sup>226</sup> For a more detailed discussion of the gasifier principle see Mattogno/Deana, Part 1, pp. 34-36. A photograph of gasifiers at the rear end of the Topf triple-muffle furnaces at Buchenwald is reproduced as Document 12 in the Appendix.

For Nyiszli, however, "The furnaces were heated with coke, and next to each a blower was installed that had the height of one story, driven by a powerful electric motor" (PR)!

The blower's output entered the muffle through dedicated ducts and served to bring combustion air to the corpses. No equivalent blowers existed to fan the coke fire in the gasifier hearths since *incomplete* combustion in fact was the goal there. Provision could be made, however, to improve the draft from the chimney through the use of a forced-draft device (*Saugzug-Anlage*). Originally, Crematorium II was provided with one, but it was dismantled between May 17 and 19, 1943. In Crematorium III, no such device was ever installed, and no provision was made for them at all in Crematoria IV and V (Matogno/Deana, Part 1, pp. 228-251).

Elsewhere Nyiszli adds other fantastic elements to his account of the crematoria:

*"The crematoria are in a state of readiness. The men of the Sonderkommando replace the refractory linings in the furnaces' fire boxes. They paint the heavy iron doors of the furnaces and oil their hinges. The dynamo and fans run all day. Experts check their functioning."* (MBV, Chapter XXXI)

The replacement of the furnaces' refractory lining could be done only by expert civilian personnel from the companies which had contributed to the construction of the crematoria. For example, on May 21, 1943, the company Robert Koehler, which built the chimneys of Crematoria II and III, sent a letter to the Central Construction Office with the subject "Repairs to the Lining in the Chimney of Crem. II" (*Instandsetzung des Fatters im Schornstein Krem. II*). Workers from that firm began the job on June 19, and finished it some time after July 17, probably in August (*ibid.*, pp. 239-243).

Also, as I have noted above, there were no *dynamos* in Crematoria II and III.

The four Birkenau crematoria were equipped with ten triple-muffle furnaces (five each in Crematoria II and III) and two eight-muffle furnaces (one each in Crematoria IV and V), hence a total of twelve furnaces and forty-six mufles. For Nyiszli, on the other hand, the facilities had a total of sixty furnaces:

*"The cremation furnaces of Auschwitz and their equipment were built in a factory of the time, near the company Topf and Sons of Munich. This name was on the doors of the 60 furnaces of the crematoria of Auschwitz, on the automatic ash-extraction devices, and also on parts of the mechanism of the air-draft register. With metal letters welded in a legible way."* (TVN)

In passing, it may also be remarked that the firm Topf and Sons (J.A. Topf & Söhne) had its headquarters in Erfurt, not Munich, and that the emblem "Topf" was not "welded" onto its products, but was rather created during the casting of its cast-iron parts (*ibid.*, Part 3, Photographs 58f., p. 55). Nor did the Topf cremation furnaces have "automatic ash-extraction devices"; cremation



residues were removed manually using a simple scraper (*Kratzer*) via a special ash-removal door (*Ascheentnahmetür*) located at the front of the furnace beneath the muffle door (*ibid.*, Part 1, pp. 258, 271).

Here is Nyiszli's description of the cremation process itself:

*"After the last gold tooth is out of the mouth of its dead owner, the corpses go to the cremation Kommando. These then place them three at a time on a pushing device made of steel plates. The furnace's heavy iron doors open automatically; the device moving on iron wheels rolls into the glowing furnace, drops its load, slides back, heated to incandescence. Two men with rubber hoses douse it with powerful streams of water."* (MBV, Chapter VII)

For the introduction of corpses into the muffle, Crematorium I of the Auschwitz Main Camp was provided with a "corpse-introduction device" (*Leicheneinführungs-Vorrichtung*) consisting of a wheeled coffin-introduction cart (*Sargeeinführungswagen*) which ran with iron wheels on special rails on the floor (*Laufschienen*), and a semi-cylindrical pushing cart (*Verschiebwagen*) made of steel plates that ran on top of it. At the front of the introduction cart was a metal stretcher on which the corpse was laid; supported by a pair of metal rollers (*Laufrollen*) attached below the muffle door,<sup>227</sup> this stretcher component entered the muffle as the introduction cart was rolled forward on its rails. Once the stretcher was fully inside the furnace, the pushing cart which rode on top of the stretcher extension was then held in place at the muffle door, while the introduction cart was drawn backward on its rails again, thus pushing the corpse off the stretcher onto the muffle grill (*ibid.*, Part 1, pp. 272f., and Part 3, photographs 87-89, pp. 69f., and 185-187, pp. 120f.).

The "pushing device" made of "steel plates" mentioned by Nyiszli, which specifically is "moving on iron wheels," is clearly reminiscent of this system. It is a fact, however, that this system was not used in the Birkenau crematoria. Already on September 30, 1942, the Topf Company informed the Central Construction Office that it had substituted the device described above with a simple "wrought-iron stretcher" (*schmiedeeiserne Trage*) which would run on the rollers attached to the muffle door frames.<sup>228</sup>

Furthermore, the muffle doors, which were each hung on a pair of hinges, did not open "automatically" but rather manually, by pulling on the appropriate handle.

The cremation capacity of the furnaces was, for Nyiszli, truly prodigious:

*"The bodies of the dead are reduced to ashes in 20 minutes. The crematorium works with 15 furnaces. This means the cremation of 5,000 people a day. Four crematoria are in operation at the same capacity. Altogether 20,000 people*

<sup>227</sup> The rollers were mounted on a bar running the width of the furnace below the muffle doors and could be slid along this bar beneath each muffle as needed; one pair of rollers thus served three muffles. Mattogno/Deana 2015, Part 1, pp. 272f., and accompanying photographs in Part 3.

<sup>228</sup> APMO, BW 30/34, p. 114, and BW 30/27, p. 30.

*pass each day through the gas chambers and from there into the cremation furnaces. The souls of twenty-thousand innocent people fly off through the gigantic chimneys.*" (MBV, Chapter VII)

In truth, however, the Topf double-, triple- and eight-muffle furnaces were all designed for the cremation of only a single corpse at a time. The normal duration of the cremation process was about an hour. Attempting to overcome the projected thermotechnical limits of the furnaces by overloading the muffles (three bodies cremated together, as Nyiszli claims) would not in fact have led to an increase in productivity; on the contrary, the maximum cremation capacity for the furnaces was obtained, in conformity with their design, by placing a single, normal corpse in each muffle.<sup>229</sup> The *theoretical* maximum capacity of the four Birkenau crematoria was 1,104 corpses in twenty-four hours; the anticipated maximum was around 624 (operating twelve hours per day).<sup>230</sup> Nyiszli's claims in this regard thus can be qualified as a thermotechnical delirium.

Apart from being technically absurd, the total cremation capacity asserted by Nyiszli is mathematically wrong as well, because his claim that the corpses were loaded into the muffles "three at a time" and then "reduced to ashes in 20 minutes" leads to a calculation of 3 corpses per load per muffle  $\times$  3 loads per hour = 9 corpses per muffle per hour, or (9 corpses per muffle per hour  $\times$  15 muffles  $\times$  24 hours  $\Rightarrow$ ) 3,240 corpses per day in one crematorium, not 5,000. Moreover, if we accept for argument's sake his claim that the crematoria all had the same capacity ("Four crematoria are in operation at the same capacity"), the maximum capacity for all four sites would still have been  $3,240 \times 4 = 12,960$  corpses per day, not 20,000. The details of Nyiszli's own testimony thus lead to a maximum cremation capacity of 7,040 less than he himself claims.

In his letter to Paul Rassinier, Nyiszli responded in detail to the objections of this pioneer of Holocaust revisionism:

*"So the duration of the cremation is one thing at the Père Lachaise, and another at Birkenau. This can last an hour in the first case, while it lasted no more than twenty minutes in the second. The explanations are as follows: The bodies of Père Lachaise were generally adequately nourished before their death, and their incineration is accompanied by a solemn ceremony. Moreover, the duration of incineration is directly proportional to the intensity of the heat, and inversely to the hygrometric degree [water content] of the object to be incinerated. The corpses of Birkenau, due to the presence in ghettos, concentration camps, and due to inhuman work, were only skin and bones, walking skeletons, so to speak. The furnaces were heated with coke, and next to*

<sup>229</sup> Mattogno/Deana, Part I, pp. 312-346 (Section II, Chapter 9, "The Cremation Capacity of the Furnaces in the Crematoria of Auschwitz-Birkenau").

<sup>230</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 292-311 (Section II, Chapter 8, "The Duration of the Cremation Process in the Topf Furnaces at Auschwitz-Birkenau").

*each a blower was installed that had the height of one story, driven by a powerful electric motor. The incineration itself was not a ceremony, but an 'Entloesung' [recte: Endlösung], a conveyor-belt annihilation where everything was used that modern technology can provide."*

Thus, according to Nyiszli's presumed experience, well-fed corpses burn more slowly than emaciated ones, when in fact the opposite is true, emaciated corpses being less combustible precisely because of the smaller quantity of combustible fat contained in them.

The duration of a cremation is not "directly proportional" to the temperature either, because the combustion process must occur within quite precise thermal limits: below 600°C the body does not burn but instead carbonizes; above 1100-1200°C, the phenomenon of sinterization can occur, whereby the bones of the corpse fuse with and stick to the refractory brick of the cremation grill.<sup>231</sup> Nor is the duration inversely proportional to the quantity of water present in the body, for a fat body undoubtedly has more water than a skinny one, but it burns better than the latter.

The coke-fired cremation furnaces at the end of the nineteenth and beginning of the twentieth centuries operated at a temperature of around 1000°C. In the 1930s and 40s, coke-fired cremation furnaces operated at a lower temperature between 800-900°C, and reached temperatures of 1000-1100°C only for a few minutes at the peak of the combustion process.<sup>232</sup> The normal operating temperature for a Topf furnace was around 800°C.<sup>233</sup> As I have noted earlier, the Topf furnaces at the Birkenau crematoria did not have enormous blowers ("the height of one story") to blow air into the furnaces, and so even this presumed advantage was non-existent, much as were the presumed disadvantages of the crematorium at Père Lachaise relative to the funeral ceremony, which obviously had no influence on the cremation process itself.

### 3.2.4. Flaming Chimneys

According to Nyiszli, the chimneys of the crematoria normally emitted giant flames, something which he noted already on his first arrival at Birkenau:

*"The first thing that draws my attention – rivets it, so to speak – is a gigantic square chimney, tapering toward the top and built of red bricks, which emerges from the the top of a factory-like, two-story building, also built of red bricks.*

*It's a strange shape for a factory chimney, but what is really impressive is the column of fire 8-10 meters high which gushes from its mouth between the lightning rods at its four corners."* (MBV, Chapter I)

<sup>231</sup> Kessler 1930, pp. 136ff.

<sup>232</sup> For a history of the early development of cremation technology and the experiments which led to the eventual adoption of lower-temperature furnaces, see Mattogno/Deana, Part 1, pp. 43-73.

<sup>233</sup> *Betriebsvorschrift des koksbeheizten Topf-Dreimuffel-Einäscherungssofen*. See Document 9.

This "observation" is then repeated at intervals throughout the book:

*"I would love to know what is going on at the foot of its gigantic, blazing chimney."* (MBV, Chapter VI)

*"[...] were it not for the large red-brick building there and the enormous, flame-spewing chimney at one end."* (MBV, Chapter VII)

*"I look across: the chimneys of Crematoria II, III and IV are spewing forth flames."* (MBV, Chapter IX)

*"All through the night the chimneys of Crematoria I and II spewed flame from themselves. Their glare lit up the entire camp!"* (MBV, Chapter XXV)

*"The north wind blows from the already snow-covered peaks of the Beskids, it shakes the barbed wire of the K.Z. and agitates the flames of the crematoria chimneys."* (MBV, Chapter XXVIII)

*"[...] the first thing their glance fell upon when they came to from the cold water poured on them was the smoke billowing over the K.Z. and the blazing flames of the crematorium chimneys."* (MBV, Chapter XXVIII)

In his declaration of October 8, 1947, Nyiszli went even further:

*"[...] the fires of the crematoria and of the two open graves that burned day and night could be seen up to a distance of 30 kilometers."* (NI-11710)

In TVN he speaks also of "four columns of fire" which exit from the chimneys of the crematoria. Nyiszli appears to be unaware, among other things, that Crematoria IV and V each had two chimneys such that the *four* crematoria possessed *six* chimneys in all. Of course, the flaming chimneys themselves are a simple fable anyway, as I have demonstrated elsewhere (Matogno/Deana, Part 1, pp. 375-379).

No less absurd is the alleged effect of these imagined flames:

*"My glance wanders over the crematorium chimney: the lightning rods placed at the square chimney's four corners, all heavy iron rods, have melted from the terrible fire and are now bent downwards."* (MBV, Chapter XIX)

Iron melts at 1,538°C and becomes forgeable at 900-1,000°C, at which temperature it is sufficiently softened to be readily worked by hand. It follows, then, that the fire at the mouth of the chimney must have been hotter than in the furnace itself, which, according to the Operating Instructions, was around 800°C.

### 3.2.5. Access to the Crematoria and Repairs

In Chapter XXXI of his book, Nyiszli recounts the anecdote of two corpses cooked in the crematorium courtyard in order to clean their skeletons. Through this narrative, he adds the theme of (involuntary) cannibalism to his catalog of Auschwitz horrors.

In this chapter, two Jews, father and son, who present some physical abnormalities, excite the interest of Dr. Mengele, who has them killed in order to

send their skeletons "to the anthropological museum in Berlin." He asks Nyiszli what methods he knows for removing the flesh from bones; Nyiszli replies that he knows of two, namely, "the dissolving method, which consists of placing the corpse in a calcium chloride solution" and "the cooking method," or boiling in water. The latter method is chosen, and the corpses are placed in two barrels and cooked. All this of course serves merely to introduce the horrifying scene of cannibalism. For this, Nyiszli needed some outsiders who would have been unaware of the goings-on in the crematorium. And here is his solution:

*"Today nothing is in operation. Four stonemason prisoners brought here from Auschwitz I are repairing the crematorium's chimney."*

There is nothing in the documents, however, regarding damage to the chimney of Crematorium II in 1944. More important, any repairs that were necessary would have been done by the Koehler firm, which built the crematoria's chimneys, as can be inferred from a letter of May 9, 1944 in which the Birkenau *Bauleiter* (Head of Construction) asks the camp commandant for "permission to access Crematoria I-IV" ("*Genehmigung zum Betreten der Krematorien I-IV*") on behalf of said firm, as it had been tasked "with urgent repair work in the crematoria" ("*mit dringenden Instandsetzungsarbeiten bei den Krematorien*").<sup>234</sup> Likewise, on May 13, the Head of Construction wrote to the camp commandant of Auschwitz II/Birkenau:<sup>235</sup>

*"The bricklayer Apolinary Golinski, born Aug. 5, 1904, has been tasked by the Koehler firm with repair work in the crematoria. It is hereby requested that his provisional pass be provided with a permit to enter the same."*

In Point 12 of his declaration of October 8, 1947, Nyiszli claims that on one occasion the Topf firm

*"sent a specialist to review the devices. He was a man of at least 60 years. I exchanged a few words with him, in my opinion he was an engineer in the uniform of an SS Oberscharführer. This way it was also possible for IG people to show up at Auschwitz and to remain unrecognized."* (NI-11710)

Later, in his fictitious testimony at the I.G. Farben Trial, he further elaborated on this story:

*"Once this company sent a specialist to overhaul the devices in the crematoria. He was a person of about 60 and wore the uniform of an SS Oberscharführer. Being a concentration-camp inmate already knowledgeable in these matters, I realized that this man had been wearing the uniform only since recently. He moved in it in a strange, unusual way. The uniform did not even suit him well. He did not even know where to put the heavy revolver hanging from his belt; it was an impediment to him. His age and all his behavior re-*

<sup>234</sup> RGVA, 502-1-83, p. 377.

<sup>235</sup> RGVA, 502-1-83, p. 375.

*vealed that the SS uniform served him only to be able to move freely in the concentration camp and to disguise himself as a person.*

*I conversed with him several times. In my opinion, he was an engineer dressed as an SS [man] as a member of the big factory Topf and Sons, Munich, who had installed the crematorium.*

*It is also probable that staff members of the I.G. Farben walked around in the main camp and in the crematoria concealing their identity under the SS uniform.” (TVN)*

The prosecution at the trial was interested in the presence of I.G. Farben officials in the Birkenau crematoria, because in that case the defendants could not claim to have had no knowledge of the presumed gassings there. It was in this context that Nyiszli presumably invented the story above.

It is a well-known fact that chief engineer (*Oberingenieur*) Kurt Prüfer, director of Department DIV *Ofenbau* (furnace construction) of the Topf firm, was the expert responsible for the Auschwitz cremation furnaces, and that he came to the camp in this capacity on at least twelve occasions. The last was in February 1944. On January 20, 1944, the Central Construction Office contacted the Topf Company requesting Prüfer's presence at Auschwitz. On February 2, SS *Obersturmführer* Werner Jothann, the new head of the Central Construction Office, wrote a letter to Camp Commandant SS *Obersturmbannführer* Arthur Liebehenschel with the subject “Identity documents for Chief Engineer Prüfer and Mr. Holick of the firm Topf and Sons, Erfurt.”<sup>236</sup> Prüfer and the civilian workers of other firms like Koehler entered the crematoria on the basis of explicit orders from the camp commandant, and the very notion that they presented themselves disguised in SS uniforms is fatuous and absurd.

### 3.2.6. Demolition of the Crematoria

Describing the results of the *Sonderkommando* revolt in Chapter XXIX of his book, Nyiszli writes that “Crematorium III had burned to ashes and Crematorium IV was put out of operation as a result of the destruction of its machinery.”

At some point in the weeks to follow, however, Crematorium IV (V in today's nomenclature) must have been repaired, for when the decision is made to demolish the other crematoria after the order halting any killings on November 17, Crematorium IV (V) alone is left in service:

*“Among the crematoria, two will be demolished; the third will remain for the time being for the cremation of the camp dead. We four will be moving [...] to Crematorium IV. It will remain in operation.” (MBV, Chapter XXXVI)*

Moreover, in relating the story of the Polish prisoners killed at the building on New Year's Day 1945, he speaks merely of “cremations” (not open-air burn-

<sup>236</sup> RGVA, 502-1-345, p. 50.

ings), which are carried out after the prisoners have duly undressed in “the empty room beside the furnace hall” (XXXVII). It would thus seem most likely that Nyiszli imagined the damage to Crematorium IV (V) itself as having been repaired.

On the other hand, in Danuta Czech’s quasi-official chronicle of events at the Auschwitz camp, she affirms that only Crematorium IV (Nyiszli’s III) was damaged, since “Afterward work [was] resumed in Crematoriums II, III and V” (Czech 1997, p. 726; 1989, p. 900).

Later, after the alleged Himmler order prohibiting further killings had been received at the camp, and after the alleged liquidation of the last *Sonderkommando*, Nyiszli describes the plans for the dismantling of the crematoria as follows:

*“We four will be moving [...] to Crematorium IV. It will remain in operation. I and II are marked for immediate destruction! Crematorium III of course burned to ashes on the occasion of the Sonderkommando revolt of October 6. It was at once a historic and a happy moment when, the next morning, a detachment of prisoners deploying a thousand persons arrived in the courtyard of Crematorium I and, divided into groups, began the demolition of the building with the bloody past.”* (MBV, Chapter XXXVI)

The exact number of prisoners assigned to work on the demolition is unclear, but almost certainly less than the 1,000 claimed by Nyiszli. Based on documents, Czech states that the first demolition unit (*Abbruchkommando*), assigned to work on Crematorium III, was established on December 1, 1944, and consisted of 100 female prisoners. In a footnote she adds with reference to a statement by the ex-detainee Stanisława Rachwałowa that at the same time a male unit was also created.<sup>237</sup>

On December 5, the women’s unit was increased to 150 prisoners.<sup>238</sup> In a letter of December 8, 1944 to the headquarters of the women’s camp (*Kommandantur des FL*), the head of the Central Construction Office, SS *Obersturmführer* Werner Jothann, requested to make available “100 unskilled female workers for demolition work at crematorium Camp II.”<sup>239</sup> Finally, on January 15, 1945 a “demolition unit Crematorium 104-B” existed that consisted of 70 men.<sup>240</sup> The order of magnitude of the documented figures makes it possible to relegate to the realm of fantasy Nyiszli’s claim that the demolition unit was made up of “a detachment of prisoners deploying a thousand persons.”

<sup>237</sup> Czech 1997, p. 757; 1989, p. 939; as source she cites “Arbeitslisten”, evidently the one of Dec. 1, 1944.

<sup>238</sup> *Ibid.*, 1997, pp. 759; 1989, pp. 940; again with the general reference “Arbeitslisten.”

<sup>239</sup> “100 Häftlingshilfsarbeitern für Abbrucharbeiten beim Krematorium Lager II.” RGVA, 502-1-67, p. 227.

<sup>240</sup> “K.L. Birkenau. Arbeitseinsatz für den 15. Januar 1945.” RGVA, 502-1-67, p. 17

### 3.3. Extermination Technology: the “Gas Chambers”

#### 3.3.1. Zyklon B

Nyiszli always calls Zyklon B “Cyclon” and talks about it in these terms:

*“They punch open the patented top of one of the canisters and pour the contents, a substance consisting of bean-sized purple granules, into the opening. The material poured out is Cyclon, or chlorine in granular form; it immediately gives off gas as soon as it comes into contact with air.”* (MBV, Chapter VII)

In D45, he wrote that Zyklon B consisted of “bean-sized, purple [or rather] burgundy-colored chlorine pellets” and adds that the “gas pellets fell, and right on contact with air developed chlorine gas that caused the most-cruel death by suffocation within 5 to 10 minutes.” In Document NI-11710, the “Cyclon” is “in granular form with pink-lilac color”; in his book, Nyiszli states that it consisted of “bean-sized lilac-colored granules.”

Document NI-9912, from which I will quote later, states that the carrier material was either diatomaceous earth (*Diagrieß*), “a grainy mass of reddish-brown color” (“*eine rotbraunekörnige Masse*”), or “blue cubes” (“*kleine blaue Würfel (Erco)*”) of gypsum (the most common type during the war).

From five deliveries of Zyklon B by the Dessauer Werke to the Degesch Company of April-May 1944 (NI-9913A), it emerges that the inert carrier substance consisted of cubes of gypsum called *Erco-Würfel*. The fact that the “Erco” gypsum cubes had a light blue color is confirmed by an expertise on a 200 g Zyklon B can made by a British military laboratory on December 17, 1944. The can contained 450 grams of calcium sulfate cubes (gypsum) of a light-blue color soaked in hydrogen cyanide.<sup>241</sup>

In his dreamed-up story published in *Világ*, Nyiszli invents an “*Umleitungsstelle 9*” having a department “GG,” or “*Giftgas*” (toxic gas); these gases allegedly included “Cyclon A” and “Cyclon B,” which were “*Geheimmittel*,” secret substances whose composition was known only to some chemical chiefs.

The “Cyclon A” cans were allegedly labeled “Cyclon A. Vertilgungsmittel für Läuse und andere Ungezieher. Vorsicht. Gift! (Pest control agent for lice and other pests. Caution: Poison!).” Nyiszli claims that this type of gas was used for disinfestation, and that he was an eyewitness to its use in “the disinfestation chamber of Camp F at Birkenau.” The “Cyclon B” cans, Nyiszli insisted, were identical to those of “Cyclon A,” except for the A having been swapped for a B. More rarely used were cans without any label, which contained chlorine, Nyiszli stated.

---

<sup>241</sup> TNA, WO-208/2169.



If we follow him, “Cyclon B” was used for extermination purposes in “gas chambers”; it was “a chemical combination of acidum hydrocyanatum [hydrogen cyanide], chlorine and in all probability nitrogen in a way whose chemical formula” was unknown to Nyiszli, for it was secret; the carrier material was “calcium silicate.” Nyiszli adds:

*“The toxic substance, at the moment of the actual contact with air – probably absorbing its oxygen – becomes gaseous from the solid state and fills the available space (light gas) very quickly, leaving the supporting substance unchanged in its external appearance.”*

The 1962 English Panther edition of Nyiszli’s book contains the following note of the translator (Tibère Kremer) on page 87:

*“In reply to a query concerning the origin and composition of cyclon gas, Dr. Nyiszli wrote that it was manufactured during the war by the I.G. Farben Co. and that, although it was classified as Geheimmittel, that is, confidential or secret, he was able to ascertain that the name ‘cyclon’ came from the abbreviation of its essential elements: cyanide, chlorine and nitrogen. During the Nuremberg trials the Farben Co. claimed that it had been manufactured only as a disinfectant. However, as Dr. Nyiszli pointed out in his testimony, there were two types of cyclon in existence, type A and type B. They came in identical containers; only the marking A and B differentiated them. Type A was a disinfectant; type B was used to exterminate millions.”*

On the role of I.G. Farben, Nyiszli asserted in his invented trial testimony:

*“I.G. Farben delivered thousands and hundreds of thousands of Cyclon cans. The gas went to Majdanek, to Treblinka and to the place of greatest consumption, to Auschwitz.”*

What Nyiszli wrote about Zyklon is wrong from beginning to end, incredibly wrong, systematically wrong.

I start with his claim that in 1944 a certain “Zyklon A” was in use at Auschwitz for “disinfection,” meaning disinfestation, while “Zyklon B” was used for homicidal purposes. Flury and Zernik, in their voluminous treatise on toxic substances, inform us that “Zyklon A” was a liquid consisting of a mixture of methyl and ethyl cyanoformiate with the addition of 10% of methyl chloroformiate as a warning agent; then they add (Flury/Zernik 1931, p. 535):

*“The production of liquid Zyklon<sup>[242]</sup> in Germany had to be terminated when the peace treaty of Versailles came into effect, because during the war the cyanoformiates had been tested as combat chemicals, and therefore their further production is forbidden according to the terms of the treaty.”*

Gerhard Peters provides even the physical characteristics of this substance: the liquid mixture boiled at 96°C and had a relative density of 1.08 with respect to water, and as a gas of a relative density of 2.98 with respect to air. The liquid

<sup>242</sup> Meaning Zyklon A; right after this they write about Zyklon B as being “fest,” solid.

was vaporized and sprayed at a pressure of 5-10 atmospheres with a device similar to a shoulder sprayer for plants (*Pflanzenspritze*; Peters 1933, pp. 56-58).

The above allows us to evaluate the reliability of Nyiszli's "eyewitness testimony": he not only "saw" the use of a product that had been no longer on the market for over two decades, but he also "saw" this happening at "the disinfestation chamber of Camp F at Birkenau," although the Birkenau Camp Sector BIIf never had a disinfestation chamber. Furthermore, Nyiszli describes the alleged disinfestation with Zyklon A in this way:

*"They poured down the contents of the cans through chimney-like openings onto clothes and blankets piled up in the hermetically sealed disinfestation chamber [that was] here in the hospital camp."* (TVN)

Such a procedure could have worked with "Zyklon B" granules, but certainly not with liquid "Zyklon A," which required a sprayer to atomize the liquid.

Summing up, "Zyklon A" no longer existed, there was no disinfestation chamber in the hospital sector BIIf, and the way "Zyklon A" was allegedly applied there is nonsensical: three blatant lies in one single swoop!

Being a liquid substance, it is very unlikely that "Zyklon A" was packed in cans. I do not know if it ever had a label saying something like "Pest control agent for lice and other pests. Caution: Poison!," but it is certain that, contrary to what Nyiszli asserts, this was certainly not what the label on Zyklon B cans stated. In fact, its label read:

*"Zyklon B. Toxic gas! Cyanide preparation! Keep in a cold and dry place! Protect from the sun and open flames. To be opened and used only by trained personnel."*

As a means of extermination, Zyklon A had also been mentioned by the Soviet prosecutor Pokrovsky during the afternoon session of February 14, 1946 of the Nuremberg IMT (IMT, Vol. VII, pp. 438f.):

*"All these monstrous crimes had a definite system of their own. There was uniformity in the murder methods: One and the same system prevailed in the construction of the gas chambers, in the mass production of the round tins containing the poisonous substances 'Cyclone A' or 'Cyclone B,' the furnaces of the crematories are all built on the same typical lines, [...]."*

The claim of homicidal use of "Zyklon A" was reiterated by the Soviets during the trial against the Sachsenhausen camp staff, which was staged in Berlin from October 23 to November 1, 1947.<sup>243</sup>

It is possible that Nyiszli learned about this in some way.

As he describes it, it is clear that Nyiszli knew practically nothing about Zyklon B. His statement that it was some ominous "secret substance" and consequently had a secret composition is simply pathetic. He who claimed to

<sup>243</sup> See in this regard Mattogno 2016e, Chapter 10 on Sachsenhausen, pp. 151-181.

have participated as a witness at the I.G. Farben Trial, even playing a leading role in it, was completely ignorant of the fact that precisely during that trial documents were presented that provided all the relevant data about Zyklon B, its composition, its characteristics and its methods of use. In particular, two documents must be mentioned in this context: the one filed as NI-9098 is a 1942 booklet titled “Eight lectures from Degesch’s area of activity” (“*Acht Vorträge aus dem Arbeitsgebiet der Degesch*”), given by experts on disinfection with highly toxic substances such as Gerhard Peters, Ludwig Gasser, Erich Wüstinger and Walter Rasch.

In the lecture “Development and Extension of the 9 DEGESCH procedures” (“*Entwicklung und Ausbau der 9 DEGESCH-Verfahren*”), Heinrich G. Sossenheimer provided this general information (NI-9098, p. 15):

*“The following types of Zyklon are in use today:*

*ZYKLON (hydrogen cyanide), liquid hydrogen cyanide soaked in burnt diatomaceous earth (Diagriß) or in an artificial substance containing gypsum (Erco), and ZYKLON discoids, liquid hydrogen cyanide soaked in wood-fiber discs.*

*Among its areas of employment are the gasification of large spaces of barracks, troop lodgings, camps of the labor services, mills, granaries, ships, and the delousing of troops and foreign civilian workers in fumigation chambers, in addition to work of protecting stores of all kinds.*

*Since 1924, almost a quarter billion cubic meters of space has been disinfested with Zyklon. Of these, some 100 million cubic meters were done in Germany alone.”*

Later, a “Diagram of a fumigation-chamber facility with 8 cells” (“*Schema einer Begasungskammer-Anlage mit 8 Zellen*”) is reproduced, which is a standard hydrogen cyanide disinfection system with the Degesch circulation system (*Kreislaufanlage* for circulating the gas mixture; *ibid.*, p. 20).

The second document, filed at Nuremberg as NI-9912, contains the “Guidelines for the Use of Prussic Acid (Zyklon) for Destruction of Vermin (Disinfection)” (“*Richtlinien für die Anwendung von Blausäure (Zyklon) zur Ungeziefervertilgung (Entwesung)*”) Published by the Health Authority of the Protectorate of Bohemia and Moravia in Prague (*Gesundheitsanstalt des Protektorates Böhmen und Mähren in Prag*). The first two points illustrate the physical characteristics of hydrogen cyanide and the methods of use of Zyklon B.<sup>244</sup>

*“II. Forms in which Prussic Acid is used:*

*Zyklon is a mixture of Prussic acid and an irritating agent absorbed in a substrate. The substrate may be wood disks, a granular red-brown material (“Diagriess”) or small blue cubes (“Erco”).*

<sup>244</sup> NI-9912, p. 1. See the complete translation in Rudolf 2016, pp. 117-124.

*The irritating agent is used as a warning method, and has the additional advantage that it stimulates the breathing of insects. Release of Prussic acid and the irritating agent by simple evaporation. Zyklon will keep for 3 months. Use damaged cans first. Always use up the contents of a can completely. Liquid Prussic acid harms polish, varnish, paints, and so on – gaseous Prussic acid will not. The toxicity of Prussic acid is not affected by the irritating agent, but the danger is reduced.*

*Zyklon can be made harmless by burning.”*

Zyklon B was so “secret” that a British military court staged a trial that was called “*The Zyklon B Case. Trial of Bruno Tesch and two others*” (March 1-8, 1946).<sup>245</sup> The indictment, taken from this publication, became Document NI-12207 of the I.G. Farben Trial. Among other things, we read there:<sup>246</sup>

*“The chief gas involved was Zyklon B, a highly dangerous poison gas, 99 per cent. of which was prussic acid.”*

For Nyiszli, however, Zyklon B consisted of “chlorine in granular form” (in his book, Chapter 7), but even in this regard, he had rather confused ideas, for in TVN he wrote that it was “a chemical combination of acidum hydrocyanatum,<sup>247</sup> chlorine and in all probability nitrogen” with “calcium silicate” as carrier material instead of the actual calcium sulfate (gypsum).

What Tibère Kremer claims to have learned from Nyiszli about the name Zyklon is a rich joke at best. According to this, Nyiszli had managed to find out “that the name ‘cyclon’ came from the abbreviation of its essential elements: cyanide, chlorine and nitrogen,” accumulating three huge inanities in one stroke.

First of all, the proper spelling of the term is “Zyklon,” which Nyiszli never used, as I mentioned earlier; the alleged acronym should therefore contain the initial “Zy” of the Germanized “Zyanid” for cyanide. Second, Zyklon B did not contain chlorine and nitrogen (other than the nitrogen contained in cyanide: CN). Third, the German name for Nitrogen is “Stickstoff”; “nitrogen” is the English name!

Nyiszli states in Chapter 7 of his book that Zyklon B “immediately gives off gas as soon as it comes into contact with air,” in D45 that “right on contact with air [it] developed chlorine gas,” and finally in TVN that the “toxic substance, at the moment of the actual contact with air – probably absorbing its oxygen – becomes gaseous from the solid state.”

Ignorant of the fact that the active ingredient of Zyklon B was liquid hydrogen cyanide, Nyiszli did not even know that the gas (hydrogen-cyanide vapors) developed by simple evaporation of the liquid; the process is similar to the evaporation of water, but the boiling point of hydrogen cyanide is much

<sup>245</sup> Summarized in: United Nations... 1947, Vol. I, pp. 93-103.

<sup>246</sup> NI-12207, p. 94 of the publication.

<sup>247</sup> Recte: “hydrocyanicum.”

lower. Air or oxygen is not required for this evaporation to occur. The above-mentioned "Guidelines for the Use of Prussic Acid (Zyklon) for Destruction of Vermin (Disinfestation)" list the physical properties of hydrogen cyanide, including its boiling point (26°C) and its relative density with respect to air (0.97).

The active involvement of oxygen in the development of the gas was part of the Auschwitz fable that circulated among inmates and must also have reached Rudolf Höss's ears. On April 24, 1946, while sitting in his Nuremberg prison cell, he wrote a note on the alleged extermination technique at Auschwitz (filed as T/1170 during the Jerusalem Eichmann Trial), in which he defined "Cyclon B" as

*"a crystal-like hydrogen cyanide which evaporated instantly, meaning that it became effective instantly on contact with oxygen,"*

The crystalline nature of Zyklon B was another very common fable. In his declaration of April 5, 1946, Höss again defined it as "a crystallized Prussic acid" (PS-3868), and in 1979, Filip Müller, whom the orthodoxy considers to be one of the most important witnesses of the alleged gassings at Auschwitz, still wrote of "Zyklon-B crystals" ("Zyklon-B-Kristalle," Müller 1979a, p. 184).

A sample of a Zyklon-B gypsum pellet, examined with a scanning electron microscope (magnified by a factor of 2,500), "clearly shows a microcrystalline structure with orthorhombic crystals that are approximately 1.5 micrometers wide and 7 to 15 micrometers long."

The author of this study is a well-known holocaust propagandist who states (Mazal):

*"Many historians describe the Zyklon-B used in the gas and delousing chambers as being crystals of diatomaceous earth, even though diatomaceous earth is invariably presented as a fine powder rather than 'crystals' or pellets. This has given rise to speculation by Holocaust deniers who seek out the smallest gap in any description in order to attack the body of an otherwise well-founded text."*

Mazal's accusation against "Holocaust deniers" is pathetic, as is clear from this study, where I show that Nyiszli's testimony does not contain merely a few "small gaps" or inaccuracies, but his entire text is completely unfounded.

Although Mazal's reference to "crystals" of Zyklon B is not very clear, from the context it seems that he wants to justify witness statements on this. If so, we ought to keep in mind that a micrometer corresponds to one thousandth of a millimeter. Hence, the microcrystalline structure in question has dimensions ranging between 1.5 and 15 thousandths of a millimeter, meaning that it could not be seen with the naked eye. Since no technical publication on Zyklon B of the 1940s spoke of this microcrystalline structure, we must deduce that the witnesses turned to a concentration camp equipped with a scan-

ning electron microscope capable of magnification factors of 2,500 and more – never mind the fact that scanning electron microscopes have been available as commercial products only since 1965<sup>248</sup>! But this all relates only to the carrier material of the Erco-type Zyklon B – gypsum – whose microcrystalline nature has been known to chemists and mineralogists long before WWII. Höss, however, spoke of “a crystallized Prussic acid,” hence the active ingredient, not the carrier material.

One last error remains to be examined. Nyiszli states:

*“I.G. Farben delivered thousands and hundreds of thousands of Cyclon cans. The gas went to Majdanek, to Treblinka and to the place of greatest consumption, to Auschwitz.”*

In reality, however, the I.G. Farbenindustrie Trust never “delivered” any Zyklon B. It was only a 42.5% shareholder of the DEGESCH (*Deutsche Gesellschaft für Schädlingbekämpfung*, German Company for Pest Control); the other two shareholders were DEGUSSA (Deutsche Gold- und Silberscheideanstalt) of Frankfurt upon Main (42.5%) and Theo Goldschmidt of Essen (15%). DEGESCH in turn held 51% of the capital of the HELI Company (Heerdt und Lingler) and 55% (until 1942) of the TESTA Company (Tesch und Stabenow; NI-6363, NI-12073). These two companies distributed Zyklon B on behalf of DEGESCH; the former had commercial jurisdiction for territories west of the Elbe River, the other for territories east of it. Zyklon B was produced on behalf of DEGESCH by two companies: the Dessauer Werke für Zucker-Raffinerie (Dessau plant for sugar refinery) and the Kaliwerke AG in Kolin. TESTA also delivered Zyklon B to Auschwitz, but it is not known that Zyklon B was also delivered to the Treblinka Camp. For the present purpose, however, this can be ruled out, because Nyiszli exclusively referred to supplies for extermination purposes, yet the alleged gas chambers of Treblinka are said to have operated with engine-exhaust gases.

As I will show below, Nyiszli's pathetic lies about Zyklon B are not means without an end, but rather constitute the backbone of his “eye”-witness testimony of the presumed homicidal gassings.

### 3.3.2. The “Gas Chambers”

In Chapter VII of his book,<sup>249</sup> Nyiszli describes in great detail the “gassing” of a convoy of Jews in Crematorium I (= II in today's numbering system).

*“The long-drawn-out wail of a locomotive's whistle sounds from the ramp. It's daybreak! I go to my window, where I have a clear view across. A long train is standing there. Within a few minutes, the doors are flung to one side and the*

<sup>248</sup> [https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Scanning\\_electron\\_microscope](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Scanning_electron_microscope)

<sup>249</sup> Unless indicated otherwise, the following quotes are all taken from this chapter.

*wagons disgorge from within themselves the chosen people of Israel. Lining up and selection take half an hour at most."*

In the first, German edition of her "*Kalendarium*" of Auschwitz, Czech, with explicit reference to Jewish transports from Hungary, wrote much more sensibly (Czech 1964, p. 97, Note 80):

*"The unloading of a train lasted 4-5 hours."*

"After five or six minutes," those selected for the "gas chamber" enter the courtyard of Crematorium II, and descend a staircase "ten or twelve concrete steps lead below the ground to a large room, upon the façade of which hangs an enormous sign stating in German, French, Greek and Hungarian that this is a 'Bath and Disinfection Room.'"

*"They go down the steps almost cheerfully.*

*The room into which the transport is conducted is about 200 meters long, starkly illuminated and painted white. A line of columns stretches down the middle of the room to the end. Benches are arranged around each column and along the walls as well. Above the benches are long lines of hooks, above the hooks are numbers."*

This is the alleged "undressing room." On Blueprints #932 and #1301 of the Auschwitz Central Construction Office, this room is labeled as "*Leichenkeller 2*" (Basement Morgue #2) and measures 49.49 m × 7.93 m, hence 392.5 m<sup>2</sup> (Pressac 1989, pp. 284-287, 292f.).

One cannot seriously believe that Nyiszli could misjudge the room's length by a factor of 4.

*"Three thousand people are in the room. Men, women, children."*

In his first statement (D45), Nyiszli narrated this alleged event as follows:

*"In a few minutes, the crowd on the left started to move slowly to the left, carrying their personal belongings. The crematoria were around 200 meters from the Judenrampe, and the crowd of approximately 2000 people passed under the gate of Crematoria 1, 2, 3 or 4 as ordered. At the crematorium, they descended 10-12 concrete steps and entered an empty, underground room with a capacity of 2000 [people]. The first row stopped instinctively at the entrance, but once they read the signs 'Disinfection' and 'Bath' printed in all major languages, they were reassured and descended the steps."*

As we can see, the initial capacity of the "undressing room" was 2,000 people. Continuing his narration, Nyiszli writes:

*"SS soldiers arrive and immediately the order rings out: everyone is to undress completely, ten minutes! They stand petrified, old folks, grandfathers, grandmothers, children, wives, husbands. Modest matrons and maidens look at one another helplessly. Perhaps they did not understand the German words? But already the order is repeated! Its tone is more impatient now, almost menacing!"*

However, the victims were Hungarians, most of whom could not understand the German words. The scene allegedly took place after Nyiszli had spent his first night at the crematorium, if we follow his fictitious chronology, hence in early June 1944. At that time, however, no Jewish transport arrived from Germany.

*"They begin to undress with difficulty. A group sent from the Sonderkommando assists in the undressing of the aged, the lame and the mad. In ten minutes everyone is naked."*

That 3,000 people could undress within 10 minutes in a room of merely 392.5 m<sup>2</sup>, or seven to eight persons per square meter, is indeed nothing short of difficult. But of course, Nyiszli had in mind a room 200 meters long with a vastly larger surface area.

*"The SS clear a path through the dense crowd to the oak double doors located at the end of the room. They open them! The crowd surges through them into the next room, also brightly lit. This room is the same size as the undressing room, but there are no benches and hooks here."*

Since Nyiszli claimed that the "undressing room" was 200 meters long, this would also have been the length of the alleged "gas chamber." The blueprints of Crematoria II (and III) give for Morgue #1 (*Leichenkeller I*), the alleged "gas chamber," a size of 30 m × 7 m, in total 210 m<sup>2</sup>. Here Nyiszli's estimating "error" amounts to a factor of 6.7! In his response to Rassinier's criticism, Nyiszli conceded that he might have been wrong about the sizes of the rooms, but when "correcting" it, he still gave a size that was way too large:

*"It could therefore be that the halls were only 100 or 120 meters long. This does not change anything about the facts, and can not possibly challenge the authenticity of the data."* (see here on page 176)

This does change a lot, however, because it indicates that Nyiszli never set foot in these "rooms."

Based on Nyiszli's description, the "undressing room" and the "gas chamber" were two adjoining rooms; from the first, one entered directly into the second through "oak double doors" located at the end of the room. The blueprints of these crematoria, and in particular Blueprint 109/15 of September 24, 1943, show that at the end opposite of the entry stairs, Morgue #2 narrowed down to a corridor just 1.97 meters wide and 5.30 meters long. At the end of this corridor was a two-leaf door measuring 2.10 m × 1.80 m, which gave access to the vestibule (*Vorraum*). This vestibule had on one side the corpse chute (*Leichenrutsche*) in the center of a staircase leading outdoors, and on the other the elevator (*Aufzug*) leading into the ground-level furnace room. Morgue #1 was arranged perpendicular to Morgue #2 and was accessed through a double door.



*"In the center of the room, at a distance of thirty meters from each other, a number of columns stretch from the concrete floor to the ceiling. These are not support columns, but are rather quadrangular tinplate pipes, their sides pierced throughout with holes like a grill."*

Since in Nyiszli's mind the room was 200 meters long, there would have been at least six of these "columns" at a distance of 30 meters from each other. According to orthodox holocaust historiography, there are said to have been four devices for introducing Zyklon B. The most important witness described them as wire-mesh columns with a square section of about 70 cm × 70 cm and a height of about 3 m.<sup>250</sup> This wire-mesh structure was represented by Pressac in a fairly accurate drawing.<sup>251</sup> Nyiszli's testimony is therefore irreconcilable with the official version.

*"At that moment, an automobile roars outside. A luxury model Red Cross car arrives. An SS officer and an S.D.G. Sanitätsdienstgefreiter, a non-commissioned medical officer, step out. The medic has four green-colored canisters in his hands."*

*They advance across the lawn to where some low concrete chimneys emerge from the ground at a distance of thirty meters from one another. They head for the first chimney. They don gas masks. They lift the chimney cover; it too is made of concrete. They punch open the patented top of one of the canisters and pour the contents, a substance consisting of bean-sized lilac-colored granules, into the opening. The material poured out is Cyclon, or chlorine in granular form; it immediately gives off gas as soon as it comes into contact with air. It falls down into the perforated sheet-metal pipes into the underground room. It stays there in the pipe; it does not scatter all over. The gas immediately comes out through the holes, and within moments it fills the room crowded with people. Within five minutes it kills them!"*

Had the room been 200 meters long, it would have had at least six columns and just as many "concrete chimneys," but there were only four cans of Zyklon B, and into each "opening" the contents of one can was poured. At least 2 "chimneys" therefore would have remained unused.

Pressac claimed that the four "*Drahtnetzeinschiebevorrichtungen*" (wire-mesh push-in devices) mentioned in the basement inventory attached to the hand-over protocol of Crematorium II dated March 31, 1943 are proof of the existence of Zyklon-B introduction devices. The inventory also listed four "*Holzblenden*" (wooden screens or blinds), which Pressac translated as "wooden covers" allegedly used to close the chimneys.<sup>252</sup> So these alleged

<sup>250</sup> See in this regard my study "The Elusive Holes of Death," in: Rudolf/Mattogno 2017, pp. 291-407, esp. pp. 316-319, "The Testimony of Michał Kula."

<sup>251</sup> Pressac 1989, p. 487; a more precise drawing can be found in Rudolf 2017, pp. 147-158; esp. pp. 150f.

<sup>252</sup> Pressac 1989, p. 429; see in this regard Mattogno 2015a, Chapter 2.5., pp. 83-93.

"covers" of the "chimneys" were made of wood, while Nyiszli insists they were made of concrete.

It is moreover known that these devices are listed in the inventory as part of Morgue #2, the "undressing room," not Morgue #1, the alleged "gas chamber," so Pressac was forced to carry out a little sleight of hand to attribute these devices to the "gas chamber." It is furthermore known that these devices do not appear at all in the inventory of the hand-over protocol of Crematorium III of June 24, 1943.<sup>253</sup>

The abbreviation "S.D.G." (SDG) stood for *Sanitätsdienstgrad*, not *Sanitätsdienstgefreiter*, and referred to an SS medical orderly. The "Erco" gypsum pellets that were the carrier material of Zyklon B were slightly bluish, not lilac or even burgundy.

In his first statement (D45), Nyiszli described the scene as follows:

*"The heavy oak doors were shut behind them, the lights were turned off, and in a few minutes a luxury car with the Red Cross insignia arrived. A doctor with the rank of captain and his assistant unloaded four metal containers weighing approximately 1 kg each. They removed the four concrete lids covering the ventilation shafts leading to the underground bunker; they put on their gas masks, punctured the lid of the metal containers, and dumped the bean-sized, purple [or rather] burgundy-colored chlorine pellets into the four openings. Then they immediately covered the openings with the concrete covers."*

Here the "chimneys" were therefore "ventilation shafts." If there were four of them at intervals of 30 m, they were arranged along a line of 90 meters, leaving the remaining 110 meters of the 200-m-long "gas chamber" without any Zyklon-B-introduction openings. I have already elaborated on the "chlorine" and the color of the pellets.

In his 1945 declaration, Nyiszli says (D45):

*"On one occasion I chanced to hear the SS doctor urging his assistant: 'Gib schon das Fressen den Juden!' ['Give the fodder to the Jews!']"*

In the 1948 version, this phrase has a small variation (TVN):

*"Gib schon schneller das Fressen den Juden!"* (Make haste giving the Jews their fodder!)

A similar phrase is mentioned by the witness Henryk Tauber. It should be noted, however that according to him the Zyklon-B cans were brought with the Red-Cross car by Mengele and *Rottenführer* Scheimetz.<sup>254</sup>

*"I remember that once Mengele urged Scheimetz to feed the victims more quickly who were in the gas chamber, because then they had to go to Katowice. Then he told him verbatim: 'Schmeimetz, gib ihnen das Fressen, sie sollen*

<sup>253</sup> RGVA, 502-2-54, Inventory, "KGL 30a Kellergeschoss."

<sup>254</sup> Protocol of the interrogation of H. Tauber, May 24, 1945, in front of Investigating Judge Jan Sehn. Höss Trial, Vol. 11, p. 19 (140).

*direkt nach Kattowitz fahren' (Scheimetz give them the fodder, they must drive directly to Kattowitz)."*

This Scheimetz was also mentioned by the witness Szlama Dragon.<sup>255</sup>

*"The Zyklon was poured into the chambers through the opening by various SS men, one of whom was called Scheimetz."*

Scheimetz is a fictional character, whose existence is not substantiated by any document. Piper mentions him in his list of "Fumigators, oderlies and other SS functionaries," but with a simple reference to Tauber's just-quoted phrase (Piper 2000, p. 241). Aleksander Lasik, in his well-documented article "The staff of the SS health service in the Auschwitz-Birkenau Concentration Camp during the years 1940-1945" lists in alphabetical order 184 names, and dedicates an entire page to Josef Mengele (Lasik 1997, p. 314), but he does not mention Scheimetz at all.

The anecdote was therefore part of the Auschwitz lore, but the imaginary Scheimetz was known only to such witnesses as remained at Auschwitz when the Germans withdrew, or returned to it after the Soviets had arrived.

That the sentence under examination was indeed part of the propaganda baggage of the time<sup>256</sup> can also be gleaned from Filip Friedman's text, who right after the war was director of the Central Commission of Jewish History in Poland. In his booklet on Auschwitz, which appeared in 1945, Friedman wrote:<sup>257</sup>

*"Through the small window [spy hole] an SS doctor observed the room [the gas chamber]. When he thought that the victims were now heated up enough for the action of the gas, he shouted to the helper the order: 'Na! gib ihnen schon zu fressen!'" (Now, give them to feed on already!) Then the assistant threw 3 cans of cyklon into each of the hollow wire-mesh columns. The gas acted fast enough, death mostly occurred already within 3-5 minutes."*

As I mentioned earlier, for Nyiszli the doctor who carried out the gassing was not Mengele. In his invented deposition at the I.G. Farben Trial, he listed "four Auschwitz criminals who had not yet been put on trial." The first was "an SS captain of the health service" who, together "with a non-commissioned officer" brought "the gas cans to the crematoria with a luxury Red Cross vehicle"; Mengele was the third. Nyiszli repeatedly reiterated the distinction between Mengele and the official "gaser":

*"(9) [...] The green enamelled cans were brought on site with a Red-Cross car by an SS Hauptsturmführer and an SDG, and thrown by them into the gas chambers. [...]"*

<sup>255</sup> Protocol of the interrogation of Szlama Dragon, Feb. 26, 1945. GARF, 7021-108-12, p. 184.

<sup>256</sup> To be clear, I use the term "propaganda" (and the adjective "propagandistic") in the sense of black propaganda, what the Germans called "*Gräuelpropaganda*."

<sup>257</sup> Friedman 1945, p. 69. The underscored phrase is missing in the English translation of the book of the following year (1946, p. 54).

10) [...] *At this time a black-painted red-cross car arrived. An SS officer and an SDG alighted from the car. They held 4 green enameled cans in their hands.*" (NI-11710)

*"The selecting physician was an SS Hauptsturmführer named Josef Mengele, who at that time served as a medical officer at the Auschwitz Concentration Camp and the 40 sub-camps in the area."* (TVN)

Nyiszli claims that "within moments it [the gas] fills the room crowded with people"; that the gas "fills the available space very quickly (light gas)" (TVN); and (NI-11710):

*"10 ) [...] The granules did not spread out in the gas chamber because they fell down through perforated pipes, and they immediately released gas due to contact with the air."*

This requires the instantaneous development of the gas, on the basis of the false assumption that it forms immediately as a consequence of its contact with the oxygen of the air. From experiments carried out in 1942 we learn that only 57% of the hydrogen cyanide soaked in the Erco gypsum pellets evaporated within the first hour at a temperature of 15°C; 96.4% had evaporated after two hours, and 100% after three (Irmscher 1942, p. 36). At temperatures above the boiling point (about 26°C), the evaporation of the gas was undoubtedly faster, but still not instantaneous.

On the action of the gas, Nyiszli stated:

*"Within five minutes it kills them!"*

In his contrived deposition he stated (TVN):

*"death occurred in a state of unconsciousness due to paralysis of the respiratory center, depending on the weather (in rainy, humid weather, there is more oxygen in the air) in 2-5 minutes."*

As air's humidity increases, the oxygen's partial pressure actually *decreases*. From experimental data collected by Scott Christianson on executions in hydrogen-cyanide gas chambers at prisons in the United States, death of the convicts occurred on average after 9 minutes (Christianson 2010, p. 216), with a hydrogen-cyanide concentration of 3,200 parts per million (about 3.5 g/m<sup>3</sup>).<sup>258</sup> In this case, however, the gas developed immediately, because these U.S. gas chambers did not use Zyklon B. Hydrogen-cyanide vapors were generated by the chemical reaction between sodium cyanide and sulfuric acid. Had Zyklon B been used, execution times would have been considerably longer. Nyiszli was ignorant of the chemical, physical and toxicological characteristics of Zyklon B (hydrogen cyanide), so he invented a totally senseless gassing scenario:

<sup>258</sup> Declaration by F.A. Leuchter during the Second Zündel Trial. Lensky 2010, p. 388.

*"The bodies do not lie all over the length and breadth of the room but rather in a single, story-high heap. The explanation for this is that the fallen gas granules first permeate the air layer above the concrete floor with their deadly vapors and only gradually saturate the higher layers of air in the room. This forces the unfortunate victims to trample each other, to climb over one another. In the higher layers the gas thus reaches them later. What a terrible struggle for life must take place there, and yet the time won is only one or two minutes in all! Could they but think about it, they would know that they are trampling their parents, their wives, their children in vain, but they cannot! What they do is a survival reflex! I notice that at the bottom of the tower of bodies lie the babies, children, women and aged, at the top, the stronger men."*

This description occurs in Nyiszli's first statement of 1945 and also in his affidavit of October 8, 1947:

*"Instead of being spread out evenly on the bunker floor, they were piled up on top of each other one story high, explained by the fact that the chlorine gas reached the higher [air] layers with some delay."* (D45).

*"(10) [...] Since the gas granules fell on the floor, the gas developed first in the lower layers of air and then gradually rose higher. This is how I explain that after the termination of the gassing the corpses were not scattered out in the room but were lying in tower-shaped piles. The stronger ones probably threw the weaker ones down, climbed on those lying below in order to prolong their life by reaching [air] layers still free of gas. This way women, children, and the elderly usually ended up lying at the bottom."* (NI-11710)

Nyiszli cooked up this story based on two dreamed-up assumptions. The first is that the gas used was chlorine, which is 2.45 times as dense as air, meaning that it is almost two and a half times heavier than air. During a hypothetical gassing, it would indeed behave according to Nyiszli's narration: it would first fill the lower air layers and would gradually fill the room from bottom to top, like a pool that gradually fills with water. In reality, however, the density of hydrogen-cyanide gas relative to air is 0.97, so it is insignificantly *lighter* than air. In a 1942 disinfestation manual we read (Frickhinger 1942, p. 206):

*"Unlike carbon disulfide and other gases that are heavier than air, hydrogen cyanide is lighter than air, so during the fumigation of a house, it permeates the entire building to its most remote corner in a very short time,<sup>[259]</sup> thus reaching even the most remote hiding places of the vermin."*

Moreover, Nyiszli contradicts his own narrative, because he says that the gas developed "immediately," that it filled the room "within moments," filling "the available space very quickly (light gas)," and that the gas killed "humans within a few seconds" (his book, Chapter XIX), which is exactly the opposite of filling the room gradually, layer by layer.

---

<sup>259</sup> This refers to gaseous hydrogen cyanide.

The second false assumption is that the “gas chamber” was 200 meters long; Nyiszli never mentions any width, but even a relatively narrow width of only 5 or 6 meters would have resulted in a surface area of 1,000 to 1,200 m<sup>2</sup>, such that 3,000 people could at least move about freely. In reality, however, Morgue #1 measured only 30 m × 7 m, or 210 m<sup>2</sup> (from which we have to deduct the seven reinforced-concrete support columns with a total of just over 1 m<sup>2</sup>). It follows that 3,000 victims would have been packed into that room at a density of 14 people per m<sup>2</sup>, which in itself is impossible, but even if one could accomplish it somehow, the victims could have barely move even the fingers of their hands. Not only that, but the victims would have been tightly pressed against the perforated wire-mesh columns, thus covering to a large degree the holes in the lower part of the columns. Hence, the evaporating gas would have mostly dissipated into the room through the columns’ upper holes, filling it from top to bottom, rather than from bottom to top.

The scenario of the struggle among the victims and that of the tower-shaped piles of corpses is therefore purely imaginary.

In this context, when describing the corpses, Nyiszli moreover wrote that their heads were “swollen and blue,” that there was a “Bluish-lilac complexion of the whole body, cyanosis.” (TVN) It is known, however, that “The skin of hydrogen-cyanide victims often shows a pinkish-reddish discoloration, very similar to those typical for carbon-monoxide poisonings” (Trunk 2011, p. 40). A “strong swelling of the head” isn’t an effect of hydrogen cyanide either.

From this it can be deduced that Nyiszli never saw bodies of people gassed with Zyklon B. Otherwise, he would not have failed to expound a learned medical disquisition on this phenomenon of reddish skin.

After the gassing, the room was ventilated, about which Nyiszli wrote:

*“Twenty minutes later, the electric ventilators are switched on to remove the gas. The doors open. [...]*

*The modern, exhaustor-system fans quickly clear the room of gas, but it remains present, if in small quantities, trapped in cracks, among the dead. Even hours later breathing it provokes a suffocating cough.”*

But Morgue #1, the alleged “gas chamber,” had only one door. In the 1945 declaration the scenario is different (D45):

*“After thirty minutes, the ventilators were switched on, members of the Sonderkommando on duty opened the door of the gas chamber, and there were lying 2000 corpses covered in blood (from bleeding noses) and feces.”*

Let’s note first that no such thing as an “exhaustor-system fan” exists. Exhaustor is simply synonymous with an air-extraction fan or blower. Morgue #1 of Crematorium II and III of Birkenau was equipped with an air-intake and an air-exhaust system (*Be- und Entlüftungsanlage*) with one blower each, hence two altogether, which was evidently unknown to Nyiszli.

Then the corpses were rinsed off:

*"The Sonderkommando group stands around the mountain of corpses in tall rubber boots and flushes it with powerful streams of water."*

This is yet another invented scene based on the assumption that the "gas chamber" was large enough not only to contain 3,000 corpses, but that these could then actually be surrounded without difficulty by the *Sonderkommando* men. Instead they would have found from the door onward a dense layer of 14 corpses per square meter.

After this, the corpses were dragged away:

*"They loop straps around the wrists below the spasmodically clenched fists, and so drag the bodies of the dead, still slippery with water, to the elevators in the next room."*

In contrast to this, Nyiszli stated in his 1945 declaration (D45):

*"A trained unit dragged the corpses by hooking the curved end of a walking cane into their mouths."*

Although it is true that the first quote refers to the removal of corpses from the "gas chamber" while the second refers to the transport of corpses to the furnaces, in his book Nyiszli states that the belt system was also used in the furnace room:

*"Once again, loops go around the wrists of the dead."*

What demented person would think of dragging a corpse with a walking cane? Yet this stupidity found other supporters: two self-proclaimed members of the *Sonderkommando*. One of them, Dov Paisikovic, spoke about it in 1964 in relation to the alleged "Bunker 5":<sup>260</sup>

*"[Moll] handed us many walking canes, with the handle bent in an arc, and showed us how we had to work: he put the bent end of the cane under the neck of a corpse and dragged it behind him across the ground. Since then we had to do the job like this."*

In 2007, Shlomo Venezia attributed the walking-cane system to Crematorium III (Venezia 2007, p. 81):

*"In the end, the easiest thing was to use a cane and pull the body from under the nape. It is shown in a drawing by David Olère. With all the old people sent to die, we certainly did not have a lack of canes."*

The drawing in question shows the entrance of the alleged gas chamber in the background, with the door open; an inmate is at work at the entrance, while another in the foreground drags the body of a woman with his left hand, and with his right hand a child by its arm toward the furnaces (see Illustration 1). On the left side of the drawing one can see the edge of the last triple-muffle furnace. In this drawing, it is evident that the instrument with which the depicted inmate drags the woman's corpse cannot be a walking cane, because

<sup>260</sup> Deposition of D. Paisikovic of August 10, 1964. APMO, *Zespół Oświadczenia*, Vol. 44, p. 88.

the instrument curves in the inmate's hand and dangles down from it. The curved end of a walking cane, however, would be lodged around the woman's neck, if we believe Venezia and Paisikovic. Hence, the tool depicted by Olère is most likely a belt tightened around the woman's neck.

The *Auschwitz Album* contains several photographs depicting SS men on the Birkenau ramp equipped with a walking stick.<sup>261</sup> Perhaps this fact inspired the aforementioned rumor.

From the "gas chamber," the corpses were brought to the furnace room:

*"Four large mechanical freight elevators are in operation here. They pile the dead onto these, twenty, twenty-five to an elevator. An alarm bell informs the operator that it can ascend! The elevator stops at the cremation hall of the crematorium, where its massive doors open automatically. The towing Kommando is waiting for it there. Once again, loops go around the wrists of the dead."*

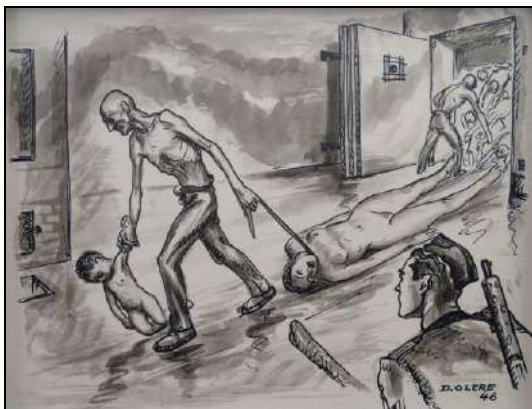
In reality, Crematoria II and III were equipped with only one elevator each that ran in a shaft of 2.76 m × 1.43 m.<sup>262</sup>

In his first statement, Nyiszli affirmed (D45):

*"The Sonderkommando washed the corpses with a hose, and the bodies were then loaded in an elevator and hoisted to the furnace room."*

If he really knew that only one elevator ("lift," plural "liftek") existed in Crematoria II and III, one must assume that he intentionally lied in his book.<sup>263</sup>

Here it is pertinent to briefly characterize the elevators of Crematorium II and III of Birkenau. In Crematorium II, a freight elevator had been installed, ordered from the "Management of the metal workshop" (*WL Schlosserei*) on February 15, 1943. Here is the text of the order:<sup>264</sup>



**Illustration 1:** David Olère's artistic license to distort reality: the gas chambers directly annexed to the furnace room (Pressac 1989, p. 258).

<sup>261</sup> Freyer *et al.* 1983, Photos 38 (p. 82), 39 (p. 85), 43 (p. 89), 57 (p. 101), 58f. (p. 102), 60 (p. 103).

<sup>262</sup> Auschwitz Construction Office Blueprint No. 933 of January 19, 1942, and Blueprint No. 109/15 of September 24, 1943. Pressac 1989, pp. 280f. and 327.

<sup>263</sup> On the issue of the elevators see Mattogno 2015a, Chapter 1.9, pp. 49-54.

<sup>264</sup> Höss Trial, Vol. 11, pp. 82f.



*"February 15, 1943, PoW camp,<sup>[265]</sup> Crematorium I [=II], BW 30. Object: 1 flat-plate elevator for min. 300 kg payload incl. installation of respective reel device, cable and motor as well as guide-rail. Order no. 2563/:146:/ of January 26, 1943 from Central Construction Office. Order taken over from former detainee metal workshop, terminated March 13, 1943."*

A Polish photograph of 1945 shows that this freight elevator was very rudimentary (Pressac 1989, Photo 20, p. 488). It was installed by the Central Construction Office in Crematorium II.

On February 28, 1943, the Auschwitz Central Construction Office ordered from the Topf Company two elevator systems (*Aufzugmaschinen*) complete with safety gear (*Fangvorrichtungen*) measuring 2.10 m × 1.35 m × 1.80 m at a price of 9,371 RM each, hence 18,742 RM total. These were the final devices, which were expected to be delivered within seven months. This was followed by a second order:<sup>266</sup>

*"1 patented Demag electric elevator for 750 kg capacity, single cable, to be raised to 1500 kg capacity by addition of second cable, at 968 RM. This Demag electric elevator must be supplied at once, as it will have to be used pending the arrival of the elevators mentioned in item 1."*

This provisional device corresponded to Drawing No. 5037 by the firm Gustav Linse Spezialfabrik f.[ür] Aufzüge (special factory for elevators) of Erfurt, drawn on January 25, 1943 with the heading "*Lasten-Aufzug bis 750 kg Tragkraft für Zentralbauleitung der Waffen SS, Auschwitz/OS*" (Freight elevator up to 750 kg capacity for the Central Construction Office of the Waffen SS, Auschwitz/Upper Silesia; Pressac 1993, Doc. 25, unpaginated).

On May 11, 1943, the Central Construction Office asked the Topf Company with an urgent telegram for the presence of their chief engineer Prüfer, who also had to bring along the "installation drawing for provisional freight elevator Demag for [Crematorium] III" ("*Montagezeichnung für prov. Demagaufzug III*").<sup>267</sup> This device was installed in Crematorium III by Topf's fitter Heinrich Messing sometime between May 17 and June 6, 1943 (Pressac 1989, p. 370).

In an urgent telegram by the Central Construction Office to the Topf Company dated May 12, 1944, we read:<sup>268</sup>

*"[The] installation of the 2 elevators cannot be done now. Installation will be done later, together with installation of de-aeration equipment in [Crematoria] 4 and 5."*

However, the final elevators were evidently never installed.

<sup>265</sup> *Kriegsgefangenenlager*: PoW camp; official name of the Birkenau Camp until March 31, 1944, when it was renamed "Lager II Birkenau." File memo by Kirschneck of March 31, 1944. AGK, NTN, 94, p. 60.

<sup>266</sup> APMO, BW 30/34, p. 69.

<sup>267</sup> APMO, BW 30/34, p. 44.

<sup>268</sup> RGVA, 502-1-313, p. 10.

It follows that, in the summer of 1944, Crematorium II was still equipped with the rudimentary freight elevator with a capacity of merely 300 kg. Its doors did not open automatically, and it could not transport 20-25 corpses at a time, but only five, assuming, with Pressac and van Pelt, an average weight of 60 kg per body (Pressac 1989, p. 475; van Pelt 2002, pp. 470, 472).

Hence, from Nyiszli's perspective, this freight elevator would have had to do every day ( $3,000 \div 5 =$ ) 600 upward and downward journeys, or 1,200 journeys within 24 hours. With 1,440 minutes in a day, this amounts to just over a minute per load without any interruption! Or two minutes and 24 seconds for loading, hoisting up, unloading, lowering back down...

### 3.3.3. The Girl Who Survived the "Gassing"

In Chapter XX of his book, Nyiszli tells the story of a girl found miraculously alive in the "gas chamber" after a gassing. The Chapter starts as follows:

*"In the gas chamber of Crematorium I, 3000 corpses are lying in a heap. The Sonderkommando men are already picking apart the dead bodies clasped together in the tower of corpses."*

While extracting the corpses, *Sonderkommando* men found a girl still alive and immediately alerted Nyiszli:

*"I grab my always-packed doctor's bag and race with him down to the gas chamber. Directly next to the wall near the entrance to the enormous room, half-buried by corpses, a young woman's body writhes and gives off gasping noises. The men of the gas Kommando stand around me in agitation. Such a thing has never happened in their horrible work! We free the still-moving body from the corpses lying on top of it. I take it in my arms. I carry it, the slight body of a young girl, into the room next to the gas chamber. Here the gas Kommando was accustomed to change for their work."*

This place did not exist. The only room "next to the gas chamber" was the vestibule (*Vorraum*), where the freight elevator was located.

*"I pull out my injection kit and I give the scarcely breathing, unconscious girl three injections one after another in her arms. [...] As a result of the injections I gave, her pulse is already beating quite noticeably. I wait patiently: the injections have not yet been completely absorbed, but I already see that in just a few more minutes she will come around. And so it happens."*

This story must be examined in the light of Nyiszli's important statement that Zyklon B was "Chlorine in granular form." And the symptoms Nyiszli attributes to the girl are precisely those of chlorine intoxication:

*"Something burns her eyes, stifles her throat"* (MBV, Chapter XX)

In fact, the "inhalation of chlorine gas" produces these very symptoms according to an expert manual (Olson 1999, p. 142):

*"One may immediately experience burning of the eyes, nose, and throat, accompanied by coughing."*

It follows from this that Nyiszli treated an unconscious girl allegedly intoxicated by hydrogen cyanide with an antidote for chlorine poisoning, and yet, despite this, the girl recovered!

Keeping in mind that Nyiszli was a physician, what did he inject into the girl? In his book, he occasionally shows off his knowledge in the medical field with an annoying conceitedness, creating especially long excursus that have no relation with his alleged experience at Auschwitz, but here, where it matters, he limits himself to speaking generically about "injections."

At that time, the remedies used against hydrogen-cyanide poisoning were injections of stimulants, such as lobeline and caffeine, and sulfur-containing substances, such as sodium thiosulfate and sodium tetrathionate (Peters 1933, p. 74). He evidently knew nothing about this, so he would not have been able to save the girl.

Nyiszli told *Oberscharführer* Mussfeld the story of the surviving girl:

*"I sketch for him the scenes that this child suffered through in the undressing room and before the death in the gas chamber. When everything turned to darkness around her, she too inhaled a bit of the cyklon fumes, but only a bit, because her frail body, at a push from the crowd in its death throes, fell face first into a small space on the damp concrete floor. This small bit of humidity prevented the gas from choking her lungs. You should know that cyklon gas is not effective in a humid medium!"*

The scene is a literary incongruity, because the girl, being merely semi-conscious, could not have told Nyiszli that story, so Nyiszli must have read her mind!

*"Clearly a veil of fog still clouds her understanding! In some more-lucid patch of her young brain she remembers a long line of wagons with which she arrived here."*

When she regained consciousness, she only knew that she was 16, and had arrived with her parents with a transport from Transylvania.

The scene, for Nyiszli, took place in an imaginary room 200 meters long with a huge surface, enough to allow the victims to fall on the floor. But, as I explained earlier, its 3,000 victims would have been crammed into a room of merely 210 square meters, at a density of 14 persons per square meter. How, then, could the girl have *fallen*?

The girl's survival of a gassing lasting 25 minutes must be considered truly miraculous. For Nyiszli, as we have seen earlier, the death of the victims occurred after at most 5 minutes, after which a mechanical ventilation of another 20 minutes was carried out. The quantity of Zyklon B used for a "gassing" in Crematoria II and III is said to have been 7 kg for 1,500 people, or so Rudolf

Höss claimed,<sup>269</sup> or 4 kg, if we follow Nyiszli, although it was chlorine for him.

For the sake of the argument, let's assume the use of 4 kg of hydrogen cyanide. With 3,000 victims in the actual room, the available volume of air in it would have been about 326 m<sup>3</sup> (considered an average weight of the victims of 60 kg and a density of the human body equal to 1 kg/Liter). The theoretical final concentration of hydrogen cyanide, after all had evaporated from the carrier, would have been (4,000 g ÷ 326 m<sup>3</sup> =) 12.27 g/m<sup>3</sup> or about 9,500 ppm (parts per million), which is more than 31 times the concentration of 300 ppm which expert literature describes as "rapidly lethal" (van Pelt 2002, p. 366).<sup>270</sup>

Leaving aside complicated calculations that would always be hypothetical to some degree, two fixed points must be assumed. The first is the fact that, in the execution gas chambers of some U.S. states, death of the executees occurred on average after some 9 minutes with an instantly present hydrogen cyanide concentration of 3,200 ppm.

The second is a calculation by Robert Jan van Pelt concerning the average concentration of hydrogen cyanide absorbed by a hypothetical victim in a gas chamber with an initial concentration of 10,000 ppm and a mechanical ventilation of 8,000 m<sup>3</sup>/hr of air (this is actually the wrong capacity, the correct one being 4,800 m<sup>3</sup>/hr) which corrects the results by decreasing the concentration of hydrogen cyanide in the inhaled air. Despite this, it turns out that this concentration is still some 726 ppm after 15 minutes, more than twice the rapidly lethal one (van Pelt, *ibid.*). These 15 minutes refer to the time after the ventilation was switched on, to which we must add the 5 minutes of the actual "gassing." At the end of these 5 minutes, when ventilation begins, van Pelt calculates a hydrogen-cyanide concentration of 3,805 ppm, almost thirteen times greater than the quickly lethal concentration. One could rightly argue that, as I noted earlier, the evaporation of hydrogen cyanide from Zyklon B was much slower, meaning that the maximum concentration would have been reached only after hours (see Mattogno 2015b, p. 108, and Document 25, p. 185), but this would further invalidate Nyiszli's story.

The story of the miraculous survival of the girl is also contradictory, because according to Nyiszli, the bodies were regularly washed down with hoses after each "gassing," so the entire floor of the room would have been permanently wet, and all those who would have found themselves on the ground, with their faces near the wet floor, would have survived if Nyiszli's moisture theory were correct, yet Nyiszli describes the girl's case as unique. Nyiszli also forgot that in his mind the gas was heavier than air and spread from bottom to top, so that the girl on the floor would have died first.

<sup>269</sup> Interrogation of R. Höss, May 14, 1946. NI-036; Affidavit of May 20, 1946. NI-034.

<sup>270</sup> As McNamara (1976) has shown, however, the lethal concentrations given in toxicological literature are based on experiments with rabbits, which cannot be transferred to humans, who have a significantly higher tolerance. See Rudolf 2017, pp. 228-234.

Finally, Nyiszli's claim that "cyklon gas is not effective in a humid medium" is not only without any basis, but it actually contradicts what he claimed elsewhere when positing that the gas developed in contact with the oxygen of the air, and that "in rainy, humid weather, there is more oxygen in the air" (TVM), meaning that, if he were right (which he isn't in any of his claims), moisture would have increased the effectiveness of Zyklon B.

### 3.3.4. Dental Gold

*"The weight in pure gold of the gold teeth and jewelry 'extracted' from the four crematoria and smelted here each day is 30-35 kilograms"* (MBV, Chapter XI)

*"every day they smelt 30-40 kilos of gold from the teeth of Jews brought here and murdered"* (MBV, Chapter XIX)

According to a propaganda message by the camp's resistance movement,

*"in the month of May [1944] alone, about 40 kg of gold and white metal were 'smelted' exclusively from the teeth extracted from the corpses."*<sup>271</sup>

By May 28, 1944, 184,049 Hungarian Jews had been deported to Auschwitz according to the report compiled the next day by László Ferency, the lieutenant colonel of the Hungarian police in charge of deportations.<sup>272</sup> Of these, about 4,500 were properly registered in Auschwitz, and many more thousands were sent without registration to the Birkenau "*Durchgangslager*" (transit camp).

Hence, from an orthodox point of view, it is impossible to establish how many of these deportees were actually "gassed." The only criterion is that of the claimed percentage of those among the deportees who were fit for labor.

In a report of May 26, 1944, Eberhard von Thadden wrote that, "according to the observations made so far, about 1/3 of the deported Jews are fit for labor deployment" ("*nach den bisherigen Feststellungen sind etwa 1/3 abtransportierten Juden arbeitseinsatzfähig*"; NG-2190).

Ernst Kaltenbrunner, in a letter dated June 30, 1944 addressed to SS *Brigadeführer* Karl Blaschke in reference to the Jews deported to Strasshof, Austria, confirmed that, "according to experience so far" ("*nach den bisherigen Erfahrungen*"), the percentage of those able to work was "estimated to be about 30%" (*schätzungsweise etwa 30%*; PS-3803). Therefore, for the sake of the orthodox argument, we may assume that some 70% of the deportees would have been gassed. Hence, of the 184,049 deportees mentioned earlier, some 128,800 would have been "gassed" immediately upon arrival. If we believe the resistance movement's figure, some 40 kg of dental and jewelry gold was

<sup>271</sup> "Sprawozdanie okresowe od 25 V 1944 - 15 VI 1944" (Report for the period of May 25, 1944 to June 15, 1944). APMO, Au D-RO/91, Vol. VII, p. 446.

<sup>272</sup> T-1163, p. 18.

extracted from these deportees, or on average ( $40 \text{ kg} \div 11 \text{ days}^{273} =$ ) 3.6 kg per day or 33.6 kg for every 100,000 persons.

The quantity mentioned by Nyiszli – some 30 to 40 kg *daily* – is therefore ten times greater than that indicated by the Auschwitz resistance movement. Of course, neither of these claims is backed up with any documentary or material evidence, hence they are both completely worthless.

In this regard, the only known facts are based upon form letters filled out by the “inmates’ dental station Auschwitz CC” (“*Häftlingszahnstation des KL Auschwitz*”) in 1942. According to them, 16,325 gold or precious-metal fillings (including the far more common amalgam fillings, which is a mixture of silver and mercury) were extracted from 2,904 corpses of registered inmates within 200 days.<sup>274</sup> However, neither the weight of the corresponding precious metals is known nor how many of them were actually made of gold (probably a minority), nor whether the extant forms of that year are complete or only partially preserved, nor the percentage of corpses that had gold fillings compared to the total number of deceased inmates of that year, which was 48,447 (47,020 inmates and 1,427 Soviet prisoners of war; Mattogno 2015a, Chapter 15.4.3., pp. 521-526).

The gold obtained in that way, Nyiszli claims, was smelted in Crematorium III:

*“Casting takes place in a disk-shaped graphite form about five centimeters in diameter. The weight of one gold disk is 140 grams. I know exactly. I weighed it myself on the dissection-hall scale.”* (MBV, Chapter XI)

Considering that the specific weight of gold is about  $19.3 \text{ g/cm}^3$ , a disk of 140 grams with a diameter of 5 centimeters would have a thickness of less than 4 millimeters, in practice a coin.

<sup>273</sup> Deportees had been arriving at Auschwitz during 11 consecutive days, considering that the first transports left on May 14 and arrived at Auschwitz on the 17th.

<sup>274</sup> Höss Trial, Vol. 3, p. 86.

### 3.4. The “Gassings”

#### 3.4.1. The Czech Camp

In his book, Nyiszli mentions seven separate extermination operations in the “gas chambers” and at the pyres, not including the presumed extermination of the Hungarian Jews. The first is described as follows:

*“The Czech camp was formed from fifteen thousand people brought here from the Theresienstadt ghetto. It had the character of a family camp, like the Gypsy camp. They did not undergo selection upon their arrival. Old, young, children, all in their own clothes, they were able to live a difficult but still tolerable life together. They performed no work.*

*Thus they had lived for two years, until the moment of destruction arrived for them too. K.Z. Auschwitz is an extermination camp! It is only a question of time when the final hour will strike for its inhabitants.”* (MBV, Chapter XIV)

The Birkenau *Familienlager*, which held Jewish families from the Theresienstadt ghetto, had a maximum population of around 10,000 at the beginning of July 1944 (see Mattogno 2016c, pp. 160f.). The first transports, of 2,479 and 2,528 persons respectively, left Theresienstadt on September 6, 1943, and were registered at the camp two days later (Kárný 1995, Vol. 1, p. 70). Therefore, on the day of the presumed “liquidation” of the camp – July 10, 1944 – its inhabitants had been there for around ten months, not two years. Nyiszli continues:

*“The number of inhabitants in the Czech camp on the day of the liquidation was twelve thousand. Fifteen hundred men and women still capable of work and eight doctors were selected out from among them; the rest ended up in Crematoria II and III. The next day, the Czech camp, inhabited for two years, was deserted. In Crematoria II and III also everything was still. I saw a truck loaded with ashes pull out from the crematorium and make its way in the direction of the Vistula River.*

*The camp’s numbers had been reduced by ten thousand heads, and the K.Z. archives had been increased by one piece of paper.”* (MBV, Chapter XIV)

As for the date of the “liquidation,” Nyiszli does not indicate even the month. According to Ota Kraus and Erich Kulka, to whom Danuta Czech refers as source for her account, of the 10,000 prisoners in the camp, around 3,580 were transferred to other camps at the beginning of August, so the number of presumed victims could only have been around 6,400.<sup>275</sup>

<sup>275</sup> Czech 1997, p. 656; 1989, p. 811. Czech herself fails to include 500 Czech youths mentioned by Kraus and Kulka, thus reaching the figure 3,080 instead of 3,580. For a discussion of the overall question, see Mattogno 2016c, pp. 144–167 (Chapter 6.1. “Selection and Alleged Gassing of Jews from the Family Camp”).

For Nyiszli, on the other hand, 10,000 people were “gassed” on a single day, with their bodies being cremated in Crematoria III and IV (Nyiszli’s II and III) in the course of the same day. The next day all that remained of them was ashes.

This last claim naturally is quite impossible, because the account is based on Nyiszli’s absurd assumption of a cremation capacity of 5,000 corpses per day in Crematoria II and III, and his further “error” in assuming that the cremation capacity was the same in Crematoria IV and V. In reality, of course, the crematoria of the one type (II and III) had fifteen cremation muffles each and those of the other (IV and V) had only eight. Thus, even if one were to accept the absurdly inflated number of 5,000 corpses per day for the fifteen muffles of Crematorium III, the eight muffles of Crematorium IV still would not have had the capacity to bring the total up to 10,000. And that is not even counting the fact that, as I have explained above, Nyiszli’s own “data” result in a maximum capacity of only 3,240 corpses per day for a fifteen-muffle crematorium, not 5,000 (see Section 3.2.3.).

### 3.4.2. The Jews from Corfu

From the chronological indications provided by Nyiszli in Chapter XIX of his book, it would appear that the “gassing” of the Jews from Corfu took place in the last third of September 1944. Immediately after his narration of the presumed event, which I will quote below, he observes:

*“The twelfth Sonderkommando’s life term expires in a couple of weeks anyway!”*

Since, according to Nyiszli, the “expiry date” for the *Sonderkommando* was to fall on October 6 or 7, 1944,<sup>276</sup> the date for the Corfu action presumably would have been around September 22 or 23.

With regard to the latter event, Nyiszli writes:

*“I have finished my morning rounds visiting patients. In all four of the crematoria operations are in full swing. Last night they burned the Greek Jewry of the Mediterranean island of Corfu, one of the oldest faith communities in Europe. For twenty-seven days they were hauled along, first on barges, then in closed freight cars, without food or water. When they arrived at the ramp of Auschwitz extermination camp and the wagons were opened so that they could disembark and line up for selection, no one got out! Half of them were dead and the other half were in a state of unconsciousness, dying. The entire transport, right to the last man, went to Crematorium II. All night long the*

<sup>276</sup> In Chapter XXIX, Nyiszli writes “it was the sixth of October, the second-to-last or last day of the *Sonderkommando*’s term”; in the event, it turns out to be the last of course, but in the dramatic context of earlier scenes Nyiszli could not have known that. For more on the dates surrounding the *Sonderkommando*’s “term” see Sections 3.6.1f.



*plant worked at full capacity. In the morning nothing remained of them but a great pile of dirty, ragged clothes in the crematorium courtyard. It was a heart-rending sight as it soaked in the drizzling rain. My glance wanders over the crematorium chimney: the lightning rods placed at the square chimney's four corners, all heavy iron rods, have melted from the terrible fire and are now bent downwards.*" (MBV, Chapter XIX)

In 1946, the Italian historian Gemma Volli wrote an article on the Jews of Corfu with the following preface (Volli 1946):

*"Many of the particulars of what is described in this article were told to me by Matilde Israel, deported from Corfu and miraculously saved along with two fellow countrywomen. After having been shut up for three days in the gas chamber [sic!] while the Germans, at the approach of the Russians, awaited orders from Berlin, she was taken to Germany. At the end of the war she was sent to Italy by the Allies."*

According to this *eyewitness* account, as the rest of the article then relates, the transport from Corfu contained 2,000 deportees, of whom 150 died during the journey from Piraeus to Birkenau (which lasted for *thirteen* days); ultimately, only 80 women and around 100 men survived the camps.

A single transport reached Auschwitz from Corfu (and Athens) on June 30, 1944, some three months prior to the date which can be deduced from Nyiszli's account. According to Danuta Czech's *Auschwitz Chronicle*, the transport numbered 2,044 persons, of whom 446 men and 175 women were registered in the camp; the remaining 1,423 were "gassed" (1997, p. 654; 1989, p. 809). In a separate study, Czech informs us that the journey from Greece to Auschwitz lasted about seven to nine days (Czech 1970, p. 17). Robert Rozett and Shmuel Spector's *Encyclopedia of the Holocaust* relates that the Jews of Corfu were arrested on June 9, 1944, and were transferred to Athens; from there they were then deported to Auschwitz (Rozett/Spector 2013, p. 173). Clearly the twenty-seven day-long journey claimed by Nyiszli is pure fantasy.

It goes without saying that the cremation of even 1,400 corpses in a single night in Crematorium II is absurd. On the further absurdity of the melted lightning rods on the chimney, see Section 3.2.4.

The story of the Corfu Jews appears to attract legendary embellishment, because in a 1949 article on "The Revolt of the Sondercommando at Auschwitz," Georges Wellers once wrote no less fantastically than Nyiszli (Wellers 1949, p. 17):

*"But we know that in March [sic] 1944 the Germans assigned 400 Jews from Corfu to the Sondercommando [sic], and that the latter collectively refused the work that was demanded of them. They were immediately exterminated."*

### 3.4.3. The Gypsy Camp (*Zigeuner-Familienlager*)

Nyiszli's description of this episode occurs in Chapter XXV of his book:

*"The hour of annihilation arrived for the 4500 inhabitants of the Gypsy camp as well. The measures taken were the same as for the liquidation of the Czech camp."*

The prisoners, according to Nyiszli, were all exterminated without exception:

*"All through the night the chimneys of Crematoria I and II spewed flame from themselves. Their glare lit up the entire camp! The bustling Gypsy camp has become silent and empty. [...] The fires had gone out by morning. In each crematorium courtyard there arose a small, silvery, glistening mound formed from the victims' ashes."*

In Nyiszli's recounting, this "gassing" is subsequent to that of the Jews of Corfu (last third of September 1944), but other indications are contradictory. The nearest chronological reference point Nyiszli provides comes in the previous chapter, where he writes, "I have been in the *Sonderkommando* for three months" – but that would place the incident at the beginning of September, *before* the presumed extermination of the Jews of Corfu!

The "official" date is August 2, 1944, when 2,897 Gypsies are supposed to have been "gassed." The event, as I have demonstrated elsewhere, is entirely fictitious (Mattogno 2016c, pp. 167-172).

As for Nyiszli's claim that 4,500 bodies were cremated in a single night in Crematoria II and III, this number evidently does not derive from eyewitness observation, but is just another extrapolation from the absurd premise that each crematorium had a daily capacity of 5,000 bodies. If Crematoria II and III had a combined capacity of 10,000 bodies per day, then they could have cremated 4,500 in one night. If...

### 3.4.4. Camp C (BIIC)

What Nyiszli calls Camp C was more properly Sector BIIC of the Birkenau Camp, consisting of 32 residential barracks. From contemporary documents it emerges that, as of June 1944, some 1,000-1,200 Hungarian Jewish women were housed in each barrack, so the total population of the sector was somewhere around 35,000 persons. Other Jewish women were housed in Sector BIII (see Mattogno 2007, pp. 12-17).

Nyiszli is rather more generous with his estimates:

*"Located next to the Czech camp is Camp C, the camp for Hungarian women; the number of its inhabitants often reaches 60,000, despite the transports transferred each day to more-distant camps."* (MBV, Chapter XV)

*"The majority of the Hungarians, so I have heard, are in Camp 'C.' There might be 50,000 of them."*<sup>277</sup> (MBV, Chapter XXVII)

With regard to the fate of these prisoners, he writes:

*"For four months the inhabitants of Camp 'C' had lived before the gates of the crematoria and it took ten days before those going to their deaths had all passed through them. The souls had departed from forty-five thousand tormented bodies, and over Camp 'C,' the temporary home of so many bearers of tragedy, there now falls an immense silence!"* (MBV, Chapter XXVIII)

As for the date of this presumed ten-day event, Nyiszli offers a fairly precise chronological setting:

*"The twelfth Sonderkommando has already used up three and a half months of its fixed four-month lifespan. The sand is running quickly in the hourglass of our lives; the time is two weeks now!"* (MBV, Chapter XXVIII)

This corresponds to around 22 September 1944. The "liquidation" itself lasts ten days, until around 2 October. At the beginning of the next chapter, Nyiszli mentions the date as October 6, so this fictitious dating at least has a certain internal coherence. The dating also means, however, that this "liquidation" would have to be contemporaneous with that of the Jews of Corfu (which, as we have seen earlier, must also be placed in the same week of September on the basis of Nyiszli's claims) despite the latter incident appearing much earlier in the book's narrative (Chapter XIX).

Irena Strzelecka and Piotr Setkiewicz, in a study of the development of the Auschwitz Camp, report that, as of June 1944, Sectors BIIC and BIII ("Mexiko") functioned as Birkenau's "Transit Camps" (*Durchgangslager*), where Jewish men and women, particularly those from Hungary, were housed after being received into the camp without registration (Strzelecka/Setkiewicz, pp. 98f.). Their presumption that this came about because the SS, on account of the large number of arriving transports, was unable to perform selections right away and that the area thus was a "waiting room for the gas" is entirely unfounded, because, as I shall make clear below, the prisoners in the transit camp had indeed already undergone selection and were all found fit for labor. Equally unfounded are the presumed selections for the "gas chambers" alleged to have been carried out on these prisoners in October 1944. Camp Sector BIIC was liquidated (*i.e.*, closed) in early November 1944 when the 1,154 Jewish women still housed there were transferred to Sector BI.

The Birkenau transit camp was in reality a "waiting room" for transports of unregistered prisoners to other camps. On July 14, 1944, the supervisor of the prisoners' clothing stores (*Häftl. Bekleidungs-Kammern*) at Birkenau wrote a

<sup>277</sup> Curiously, former inmate Otto Wolken, who provided important documentary material to Polish judge Jan Sehn at the trial of Rudolf Höss in 1947, affirmed that Sector BIII of Birkenau was occupied by "50,000 Hungarian girls" (*50000 ungarischen Mädchen*). AGK, NTN, 88 (Höss Trial, Vol. 6), Annex 1, "Lager-Bilder," p. 46.

letter to the clothing department of the camp administration, in which he noted that, from May 16 to July 14, 1944 some forty-eight transports had departed Birkenau with altogether 45,132 prisoners.<sup>278</sup> The transports originated in the transit camp, where the prisoners had previously stayed for two to three weeks. As a result of these transfers, the camp gradually emptied out. As of October 3, 1944, 17,202 female inmates remained in the transit camp, all of whom were then formally admitted into the population of the Birkenau women's camp.<sup>279</sup>

According to a list generally attributed to Lejb Langfus, 14,200 female prisoners from Sector BIIC were "gassed" between October 9 and 21, 1944;<sup>280</sup> curiously, Danuta Czech, who cites this document in her account in the *Auschwitz Chronicle*, only finds 11,707 in it. As an examination of the "Strength Reports" ("*Stärkemeldungen*") for the Birkenau women's camp for the same period shows, however, recorded changes in the prisoner force of the sector in no way support these numbers. Even the appearance of prisoners numbered under the heading "S.B." (*Sonderbehandlung*) does not support them: if this latter term had in fact been a code word for "gassing" (which is not the case), there still would only have been 858 women gassed in all.<sup>281</sup>

Turning again to Nyiszli we thus can see that his claim of the extermination of 45,000 women prisoners from Sector BIIC is a simple historical delirium.

It remains only to ask why, according to Nyiszli, ten days were necessary for the presumed extermination of 45,000 prisoners. The answer is found in the following passage:

*"Dr. Mengele carried out his decision. The liquidation of Camp 'C' began. Fifty trucks requisitioned for this purpose brought the victims to the crematorium every evening in groups of four thousand. The long line of floodlit trucks made for a terrible spectacle as they turned in to the crematorium courtyard with their cargo, frenzied and screaming in terror or paralyzed into silence by the fear of death. One after another, before the entranceway leading below ground, they unloaded the already-naked unfortunates, and these were then driven down into the gas chamber."* (MBV, Chapter XXVIII)

The entire extermination action thus was perpetrated in a single crematorium, namely, the one in which Nyiszli himself was housed, Crematorium II. As in the case of the Gypsy camp, the claimed duration of the process is the result of a simple, nonsensical calculation: since Crematorium II could cremate 5,000

<sup>278</sup> AGK, NTN, 88, pp. 111-113. Important parts of the letter in Mattogno 2007, pp. 12-14.

<sup>279</sup> APMO, Stärkemeldung [Strength Report], AuII-FKL, D-AuII-3a, p. 53a.

<sup>280</sup> The list published in Mattogno 20176c, p. 136, has one transport of 1,000 missing, hence it shows an erroneous total of only 13,200.

<sup>281</sup> See Mattogno 2016c, pp. 135f., for a discussion of Langfus and Czech's claims in the light of the *Stärkemeldungen*, and Chapter 7.5., pp. 187-202, on "'S.B.'" in the Census Reports of the Women's Camp."

corpses per day according to Nyiszli, the “gassing” and cremation of 45,000 persons would require  $45,000 \div 5,000 = 9$  days, rounded up by Nyiszli to ten.

### 3.4.5. The Riga Ghetto

The presumed extermination of Jews from the Riga Ghetto is described in Chapter XXX of Nyiszli's book:

*“[Dr. Mengele] has come from the Jews' ramp where he stood for hours in the pouring rain and selected the inhabitants of the Riga ghetto who have been brought here. But this was no selection, for all went to the left. The two functioning crematoria and the huge ditches of the pyres are filled with them.”*

According to Danuta Czech, the sole Jewish transport from Riga to Auschwitz arrived on *November 5, 1943!* Of the 1,000 deportees on board, 120 men (registration numbers 160702-160821) and 30 women (66659-66688) were admitted to the camp, while the remaining 850 were allegedly “gassed” (Czech 1997, p. 519; 1989, p. 645).

For Nyiszli, on the other hand, this presumed gassing took place on *October 7 1944!* The date is clear from a reference, in the narrative context, to “yesterday, October 6, 1944” (MBV, Chapter XXX). It follows, thus, that he was an “eyewitness” to a presumed event which is supposed to have happened some eleven months previously, before he was even at Birkenau!

Because the extermination action dreamed up by Nyiszli “filled” both of the still-functioning crematoria and the “huge ditches of the pyres,” the number of victims presumably would have been around 15,000 (*i.e.*, the capacity, according to Nyiszli, of the two crematoria plus the pyres).<sup>282</sup> Finally, for Nyiszli, all of the Jews of the Riga ghetto were “gassed,” but if we are to believe Danuta Czech, 150 of the deportees were registered in the camp according to regular procedure.<sup>283</sup>

### 3.4.6. The Litzmannstadt (Lodz) Ghetto

This “gassing” is described by Nyiszli in Chapter XXXI of his book, with a short historical introduction:

*“The arrival of the Litzmannstadt ghetto has been announced. One should know about this ghetto that the Germans established it in the winter of 1939. The number of its inhabitants at the beginning was 500,000 souls. The ghetto's inhabitants worked in enormous war factories. In payment for their work they received ghetto marks, but they could exchange this currency only for extremely narrowly defined rations. It follows of itself that the disproportion between*

<sup>282</sup> Cf. “The crematorium works with 15 furnaces. This means the cremation of 5,000 people a day” (MBV, VII) and “The daily capacity of the two pyres is 5,000-6,000 dead” (MBV, XIII).

<sup>283</sup> For further observations on this see Mattogno 2016d, Vol. I, Chapter 4.4., pp. 209-216.

*superhuman work performance and nutrition brought about their destruction en masse. Frequent epidemics also decimated them. In this way, the 500,000 souls melted away to 70,000 by the autumn of 1944."*

A note on the establishment of the Lodz ghetto by the president of the *Regierungsbezirk* (Administrative District) Kalisch from December 10, 1939 reported that there were some 320,000 Jews in the city at the time (Baranowski 1999, p. 16). The actual order to establish the ghetto was announced on February 8, 1940, and the ghetto's enclosure was completed on April 30 (*ibid.*, pp. 30, 32). The most basic facts that "one should know about this ghetto" according to Nyiszli are therefore wrong. He continues his story as follows:

*"Now the end has come for these as well. Each day they arrive at the Jews' ramp of K.Z. Auschwitz in groups of ten thousand. The selection sent ninety-five percent to the left, five percent to the right. Cast out, bowed down by the weight of the tragedy of their accursed race, tortured by the spirit-killing desolation of five years of life in the ghetto, aged by decades by the slave labor imposed upon them, they have exhausted their capacity to experience good or evil. They pass through the crematorium gates with indifference, though it is no secret to them that they have arrived at the last stage on the journey of their fate."*

As for the dating of the alleged event, Nyiszli places it after the events of October 6 (when the previous *Sonderkommando* is supposed to have been liquidated), and relates that it lasted about a week:

*"A week had passed, the liquidation of the Litzmannstadt ghetto has ended. The late October sunshine gives way to cold autumn rain."*

Hence, the extermination action must have occurred in *October* 1944. Danuta Czech's *Auschwitz Chronicle*, on the other hand, lists sixteen transports from the Lodz Ghetto between August 15 and September 18, 1944, out of which only 3,076 prisoners were registered in the camp (Czech 1997, p. 687-712; 1989, p. 851-882). The total number of deportees is supposed to have been around 60,000-70,000. In reality, only around 22,500 deportees arrived at Auschwitz, and it is documentarily confirmed that 11,464 Jewish women not registered at the camp (who for Danuta Czech thus were all "gassed") were transferred from the Birkenau transit camp to the Stutthof Camp between late August and early September 1944. Of the around 11,000 men involved, some 3,100 were registered normally. No documentary trace remains of the remaining 7,900, but it is known that some forty children between the ages of six months and fourteen years were included in the transport to Stutthof on September 3, 1944; if these children, textbook examples of labor disability, were not "gassed," then it is impossible to believe that the 7,900 adult men in question were "gassed" (on this see Mattogno 2004, pp. 17-36).

As for the duration of one week in Nyiszli's account, this clearly is a purely fictitious observation based on the total of 70,000 Jews supposedly sent to

Auschwitz in groups of 10,000 per day ( $70,000 \div 10,000 = 7$  days). Presumably this would mean, given Nyiszli's "calculations" regarding cremation capacity, that the cremations took place in two of the crematoria (which together would have had a capacity of 10,000 corpses per day), but Nyiszli is unclear on this question. At one point, he seems to imply that the extermination took place entirely in Crematorium II, declaring that victims "pass through the crematorium gates with indifference" (emphasis added). When relating the story of the father and son from Lodz later in the chapter, however, he notes in passing that "Crematorium I [II] is not in operation today," thus implying that the Jews must also have been killed and cremated elsewhere, at least for that day. In any event, whatever the logic behind them, the numbers here are no more likely to be based on real observation than any of Nyiszli's other numbers about the "gassings," given, as always, the impossibly high cremation rates which they would require.

### 3.4.7. The Theresienstadt Ghetto

The last mass extermination action recounted by Nyiszli appears in Chapter XXXIII of his book. The exact date of the event is unclear from Nyiszli's account, but presumably it must have taken place some time in early November 1944, as the first of November is explicitly mentioned as the date in the previous chapter, and the "announcement" of the ghetto's residents' arrival itself follows the lull of activities in the crematoria after the end of the Litzmannstadt action (in "late October") in Chapter XXXI:

*"After several days of silence, the usual din once again dominates the area of the crematoria. The motors of the big fans drone, the fires in the furnaces are revived. The arrival of the Theresienstadt ghetto has been announced."* (MBV, Chapter XXXIII)

Nyiszli describes the presumed event in the same chapter as follows:

*"Twenty thousand vigorous, work-capable men died in the gas chambers and burned to ashes in the fire of the furnaces. The extermination lasted for two days. Afterwards, a silence lasting for days lay over the crematoria. Fourteen days later, long trains arrive one after the other at the Jews' ramp. Women and children descend from them. There is no selection; all go to the left. [...]  
The destruction of twenty thousand wives hoping to make their husbands' lot easier and children pining after their fathers followed in the wake of this summons formulated with such diabolical cunning."*

If we take the first of November (Chapter XXXII) as point of departure, the earliest that the extermination action could have begun is the third of the month (at least two "days of silence" after Nov. 1), ending two days later some time on the fifth; the second phase then would have begun two weeks

later on November 19 and, given that the number of alleged victims was the same (20,000), presumably lasted another two days until some time on November 21.

In his fictitious chronology of events, Nyiszli forgot his own claim that the order prohibiting any further killings had arrived at Birkenau on November 17, 1944 (Chapter XXXIV; see Section 3.4.9.). It follows, if Nyiszli is to be believed, that the second wave of deportees from Theresienstadt, 20,000 persons, were “gassed” *after* all “gassings” had ceased! The same is also true for the liquidation of the *Sonderkommando*, which is said to have occurred even later than that.

In his study on the Auschwitz death toll, Franciszek Piper lists eleven Jewish transports from Theresienstadt which went to the camp between September 28 and October 28, 1944. According to his figures, the total number of deportees was 18,402, and the transports departed on September 28 and 29, and on October 1, 4, 6, 9, 12, 16, 19, 23 and 28. Hence, the transports arrived at relatively regular intervals, not with 20,000 deportees at once, and there was no fourteen-day pause in the process (Piper 1993, p. 192). Danuta Czech reports that some 3,400 of these deportees were registered in the camp or sent to the transit camp (1997, pp. 718-742; 1989, pp. 889-920), so the orthodox number of those presumably “gassed” was about 15,000 as opposed to Nyiszli's 40,000.

As for the two-day duration of the extermination process claimed by Nyiszli, this no doubt is tied, as always, to his absurd premise of a cremation capacity of 5,000 corpses per day for each crematorium. After the alleged revolt of the *Sonderkommando* on October 6, 1944, Nyiszli relates that only two crematoria remained in operation:

*“Crematorium III had burned to ashes and Crematorium IV was put out of operation as a result of the destruction of its machinery.”* (MBV, Chapter XXIX)

Of course, as mentioned in Section 3.2.6., Nyiszli later claimed that Crematorium IV (V in today's nomenclature) remained “in operation” after the other had been shut down, which is why he was transferred there for the rest of his stay in Auschwitz (MBV, Chapter XXXVI). Hence, either Nyiszli forgot all about his claim that this building's machinery had been destroyed, or he imagined the damage had been repaired at some point before his transfer to this crematorium.

At any rate, while Nyiszli's characteristic vagueness makes it difficult to determine what, in his imagination, the combined cremation capacity of the camp's crematoria was during the liquidation of the Theresienstadt transports, the suspiciously round numbers involved point to an obvious inference: if two “fully functional” crematoria together had a daily cremation capacity of



10,000 corpses, then the cremation of 20,000 would have taken two days. No doubt his calculation was as simple as that.

As background to the action itself, Nyiszli presents, in Hungarian translation, two supposed documents relating to the assembly of the transports, which both have the heading “*REICH SS COMMISSARIAT DEPLOYMENT AND ALLOCATION OF COMPULSORY LABORERS*” (MBV, Chapter XXXIII). This of course presupposes the German term “*Reichskommissariat*,” which was an administrative unit in Third Reich Germany governed by a “*Reichskommissar*.” The Theresienstadt ghetto, however, was not controlled by a *Reichskommissar* but was subordinate to the *Zentralstelle für jüdische Auswanderung* (Central Office for Jewish Emigration) in Prague.

The text of the call to assemble, according to Nyiszli, was as follows:

*“The Jew X. Y. of the Reichsprotektorat is hereby notified that by order of the above-named authorities he has been assigned to total labor service. The conscript is required to present any tools used in the practice of his profession, his instruments, his winter clothes, bedding and provisions for one week to the delegates of the above-named authorities prior to start of group departures. The date of departure will be communicated by posted notices.*

*Theresienstadt... date.*

*Signature.”*

No such deportation notice is known from the surviving documents, but a file memo (*Aktenvermerk*) of September 23, 1944 on a joint communication of SS *Sturmbannführer* Hans Günther, chief of the *Zentralstelle für jüdische Auswanderung*, SS *Hauptsturmführer* Ernst Möhs, Eichmann’s liaison officer in Theresienstadt, and SS *Obersturmbannführer* Karl Rahm, commandant of the ghetto, declared (Adler 2005, p. 188):

*“As it is necessary to make a larger number of Theresienstadt residents available for total war deployment, and as the inspections conducted yesterday have shown that this is not possible in Theresienstadt itself due to lack of space, 5,000 fully capable workers must be deployed outside [the ghetto] for this purpose, of whom 2,500 will depart Tuesday morning (Sept. 27), and another 2,500 Wednesday morning (Sept. 28).*

*Eng. Zucker is tasked with establishing the new labor camp. Only light baggage, above all underwear and bedding, etc., and provisions for 24 hours are to be taken along. The voyage will go in the direction of Dresden.*

*This will be a labor deployment similar to Zossen.<sup>[284]</sup> Participants will be guaranteed good treatment of families, children and wives left behind. [...] Without exception, only men fit for labor of up to 50 years of age may be deployed; in this, Eng. Zucker will have the right of choice. He shall put together a staff which will allow him to establish an administration there; furthermore, technicians, craftsmen of every kind, security personnel (ideally former com-*

<sup>284</sup> A *Kommando* of 200 prisoners which was sent to the neighborhood of Berlin on March 2, 1944.

munity police), and an appropriate number of doctors with medical equipment (bandages, medicines), a pharmacist, etc., are to come along."

These are evidently not arrangements aiming at extermination: the transports mentioned are those which, according to Danuta Czech, arrived at Auschwitz on September 29 and 30.<sup>285</sup>

A short digression is necessary here. In her *Auschwitz Chronicle*, Czech supports only her remarks on the first transport with documents, using the following sources (Czech 1997, pp. 718; 1989, p. 889):

"APMO, D-AuI-3/26, Inventory No. 148855; Docs. of ISD Arolsen, NA-Men, Series B, p. 2/1980."

Helena Kubica, on the other hand, informs us that the first reference concerns a handwritten list containing 125 names of twins selected in 1943 and 1944 from transports arriving from Theresienstadt and other places.<sup>286</sup> She notes further that the document was donated to the Auschwitz Museum on April 13, 1965 by ex-deportee Robert Waitz, and that from July 1944 onward the persons named in the list were housed in Barracks 15 of the men's hospital camp (Sector BIIf) of Birkenau.<sup>287</sup>

Czech's other source is presumably just the continuation of the "B" series of Auschwitz registration numbers.<sup>288</sup> In fact, the only proof of the arrival of the transport under discussion is the registration numbers assigned to three pairs of twins:

- B-10502-10503 to the Hauptmann twins
- B-10504-10505 to the Steiner twins
- B-10506-10507 to the Reichenberger twins

Kubica even provides their names (Zoltan and Jenő Hauptmann, Endre and Zoltan Steiner, Laslo and Ernst Reichenberg) with their birth dates (between 1928 and 1930), but not their nationality (Kubica 1997, p. 453). In fact, nothing indicates that these twins came from the Theresienstadt Ghetto. On the contrary, Zoltán, Jenő, Endre and László are all typically Hungarian names, and what is more important still, none of the named children actually appears in the official list of deportees to and from Theresienstadt (Kárný 1995).

Given that these six registration numbers are the only indication of the presumed arrival of 2,499 Jews from Theresienstadt at Auschwitz, these incon-

<sup>285</sup> Note, however, that, while the first of these transports on September 29 brought 2,499 deportees from Theresienstadt, the second on September 30 brought only 1,500. According to Czech's source, H.G. Adler, the remaining 1,000 discussed in the file memo were sent with the third transport. See Adler 2005, p. 191.

<sup>286</sup> Since twins would result in an even number, this is either Kubica's mistake or the transport also contained an odd number of triplets.

<sup>287</sup> Kubica 1997, p. 389. In note 22 of this German version of the article, Kubica gives only the abbreviated reference "D-AuI/26," but the full record (D-AuI. n. inv. 148855) appears in the 1989 Polish version, Note 18, p. 100.

<sup>288</sup> The "List of Jewish Transports" ends on September 21, 1944. APMO, Ruch oporu, Vol. XXc, pp. 15-22. D-RO/123.

sistencies mean that one cannot even affirm with certainty that the transport in question really arrived at Auschwitz.

With regard to the transport of September 30, Czech does not adduce any documentary sources at all, merely citing a timeline at the back of H. G. Adler's book on Theresienstadt, which is itself unsupported by any documentary references.<sup>289</sup> Other transports are "documented" by Czech in a fraudulent manner by recourse to the "*Stärkemeldungen*" (strength reports), starting with that of October 6; here, the presumed arrival of 1,500 Jews from Theresienstadt is "demonstrated" with the admission of 271 Jewish women into the transit camp (1997, p. 724; 1989, p. 897). While it is true that the "*Stärkemeldung*" of October 6, 1944 registers, among the arrivals (*Zugänge*), 271 "*Durchgangs-Juden*,"<sup>290</sup> nothing proves that these came from Theresienstadt.

Czech's method is not only arbitrary but also contradictory, because with the same criterion one should have attributed the 488 "*Durchgangs-Juden*"<sup>291</sup> of October 3<sup>292</sup> to the alleged transport of 1,500 Jews from Theresienstadt she recorded on that date. Instead, she limits herself to reporting that the young and healthy prisoners were interned in the transit camp, without specifying the number, while all the others were allegedly "gassed."<sup>293</sup>

The only two transports from Theresienstadt actually documented as such arrived on October 14 and 30, 1944. Their arrival is traceable from the records of the quarantine camp, Sector BIIa, where three prisoners were registered from the first transport (Czech 1997, p. 731; 1989, p. 906), and 216 from the second.<sup>294</sup> Czech attributes this registration to the transport from Theresienstadt of October 14. Here she also mentions "242 female prisoners [...] sent to the transit camp," and furnishes in addition this precious piece of information: Hans Günther Adler, who later wrote the history of Theresienstadt which she draws upon in her *Auschwitz Chronicle*, arrived with this transport in Auschwitz and was sent to the transit camp Sector BIIe, evidently without registration (1997, p. 731; 1989, pp. 906f.).

It is hard to comprehend how Czech can declare that, apart from 216 men admitted to the quarantine camp and 132 women registered as arrivals (*Zugänge*) in the daily report on labor deployment in the Birkenau women's

<sup>289</sup> Czech 1997, p. 719; 1989, p. 891, referring to Adler 1955, p. 694 (2005, p. 700); cf. also Adler 2005, p. 191.

<sup>290</sup> APMO, *Stärkemeldung*, AuII-FKL, D-AuII-3a, p. 55a.

<sup>291</sup> In spite of the masculine, these were *Jüdinnen* (Jewesses), since this documentation concerns the Birkenau women's camp (*Frauen-Lager*, Kl. Au.II).

<sup>292</sup> APMO, *Stärkemeldung*, AuII-FKL, D-AuII-3a, p. 54a.

<sup>293</sup> D. Czech, 1989, p. 894. In the next paragraph we read that these 488 women arrived at Auschwitz "wahrscheinlich am selben Tag mit Transporten des RSHA" "probably on the same day with transports of the RSHA" and that they "partially may also have come from the Theresienstadt Ghetto," but since the only transport on October 3 came from that ghetto, all of these 488 Jewesses must have come from Theresienstadt, not just some.

<sup>294</sup> Czech incorrectly writes 217; 1997, p. 742; 1989, p. 920. The relevant source document is APMO, D-AuII-3/1, p. 8, Quarantine List.

camp from 31 October 1944,<sup>295</sup> all “[the] remaining 1,689 people” of the October 30 transport were “killed in the gas chambers” (1997, p., 742; 1989, p. 920). Surely Adler cannot have been that rare of an exception, and one thus cannot exclude the possibility that at least some part of this group was also sent to the transit camp in Sector BIIe.

As we can see, Nyiszli is not the only one to spin tales.

### 3.4.8. The Milo Ghetto

Here we may add, if only to demonstrate just how far Nyiszli's imagination can take him, one last presumed “extermination,” which Nyiszli describes as follows:

*“The most likely scenario is that they will blow us up together with the building in the interest of achieving two goals at once. That would be genuine SS method, or perhaps we will receive a few phosphorus grenades through the window. Such are what the people of the Milo Ghetto received immediately after embarkation in the wagons. The train had not even set off with them and already they were all dead. They arrived like that at the Auschwitz crematoria.”* (MBV, Chapter XXXV)

This “Milo Ghetto,” presumably referring to the Greek island of Milos in the Aegean Sea, is otherwise completely unknown to Holocaust historiography.<sup>296</sup>

### 3.4.9. The End of the “Gassings”

In Chapter XXXIV of his book, Nyiszli recounts learning of the presumed end of “killing operations” at Auschwitz as follows:

*“In the early morning hours of November 17, 1944, an SS NCO opens the door to my room and confidentially informs me that by order of the Reichsführer the killing of people in any fashion within the grounds of the K.Z. has been strictly prohibited. I could not give credence to this statement; I have already been witness to so much deception. I even expressed my doubts to the bearer of the good news, but he insisted and repeatedly stated that such an order had arrived by radio in the crematorium as well as at the Political SS command. We will see then! What truth is there to it?! This too, perhaps, is another deception.”*

<sup>295</sup> APMO, Frauen-Lager, KL. AuII. Arbeitseinsatz des F.L. Birkenau den 31. Oktober 1944, p. 368c.

<sup>296</sup> Interestingly, Angelika Bihari's 1992 German translation in *Im Jenseits der Menschlichkeit* interprets the text here as referring to Milan (“aus dem Mailänder Ghetto”), though this would require amending the Hungarian text to read “a milánói ghettó” rather than “a milói ghettó.” The word *milói* itself is rare but unambiguous: in normal usage it occurs almost exclusively in the specific proper name “A *milói* Venus” (“The Venus of Milo”), and thus clearly refers to the Greek island of Milos (*Milosz* in modern Hungarian).

*Still in the morning hours, I am convinced of the truth of the news. A train composed of five wagons came to a halt on the rails between Crematoria I and II. It brought five hundred exhausted, sick prisoners, with the destination 'rest camp,' before the gates of the crematoria. I am an eyewitness as a committee of the Political SS welcomes them; the SS escort negotiates with their commander. The result of the negotiation is that the five wagons turned back from before the gates of death with their cargo and all were accommodated in the hospital barracks of Camp F. [...]*

*Exulting, I register the truth of the news. No doubt about it, the gates of the crematorium will never open again before the transports of those sent to die."*

For this imaginary order, for the reality of which there exists no documentary proof whatsoever, Danuta Czech proposes instead a date of November 2, 1944.<sup>297</sup> What is more, according to her account, no transport arrived at Birkenau on November 17 (1997, p. 750; 1989, pp. 928f.). Curiously, in the first German edition of her *Auschwitz Chronicle* ("Kalendarium"), Czech made no mention of the alleged November 2 halt in "gassing" actions, but she did write the following under the date of November 26 (1964, p. 89; cf. 1997, p. 754; 1989, p. 934):

*"The Reichsführer SS Heinrich Himmler orders the destruction of the crematoria in CC Auschwitz-Birkenau."*

Here, one might imagine, there must at last be concrete evidence for an order, but the only *primary* source which Czech refers to in support of this claim in later editions of the *Auschwitz Chronicle* is the infamous statement of SS *Standartenführer* Kurt Becher, entered into evidence at the International Military Tribunal in April 1946, to the effect that sometime between "the middle of September and the middle of October 1944" Himmler had, at his prompting, issued an order prohibiting any further killing of Jews.<sup>298</sup> Of course this *might* be construed as at least supporting the earlier claim of a halt to "gas-sings" on November 2, though that would still leave unexplained why an order which, as Becher claimed, was to be "immediately effective," took at least two weeks to be implemented at Auschwitz – or a month or more, if Nyiszli's date of November 17 is to be believed.

From all of which one can thus infer just how much certainty there really is about this presumed "order."

### 3.4.10. Transports and Deportees

In Chapter V of his book, Nyiszli affirms that Dr. Mengele

<sup>297</sup> "Killing with Zyklon B gas in the gas chambers of Auschwitz [Birkenau] is probably discontinued." Czech 1997, p. 743; 1989, p. 921.

<sup>298</sup> Czech 1997, p. 754; 1989, p. 934. Becher's statement is reproduced as 3762-PS in IMT XXXIII, pp. 68-70.

*“stands half the day on the Judenrampe, where already four to five trainloads of deported Hungarians are arriving per day.”*

In his correspondence with Paul Rassinier years later, he set the numbers even higher (see Section 2.3.2):

*“These transports consisted of about 5 to 6 trains a day, each of 40 to 50 cars, brought in from every corner of Europe, specifically to be destroyed here.”*

Since Nyiszli claims in Chapter I of his book that his wagon contained 90 people, presumably this would mean that the number of deportees arriving each day at Auschwitz would have been a minimum of  $40 \text{ cars} \times 5 \text{ trains} \times 90 \text{ people} = 18,000$ , and a maximum of  $50 \text{ cars} \times 6 \text{ trains} \times 90 \text{ people} = 27,000$ .

Elsewhere in the same letter to Rassinier, Nyiszli also wrote of the Hungarian transports in particular:

*“Finally, we other Hungarian deportees arrived there in May 1944, and by the end of July already 550,000 Hungarian Jews had perished in the gas chambers.”*

While less extreme, perhaps, here too the number is somewhat exaggerated: by July 9, 1944, some 437,402 Jews had been deported from Hungary (NG-5615), but since at least 39,000 were verifiably sent to other destinations, no more than 398,402 could have arrived at Auschwitz (see Mattogno 2007, p. 39).

In any event, five to six trains did not arrive on an average day, nor indeed, as far as is known, on any day. Nyiszli presumably came up with his numbers merely to support the vast alleged extermination at Birkenau.

In his false “testimony” at Nuremberg, Nyiszli gave still other numbers regarding the alleged death toll during his stay at Auschwitz:

*“I was a detainee at the crematoria for eight months. If I consider that about 22,000 people went into the gas chambers every day, if I also consider that the crematoria were not working every day (repairs, cleaning, etc.), then, all told, during the period of my imprisonment I was a witness to the death by gas of about 2 million people.”* (TVN)

Nyiszli clearly has forgotten here that in his book he wrote that the total capacity of the four Birkenau crematoria was 20,000 bodies per day, a limit which would make it rather difficult to understand how “around 22,000 persons” could have died in the gas chambers “every day.” It’s not like they could have been burned elsewhere, after all: in his various statements, Nyiszli consistently shows himself to be ignorant of the story, created by the camp’s resistance movement (and reprised by Bendel – see Chapter 4.2. – among others), according to which at least some portion of those “gassed” in the crematoria buildings were subsequently cremated outside in the open air.

Finally, we should note that here, as so often elsewhere, Nyiszli’s math simply does not add up. If we accept his figures for total cremation capacity

(20,000 or 22,000 bodies per day) and total number of victims (2 million), then over a course of eight months (ca. 240 days), the crematoria would only have been active for a minimum of  $(2,000,000 \div 22,000 =) 91$  and a maximum of  $(2,000,000 \div 20,000) 100$  days, leaving them inactive for 149 or 140 days. Strictly speaking, this is not mathematically impossible, of course, but against it one must consider what Nyiszli said to Rassinier on the subject:

*"Very rarely did a crematorium stop for a short period of time when repair or maintenance work was really indispensable."*

It all adds up, then, but only if "very rarely" and "brief period" mean "more than half the time."

### 3.4.11. Balance Sheet of the Extermination

In Chapter XX, Nyiszli writes that Mengele "considers the sending of hundreds of thousands of Jews to death by gas a patriotic exercise." in Chapter XXXII, we read in contrast to that:

*"Four million innocent people said farewell to their lives here with a last, painful glance, that they might then descend into their unmourned tomb."*

In the Epilog to his book, Nyiszli presents a summation of his own experiences as a "witness":

*"My eyes followed two million innocent people to the gas chambers, and I was witness to the horrors of the pyres."*

This supposed "eyewitness testimony" is blatantly contradicted, however, by the total number of the gassing victims that he mentions – and this despite the fact that the numbers he provides for each are themselves rather exaggerated even from an orthodox Holocaust perspective:

Hungarian Jews:	550,000
Czech camp:	10,500
Jews of Corfu:	1,423 <sup>299</sup>
Gypsy camp:	4,500
Camp C:	45,000
Riga Ghetto:	15,000 <sup>300</sup>
Litzmannstadt Ghetto:	66,500
Theresienstadt Ghetto:	40,000
Total:	732,923

To arrive at two million presumed gassing victims "witnessed" by Nyiszli, one thus would still need some 1,302,000 more! Not only that, but according to Franciszek Piper's calculations, from June to November 1944 only around

<sup>299</sup> According to Czech 1997, p. 654; 1989, p. 809.

<sup>300</sup> Calculated on the basis of the cremation capacity and duration claimed by Nyiszli.

452,500 Jews were deported to Auschwitz in the first place (Piper 1993, “Table D,” unpaginated), so even with this “shortfall,” Nyiszli still managed to “see” with his own eyes a number of gassing victims more than 60% higher than the total number of arriving deportees.



### 3.5. Extermination Technology: The Pyres

#### 3.5.1. Location

Apart from the “gas chambers,” Auschwitz possessed another extermination facility according to Nyiszli: the pyres. He speaks of these at length in Chapter XIII of his book. This facility consisted of a “thatch-roofed farmhouse” and two cremation pits, each fifty meters long, six meters wide and three meters deep, situated

*“behind the little birch forest of Birkenau, at a distance of five to six hundred meters from Crematorium IV in a clearing surrounded by a stand of firs.”*

In these pits, the bodies of Jews were burned who were shot on the spot beside them. While differing in significant details, Nyiszli's account of this facility corresponds roughly to what orthodoxy Holocaust historiography calls “Bunker 2” or the “*Weisse Haus*” (white house).

The first observation to make here is that, although these names allegedly were in common use among the SS and the prisoners of the *Sonderkommando*, Nyiszli shows no knowledge of them and never uses them; indeed, he even contradicts the second of the two, asserting that the house was “once painted yellow” (MBV, Chapter XIII).

But there is much more. Where was this “thatch-roofed farmhouse” located? Nyiszli, as we have seen, puts it “five to six hundred meters from Crematorium IV” (V in today's nomenclature), but this placement makes little sense. The house which the orthodoxy rechristened “Bunker 2” was located 200 meters west of the *Zentralsauna*, outside the camp fence, putting it about 260 meters from the western corner of Crematorium IV and about 300 meters from that of Crematorium V. In 1944, there was only one access road leading out of the camp to the west, namely, the extension of the *Hauptstrasse*, the main camp road which ran alongside the railway ramp, passing between Crematoria II and III. About eighty meters past the two entrance gates to the crematoria, which faced each other mirrorwise, this road exited the camp and merged with another road which ran along the outside of the Crematorium III compound and the area of the *Kläranlage* (sewage-treatment plant), then ran west for about 300 meters, where a 90° crossroad then led to the area of “Bunker 2.” There existed a shortcut as well, however, the so-called forest road (*Waldweg*), which appears in a plan of the area west of Construction Sector II from October 28, 1943 (Bartosik *et al.* 2014, Doc. 19, p. 99). This was a branch off the above-mentioned road which began inside the camp some fifty meters from the last circular sedimentation tank of the sewage-treatment plant. This road was closed following the construction of the four rectangular sedimentation tanks at the western extremity of the camp, the area on which these were

located having been originally traversed by the road. This can be clearly seen from the traces of the road visible in the aerial photograph of Birkenau from May 31, 1944 (see Documents 15 & 15a).

Naturally, nothing would have prevented one from still going by foot along this route, though reduced to a path in 1944. That would have permitted a savings of around a hundred meters.

At all events, those were the only two access routes to the area of “Bunker 2” from Crematoria II and III. Now Nyszli, at the beginning of his account of his visit to the pyres, explicitly says that he departs from Crematorium II to go to the “thatch-roofed farmhouse.” The detailed explanation I have provided above will now allow us to judge Nyszli’s description of his route:

*“On our way we pass alongside the crematorium. We reach open road; as soon as I show my pass to the SS guard on duty at the wire we pass through without difficulty. A bright, green, grassy clearing, it seems like a peaceful landscape, but my searching eye soon picks out the men of the second guard chain, stretching along about a hundred meters away from us, as they stand or sit in the tall grass next to their machine guns, accompanied by their enormous bloodhounds.*

*Crossing the clearing, we come to the entrance of the little stand of firs [kis fenyőerdő] that bounds it. Again we arrive before a barbed-wire fence and a barbed-wire-covered wooden gate. [...] Passing through the gate we come to a courtyard-like area, in the midst of which stands a long, shabbily plastered, thatch-roofed house. [...] Stepping out the door, they do not even have time to look around them and realize the horror of their situation, for right away the Sonderkommando seize them by each arm and take them between a gauntlet of SS guards along a tree-lined, winding path about 150 meters in length to the pyre, which they only catch sight of at the very end of their journey, as they emerge from the wooded path.”* (MBV, Chapter XIII)

There is nothing in this account which corresponds with the area west of the Birkenau *Zentralsauna* in the summer of 1944. Upon exiting the camp, there was no “grassy clearing,” but rather a grove of trees; the area of “Bunker 2” itself, on the other hand, could indeed be described as a “clearing” if we are generous, but there was no “tree-lined, winding path” leading from it.

The “second guard chain” mentioned by Nyszli was the so-called “*grosse Postenkette*” (large guard chain) which, however, in the area west of the Birkenau Camp, was made up of a series of guard towers placed at intervals of about 100 meters along the outside of the camp fence beyond the road that ran around it. Document 16 in the Appendix shows precisely this chain. In Document 15a, five guard towers can be discerned, which I have labeled T1-T5. Document 17 depicts tower T1.

In short, Nyszli’s description here is completely invented.

### 3.5.2. Pyres and Aerial Photographs

The pyres, according to Nyiszli, burned continuously day and night:

*"We start off in the direction of the thickly billowing, dense, black column of smoke. Everyone whom misfortune has brought to this place sees this column of smoke. It is visible from every part of the camp. The terrified gaze of all who descend from the wagons and line up for selection immediately falls upon it. It was visible every hour of the day and night. During the day it covered the sky above the Birkenau woods like a dense cloud; at night it lit up the surroundings as if it were the flames of hell."* (MBV, Chapter XIII)

The fact of the matter is that none of the aerial photographs of Birkenau taken during the presumed mass extermination in 1944 which capture the area of the presumed "Bunker 2" in whole or in part (May 31, June 26, 26 July 26, August 20, 23, 25) shows the least trace of smoke rising from the area. In those photographs in which a small column of smoke is visible, it rises from the courtyard of Crematorium V, and the column of smoke does not cover the whole area of the camp but rather only a tiny part of the courtyard (cf. Matogno 2016b). Document 15/15a in the Appendix is an aerial photograph of Birkenau taken two days after Nyiszli's arrival at the camp, May 31, 1944. None of the six crematorium chimneys is smoking; the area of "Bunker 2" (the pentagonal area to the west of the little house, marked "B2") shows no trace of smoke; the only area that is smoking is located in the north courtyard of Crematorium V, about twenty meters from the building, and is extremely small (the smoke is indicated on Document 15a with a letter "R" for *Rauch*, German for smoke). By way of comparison, the crematorium was 12.85 meters wide.

### 3.5.3. The "Farmhouse" (Presumed "Bunker 2")

No less surprising is the function which Nyiszli attributes to the "thatch-roofed farmhouse":

*"What was the actual purpose of this house before? As a dwelling? One with rooms separated from one another by walls, which had been converted into a single long room for its new purpose by the removal of the partitions? Or was it indeed built originally as one large room, as a warehouse, or for another similar purpose? I do not know! Now it is an undressing room: those bound for death on the pyre take their clothes off here."* (MBV, Chapter XIII)

According to mainstream Holocaust historiography, "Bunker 2" possessed four "gas chambers" (see e.g. Piper 2000, pp. 136f., 139 for a drawing), but for Nyiszli there is only "a single long room." On its function as an "undressing room" I will have more to say below. Nyiszli continues:

*"Passing through the gate we come to a courtyard-like area, in the midst of which stands a long, shabbily plastered, thatch-roofed house. Its little windows are covered over with wooden boards. It is built in the familiar form of a rural German peasant house. It is at least one hundred and fifty years old. That much is shown by the ancient, black, thatched roof as well as the many layers of plaster peeling from the walls."* (MBV, Chapter XIII)

The "little windows" – five of them in all, according to the orthodox version (*ibid.*, p. 139, plan) – are supposed to have been "bricked over" with only small openings "covered with wooden flaps" left to serve for introducing Zyklon B into the building (*ibid.*, pp. 136f.), but for Nyiszli they are simply "covered over with wooden boards."

Hence, for Nyiszli, a 9-year-old house becomes 150 years old. His lore continues as follows:

*"Here there are no water taps with which they might at least quench their burning thirst. There are no deceptive signs to dispel their forebodings. There is no gas chamber which they believe to be a shower room. Here there is only a thatch-roofed farmhouse, once painted yellow, with shuttered windows, and behind it in turn, an enormous column of smoke rising to the sky, diffusing the scorched smell of burning human flesh and hair."* (MBV, Chapter XIII; *emphasis mine*)

Thus in "Bunker 2" where other "eyewitnesses" saw "gas chambers" in action during the same period of time,<sup>301</sup> Nyiszli saw a simple "undressing room"!

Nyiszli was aware of the term "Bunker," but for him it designated the half-buried gas chambers of Crematoria II and III (*földalatti bunker* "underground Bunker," D45). Such a designation was not unheard of; it was used by Henryk Mandelbaum, another self-proclaimed member of the *Sonderkommando*, again at the so-called Auschwitz Garrison Trial:<sup>302</sup>

*"In Crematoria III and IV [= IV and V in today's nomenclature], the gas chambers were smaller than those of Crematoria I and II [= II and III]. These crematoria were of a new kind: they could accommodate a transport of 3,000 persons. This Bunker was some 50 m long and divided into two parts. In this Bunker, there was a bath with showers and faucets, and a normal person entering it could believe that it was, indeed, a bath, [...]"*

Furthermore, in an undated "sworn affidavit" (*Eidesstattliche Versicherung*), ex-Auschwitz inmate Deszö Schwarz asserted that there were "five crematoria" ("5 Krematorien") at Birkenau which he described as follows (NO-2310):

*"Four of these extermination sites each had a gassing bunker [Gasbunker] built into the ground, with an average capacity of 1,200-1,500 persons."*

<sup>301</sup> They are not, however, in agreement on their number: there were three of them according to D. Paisikovic, four according to Sz. Dragon, and seven according to the postwar topographical survey by engineer W. Sakew. See Mattogno 2016a, Docs. 12, 15 and 26, pp. 225, 228 and 238.

<sup>302</sup> AGK, NTN, 162, p. 165.

According to Schwarz, the fifth “crematorium” did not have furnaces, but rather an enormous pit in which the victims were killed with a quick shot and then thrown into the fire, a conception quite similar to Nyiszli's.

### 3.5.4. Killing Technique and Number of Victims

There is much to say as well about the absurd killing technique described, with an abundance of particulars, by Nyiszli:

*“Stepping out the door, they do not even have time to look around them and realize the horror of their situation, for right away the Sonderkommando seize them by each arm and take them between a gauntlet of SS guards along a tree-lined, winding path about 150 meters in length to the pyre, which they only catch sight of at the very end of their journey, as they emerge from the wooded path.*

*The pyre is a ditch 50 meters long, 6 meters wide and 3 meters deep, filled with hundreds of burning corpses. Along the edge of the pyre facing the wooded path, at a distance of 5-6 meters from each other, SS soldiers stand with weapons in their hands, 6-millimeter small-caliber weapons used for the shot to the back of the neck. As they emerge from the wooded path, two Sonderkommando men working at the pyre grab the unfortunate victims by the arm on either side and carry them before one of the SS shooters' weapons, 15-20 meters away. Amid the horrid screaming, here too the shot sounds out with a muffled crack. The shot sounds out, and the victim, generally only half dead, is thrown into the sea of fire in the ditch.”* (MBV, Chapter XIII)

A little reflection suffices to show the absurdity of this scenario. Just one paragraph earlier, Nyiszli has informed the reader that the victims

*“go into the undressing room three to four hundred at a time. There, driven along in a hail of truncheon blows, they quickly lay aside their clothes and exit by the door on the other side of the house, making room for those following after them.”* (MBV, Chapter XIII)

According to his own count earlier in the chapter, however, there were only some sixty *Sonderkommando* men working on the entire site at any one time:

*“[...] doing the work are sixty men from Crematorium II, Sonderkommando men assigned to this place. This is the day duty group. They work from seven in the morning until seven in the evening, when they are replaced by the sixty men of the night shift, who are provided by Crematorium IV.”* (MBV, Chapter XIII)

And of course, not all of those sixty men could have been available for the purpose of accosting the victims as they exited the undressing room, since at least some of them would have needed to be stationed at the pyres themselves. Given that, according to Nyiszli, the round trip from the farmhouse to the pyres was some 300 meters, and that each prisoner was, implicitly, accompa-

nied by a pair of *Sonderkommando* members,<sup>303</sup> it is rather unclear how this group of “three to four hundred” people, stampeded through the farmhouse “in a hail of truncheon blows,” could then all be whisked away by a few dozen *Sonderkommando* men, working in pairs, before even “[having] time to look around them and realize the horror of their situation.”

Moreover, there is the problem of the mere distance to be traveled by the *Sonderkommando* “escorts.” If, as Nyiszli claims later in the chapter, “[the] daily capacity of the two pyres is 5,000-6,000 dead,” this would translate to an average of  $5,500 \div 2 = 2,750$  round trips from the farmhouse to the pyres and back per twelve-hour shift. Assuming, for the sake of argument, that fifty *Sonderkommando* men, working in pairs, were assigned to the first leg of the route (leaving ten at the pyres themselves), this in turn would translate to  $(2,750 \div 25 =)$  110 round trips, for a total  $110 \times 300 \text{ m} = 33,000 \text{ m}$ , or 33 km of walking and/or running. While this is not, naturally, an impossible distance for a healthy adult to cover in half a day, it swiftly approaches the absurd when one considers the alleged conditions, such as working outside in summer heat, over uneven ground, contending – at least some of the time – with unwilling victims who “try to resist with all the desperate strength of their instinct for self-preservation” (MBV, Chapter XII).

And this still is not counting Nyiszli's claim that the SS assigned to do the killing stood “along the edge of the pyre” – a giant pit which, one should remember, allegedly was 50 meters long and 6 meters wide and vigorously on fire. Such a massive pyre would have radiated so much heat that the shooters would have been burned alive within minutes; indeed, the minimum temperature of a pyre is at least 600°C (the ignition temperature for the light hydrocarbons which form from the gasification of the corpses). All this frenetic activity would have had to go on for months, day and night, without a moment's respite: what lunatic would ever have organized such a mass extermination?

Finally, the extermination activity at the pyres is in total contradiction to all the other numerical data indicated by Nyiszli.

As we have seen earlier, Nyiszli claimed that the four Birkenau crematoria had a daily cremation capacity of 20,000 persons while, incomprehensibly, the number killed in the “gas chambers” each day was 22,000 (see Section 3.4.10.). With regard to the pyres, Nyiszli specifies:

*“Those transports which will not fit into the four crematoria are directed here [to the pyres] from the Jews' ramp.”* (MBV, Chapter XIII)

<sup>303</sup> Nyiszli's original does not explicitly state a number here, but rather says “[a] *Sonderkommando* seizes them by/at each arm” (“*karon is ragadja öket egy-egy [literally: “one-one”] Sonderkommandós*”), thus implicitly making for two *Sonderkommando* men per prisoner. Compare the German translation of A. Bihari (“*Schon packen zwei Leute des Sonderkommandos sie an den Armen ...*” Nyiszli 1992, p. 61) or the English of W. Zbirohowski-Kościa (“... two members of the Sonderkommando grabbed each prisoner by the arm from either side ...,” Frap-Books, Oświęcim, 2001, p. 65) with the 2000 Polish edition of T. Olszański.

Presumably, this expression refers to transports too large to fit as a group into the “gas chambers” in the crematoria, and not to cremation capacity as such. Thus, if the two pyres “processed” 5,000-6,000 victims per day, this number represents the excess of victims who would not fit into the “gas chambers.” But even if we take the cremation capacity as the limiting factor, it follows, then, that every day at Birkenau at least 25,000 people were exterminated, 20,000 in the “gas chambers” and 5,000 at the pyres. Since, as Nyiszli claimed in his 1945 affidavit (see Section 2.1.), the number of those exterminated represented 78-80% of all deportees arriving at the camp, the latter must have totaled no less than  $(25,000 \div 0.78 =)$  ca. 32,000,<sup>304</sup> but according to the figures Nyiszli gives in his book (see Section 3.4.10.), a maximum of no more than 27,000 deportees arrived at Auschwitz each day altogether.

Moreover, in calculating the number of presumed victims – two million – Nyiszli bases his estimate exclusively on the alleged gassing of 22,000 victims per day in the crematorium buildings, completely forgetting the 5,000-6,000 daily victims of the pyres.

The latter were apparently already in operation upon Nyiszli's arrival in Birkenau, and continued functioning until November 16, 1944. The next day, the elusive order commanding the “end of killings” is supposed to have arrived, and as a result “the crematoria [were] ... demolished, the pits for the pyres filled in” (MBV, Chapter XXXIV). Even if the pyres were in operation for only ninety-one days – just as the crematoria, if Nyiszli's own “calculations” are to make sense (see again Section 3.4.10.) – then a further  $(91 \times 5,000) = 455,000$  to  $(91 \times 6,000) = 546,000$  persons would have been exterminated there during this period!

And this is a charitable interpretation, for Nyiszli wants to give the impression of continuous and persistent activity at the pyres, as in these other passages:

*“Three months in the K.Z. have taught them to bewail the past and to fear the future. The unfortunates all ask me, is it true about the crematorium? What is the great mass of smoke by day, and what is the great fire by night?”* (MBV, Chapter XXVII)

*“The blazing flames of the pyres send their light here.”* (MBV, Chapter XXX)

Referring to the fate of the ninth *Sonderkommando*, Nyiszli declares:

*“Four hundred Sonderkommando men met their deaths here by gas. The corpses were carried by truck to the pyres.”* (MBV, Chapter XXIII)

Finally, in Chapter XXI, set in early October 1944, Nyiszli affirms that “so far 11 *Sonderkommandos* have perished here and taken with them the terrible secret of the crematoria and the pyres.” This must mean that the pyres were al-

<sup>304</sup> If we take Nyiszli's gas-chamber-capacity claim of 22,000 per day, it would result in a total of at least some 34,600 arrivals daily.

ready in operation – according to Nyiszli's own fantasy-ridden "calculations" – by October 1940! (See Section 3.6.1.)

A last observation is in order here. Given that the eleven previous *Sonderkommandos* were all eliminated as "bearers of secrets,"<sup>305</sup> this would imply that they were all witnesses of the extermination, which thus must have begun in 1940. But then, how many tens of millions of victims must have perished at Auschwitz by the end of 1944? Rassinier, who took the trouble to calculate, reached the following conclusion: "41 million corpses, a little more than 32 million in gas chambers and a little less than 9 million in the open hearths [*i.e.*, pyres]" (Rassinier 1978, p. 179).

---

<sup>305</sup> Cf. Nyiszli's use of this expression ("titokhordozó") in MBV, XXXVI, XXXVIII and XXXIX.



### 3.6. The *Sonderkommando*

#### 3.6.1. The Succession of *Sonderkommandos*

In his book, Nyiszli declares repeatedly that the life of a *Sonderkommando* lasted four months:

*"They are not permitted to leave the crematorium compound, and every four months, when they have become familiar with its many secrets, they are liquidated."* (MBV, Chapter VI)

*"No one ever entertained the idea that one might save gold here, for every one of them was a dead man walking with a four-month term!"* (Chapter XI)

*"After a few more weeks the Sonderkommando's four-month term will expire."* (Chapter XXI)

*"The twelfth Sonderkommando has already used up three and a half months of its fixed four-month lifespan."* (Chapter XXVIII)

*"In the final hours of the Sonderkommando's four months it may not be a life-saving remedy, but it's a great medicine against the fear of death!"* (Chapter XXIX)

Given that, according to Nyiszli, the twelfth *Sonderkommando* was liquidated on October 6, 1944 (see Section 3.6.2.), and that each *Sonderkommando* operated for four months, the succession of the twelve *Sonderkommandos* up to that date calculates as follows:

First <i>Sonderkommando</i> :	6 October 1940 – 6 February 1941
Second <i>Sonderkommando</i> :	6 February 1941 – 6 June 1941
Third <i>Sonderkommando</i> :	6 June 1941 – 6 October 1941
Fourth <i>Sonderkommando</i> :	6 October 1941 – 6 February 1942
Fifth <i>Sonderkommando</i> :	6 February 1942 – 6 June 1942
Sixth <i>Sonderkommando</i> :	6 June 1942 – 6 October 1942
Seventh <i>Sonderkommando</i> :	6 October 1942 – 6 February 1943
Eighth <i>Sonderkommando</i> :	6 February 1943 – 6 June 1943
Ninth <i>Sonderkommando</i> :	6 June 1943 – 6 October 1943
Tenth <i>Sonderkommando</i> :	6 October 1943 – 6 February 1944
Eleventh <i>Sonderkommando</i> :	6 February 1944 – 6 June 1944
Twelfth <i>Sonderkommando</i> :	6 June 1944 – 6 October 1944

The essential correctness of this succession is confirmed by Nyiszli himself, who early in his book declares:

*"According to the experience of four years, a Sonderkommando lives for four months"* (Chapter X; underlining added)

As such, the first *Sonderkommando* must have gone all the way back to October 1940.

Needless to say, this account of Nyiszli is thoroughly at odds with the orthodox version of “*Sonderkommando* history” currently in vogue. Franciszek Piper gives a representative account of the latter (Piper 2000, pp. 180-189), whose essential details I will summarize here.

The origin of the *Sonderkommando* itself is somewhat uncertain, since there exist no documents in this regard.<sup>306</sup> Leaving that question aside, the orthodox version can be stated roughly as follows:

1) The first *Sonderkommando*, according to the logic of the orthodox Holocaust narrative, should have been established by March 20, 1942 at the latest,<sup>307</sup> when – according to the Auschwitz Museum (Czech 1997, p. 146; 1989, p. 186) – “Bunker 1” began operations. According to a handful of testimonies, various groups of prisoners were then formed in succession, which were eliminated from time to time as new groups were formed. Wiesław Kielar, for example, speaks of a system in which an *ad hoc* group of twenty young male prisoners was selected from each transport sent to the Bunker and tasked with burying the corpses when the gassing was complete (Kielar 1982, Chapter 27); each such group was then eliminated immediately afterward by lethal injection. According to Henryk Porębski, on the other hand, such a group of twenty prisoners was liquidated every two weeks. According to Filip Müller, a larger group of some eighty prisoners was eliminated in April of 1942.

2) Another *Sonderkommando* was established toward the end of April or the beginning of May 1942. By the beginning of July, it contained between 300 and 400 prisoners. The group’s liquidation came during the first ten days of December 1942, but as Piper himself admits, the testimonies here contradict each other both on the numbers involved and the date of the presumed killings. Whatever the details, this *Sonderkommando* would thus have survived for six months.

3) At the beginning of December 1942, a new *Sonderkommando* was created which by the end of 1943 contained some 400 prisoners. On February 24, 1944, 200 of these prisoners were transferred to the Lublin Camp (Majdanek) to be killed there. No one has yet explained the reason why it should have been necessary to carry out these killings at Majdanek, after the many *Sonderkommandos* of 1942 who had been exterminated at Auschwitz. The remaining 200 prisoners are said to have formed the nucleus of the next *Sonderkommando* operating during most of 1944; its personnel strength remained unchanged until mid-May when, on the 15th, it was increased by 100

<sup>306</sup> In the previously cited publication of the Auschwitz-Birkenau State Museum (Bartosik *et al.* 2014), various documents containing the term *Sonderkommando* are presented to the reader, but none of these in fact refers to personnel for the “Bunkers” or the crematoria. See Mattogno 2016f.

<sup>307</sup> At the latest, because strictly speaking there had to have been some kind of *Sonderkommando* active at the old crematorium in the Main Camp when its morgue is said to have started its operation as a homicidal gas chamber sometime in late 1941/early 1942. See Mattogno 2016g. But we won’t complicate matters here unnecessarily.

prisoners, and then by several hundred more soon afterward. When this *Sonderkommando* was allegedly eliminated on October 7, 1944, its core members thus had survived for fully twenty-two months!

The orthodox "reconstruction" of events thus categorically gives the lie to Nyiszli's fable of the liquidation of a new *Sonderkommando* every four months. Piper himself, in a note to the Polish translation of Nyiszli's book, writes explicitly:<sup>308</sup>

*"This was not the case: there was no predetermined schedule for the liquidation of the Sonderkommando."*

Moreover, Piper never suggests that these *Sonderkommandos* each had a number.

On the other hand, Danuta Czech affirms that "the so-called *Sonderkommando* (Special Squad)" was established on July 4, 1942 (1997, p. 192; 1989, p. 243), and so this group presumably must have been the first. However, in her entry for December 9 of the same year (following the presumed extermination of this first *Sonderkommando* which supposedly occurred on December 3; 1997, pp. 277f.; 1989, p. 349), Czech notes the existence of a "Special Squad" and a "Special Squad II."<sup>309</sup> The latter presumably would be the new *Sonderkommando* established on December 6<sup>310</sup> whose core of 200 prisoners was still present (according, at least, to the orthodox "reconstruction" related by Piper) in Nyiszli's *Sonderkommando*, which thus might have been, on the most charitable reading, the third, but certainly not the twelfth of its kind.

Nyiszli's imaginary succession of *Sonderkommandos* is also intrinsically self-contradictory. The extermination methods used against them would in fact have made the transmission of information from one group to the next impossible:

*"According to the experience of four years, a Sonderkommando lives for four months. Once these have passed, a large detachment of the political SS appears one day and herds the men of the Sonderkommando into the rear courtyard of the crematorium. A burst of gunfire, and half an hour later the newly established Sonderkommando arrives. They strip the clothes from their dead colleagues, and within another hour all that remains of the latter is a pile of ashes. Their first job is the cremation of their predecessors."* (MBV, Chapter X)

Between the new *Sonderkommando* and the exterminated one there thus could have been no contact, no continuity, no transmission of information, no shared experience. Contrary to all logic, during the banquet described in Chapter VI,

<sup>308</sup> Nyiszli 1996, p. 174, Note 18. (English translation: Nyiszli 2001, p. 182, note 21.)

<sup>309</sup> Czech 1997, p. 282; 1989, p. 355. Curiously, Czech does not use the expression "Special Squad I" (i.e., "*Sonderkommando* I") for the former, although it is indicated in her source. See the discussion in Mattogno 2016f, pp. 95-99, and Docs. 18f. there on pp. 221f.

<sup>310</sup> "It is probably called Special Squad II." Czech 1997, p. 280; 1989, p. 352.

on the day Nyiszli first arrives in Crematorium II, the prisoners who work there tell him the history of the crematoria, as well as that of the supposed eleven preceding *Sonderkommandos* – including, in particular, the “gassing” of the ninth (see Section 3.6.3.) – none of which they could have possibly known about.

Nyiszli's book contains a still more glaring contradiction. On the assumption that he arrived in Birkenau on the day he was registered, May 29, 1944 (see Section 3.1.2.), his assignment to Crematorium II would have occurred one week later on June 5, because he states on this occasion, with reference to his family: “It has been a week already since we were separated” (i.e., upon arrival at the camp; MBV, VI). According to his claimed succession of *Sonderkommandos*, however, the twelfth *Sonderkommando* would have replaced the eleventh on the very next day, June 6, 1944. Even allowing for some slight variation in dates, in the best of cases the liquidation of the eleventh *Sonderkommando* must have occurred a few days previously, at which time the members of the twelfth would have had to strip and cremate the bodies of their unfortunate predecessors. And yet, in the course of their Pantagruelian banquet together, none of the *Sonderkommando* men bothers to tell Nyiszli about this bloody event which must have occurred only days before.

Moreover, it is clear that, by the logic of his narrative (assuming there is one), Nyiszli could not have known that the length of a *Sonderkommando*'s life was precisely four months, for such knowledge could only have been acquired by a prisoner of the first *Sonderkommando* who had survived until the twelfth, which by definition is excluded under that same logic. Nor does it make sense to believe that the SS had informed Nyiszli's *Sonderkommando* that they would liquidate it after four months; this too can be confidently excluded, for the ruse allegedly used by the SS on October 6, 1944 (the “expiry date” of Nyiszli's *Sonderkommando*) in order to liquidate it – namely, transfer to another camp – presupposes that the SS would not have previously informed the prisoners that they would be exterminated in four months' time.

### 3.6.2. The *Sonderkommando* Revolt

Nyiszli describes this incident in Chapter XXIX of his book. His account contradicts the reconstructions of orthodox historians on numerous points. Franciszek Piper writes that the revolt broke out on October 7, 1944 (not 6, as Nyiszli claims). As a result, 451 members of the *Sonderkommando* were killed and 212 were left alive (Piper 2000, p. 187). Similarly, Danuta Czech affirms that on the day of the revolt, again October 7, the *Sonderkommando* had a force of 663 men; 250 of these were killed in fighting during the revolt and another 200 were shot following its suppression (1997, p. 725; 1989, pp. 898-900). The cause for the revolt in this account also differs significantly from that described by Nyiszli: according to Czech, the camp resistance movement

“inform[ed] the leader of the Auschwitz Combat Group, who is in the Special Squad [i.e., *Sonderkommando*]” that the camp administration was preparing to liquidate a group of 300 named *Sonderkommando* members as soon as possible, and it is for this reason that the *Sonderkommando* decided to revolt (*ibid.*; 1989, pp. 898f.). For Nyiszli, by contrast, the entire *Sonderkommando* knows exactly the date of its impending “liquidation.”

Remarkably for an event of such significance, until a few years ago, only a single contemporary document was adduced in support of it, namely, *Standortbefehl* (Garrison Order) No. 26/44 of October 12, 1944, which states:<sup>311</sup>

*“In performance of their duty, the following fell before the enemy, true to their oath to the Führer, on Saturday, October 7, 1944.”*

This is followed by the names of three SS *Unterscharführer*: Rudolf Erler, Willi Freese and Josef Purke. It is unknown, however, under what circumstances these three non-commissioned officers died (the document itself provides no further details). Moreover, the three are not otherwise connected with the crematoria by any document or testimony. And yet, inevitably, the first victims of any revolt by the *Sonderkommando* would have to have been the SS serving at the crematoria, their elimination being the first objective of such a revolt and the precondition for its success, as Nyiszli himself recounts. (In his version of events, two SS men at Crematorium II are killed and stuffed into a furnace.)

Recently, however, a telegram from Auschwitz which alludes to the event, dated October 8, 1944 and signed “Baer” (SS *Sturmbannführer* Richard Baer, then commandant of the Auschwitz Main Camp), has been made publicly available. The telegram, which was received by the Gestapo detachment at Zichenau/Schröttenburg (*Geheime Staatspolizei – Staatspolizeistelle Zichenau/Schröttenburg*), has as its subject “Attempted Mass Escape by Prisoners Employed in Crematoria Here” and states:<sup>312</sup>

*“On October 7, [19]44 the Kommandos of the crematoria here attempted a mass escape. Through the swift and decisive intervention of the guard staff here, however, it was possible to prevent this. The vast majority of these prisoners were shot while fleeing. At present the following prisoners are still unaccounted for:*

*1) RD. [Reichsdeutsche: ethnic German from Germany proper] VH. [Vorbeugehäftling: prisoner in protective custody] BV. [Berufsverbrecher: career*

<sup>311</sup> APMO, D-AuI-1, Garrison Order 26/44; cited by Czech 1997, pp. 726 and 730. The text of the order is reproduced in N. Frei *et al.*, eds., *Standort- und Kommandanturbefehle des Konzentrationslagers Auschwitz 1940-1945*, K. G. Saur, Munich, 2000, p. 499.

<sup>312</sup> The first page of this document was published in 2015 by Igor Bartosik in his short 2015 monograph *Bunt Sonderkommando. 7 października 1944 roku* (The *Sonderkommando* Revolt: 7 October 1944), p. 33, without archival reference. The entire document was subsequently made available online at: [http://auschwitz.ru/en/auschwitz/resistance/sonderkommando/#popup\[gallery\\_2\]/0/](http://auschwitz.ru/en/auschwitz/resistance/sonderkommando/#popup[gallery_2]/0/) (last accessed on Jan. 24, 2018). See Document 18.

criminal] *Toepfer, Karl, born Feb. 20, [19]12 in Muehlhausen, admitted April 15, [19]44 [...]*

2) *Russian POW Schenkarenko, Aleksander, born Oct. 10, [19]21 in Witowzy, admitted April 15, [19]44 ...tattooed on chest Nr. 11526....*

3) *Soboiko, Moszek, Jew, born Nov. 25, [19]11 in Lomza, admitted Jan. 18, [19]43 ... tattooed on left forearm Nr. 89297.*

4) *Pliszko, Meier, Jew, born April 16, [19]16 in Wysokie, admitted Jan. 16, [19]43 ... tattooed on left forearm Nr. 88687."*

The telegram then notes further:

*"It is assumed that the RD. VH/BV-prisoner Toepfer, who was employed as Capo [sic] in this Kommando, has been killed and eliminated."*

In light of this document, it is necessary for me to reevaluate the "Escape Report," dated September 7, 1944, which I reproduced and discussed in a previous study (Mattogno 2016f, pp. 97-99 & Doc. 19, p. 222):

*"Escape report*

*Around 1400 hours today, a large number of prisoners escaped from the C.C. Auschwitz II, from the Sonderkommando (crematorium), mostly Jews. Some of the fugitives have already been shot during the instantly initiated pursuit. The search operation continues. Features: shaved, no. tattooed on the l.[eft] forearm. Clothing: partly civilian with red stripes. I request to instantly carry out further search measures a.[nd] to inform subordinate offices. There are only 4 inmates left on the run."*

Despite the date of September 7, 1944, this document undoubtedly refers to the incident of October 7, as is evident from the flight of prisoners from the crematoria and the fact that four of these were noted as still at large.

Further confirmation of the event itself is found in another document recently published by Igor Bartosik: a message in Polish from a member of the Auschwitz resistance movement, dated October 10, 1944, which states:<sup>313</sup>

*"Saturday the 7th, following a battle and the burning of one of the crematoria, a group of prisoners condemned to gassing, numbering around 700 persons, made a breach in the guard chain. Around 200 perished during the escape. Pursuit was hampered by an air raid in the evening. Currently these prisoners find themselves in the region of Silesia; they may make their way into the Żywiec, Bielsko and Kraków regions. Please instruct subordinate bodies to provide all assistance to these prisoners. There is probably a large percentage of foreigners among them. Caution is necessary due to the searches made by the German authorities. P.W.O.K."*

<sup>313</sup> The document is reproduced in Bartosik 2015, p. 35. The abbreviation P.W.O.K. stands for "Pomoc Więźniom Obozów Koncentracyjnych" (Help for the Prisoners of Concentration Camps), name of a clandestine organization dedicated to assisting prisoners in Auschwitz.

Finally, on October 14, 1944, the district delegate for Kraków, Rz. (unknown abbreviation), sent a telegram, presumably to the Polish government in exile in London, which stated:<sup>314</sup>

*"The gassing of prisoners at Oswiecim [Auschwitz] was to take place on the 7th October. Desperate Poles attacked their executioners killing six of them. 200 prisoners lost their lives in the fight. 500 of them escaped. The pursuit was made difficult because of Allied aircraft which were overhead at that time. Mass executions expected. We demand selection of hostages /to answer for the lives of our prisoners/"*

These recently published documents thus provide a firmer foundation for judging the historicity of the Auschwitz *Sonderkommando* revolt, and so for judging the accuracy of Nyiszli's account of it as well.

Nothing is known concerning the *Kapo* Karl Toepfer or the Russian PoW Aleksander Schenkarenko; they do not appear on the longer list of *Sonderkommando* prisoners recently published, which contains a little less than 390 names (Friedler *et al.* 2005, pp. 371-391). On the other hand, Moszek Soboiko appears there as Moshe Sobotka, of Łomża (*ibid.*, p. 385), and Meier Pliszko is registered as Lemke (Chaim) Pliszko, born 1918 (*recte*: 1916) in Czerwony Bor (*recte*: Wysokie), admitted to Auschwitz January 16, 1943, registration number 88674 (*recte*: 88687; *ibid.*, p. 384. Compare details with those in the Baer telegram above).

Soboiko's registration number, 89297, was assigned on January 18, 1943 when a pair of transports from the Mechelen (Malines) transit camp in Belgium arrived at Auschwitz, from which 387 men were registered with the numbers 89076 to 89462.<sup>315</sup>

The number of victims among the *Sonderkommando* members has traditionally been deduced from the surviving "*Arbeitseinsatz*" (labor deployment) reports for the men's camp at Birkenau; according to this source, during the first ten days of October 1944, there was in fact a reduction in unit strength from 663 to 212 prisoners, a drop of 451, but the reduced number of 212 first appears in the report of October 9 (on October 8, unit strength is still noted as 663 persons).<sup>316</sup> It is unknown whether the 451 missing prisoners were all killed, as no documentation in this regard has been found.

<sup>314</sup> TNA, FO 371-39454.

<sup>315</sup> Czech 1997, pp. 307f.; 1989, p. 386. Curiously, according to Czech another transport arrived on this same date from the Jewish ghetto in Zambrów, a Polish town some 25 kilometers from Soboiko's birthplace of Łomża, from which 130 men were registered with the numbers 89463 to 89592. Naturally this seems a more likely avenue for Soboiko's arrival at Auschwitz than the Belgian transports. This is supported by the fact that Soboiko is not included on the deportation lists of Jews from Belgium; see Klarsfeld/Steinberg. But the problem of the (mis-)assignment of his registration number remains.

<sup>316</sup> GARF, 7021-108-20, p. 142. The document is a Soviet summary of the unit strengths of *Kommandos* 57B-60B (*Heizer*, "stokers"), extracted from a series of *Arbeitseinsatz* reports.

In any event, for Nyiszli the revolt broke out one day earlier, on October 6, 1944, at 1:50 pm, to be exact:

*"I look at my wristwatch, its hands show half past one. I stand up and call my companions in for the completion of the autopsy so that at half past two, when Dr. Mengele arrives, we will be ready. [...] We have been working quietly like that for about twenty minutes when a huge explosion shakes the air, followed by a dense clatter of machine pistol fire. I look out the large, green-screened window and see that the huge, red-tiled roof of Krema III is lying open together with its beam structure; an enormous plume of flame and black smoke ascends high into the sky."* (MBV, Chapter XXIX)

But could he see all this from where he was? Here it is opportune to report J.-C. Pressac's comments (1989, p. 479):

*"[Nyiszli] is inventing, not having been able to **directly** see the start of the fire because there was a distance of 700 metres between Krematorien II and IV and he could not see through Krematorium III, a wood, and sewage treatment station II.<sup>317</sup> What is more, the roof of Krematorium IV was not of RED TILES, like those of Krematorien II and III, but of BLACK ROOFING FELT, which explains how it caught fire so easily."*

Hence, it is safe to say that Nyiszli didn't see any of this from where he was during that time, but that his entire narrative is based on hearsay or fantasy.

On October 6, according to Nyiszli's account, the *Sonderkommando*'s strength was 860 men, not the actual 663, and of these, twelve succeeded in escaping but were captured and returned alive to the camp:

*"During the breakout they succeeded in getting beyond the Vistula, but they fell into the hands of a large group of SS. Completely exhausted, they had hidden in a Polish house they thought was safe. Their host had notified an SS detachment prowling nearby; the latter fell upon them by surprise and took all twelve prisoners. [...]"*

*The twelve men of ours who were brought back, when they arrived at the crematorium courtyard with their escort, attacked the latter with their fists in order to grab their weapons. Thence the injuries to the SS men's faces. Naturally they immediately shot them all to death, without exception."* (MBV, Chapter XXIX)

By contrast, Danuta Czech reports that the entire *Kommando* 57B of Crematorium II escaped, that is, 169 people. The pursuing SS men caught up with them at Rajsko, and they took refuge in a barn; the SS then set the barn on fire. No one was brought back to the camp alive.<sup>318</sup>

<sup>317</sup> There were also the three rows of 10 barracks each of the *Effektenlager*, or *Kanada*.

<sup>318</sup> Czech 1997, pp. 725-726; 1989, p. 899. Worth noting in this context is the fact that this *Kommando* corresponds with the *Sonderkommando* group Nyiszli must have known best, as his "Crematorium I" is the Crematorium II of post-war historiography.



For Nyiszli, "Eight hundred and fifty-three prisoners had died. Seventy SS soldiers were killed. Among them were an *Obersturmführer*, seventeen *Oberscharführer* and *Scharführer*, and fifty-two *Sturmmann*, that is, mere privates" (MBV, Chapter XXIX), whereas the numbers for orthodox history are 451 prisoners and three SS men.

Nyiszli also lists the survivors:

*"Today the furnaces are lit only here, and only thirty hastily assembled new Sonderkommando members are available.*

*I am standing beside an SS NCO who is recording the numbers from the arms of the corpses, turned with their faces upward. I do not ask him, he tells me of his own initiative that twelve men are missing from the Sonderkommando; the others, with the exception of seven men, are dead. Of the seven men, four are us, the three doctors of the dissection and hall and the laboratory assistant. Also still alive are the operator engineer for the dynamos and the fans, a chief stoker, and a Pipel, that is, an errand boy in the personal service of the SS who keeps their clothes, boots and cutlery in order and besides this also performs telephone duty."* (MBV, Chapter XXIX)

I remind the reader here that the official number of survivors is some 212. At the beginning of the next chapter, Nyiszli again mentions "The thirty new *Sonderkommando* men" who presumably constitute the core of the thirteenth group in succession, but before long this number increases enormously:

*"Due to demand, the Sonderkommando stands at four hundred and sixty men."* (MBV, Chapter XXX)

This number then apparently remains unchanged for more than a month until the afternoon of November 17, 1944:

*"Four hundred and sixty men stand together and wait for death; only the method of execution still constitutes a matter for conjecture."* (MBV, Chapter XXXV)

Nyiszli and his three assistants are led away, and the remaining 456 prisoners meet, in Nyiszli's telling, a terrible end:

*"They took my poor comrades to a nearby forest during the night and did away with them with flamethrowers."* (MBV, Chapter XXXV)

And here is his final comment on the matter:

*"The Sonderkommando, thirteenth in order in the bloody history of the crematoria, has been annihilated."* (MBV, Chapter XXXVI)

But for orthodox Holocaust historiography, this thirteenth *Sonderkommando* never existed.

That Nyiszli's story of the *Sonderkommando* revolt of October 1944 does not derive from direct experience but rather is a mere literary narration is also demonstrated by the fact that, in his first deposition in 1945, Nyiszli knows nothing of any such event. Rather, he refers only to the alleged elimination of

*Sonderkommando* members (in this version, more than eight hundred of them!) on November 17 – an event which, for its part, is quite unknown to orthodox historiography:<sup>319</sup>

*“On November 17, 1944, cremations at the crematoria were prohibited in the entire country [sic], and no inmates were murdered anymore after that date. However, in order to eliminate eyewitnesses to the darkest secrets of the political SS, members of the Sonderkommando of Crematoria 1, 2, 3, and 4, counting 846 [inmates], were executed between 1:30 and 2:30 p.m. the same day. The victims included one hundred Hungarian Jews, as well as forty Russian military officers, and the rest were Jews from France, Holland, Belgium and Poland.” (D45)*

By contrast, in his book published a year later, the *Sonderkommando* revolt duly appears, with a suspiciously similar number of victims (853), though it is still placed on the “wrong” date from the point of view of Holocaust orthodoxy (October 6 rather than 7). The elimination of the “thirteenth” *Sonderkommando* in November also appears, as we have just seen, but in the book, the number of victims has mysteriously dropped by almost one half.

I will return to the question of the *Sonderkommando* revolt in Subsection 4.2.8.3 when analyzing the statements of “witness” Sigismund Bendel.

### 3.6.3. The Extermination of the Ninth *Sonderkommando*

In the context of a nighttime air raid on Birkenau during which the *Sonderkommando* must take shelter in the “gas chamber” (see Chapter 3.9.), Nyiszli recounts the history of an earlier *Sonderkommando*, the ninth:

*“We also know that the Sonderkommando’s term is drawing to an end and that such an occasion might come in handy for the SS to slam shut the doors of the gas chamber and, pouring four canisters of cyklon gas down on us, easily be done with us. The SS are capable of anything!*

*It would not be a first! A similar case has occurred before. A part of the ninth Sonderkommando was taken to the men’s camp of the K.Z., to Barracks number 13 of Camp ‘D.’ This was an isolated barracks. The Kommando was told that, on superior orders, their quarters henceforth were not to be in the crematoria but rather here in the camp. From here they would go out to the crematoria in two groups. That same evening, they were taken to a bath in Camp ‘D’ to bathe and get a change of clothing. After bathing they entered, nude, into the next room, where they were to put on disinfected clothes. This was a real disinfecting room, capable of being completely hermetically sealed. Here they used to disinfect the lousy clothes gathered from the camp. Four hundred*

<sup>319</sup> The entry for November 17, 1944 in Danuta Czech’s *Auschwitz Chronicle*, for example, contains no mention whatsoever of a mass killing of *Sonderkommando* members on this date, presumably reflecting the absence of any support for this claim in the documentary record, as well as the weight accorded to Nyiszli’s “testimony” in this regard. 1997, p. 750; 1989, p. 929.

*Sonderkommando men met their deaths here by gas. The corpses were carried by truck to the pyres.*" (MBV, Chapter XXIII)

The "gassing" in this case thus took place in a real disinfestation gas chamber in the camp's Sector BIId, but no facility of this sort existed in this section of Birkenau. During the period in question (early October 1943 according to Nyiszli's fictitious timeline), there was a Zyklon-B gas chamber in the so-called *Entlausungsbaracke* II (Delousing Barrack II), *Bauwerk* 5b in Sector BIb of the camp, but Holocaust orthodoxy knows of no such incident there either. In orthodox historiography, this story presumably corresponds to the alleged gassing of the *Sonderkommando* which was established at the end of April or the beginning of May 1942, and exterminated in November or December of the same year.

Franciszek Piper presents a varied collection of contradictory testimonies in this regard which I summarize in the table below, indicating the witness or author advancing a given claim, the date and location of the alleged "gassing" and finally the number of victims "gassed" (Piper 2000, pp. 182f., Note 540):

Witness/Author	Date	Location	Number
Alter Feinsilber	November-December 1942	Crematorium I	390
Arnost Rosin	December 1942	Auschwitz I	300
Zdzisław Mikołajski	?	Crematorium I	60
D. Czech	3 December 1942	Crematorium I	400
D. Czech/J. Bezwińska	3 December 1942 10 December 1942	Crematorium I Birkenau	?
Milton Buki	14 December 1942	?	?
Alfred Wetzler/ Walter Rosenberg	17 December 1942	Birkenau	200
Zalmen Lewental	10 December 1942	?	?

The reference to "Crematorium I" of course points to the morgue inside the old crematorium building at the Main Camp which was allegedly used as an improvised "gas chamber."

### 3.6.4. The Crematoria Personnel

Early in his book, Nyiszli affirms that the "SS contingent assigned to the four crematoria" contained 120 soldiers and that the *Sonderkommando* itself consisted of 860 prisoners (MBV, Chapter VI). Later, however, he notes that "In each crematorium the [SS] watch consists of three men" (Chapter XXIX), which would make for twelve guards in total per shift. While the passage in question refers to a situation in which there is no cremation activity at the camp, and thus both *Sonderkommando* and guard troop strength are reduced

("On such occasions the SS night shift is smaller as well"), one still struggles to imagine how 120 guards were needed to guard the crematoria at that rate.

And indeed, according to the (incomplete) series of reports titled "Summary of the Number and Deployment of Prisoners of Concentration Camp Auschwitz II" ("*Übersicht über Anzahl und Einsatz der Häftlinge des Konzentrationslager Auschwitz II*"), in late July and August 1944 the guard staff for the crematoria regularly consisted of three (less commonly two) soldiers each per shift, with two shifts (day and night) per day. That was the whole of the SS personnel assigned to service in the crematoria. The working (prisoner) contingent of the crematoria ("Heizer Krematorium") in turn was subdivided into four *Kommandos*, each also with a day and night shift, called 57-B (Crematorium II), 58-B (Crematorium III), 59-B (Crematorium IV) and 60-B (Crematorium V). Each *Kommando* was made up, with minor variations, of 109 or 110 prisoners per shift.<sup>320</sup>

Nyiszli knows nothing of any of this at all. Instead, he peddles the myth of the killing, as "bearers of secrets," even of the SS men who served in the crematoria:

*"With a few differences they too are Sonderkommandos. From what I know, after two years on duty they are sent to an SS camp. In this camp the Third Reich is accustomed to dealing with, that is, liquidating, SS men who are subordinate or who know too much."* (MBV, Chapter XXIV)

He also ventures to furnish verifiable personal data about *Oberscharführer* Mussfeld:

*"In a petit bourgeois apartment in Mannheim,, it will look even prettier than here in the attic of the crematorium. Indeed, at the end of the week the sofa is going to be sent to Mannheim as bulk goods to Oberscharführer Mussfeld's home. There it will stand and wait until the Oberscharführer victoriously returns after his hard battles, and relaxes upon it from his exertions."* (Chapter XXI)

*"I offer the Ober some hot rum tea; he drains the glasses with great pleasure. He sits down at our table and, as if wanting to make up for missed opportunities, he begins to speak. He speaks of his wife, gone missing during a bombing raid, of his son, killed on the Russian front."* (Chapter XXXVI)

During his examination on July 9, 1947 before the Polish investigating judge Jan Sehn, Mussfeld began by giving his personal particulars, declaring that he was born in 1913 in Neubrück in Brandenburg, was married to Herta Grunow, with whom he had two sons, then aged 9 and 3 years (in 1947), and that his family lived in Fürstenwalde. In all his detailed *curriculum vitae*, he never

<sup>320</sup> The *Übersicht* reports are divided up among multiple archival sources. For references and a summary table, see Mattogno 2016b, pp. 141-149 (and especially footnote 335 on p. 141) as well as Document 46, p. 186.

once mentions Mannheim.<sup>321</sup> It therefore seems safe to conclude that he did *not* live in that city, that his wife did *not* go missing in a bombing raid and that *neither* of his two sons died fighting on the Russian front.

---

<sup>321</sup> AGK, NTN, 144, pp. 50-52. The protocol is signed “Muhsfeldt.”

### 3.7. Topography and Layout

#### 3.7.1. The Topography of Birkenau

I already noted earlier that Nyiszli's topographical description concerning the "farmhouse" (alleged "Bunker 2") is completely invented, but it is not the only one. For instance, in Chapter XI of his book, he writes of the "The Jews' ramp [...] split into four branches," while it is well-known that there were only three tracks.

Apparently, he did not even have very clear ideas about the position of Crematorium II compared to Crematorium III:

*"The next stop on my patient rounds is Crematorium number II. A meadow path and the dead-end tracks of the 'Jews' ramp' separate it from Crematorium Number I."* (Beginning of Chapter XI)

The entry gates to the courtyards of these two crematoria stood exactly opposite each other at a distance of about 70 meters and were separated from another by the final part of the railway track and by the camp's main road (*Hauptstrasse*).

Nyiszli's most stunning statement, however, concerns the "Kanada" area of the camp." As is well known, this term, in the jargon of the camp, designated the complex of warehouse barracks in which the personal belongings taken from the deportees were stored. Birkenau's warehouse area was called "Kanada II" (while "Kanada I" was located near the Auschwitz "Judenrampe" with three tracks). It consisted of an entire section of the Birkenau Camp, the so-called "Effektenlager" with 30 barracks arranged in three rows of 10 each to the south of Crematorium IV, east of the large inmate shower and disinfection facility called *Zentralsauna*, and west of Camp Sector BIIf (see Documents 19 and 15a).

This "Effektenlager," therefore, for Nyiszli was a garbage dump, a flaming hillock of garbage that lay in the courtyard of Crematorium III!

*"I had no other arguments. The Ober accepted them, and at my suggestion the man was sent to the so-called Canada rubbish heap burning in the courtyard of Crematorium II. One should know of this rubbish heap that they bring here all the personal effects and spoiled food, as well as identification papers, diplomas, documents concerning military honors, passports, marriage certificates, prayer books, phylacteries, and Torah scrolls which the transports sent to the gas chambers brought with them from home but which were condemned to be burned as useless items by the SS's evaluative criteria.*

*The Canada rubbish heap was a constantly burning mound; in this place hundreds of thousands of photographs of married couples, elderly parents, attractive children and beautiful girls burned in the company of thousands of prayer*

*books. Often I have taken in hand this or that photograph or prayer book. In almost every single prayer book I found, written in pen, entries with the anniversary dates of the deaths of deceased parents. Pressed flowers from all the Jewish cemeteries of Europe, plucked from the graves of dead beloved relatives and piously preserved. Prayer shawls and phylacteries, of fine and simple make, lay here in a large heap waiting to be burned.*

*Here the 'Dayan' worked, or rather did not work but merely watched the fire, but he was dissatisfied even with this when I inquired how he was doing."* (Chapter XXXV)

Nyiszli apparently had not the slightest idea that Crematoria II and III both had a waste incinerator (*Müllverbrennungsofen*).

But there is another extraordinary statement. After the revolt, Nyiszli was transferred with his three assistants to Crematorium V, where he remained until the evacuation of the camp. Left without surveillance, they left the crematorium to join the camp's inmates gathered for the evacuation march:

*"With a happy feeling of liberation, we start on our way. Direction: K.Z. Birkenau! It is at a distance of two kilometers from the crematorium."* (Chapter XXXVIII)

Therefore the Birkenau Camp, of which Crematorium V was a part, was at the same time two kilometers away from it!

### 3.7.2. Layout of the Crematoria

#### 3.7.2.1. External Appearance

Nyiszli states that in "the most distant part of the crematorium [II] courtyard" there was "a grove of small fir trees" (Chapter XXII). He mentions it again in Chapter XXXI ("I sit down in a small grove") and again in Chapter XXXV ("The young fir trees of the little grove stand unmoving, covered in white"). From air photographs of Birkenau in 1944 it appears that a grove did indeed exist, but it was in the courtyard of Crematorium III (see Document 15). It is also visible in a photograph of the Auschwitz album, which shows a group of Jews in front of the fence surrounding Crematorium III south of the entrance gate (Freyer *et al.* 1983, Photo 152, p. 176).

According to Nyiszli, there was also a pavement in the courtyard of Crematorium II, but such a pavement never existed:

*"The Sonderkommando lies dead on the bloody pavement stones."* (Chapter XXIX)

### 3.7.2.2. Internal Layout

#### a) The Plan of Crematorium II

Before discussing the rooms of Crematorium II mentioned by Nyiszli, it is necessary that we familiarize ourselves with that building's blueprint. To this end, I refer to Blueprint No. 2197 of the building's ground floor drawn on March 19, 1943, which was redrawn and published by Piper with labels added following claims made by witnesses (see Document 10). The large upper-case letters were added by me.

On the west side (on the left) there was the laboratory (**L**: *Laboratorium*), adjacent to the south a small washing room (**W**: *Waschraum*) with a small toilet (W.C.), and adjacent to the east the dissection room (**S**: *Sezierraum*), which opened to the south towards another larger *Waschraum*, from which one could enter into a corridor (**F**: *Flur*) east of the dissecting room with an adjoining small vestibule (**W.F.**: *Windfang*) leading to the building's main entrance door. Not visible in the blueprint reproduced by Piper are two more doors: one leading from the dissecting room into the corridor, and the other right opposite of it leading from the corridor into the furnace room (**V**: *Verbrennungsraum*; see Pressac 1989, pp. 276, 280, 283, 303, 305f., 329).

The east side of the building contained the fuel-storage area (**B**: *Brennstoff-lager*), which also contained a staircase leading into the attic, then a narrow corridor (**F**: *Flur*), a small room for the foreman "Capo" (**C**), another small room for tools (**G**: *Geräte*), a toilet (W.C.), and a staffroom for the inmate work crew (*Aufenthaltsraum für Häftlinge*). The latter would have been Nyiszli's accommodation (**N**). The letter **M** marks the chimney wing with the waste incinerator (*Müllverbrennungsraum*).

Piper explains that the laboratory and the dissecting room were the premises where Nyiszli worked. The large washroom (the largest room) was the location where, according to Nyiszli, executions were carried out, while H. Tauber claims that it was used to deposit corpses. Tauber moreover claimed that the room marked "Capo" was used by the SS guards, while the room marked "Geräte" was used by the head of the work crew (*Kommandoführer*; Piper 2000, p. 150). As far as I know, no blueprint of the attic has survived.

#### b) Nyiszli's Non-Existing Rooms

With all that said, let's examine Nyiszli's description of that building. I have already shown that Nyiszli's description of the basement is pure fantasy both in terms of the number and the layout of the rooms.

His description of the ground floor is not less conjured-up. Nyiszli invents the following non-existing rooms:

##### 1) A Carpentry Shop

*"The men of the Sonderkommando have painted the room and furnished it from the chairs and tables and tablecloths left behind by the transports who*



*have been destroyed here, along with a pinewood bed made in the local woodworking shop and a wardrobe.” (Chapter VI)*

*“On the first floor of Crematorium I, separate from the men’s accommodations, there is a carpentry workshop in which three carpenters perform the work that crops up in the course of plant operations.” (Chapter XXI)*

## 2) A Barber Shop for the SS

*“For haircuts and shaves I may go to the SS barber shop found in the crematorium building.” (Chapter VI)*

## 3) A Storeroom

*“I may supplement my clothes and linens from the storeroom.” (Chapter VI)*

*“In the crematorium’s gigantic storeroom there are plenty of clothes, shoes, stockings!” (Chapter XI)*

*“He reflects a little, and two tinplate barrels which are lying unused in a storeroom come to his mind.” (Chapter XXXI)*

## 4) An Office

*“I ask for written permission at the office. I obtain a Passierschein valid for three people.” (Chapter XIII)*

## 5) Lodgings of the SS Guards

*“I take a turn first through the SS quarters, I examine anyone who comes forward. There are always a few!” (Chapter X)*

*“Thus taking by surprise the SS sleeping in their room, we intend to force them to come with us for as long as we see fit. [...] It struck me that I cannot see anyone from our SS guards. They are probably staying in their room.” (Chapter XXIX)*

## 6) A Kitchen

*“One of them runs to the kitchen to bring hot tea or soup.” (Chapter XX)*

*“Still on the day of their return I went up to the Sonderkommando’s kitchen, where Michel the French cook always had some tasty morsel for me. [...] Now too it is with the goal of getting some tasty tidbit to eat that I seek out the good Michel in his little kitchen.” (Chapter XXIV)*

*“He is the ascetic of the Sonderkommando, a man who, in order to abide by the dietary prescriptions of his faith, eats nothing from the bountiful kitchen of the Sonderkommando but bread, margarine and onions.” (Chapter XXXV)*

## 7) A Toiletry Department

*“From the toiletry department I took toothbrushes, fine soaps, nail clippers, pocket knives, fine-toothed combs, at least ten of everything!” (Chapter XXVII)*

### c) Nyiszli's Own Room

In Chapter VI, Nyiszli gives this information about his room:

*"Overlooking the courtyard is a large bright window with heavy iron bars over it. [...] From there, passing through a long, dark corridor, we arrive in another room. We are in a bright, double-windowed dissection hall of the most modern type."*

The room Piper points out as Nyiszli's (marked "N" in Document 10) had two windows, not one. But the most nonsensical thing is that Nyiszli allegedly walked to the dissection room by "passing through a long, dark corridor," when in fact these two rooms were separated from each other by the furnace room! To reach the dissection room, Nyiszli would have had to pass the five triple-muffle furnaces each time. This would have been the case until his transfer to Crematorium V, hence until November 17, 1944 – according to his fiction book – hence for five and a half months straight, or 165 days. If that was so, how could he describe these five furnaces as 15 individual furnaces each equipped with a separate blower?

In Chapter XXIX, Nyiszli mentions a rather unique path:

*"I left the dissection hall and withdrew to my room. I took a large dose of Luminal and smoked one cigarette after another. I did not have the patience to stay there either, so I went into the cremation hall. [...] I went upstairs to the staff quarters, where the strangeness of the situation immediately became apparent to me. [...] I enter the head Kapo's separate little room; he is sitting at the table. [...] I head back to my room; again I have to go through the furnace hall."*

It can be argued that the Kapo's room was not on the ground floor (marked C in Document 10), but in the attic, which is possible, but it is not possible for Nyiszli to go back to his room from the attic while passing through the furnace room, because the staircase to the attic started from the very corridor leading to his room, right next to the dividing wall to the furnace room.

With regard to the attic, Nyiszli outlines a very superficial picture:

*"I go with them up to the first [upper] floor of the crematorium, to the quarters arranged for the personnel there. It is an enormous hall, lined on either side with comfortable single beds. [...] The whole room is flooded with dazzling light. They do not economize on lighting here like in the barracks of the K.Z."* (Chapter VI)

For some inexplicable reason he forgot to mention the 10 dormer windows in the roof and the large gable window at the east side of the building that lit the room.

### d) The Execution Room

Nyiszli narrates the following:

*"Moving almost mechanically I put the instruments used in the autopsies back in their places, wash my hands, pass through into the laboratory and, lighting a cigarette, sit down to relax a little.*

*A blood-curdling scream splits my brain. Immediately afterwards I hear a muffled crack, then the heavy fall of a body. I listen intently, tensely awaiting the minutes to follow. Another horrible scream, another crack, the heavy fall of another body, not even a minute later. I count seventy dying screams, seventy cracks, as many falls. Heavy footsteps move away, everything grows still. The scene where the horrible tragedy has played out is a room next to the dissection hall with a separate entrance from the foyer. It is a bare, half-dark room with a concrete floor. An iron-barred window looks out on the back courtyard. I use it as a mortuary chamber. I keep the corpses there until it's their turn to be autopsied, and I place them there after autopsy too until they are cremated."* (Chapter IX)

The execution room was therefore adjacent to the dissection hall, separated from the corridor and vestibule, and had a window on the back yard.

As mentioned earlier, the re-drawn blueprint of Crematorium II published by Piper is inaccurate, because it does not show any door leading from the western part of the crematorium into the furnace hall. If we follow Piper's plan, the only access to the furnace hall would have been from the freight elevator (*Aufzug*), which opened on one side to the large washroom and on the other to the furnace hall. The final blueprint No. 109/16A of Crematorium II dated October 9, 1943, however, shows a door opposite Furnace No. 1, which gave access to the corridor from the furnace room, and on the opposite wall of the corridor another door leading into the dissection room. A third corridor door led into the large washing room (the alleged execution room), which was in turn connected to the dissection room by another door (Pressac 1989, p. 329.).

Even though it is true that the large washroom next to the dissecting room had a separate entrance from the corridor (or foyer, as Nyiszli calls it), Nyiszli could not possibly have been unaware that the large washroom also had a door leading straight into the dissecting room. But his claim that this washroom served as an execution room has a glitch, because when telling the tall tale of the young woman surviving a "gassing," Nyiszli wrote:

*"A quarter of an hour later they escorted her, or more accurately, took her by the arm up to the vestibule of the furnace hall where not Mussfeld, but rather another sent in his place, shot her in the back of the neck."* (Chapter XX)

It is not credible that this girl who, after having survived the "gassing" in the basement, could not even stand upright by herself, was transported out of the basement by leading her up the stairs to the court yard, and then back inside into the vestibule (*Flur*) through the main entrance. The shortest and most convenient route would have been by simply using the freight elevator which,

as I have already pointed out, led directly into the large washroom, the alleged execution room. If that was indeed an execution room, then it is furthermore mysterious why she was shot in the vestibule.

Although it is true that the large washroom faced the crematorium's back yard, it actually had two windows, not just one. These two windows are clearly visible in a photograph of January 1943 depicting the eastern façade of Crematorium II (Pressac 1989, Photo 7, p. 335), and in the section of the eastern façade as published by Piper (Piper 2000, p. 151).

#### e) The Dissecting Room

Nyiszli wrote that the dissecting room was adjacent to the laboratory, which is correct, and that it had two windows, which is also correct, but that it had only one door: "I close the door of the dissection hall, taking the keys with me" (Chapter VI), when in fact there were two doors (besides the one into the laboratory): one opened into the corridor, the other into the large washroom.

#### f) Crematorium V

As mentioned earlier, Nyiszli was transferred to Crematorium V with his three assistants on November 17, 1944. In Chapter XXXVIII, he gives a confused description of this building:

*"The distant rumble of heavy artillery makes the windows of my room tremble. [...]"*

*I hear a door slam, hurried steps move away along the concrete corridor. I leap out of my bed; I want to know what is happening around me. I rip open the door of our room; the lights are on in the furnace hall! The doors of the SS men's rooms are thrown open, sign of a sudden departure.*

*The big oak double doors of the crematorium are open as well. [...]"*

*We run through the furnace hall; we pass beside the open door of the gold chamber. Riches worthy of Croesus lie in the crates pillaged by the fleeing SS. They were only able to carry away a tiny part of the treasures. We are running for our lives; it does not even enter our heads that we should stop for a moment and take something with us. We have learned that everything is fleeting and everything is endowed with only relative value. There is only one exception to this: freedom!*

*We pass through the large door; no one bars our way."*

In the blueprint of Birkenau Crematorium IV (and mirror-symmetrically that of Crematorium V) as published by Piper, there were 4 "gas chambers" in the west of the building: **K1-4** (never mentioned by Nyiszli), while the furnace room was at the east, and even further east several staff and service rooms (see Document 20). Piper's explanations are loosely based on statements by Szlama Dragon dated May 10 and 11, 1945. Nyiszli's room is not given because Dragon, like Tauber, did not know Nyiszli and never mentions him. The room marked by Piper with a **B**, the alleged kitchen, was the physician's room

(*Arztzimmer*) according to the blueprint. However, the crematorium had no “corridor,” at most a vestibule (*Vorraum*: **A**) behind the main entrance (**W1**).

On the other hand, when Nyiszli ripped open the door of his room, he noticed that the lights were on in the furnace hall (with the 8-muffle furnace **P**), and that the doors (plural) of the SS guards' rooms were open (**E2**, **E3**). Since room **F** was the fuel storage room, this leaves only room **E1** (room of the *Kommandoführer*/unit leader).

The phrase “The big oak double door of the crematorium is open as well” does not make much sense, as there were two double doors at opposite walls in the furnace room (**W4** and **W5**), and another, the main one, was located at the center of the building (**W1**).

During his escape, Nyiszli crossed the furnace room instead of simply leaving the building through one of the two furnace-room doors **W4** and **W5**. He then passed “beside the open door of the gold chamber,” which could have been room **D**, identified as “dentists” (*Zahnärzte*) by Dragon, arriving directly to the “large door,” evidently the main entry door **W1**. But in order to get there, he would have had to cross room **H** (the alleged undressing room, *Auskleideraum*, which was actually the morgue). This room was almost 20 meters long and could not possibly have gone unnoticed.

I analyzed these minute details because Nyiszli claimed to have spent eight months in Crematoria II and V, so he should have known them intimately.

To wrap this up, it is worth pointing out that, if Nyiszli had to cross the furnace room of Crematorium IV when leaving his room during his two-months' stay in that building, he could not have failed to notice that it housed an 8-muffle cremation furnace in a single brick structure.<sup>322</sup> But if that is so, how could he seriously claim that the four Birkenau crematoria had altogether 60 identical furnaces, each of them 15, and were operating “at the same capacity” (end of Chapter VII of his book)?

<sup>322</sup> See Mattogno/Deana, Part 2, Documents 235a & 238-241, pp. 397, 400f.

### 3.8. Chronology

The chronology of Nyiszli's book is purely fictitious. Strictly speaking, one cannot even speak of a chronology, but rather of a mere succession of events, in which precise dates are extremely rare. First of all, he does not indicate the date of his arrival at Auschwitz, unlike all the other witnesses. As seen above, according to his book he entered the *Sonderkommando* on June 5, 1944, but the first date mentioned by him is October 6, 1944, and it appears in Chapter XXIX! Seven other dates follow: November 1, 1944 (Chapter XXXII), November 17 (Chapter XXXIV), January 1, 1945 (Chapter XXXVII), January 10 (Chapter XXXVIII), January 17 (Chapter XXXVIII), April 7 and May 5 (Chapter XL). He is also very reticent in simply indicating the months, as he only once mentions "June or July" (Chapter XIX), and once each August (Chapter XXVII) and September (Chapter XXVIII), never December 1944, February and March 1945.

In practice, the account about the essential part of his testimony, the four months of his assignment to Crematorium II until the revolt of the *Sonderkommando*, which contains the major part of his description of the claimed extermination actions, takes place at an undetermined time.

The undefined temporal sequence is divided into three parts:

1. the time since Nyiszli's arrival at Auschwitz;
2. the time since Nyiszli's induction into the *Sonderkommando*;
3. the remaining time until the liquidation of the *Sonderkommando*.

The sequence of events based on Parts 2 and 3 is called into question by the fiction according to which Nyiszli, immediately after his arrival at Auschwitz, was not transferred to Monowitz, but remained in Birkenau. The fact is, however, that he was initially at Monowitz and was sent back to Birkenau on June 27. Hence, if he was ever assigned to the *Sonderkommando* to begin with, this could only have happened at the end of June or at the beginning of July 1944. His claimed sequence of events therefore contains a time shift (pre-emption of events) of about a month compared to reality.

Moreover, apart from a fleeting mention of June or July in Chapter XIX, in his timeline, Nyiszli does not adduce any event before August 1944. Many of these indications refer to Nyiszli's meeting with his wife and daughter in Camp Sector BIId, described in Chapter XXVII (but first mentioned in Chapter XVI):

*"It is already three months since we parted from each other on the ramp!"* (Chapter XVI)

*"I think so, captain, yes, for three months ago when we arrived you selected them to the right, sir." [...] Terrible doubts tormented me. Three months is a long time. An hour here is a long time! [...] They have lived for three months*

*among the most horrible conditions, in continuous fear. [...] Three months in the K.Z. have taught them to bewail the past and to fear the future. [...] They tell me all the bitter experiences of their three-month existence here. [...] After three months in the K.Z. they too know that the 'Sonder' is the Kommando of the walking dead."* (Chapter XXVII)

The meeting therefore took place at the end of August 1944, a month that is also explicitly mentioned by Nyiszli:

*"It is a hot August morning as I set off on the three-kilometer way."* (Chapter XXVII)

However, Nyiszli also claims that the meeting took place after the "gassing" of the Gypsies, and in turn after that of the Jews from Corfu, which is said to have happened during the last third of September, although another indication of Nyiszli dates the "gassing" of the Gypsies back to early September, that is, before the presumed extermination of the Jews from Corfu!

After the first meeting, Nyiszli returned to his relatives every day for three weeks:

*"For two weeks I am a daily visitor in Camp 'C.'"* (Chapter XXVII)

Here is the subsequent sequence of events:

*"The two days passed and I went to Camp 'C' to say goodbye."* (Chapter XXVII)

*"Three days later I visited Camp 'C' again."* (Chapter XXVIII)

This results in a total of 26 days. After this, the liquidation of Sector BIIC began. It follows that there was an interval of at least 26 days between the "gassing" of the Gypsies and that of inmates from Sector BIIC camp, but from what Nyiszli writes it appears that the two presumed events happened concurrently!

I have already noted similar chronological contradictions in the story of the "gassing" of the Jews transferred from Theresienstadt.

In the fictitious sequence of events invented by Nyiszli, the other few indications, as mentioned earlier, always concern a duration of three or three and a half months:

*"Three months in the crematorium is a real education!"* (Chapter XVI)

*"I am an expert and I have been working here for three months now."* (Chapter XIX)

*"Three months spent beneath the same roof have developed a state of confidence between us."* (Chapter XX)

*"After a few more weeks the Sonderkommando's four-month term will expire."* (Chapter XXI)

*"I have been in the Sonderkommando for three months."* (Chapter XXIV)

*"The twelfth Sonderkommando has already used up three and a half months of its fixed four-month lifespan."* (Chapter XXVIII)

These indications, in the book's story, refer to the first week of September (3 months) or to the beginning of the second third of this month, and should be postponed by about a month based on Nyiszli's transfer date from Monowitz to Birkenau.

The most striking fact is that Nyiszli, for the wide privileges he enjoyed, had every chance of keeping a daily diary; he could even date the events he describes with great accuracy, because, as he wrote, he had a German newspaper available every day:

*"By the same route every morning the Völkischer Beobachter, the Third Reich's official newspaper, arrives at the gate. Again, a railway foreman brings it. The price of subscription is one piece of gold. Anyone who will bring a newspaper into the K.Z. for a prisoner for 30 days has earned it.*

*Ever since I've been in the crematorium I have received the paper. I read it through in a secure hiding place and relate the daily news to the Kommando clerk. He passes it along to his comrades. Within a few minutes everyone knows the latest events."* (Chapter XI)

*"I encourage them; I urge them to persevere. I describe to them the military situation, which is developing ever more favorably for us. I read the newspaper every day. I have the means to inform them exhaustively."* (Chapter XVI)

Therefore, Nyiszli not only knew the exact date of every single day (also because he had to sign and date his countless autopsy reports), but he could link the alleged events of the camp to the war situation in order to remember the dates more easily. In open contradiction to this, Nyiszli wrote:

*"I've lived here for four months, if I could calculate with the calendar. But for a long time I don't have a sense of time anymore. I do not live 'in time' but 'in space.'" (TVN, here on p. 152)*

On the other hand, Nyiszli's firm resolution was to save himself in order to tell the world about the horrors of the crematoria:

*"There is no work for me here, and yet I have come down among the dead, because I feel a sense of duty to my people and to the world, that while I cannot reasonably hope it, yet through some trick of fate I may escape from here and write these lines as the only living witness!"* (Chapter VII)

This should have been another incentive to date the events exactly. In this regard, Nyiszli adds with a discouraged demeanor:

*"If I should ever become free again, whom could I tell of all the things that I see here, such that they might believe me? Spoken or written words cannot convey any idea of what is happening here. How futile, then, this effort of mine to photograph these things in my mind and record them in my memory!"* (Chapter XI)



### 3.9. The Auschwitz-Birkenau Camp

Even in this regard Nyiszli recounts various fairy tales:

*"At times Auschwitz Concentration Camp has held prisoner as many as 500,000 people within its electrified barbed wire."* (Chapter VI)

The highest camp occupancy ever recorded is undoubtedly that of August 22, 1944, when it barely exceeded 135,000 inmates (Czech 1989, p. 860).

*"There's a new doctor at the K.Z., which, starting from New Year's day, has officially ceased to be a K.Z. and become an Arbeitslager, that is, a labor camp."* (Chapter XXXVIII)

This presumed designation is unknown to holocaust historiography.

Nyiszli wrote about a "four-fold SS guard chain which surrounds the K.Z." (Chapter XI), but as mentioned earlier, there were only two guard chains, which Lasik calls "sentry cordons": the first an internal "'small sentry cordon' (*Kleine Postenkette*)," the other an external, "'large sentry cordon' (*grosse Postenkette*)" (Lasik 2000, p. 298).

According to Nyiszli's lore, it was strictly forbidden for prisoners to read books:

*"But this too is a privilege, the fact that the Sonderkommando can keep books for themselves and read them. In the K.Z. it's twenty days in the standing cell for anyone caught reading, if they don't just beat you to death."* (Chapter VI)

In contrast to this, the report of the visit to Auschwitz of several German government officials on June 28, 1944 provides this information:<sup>323</sup>

*"Attached to the typing room is a library for inmates which is not very large that, according to statements by the inmate who manages it, is said to contain 45,000 volumes. Books are exchanged [borrowed and handed back in] every day."*

I pass over the alleged daily selections of 70 inmates who are said to have been killed by a shot into the neck in Crematorium II (Chapter IX) and the allegedly weekly selection in Camp Sector BIIC (Chapter XXVII), which are not reflected in Czech's *Kalendarium* of Auschwitz. I will return to this in Chapter 5.1.

More interesting in the present context is the matter of air-raid alarms. At the beginning of Chapter XXIII, Nyiszli tells the following story:

*"I am in the habit of doing some reading after going to bed in order to put myself to sleep. I do so tonight as usual, but I cannot get much reading done, for*

<sup>323</sup> *Reisebericht. Besichtigung des Konzentrationslager Auschwitz am 28. Juni 1944 durch...* (followed by the names of seven officials charged with this mission). BAK, R22/1468, Blatt 58a (p. 4 of the report).

*the electric light suddenly goes out and soon I hear the K.Z.'s air-raid siren as well. On such occasions, heavily armed SS guards accompany us down to the Sonderkommando's shelter, the gas chamber. So it goes tonight too. We put our clothes on and set out. [...]*

*Not without cause, then, do we anxiously await the end of the air-raid alert. The alert was three hours long! We come back up out of the darkness of the gas chamber! The arc lamps on the barbed wire, the camp's kilometers-long chains of light, are lit again. We lie down. I try to sleep. It will be difficult.*

*The next morning, I am in Crematorium II on my patient-visitation rounds. The head Kapo of the Sonderkommando there informs me confidentially that in the darkness of last night's air-raid alert some partisans approached the camp. They cut through the wire fence enclosing the crematorium courtyard at a less conspicuous spot and slipped three machine pistols and ammunition along with 20 hand grenades through the resulting opening. The Sonderkommando men found them in the early morning hours and brought them to a secure hiding place. [...]*

*Recently there have been air-raid alerts every day, indeed several times a day, but only a long nighttime blackout can bring us help from our unknown but devoted comrades. Three or four more nighttime blackouts would be enough for the partisans to supply us with the necessary quantity of weapons, and then we could attempt a breakout."*

The chronology is imponderable. In her *Kalendarium*, Czech mentions one single Allied mission on Auschwitz and Birkenau, on September 13, 1944 (1989, p. 876):

*"For thirteen minutes, from 11:17 am to 11:30 am, the I.G. Farben plants in Dwory near Auschwitz are bombed."*

On that occasion, two bombs fell on the Birkenau Camp:

*"One damages the railway embankment and the railway branch to the crematoria, the second destroys a shelter located between the tracks, killing about 30 civilian workers."*

It is known that, from Nyiszli's alleged assignment to Crematorium II until October 1944, Allied aircraft passed over the sky of Birkenau on June 26, July 8, 20, 23, August 25 and 13 September. All of these missions occurred during daylight.

Nyiszli's story is clearly invented. It is clear that he knew nothing of the bombing mission with the most serious consequences for the Birkenau Camp – that of September 13 – because he says nothing about the bombs dropped near the crematoria, which was quite a significant event. He also claims that the raids occurred "several times a day," which is wrong, and that they all occurred at night, which is also wrong. The darkness is a simple literary device to introduce imaginary incursions of partisans into the Birkenau Camp in order to bring weapons to the *Sonderkommando*. It's yet another literary device for Nyiszli's fanciful tale of the revolt.

Nyiszli also embellished a story that seems to have a kernel of truth:

*"In June or July, it happened that 100,000 postcards were handed out among the inhabitants of the overcrowded barracks, everyone being required to write one to an acquaintance. They were given strict orders that they should write as return address not Auschwitz or Birkenau but rather 'Am Waldsee'! The only place with such a name is on the Swiss border! The postcards went out, replies even arrived for them. I was an eyewitness as they burned the letters sent in reply, about 50,000 of them, on a bonfire set in the crematorium courtyard. It would not have been possible to deliver them anyway, for the addressees themselves had been burned before the replies to their postcards arrived. Thus was it all contrived. The goal was to reassure and mislead world public opinion."* (Chapter XIX)

There is no doubt that postcards sent from Auschwitz with the sender's address given as "am Wannsee" do indeed exist, but it is not obvious why this happened. Randolph L. Braham writes about it (1981a, Vol. 2, p. 653):

*"It was around this time, during the deportations from Zone IV, that postcards were first brought back from Auschwitz for delivery to the relatives and friends of many of those deported earlier. Postmarked 'Waldsee,' a fictitious geographic name, the cryptic messages ('Arrived safely. I am well.') were often written by the victims just before they were gassed. The objective of the Germans was, of course, to lull the Jews still awaiting deportation in Hungary into a false sense of security."*

It is unknown who devised this stratagem. The only certain fact is that on October 25, 1944 Eberhard von Thadden, head Section "Inland II" of the German Department of Foreign Affairs, asked Adolf Eichmann about a certain Kemény, an "aryanized Jew" who had been deported, because the Hungarian embassy wanted him to be sent back. This person was then "in the camp am Waldsee (?)" (*"im Lager am Waldsee (?)"*), van Thadden wrote (T/1240); the question mark meant that von Thadden had no idea what "Waldsee" was. In his reply, written on November 3, SS *Sturmbannführer* Rolf Günther, Eichmann's deputy, said that the detainee's place of residence was unknown to him (*"sein gegenwärtiger Aufenthaltsort hier nicht bekannt ist"*; T/1241), without specifying writing anything about what "Waldsee" meant.

However, there is no connection between "Waldsee" and the alleged gasings, as is shown by one of the first versions of the tale, if not the first. In the report by Czesław Mordowicz and Arnost Rosin, two Jewish inmates who escaped from Birkenau on May 27, 1944, which was published in November 1944 by the War Refugee Board, we read (War Refugee Board 1944, p. 30):

*"The transport [of Hungarian Jews] was received in AUSCHWITZ and BIRKENAU according to the well-known procedure (heads shaved, numbers tattooed, etc.) The men were given numbers beginning with 186,000 and the women were placed in the women's camp. About 600 men, of whom some 150*

were between the ages of 45 and 60, were brought to BIRKENAU where they were divided up among various work detachments. The remainder stayed in AUSCHWITZ where they worked in the BUNA plant.

The members of the transport were all left alive and none of them, as had been customary, were sent directly to the crematoria. In the postcards which they were allowed to write, they had to give 'Waldsee' as return address."

On the other hand, the *Kalendarium* of Auschwitz states that on May 2, 1944 two transports arrived from Hungary containing 1,800 and 2,000 Jews fit for labor. Nevertheless, after the initial selection, only 486 men (reg. nos. 186645-187130) and 616 women were registered. The remaining 2,698 deportees were allegedly killed in the "gas chambers" (Czech 1989, p. 764). A telegram of Edmund Veesenmayer, Germany's plenipotentiary for Hungary, to the German Department of Foreign Affairs dated April 29, 1944, announced precisely (Braham 1963, p. 363):

*"Today, the first transport of 1800 labor Jews between the ages of 16 and 50 has left Budapest. Tomorrow, another train leaves from Topolya with 2,000 labor Jews."*

It is incomprehensible why 71% of these 3,800 inmates who were all fit for labor and were sent to Auschwitz precisely in order to work for the greater war effort, should have been "gassed" on arrival. Czech makes no reference to "Waldsee" in this context, but other authors are much more zealous in this regard, such as Andrzej Pankowicz. According to him, two transports with Jews were deported to Auschwitz on April 27 and 28, 1944 from the Kistarcsa Transit Camp in Hungary with 4,000 people. He writes (1990, p. 260):

*"They were forced to write their families postcards with the sender's address Waldsee, then in all probability they were all killed in the gas chambers."*

This is the exact opposite of what Walter Rosenberg wrote.

If we apply a logic of deception here, making deportees who were condemned to be "gassed" write postcards would have made little sense. Since, as I observed earlier, at least 107,200 Hungarian Jews were registered or sent to the Birkenau Transit Camp (*Durchgangslager*), that is, in the orthodox perspective, they all escaped the "gas chambers," it would have been much more reasonable to have them write postcards (and maybe they even did), because they could have answered and further reassured the Jews in Hungary who were still awaiting their own deportation.

Waldsee was not a fictitious place, by the way. There were at least two places with this name in Germany, one in what is today the State of Rhineland-Palatinate, the other in Württemberg. In the first there actually existed a community camp (*Gemeinschaftslager*; Ottolenghi 1993, p. 186).

### 3.10. Evacuation to Mauthausen

Nyiszli recounts the various phases of the evacuation march. The column of detainees left Birkenau at one o'clock at the night of January 19, 1945:

*"It begins to grow light. We have covered about 15 kilometers in the course of the night. [...] Towards noon we arrive in Plesow, we rest for the first time there. [...] Passing nights under the open sky, hungry and thirsty, we covered some 200 kilometers. By the time we arrived in Ratibor, our number had dwindled to 2000 heads. [...] Our loading onto the wagons goes swiftly. After a night of waiting, we depart. I did not count how many frozen comrades we dumped from the wagons during the course of our five-day journey! By the time we arrived at K.Z. Mauthausen, our number had shrunk to 1500 heads. Included in the shortfall, no doubt, were also some escapees who found a suitable moment for slipping away."*

The evacuation march of the Birkenau inmates, which included the 30 inmates of the *Sonderkommando* (who, according to Nyiszli, were all killed on October 6, 1944), followed the route (omitting small locations) Auschwitz, Rajsko, Brzeszcze, Pszczyna, Żory, Rybnik, Wodzisław Śląski (Czech 1989, p. 971). In this context, "Plesow" (a Polish city with this name does not exist) can only be "Pless," the German name of Pszczyna, where the column actually arrived around noon on the 19th. The march's duration given by Nyiszli (five days) is almost exact (it actually took four days), but while Nyiszli had the column march 200 kilometers to reach Ratibor, where the inmates were loaded onto a train, they actually marched to Wodzisław Śląski (German name: Loslau), which is about 70 kilometers.

Ratibor was the German name of Racibórz, a city located about 18 kilometers away from Wodzisław Śląski. It is not mentioned at all as a place of arrival or passage of the evacuated Auschwitz inmates. On January 22, the column from Birkenau arrived at Wodzisław Śląski, and on the next day they left on a train with destination Mauthausen, where they arrived on January 25 (Wróbel 1962, pp. 19-29).

On this scene, Nyiszli again unleashes his wanton fantasy:

*"The stones are white; the castle has just been built! It was built in the Third Reich period, with the designation K.Z. Forty thousand Spanish freedom fighters who had taken refuge in France were brought here after its occupation, along with a hundred thousand German Jewish men. [...] With sufferings inconceivable to the human imagination they built the castle, but they were not to be its inhabitants. They died without remnant in this sea of stone and concrete!"* (Chapter XXXIX)

The first inmates arrived in Mauthausen on August 8, 1938, consisting of 300 Austrians and a few Germans who built the camp's first barracks (Marsalek 1977, p. 23). The first transport of Spanish Republicans, 392 persons, arrived in Mauthausen on August 8, 1940 (*ibid.*, p. 91); in total, 7,200 Spaniards were interned there over the years (*ibid.*, p. 113). The total number of Jewish prisoners, from August 8, 1938 to May 4, 1945, was 24,855 men and 877 women, of whom 14,356 died altogether (*ibid.*, p. 204).

Nyiszli's tale of the camp's liberation is decidedly incredible:

*"On the third day it comes about that an SS officer arrives accompanied by a camp clerk and calls on all those who have worked in the Auschwitz crematorium to present themselves. The blood runs cold within me! Do they have a list of us? They are so damned precise and well organized, it is very likely! I think it over and come to the conclusion that it is merely an attempt at fishing out the secret bearers from the great crowd. If they had a list they would look at our tattoo numbers. No one here knows me! In mute silence I wait as the anxious minutes pass. I have won! I have again won life!"* (Chapter XXXIX)

Yet Nyiszli himself speaks of the list of *Sonderkommando* members:

*"The Ober gives me some sheets of paper covered with numbers which he has been holding in his hands until now and tells me to find my number and cross it out. In my hands is a list of the tattoo numbers of Sonderkommando members. I take out my fountain pen; after a quick search I find and cross out my number. When I have done this, he tells me to cross out my companions' numbers as well!"* (Chapter XXXV)

In practice, after having exterminated the detainees of the 12th and 13th "*Sonderkommando*" because they were "bearers of unconfessable secrets," the SS of Auschwitz, starting with Mengele himself, completely disregarded Nyiszli and his three assistants, but later at Mauthausen the SS tried to ferret them out by simply walking around asking who had worked in the crematoria!

It is clear that, if the SS had really considered them so dangerous, Nyiszli and his companions would have been identified during the registration procedure, given that they had their Auschwitz registration numbers tattooed on their arm.

Nyiszli's liberation tale is completely unlikely because it is based on a petty and twisted psychology. He claims that he was an eyewitness to the "gassing" of two million Jews in the crematoria of Birkenau, not counting those who had been burned on the pyres; that the SS had exterminated "one thousand three hundred of [his] companions" (Epilogue) because they were bearers of these secrets. He was also in contact almost every day with Mengele (in the book he mentions him more than 120 times!), whose alleged crimes Nyiszli must have known perfectly well. In the narration of his discovery of the killing of the twins by Mengele with an injection of chloroform into the heart, he writes:

*"If Dr. Mengele were to suspect that I know the secret of the injections, ten doctors of the political SS would be on hand to determine my time of death!"*  
(Chapter VIII)

And a little further on, at the end of the same chapter:

*"My hair almost stands on end when I think of all that I have accepted during my brief life here [in the camp] and all that I must still accept, wordlessly, hereafter until the end arrives for me as well. I knew it when I entered here, but now that I am in possession of so many secrets, I have no doubt that I am a dead man walking. Is it conceivable that Dr. Mengele or the Berlin-Dahlem Institute should allow me to live?"*

The fact is, however, that Mengele disappears from the story without paying any attention to this allegedly dangerous eyewitness. The penultimate time Mengele is mentioned by Nyiszli is in Chapter XXXVI, sometime between November 17, 1944 and January 10, 1945:

*"One day, quite unexpectedly, Dr. Mengele arrives. He seeks us out in our room; he guesses that we will not be in the dissection hall where, for days now, we have had nothing to do. He tells us that, by higher orders, K.Z. Auschwitz is to be completely liquidated – not the inhabitants in this case, he means the institution itself. Among the crematoria, two will be demolished; the third will remain for the time being for the cremation of the camp's dead. We four will be moving with the dissection-hall equipment, the museum specimens and the archives to Crematorium IV. It will remain in operation. I and II are marked for immediate destruction!"*

The next and last reference to Mengele is at the beginning of Chapter XXXVIII:

*"Our days went by quietly, without incident. Dr. Mengele, so we heard, had departed from Auschwitz. There's a new doctor at the K.Z., which, starting from New Year's Day, has officially ceased to be a K.Z. and become an Arbeitslager, that is, a labor camp. Everything here is in ferment and decay! On January 10, a newspaper comes into my hands from which I learn of the launch of the Russian offensive."*

According to the logic that Nyiszli attributes to Mengele and the SS, the camp's liquidation necessarily implied Nyiszli's physical liquidation. If we follow his narration, however, Mengele left without bothering to liquidate this crucial witness. This is even more senseless than it seems, because Mengele actually left Birkenau after Nyiszli, on January 18, 1945, to be exact! (Kubica 1997, p. 421)

PART 4:

Nyiszli's Testimony in the Context of  
Trials and Other Testimonies





## 4.1. Detainees and SS Men Mentioned by Nyiszli

Nyiszli quoted in his writings the names of several detainees and SS men of Birkenau with whom he had direct contact. The detainees were mostly physicians. I list them here in the order they were mentioned by him:

Sentkeller, Lewy, Grósz, Epstein, Bendel, Heller, Dénes Görög, Adolf Fischer, József Körner, Olleé, other unspecified individuals, Dina, Michel, a certain Pipel, and a certain Dayan. In 1948, Daniel Bennamia joins that list. The most peculiar thing is that Nyiszli never mentions the registration number of any other inmate. Even more peculiar is the fact that, of the 900 members of the four Birkenau crematoria's *Sonderkommando* (such was its maximum strength in July-August 1944), whom Nyiszli had the task of assisting from a medical point of view, he mentions only two by name: Dr. Bendel and Olleé (Olère)!

Although Bendel and Bennamia were also members of the *Sonderkommando* and survived, Nyiszli claimed to have been the only survivor. Explaining this striking contradiction would have deserved the attention of Nyiszli's fantasy.

### 4.1.1. Sentkeller

In Chapter II of his book, Nyiszli introduces this individual as follows:

*"Dr. Sentkeller – for that is his name, as I later learn – head doctor of Camp Hospital 'F', nods understanding. He calls me to him and accompanies me to the desk of another inmate worker."*

This is Roman Zentkeller (20497), who was a Polish military physician interned at Auschwitz on September 5, 1941. He served as Camp Eldest in Camp Sector BIIIf. As such, he was directly subordinate to the SS physician in charge of that sector, so the qualification as "head doctor of Camp Hospital 'F,'" although inaccurate, is not completely wrong either.

### 4.1.2. Lewy and Grósz

Regarding these two physicians, Nyiszli states in his Chapter III:

*"The chief physician of Hospital Barracks 12, Dr. Lewy, is professor at the University of Strasbourg; his deputy, Dr. Grósz, professor at the University of Zagreb. Both are internists. In the field of medical research, they are eminent figures on a Europe-wide scale."*

In her 1974 article "The role of the men's hospital camp at the Auschwitz Camp II," Czech provides the names and registration numbers of the medical

staff for the individual camp sectors, but a Dr. Grósz is never mentioned by her.

The other physician, whom Nyiszli describes in TVN as “Dr. Lewy, Robert, university professor, Strasbourg, (Camp Sector F)”, was Robert Lévy, registration number 145920. Czech writes that he was deported to Auschwitz on September 4, 1943, and that he worked in Block 12 of Camp Sector BIIf, but she took that information from Nyiszli’s book (1974, Note 108, p. 52).

Dr. Lévy wrote an essay about his stay in Birkenau which was published in 1947 under the title “Auschwitz II (Birkenau)” (Lévy 1996, pp. 457-466). A biographical note informs us that he was born in 1894 and was an assistant at Surgical Clinic B of the Faculty of Medicine at the University of Strasbourg. On October 21, 1943, he was interned in the Drancy Camp, whence he was deported to Birkenau on September 2. He arrived there on September 4, and stayed until January 18, 1945 (*ibid.*, p. 457). In his essay, Lévy tells what happened during the “selection” of his transport (*ibid.*, p. 458):

*“I approach an SS officer and tell him in German: ‘I am the convoy’s doctor, what am I supposed to do with the sick?’ – He replied, ‘You are a doctor and you speak German, that’s good; you can go to the left.’ I obey; other fellow deportees come to join me; the women, children, those beyond fifty, the sick are sent to the right.”*

The physicians were therefore pulled from the crowds at their very arrival at Birkenau. Note that for Lévy those unfit for labor were sent to the right, while Nyiszli has them sent to the left. Another French physician, Robert Waitz, who was deported from Drancy to Monowitz on October 3, 1943 (reg. no. 157261), and who was evacuated to Buchenwald on January 18, 1945, devoted a special paragraph to “The History of the Right Column” (*Histoire de la Colonne de Droite*) in a statement that also appeared in 1947. That paragraph begins as follows (Waitz 1996, p. 470):

*“This column consists of women, children, the old and the sick. They leave directly for Birkenau.”*

The positioning of those fit and unfit for work in a right or left column, respectively, is undoubtedly a literary dramatization. It is unknown to SS men and prominent detainees, such as Rudolf Höss and Primo Levi. The former Auschwitz commandant described the selection procedure as follows (Bezwińska/Czech 1984, p. 120):

*“The railway carriages were unloaded one after the other. After depositing their baggage, the Jews had to pass individually in front of an SS doctor, who decided on their physical fitness as they marched past him. Those considered capable of employment were immediately taken off into the camp in small groups.”*

And here is the description by Primo Levi, who was deported from Fossoli, Italy, to Auschwitz on February 22, 1944 (reg. no. 174517; Levi 1984, p. 20):

*"In less than ten minutes, all of us capable men were gathered in a group. What happened to the others – women, children, the old – we could establish neither then nor later; the night swallowed them, purely and simply."*

In early October 1943, Lévy was transferred to the inmate infirmary (*Häftlingskrankenbau*), where he worked "for 16 months," thus up to the evacuation of Auschwitz. But he never mentions Block (or Barracks) 12 or even Nyiszli. On the other hand, he provides other information which conflicts with what the Hungarian physician has claimed.

Nyiszli describes twice the food administered to Auschwitz detainees:

*"Subordinate to them, eagerly following their example, is the six-member medical team. They are French and Greek doctors, of more recent vintage, kind-hearted and caring. For three years now, they have eaten the bread of the K.Z., bread made with horse-chestnut flour cut with sawdust."* (Chapter III)

*"[...] 700 calories per day of moldy bread made from horse chestnuts, margarine made from lignite, and 30 grams worth of watery salami ground from the flesh of mangy horses. The victim washes this down with half a liter of nettle or turnip soup, cooked without fat, flour or salt [...]"* (Chapter XVI)

Tadeusz Iwasko states that detainees were subject to certain food rations, which were distributed in three meals per day. However, SS members employed in the food stores committed theft, and during the distribution of meals the rations were further cut short by Kapos and other detainees in a position of power. The consequence was that, instead of the 1,700 calories expected for light work and 2,150 for heavy work, only 1,300 and 1,700 calories were actually given. In the morning, detainees received half a liter of coffee substitute or herbal infusion called tea. Four times a week at noon, a soup with meat was provided, and three times a week a vegetable soup (potatoes and beets). A soup portion was about three quarters of a liter, with a nutritional value of 350-400 calories. In the evening, about 300 grams of bread and about 25 grams of margarine or a spoon of jam or curd were distributed to the inmates. The nutritional value of the evening meal was 900-1,000 calories. The inmates who did hard work received a supplement of bread, margarine and sausage (Iwaszko 2000, pp. 59-61).

The theft by SS men claimed by Iwasko is at least unlikely, if not impossible. The contents of the food store were recorded in a special register, in which the camp's occupancy, the quantity of food by weight stored in the warehouse, and the quantity per prisoner by weight were listed on a daily basis. This is evidenced by a log excerpt from December 11, 1944 to January 17, 1945. The register shows that the inventory was constantly replenished, so that there was a steady relationship between the quantity of food available and the number of prisoners.<sup>324</sup>

<sup>324</sup> AGK, NTN, 94, pp. 127-131. See Mattogno 2016c, p. 38, and Document 13, p. 315.

Nyiszli's absurd statements are also openly contradicted by his fellow inmate Robert Lévy, who wrote in this regard (Lévy 1996, p. 461):

*"Everyone got up at four and a half in the morning; the Kommandos left the camp at 6 o'clock in order to reach their workplace. Prior to this, they received half a liter of coffee substitute or an indefinable infusion. At noon, they interrupt their work for an hour and received soup (¾ liter to 1 liter). Then they continued to work until 17 o'clock. After returning to the camp, an endless roll call followed that was particularly troublesome during rainy, snowy or freezing weather. For dinner, they distributed half a liter of coffee or herb tea, 300 grams of bread for the day, 40-50 grams of margarine three times a week, with a spoonful of red beetroot jam, three times a piece of sausage, and once a week 40 grams of cheese. The daily diet had a value of 900-1000 calories."*

Lévy also provides a description of the alleged gassing procedure, which reflects the propaganda rumors circulating in the camp at the time (*ibid.*, p. 468):

*"'S.B.,' 'Sonderbehandlung,' 'special treatment' is carried out. The 'Sonderkommando,' who live separately from all the other detainees and who are themselves exterminated about every three months in order to eliminate embarrassing witnesses, cram the unfortunates into the gas chamber. The S.S. murderer who followed the convoy in an ambulance – we nicknamed it the 'angel of death' – threw his 'Cyclon' can through a roof hatch, and a few minutes later, the hydrogen cyanide had extinguished all of these human lives."*

This is a rehashing of the stereotypes of the short-lived *Sonderkommando* (in this case merely 3 months!) and the Red Cross van carrying the Zyklon B (the "ambulance"). As is well-known, "Angel of Death" was the nickname of Josef Mengele according to the orthodox narrative. Thus, as I pointed out earlier, Mengele was at the same time the omnipresent selector on the ramp and the carrier of Zyklon B, which instead would have been the task of two different persons. As for the "Cyclon," which was thrown into the "gas chamber" through a "roof hatch," Lévy, without ever having set foot into a crematorium, knew the alleged secret of its composition – hydrogen cyanide – which was unknown to Nyiszli who claimed to have spent eight months in the Birkenau crematoria.

Lévy presented one of the many variations of the phantasmal stories invented by Auschwitz's resistance groups (*ibid.*, p. 464):

*"The six crematoria burned day and night; facing the crowding during the summer of 1944, the furnaces no longer sufficed, and the corpses were burned in large pits in the birch forest. On a single night in August 1944, the entire Gypsy camp consisting of 4,000 men, women and children was sent into the gas. Meanwhile, the method had been perfected: a railway line had been built ending 50 meters short of the gas chambers, so that a whole transport, wheth-*

*er it embarked at Drancy or Budapest, arrived directly at the place of execution. They only had to pass before the S.S. commission. This made those condemned approach another step closer, and then they entered an immense freight elevator, where they were gassed. Thanks to this system, the corpses were transported without loss of time to the cremation furnaces. In June 1944, the record number of 22,000 incinerations was reached in 24 hours."*

Hence, there were six crematoria at Birkenau! The cremation pits were excavated "in the birch forest" without reference to the courtyard of Crematorium V or to "Bunker 2." The new method of extermination is extremely imaginative. The railway line refers obviously to the so-called Birkenau ramp, but the story of the "immense freight elevator, where they were gassed," is clearly absurd. As to the record number of 22,000 cremations on a single day, this echoes the stories of various other witnesses that come with variations and numerical oscillations up to 26,000 or even 30,000 victims, but also regarding the record-setting month. Here is one of these typical testimonies, by Kurt Markus:<sup>325</sup>

*"When the transports [from Hungary] began [arriving] on May 16, 1944, the crematoria were no longer enough, because during the first days they had to cremate up to 30,000 corpses."*

I will come back to this issue later. In relation to the *Sonderkommando's* fate, Lévy provides valuable information on the specific subject of this study (Lévy 1996, p. 464):

*"In the summer of 1944, there was a revolt of the 'Sonderkommando.' Realizing from certain cues that they were about to be sacrificed, they refused to leave their block and burned down a part of the gas chamber. The SS machine and submachine guns, rushing in from everywhere, immediately put a stop to this attempt at revolt. The two 'Sonderkommando' doctors tried to commit suicide by taking a massive dose of gardenal. One of them died, the other, Dr. B., was saved due to our care. I was very pleased to learn that he had testified as a prosecution witness at the Lüneburg Trial."*

The assumed dating of the revolt goes back to the stories of the early postwar period, which was then given a "historiographic" expression. In his article "The Revolt of the *Sonderkommando* at Auschwitz," Wellers proffered the thesis of two uprisings: one is said to have happened on September 7, 1944, the other on October 6. Little by little, the detainees working at the "Union" workshops had stolen small amounts of gunpowder, which they handed over to the *Sonderkommando*, who planned to blow up the four crematoria with this. But on the agreed-upon day, the SS was warned by a traitor (Wellers 1949, pp. 17f.):

*"On that same day, 200 men of the Sondercommando [sic] were gassed."*

<sup>325</sup> Declaration by Kurt Markus titled "Auschwitz-Birkenau. Das grösste Vernichtungslager der Welt." Trial against the Auschwitz camp garrison, AGK, NTN, 135, p. 153.

It is unclear, however, how the rebels could burn down “a part of the gas chamber.” The final part of Lévy’s account is particularly important. From it we glean that two doctors were members of the *Sonderkommando*, one of whom died while the other survived: “Dr. B.,” which clearly stands for Sigismund Bendel, who indeed testified during the Lüneburg trial, that is, the Belzen Trial as a witness during the hearing of October 1, 1945 (see Chapter 4.2.). Lévy does not mention Nyiszli by name in his story, although Nyiszli could have been the only other doctor involved. According to Lévy, however, Nyiszli had died of suicide!

As for the number of victims, Lévy regurgitates the Soviet propaganda figure that was commonly known at that time (Lévy 1996, p. 457):

*“[Birkenau] has seen the extermination of more than four million human beings.”*

#### 4.1.3. Epstein

On this detainee, Nyiszli writes in his book:

*“The Gypsy camp has a point of special interest, the experimental barracks located there. Professor Dr. Epstein, professor publicus ordinarius at the University of Prague and a pediatrician of world renown, is chief of the research lab. He has been a prisoner of the K.Z. for four years already. His assistant is Dr. Bendel, lecturer in the faculty of medicine at Paris.”* (Chapter IV)

*“Study of twin phenomena on living people. This research was carried out by Dr. Epstein, ordinarius at the University of Prague, who had been in custody for five years now.”* (TVN)

*“Prof. Dr. Epstein A., university professor, Prague (Auschwitz II, Zigeunerlager [Gypsy Camp])”* (TVN)

Before the German army occupied Prague, Dr. Berthold Epstein emigrated to Norway, where he was eventually arrested by the German Security Police. A “Questionnaire for Jews in Norway” dated March 5, 1942 and bearing the name Epstein Berthold Israel lists the following qualifications: “Pediatrician. University professor for childhood diseases (1930). Director of the pediatric clinic at Prague (1932-1939).”<sup>326</sup> On December 1, 1942, he was deported to Auschwitz – hence, in the summer of 1944, he had been “in custody” for less than two years, not five. In January 1943, he was transferred to the Monowitz Camp, and in August of that year he was transferred back to the Birkenau Gypsy camp, where he worked in the experimental barracks (Czech 1974, p. 34). This latter information, however, is not documented and seems to be based solely on Nyiszli’s statements.

<sup>326</sup> Riksarkivet og Statsarkivene. Statspolitiet - Hovedkontoret / Osloavdelingen (Norwegian National and State Archives. State Police – Headquarters / Oslo Department), G/Ga/L0009: Spørreskjema for jøder i Norge, Oslo (Questionnaire for Jews in Norway, Oslo).

Dr. Epstein was one of four physicians who, on March 4, 1945, signed an appeal in German "To the International Public" (*"An die internationale Öffentlichkeit"*). The other three were Geza Mansfeld, university professor in Budapest, Bruno Fischer, university professor in Prague, and Henri Limousin, university professor in Clermont Ferrand.

The appeal focuses on medical experiments in Auschwitz, but without mentioning twins or any "experimental barracks" in the Gypsy camp:<sup>327</sup>

*"In various infirmary blocks of the Main Camp and of associated subcamps, experiments on healthy living people were also performed by SS camp physicians which otherwise would have been done using laboratory animals, namely: by Dr. Mengele, by Dr. Endreß [Entress], Tilo [Thilo], Klein, Fischer and Kittel [Kitt], and moreover by SS Sturmbannführer Prof. Dr. Klauberg [Klauberg]."*

[Kitt][Klauberg]As examples, X-ray castration and pharmacological experiments with injections were mentioned. The authors of the appeal reiterated the most atrocious propaganda stereotypes of the time:

*"To save petroleum, oils and fats necessary for the combustion were in parts extracted from the corpses of those gassed. Technical oils and greases for machines were also extracted from the corpses, even washing soap."*

By signing this appeal, famous university professors of medicine endorsed these scurrilous charges!

Dr. Epstein was also questioned by the Soviets, and an excerpt of his deposition was published in the Soviet report on Auschwitz which was presented during the Nuremberg IMT:<sup>328</sup>

*"... Selected prisoners were sent into the gas chambers for extermination. For several months, we saw long rows of human beings walk to the crematoria into their death. Especially large groups were murdered in May, June and July 1944. During this time, the crematoria operated day and night, which could be seen from the flames spewing from the chimneys. We often sensed the smell of burning flesh, hair and fingernails. Apart from the flames coming out of the crematoria's chimneys, we saw two gigantic outdoor fires in those days that blazed brightly during the night. Screams and cries as well as the barking of the SS men's guard dogs could be heard in the camp all night long. The unfortunate victims, who due to the overcrowded crematoria were sent one by one to their death in the open fires, sensed the fate that awaited them. ...*

*'I knew that my closest relatives had met that fate, and that I would not evade it either. Roughly every other week, the camp physician, MENGELE, selected the people who were to be killed in the crematorium. This way, some 500 children were killed on one day. Heartbreaking scenes unfolded when the kids were brought away, because everyone knew whence they went. During these*

<sup>327</sup> GARF, 7021-108-46, pp. 8f. (pp. 1f. of the appeal).

<sup>328</sup> 008-USSR. IMT, Vol. 39, pp. 251f.



*events, the SS men and their aides distinguished themselves in exceptional brutality. When we arrived at Oswiezim, I was separated from my wife and never saw her again. Later on, I heard that she had not even been admitted into the camp. My wife was undoubtedly killed in the usual way. In March 1944, the SS men murdered my wife's sister with her two children and my 38-year-old niece. In July 1944, my sister perished as well."*

This tale reflects the black-propaganda tales that were then regurgitated by Nyiszli: flames shooting from chimneys, "the smell of burning flesh, hair, and fingernails" – Nyiszli: "Burning human flesh emits an acrid smell" (Chapter I); "The air is heavy with the smell of burning human flesh and singed hair" (Chapter XXX) – the presence of two outdoor fires, the biweekly selections (daily for Nyiszli) of inmates who were sent to death.

Epstein mentioned Mengele only in relation to these "selections."

In a 1987 article co-authored by Tadeusz Szymański, who had been Epstein's colleague in the Gypsy camp, as well as Danuta Szymańska and Tadeusz Śnieszko, Epstein was described as a department physician (*Abteilungsarzt*) and researcher at the section of Barracks 22 that hosted patients suffering from noma (autumn 1943):

*"The detainee Prof. Bertold Epstein of the University of Prague conducted research on noma by order of Mengele."*

Epstein's assistant was not Bendel, who is never even mentioned by Czech in the article mentioned earlier, but Dr. Rudolf Weisskopf (Szymański *et al.* 1987, pp. 202, 204f.). This is confirmed by Helena Kubica in her article on Mengele, where she states that the real last name of this "helper and assistant" (*"Helfer und Assistent"*) of Epstein was Vitek (Kubica 1997, p. 379).

Dr. Epstein signed an affidavit on March 3, 1947 for the I.G. Farben Trial in which he spoke exclusively of his activity at Monowitz. Among other things, he asserted:

*"There were general directives in Monowitz which prescribed that only those detainees were to be admitted to the infirmary whose recovery would not [be expected to] last more than 14 days."* (NI-5847, p. 1)

Hence, Dr. Epstein was even more drastic than Nyiszli, who indicated a longer recovery period:

*"It was generally known that after 3 to 4 weeks, if the sick did not heal, they were put on a transport, that is, they were sent to be gassed at Birkenau or to be shot at Birkenau."* (NI-11710)

The Monowitz hospital register goes until June 19, 1944. This last page contains the names and serial numbers of 33 inpatient inmates, all Jews except for four, next to their discharge date (*Entlassung*). Three of these Jewish inmates were hospitalized for more than a month, specifically:

- Steinfeld, Israel (70219), until July 29 (40 days)
- Rabinowitsch, Emil (167639) until July 22 (33 days)

– Algawa, Josef (115863) until July 28 (39 days).<sup>329</sup>

Going back in that document, we find the detainee Forsysz, Michel (125300), who was admitted on June 16, 1944, and was discharged on October 17 (p. 471), Grünbaum, Jakob (144239) from June 15 to August 23 (transferred to Birkenau; p. 470), Zorovics, Moses (A 8102) from June 15 to August 3 (p. 469), Kloppmann, Joel (79673), from June 14 to August 9 (p. 468), Weinberger, Alexander (A 3890) from June 14 to August 21 (p. 467), Guttman, Benno (171980) from June 13 to September 1 (p. 465), Pintzow, Michael (105371) from June 12 to September 27, and Farkas, Elias (A 7965) from June 12 to October 22 (p. 464). I could go on like that for a long time, but you get the point. Just remember that Primo Levi was hospitalized at the Monowitz hospital on March 30, 1944, and remained there until April 20 (p. 360).

Dr. Epstein testified as a witness for the prosecution during the I.G. Farben Trial on November 18, 1947. His testimony does not contain any reference to Birkenau. During cross-examination by defense lawyer Hans Seidl, Epstein claimed that the hospital for Monowitz detainees had received the verbal directive to only admit prisoners for whom recovery could be expected within two weeks. The others were sent directly to the hospital at Auschwitz, where, it was said, selections were made for the “gas chambers.”<sup>330</sup> However, an analysis of the data contained in the Monowitz hospital’s register yields a total of 2,599 detainees who were transferred to Auschwitz and Birkenau,<sup>331</sup> meaning that all of these inmates had already been admitted to the Monowitz hospital before they were transferred to the hospitals of these two adjacent camps.

This fact finds a spectacular confirmation in a defense document submitted during the I.G. Farben Trial, called the “Hoerlein Document No. 215.”<sup>332</sup> It is a collection of clinical records of ten detainees, four of them Jewish, who were admitted to Auschwitz’s inmate infirmary due to tuberculosis and who died after many weeks or even months of treatment. The documentation includes drawings of pulmonary radiographs, clinical records with daily progress reports of the disease, and, in five cases, autopsy reports.

For instance, the Polish detainee Czeslaus Łanczy (reg. no. 122772) worked for “Kdo Buna,” that is to say at Monowitz. He was admitted to the infirmary on August 12, 1943, and remained there until the day of his death on May 8, 1944. The next day his body was subjected to autopsy.

The four Jews in detention were:

<sup>329</sup> NI-10186, p. 476; all subsequent page numbers from there unless stated otherwise.

<sup>330</sup> Official Record. United States Military Tribunals Nürnberg. Case No. 6, Tribunal 6. U.S. vs Carl Krauch *et al.* Volume 12, Transcript (English), p. 3991.

<sup>331</sup> NI-10186. This number appears on the handwritten title page, which sums up the document’s contents in numeric terms.

<sup>332</sup> National Archives Microfilm Publications. Microfilm Publication M892. Records of the United States. Nuernberg War Crimes Trials. United States of America v. Carl Krauch *et al.* (Case VI). August 14, 1947 – July 30, 1948. Roll 68. Defense Exhibits. Washington, 1976.

- Michael Awerbuch (99214), Polish Jew, admitted on July 2, 1943, died on November 9, 1943.
- Isaak Attas (115899), Greek Jew, admitted on May 22, 1943, died on February 25, 1944; an autopsy was performed the next day.
- Benjamin Beresi (114941), Greek Jew, admitted on July 6, 1942, died on April 3, 1944; an autopsy was performed the next day.
- Lejzor Weinblum (124262), Polish Jew, admitted on July 12, 1943, died on January 12, 1944.

These documents demonstrate that, first of all, even tuberculosis patients were regularly admitted to the inmate infirmary and remained there for several months, and that the Auschwitz infirmary's dissection room worked perfectly during May and June. Hence, Nyiszli's claims about the uniqueness of his dissection room and his forensic activities are lies.

Document 21 is the last page of the clinical record of the inmate Beresi (spelled Beressy in the autopsy report). The medical diagnosis is "Lungen: Tbc fibro-caseosa progrediens" (lungs: advanced fibrocaceous tuberculosis); the first line, "Monatstag" gives the days of the month, the next line, "Kr. Tage," refers to the days of illness. The detainee died after 273 days of hospitalization at the inmate infirmary. Document 22 is the autopsy report prepared by Dr. Fritz Klein on February 26, 1944 concerning the detainee Isaak Attas.

After this brief digression, we return to the witnesses. On March 3, 1947, Dr. Vitek, who was a dermatologist, signed an affidavit (NI-4830), in which he stated that he had been arrested in Prague on January 26, 1942, and had been sent to Theresienstadt, whence he was transferred to Auschwitz on October 26 of that same year and sent to Monowitz. In February 1943, he was sent back to Auschwitz, where he remained until June 1943. Then he was transferred to Birkenau to the Gypsy camp, where he remained until November 4, 1944, when he returned to Auschwitz. He only talked about his brief experience at Monowitz, describing that camp in terrible terms as dictated by the propaganda of the time (he also parroted the fable of a maximum hospital-admissions term for inmates of only 14 days). On his long activity in the Gypsy camp, he did not say a single word, which indicates that he had nothing to say about Dr. Mengele's alleged experiments. On the other hand, if we consider that Vitek's specialization was dermatology, it is clear that his primary task was the fight against noma.

During the I.G. Farben Trial, Vitek even testified in person on November 18, 1947, immediately before Dr. Epstein. During cross-examination by defense lawyer Seidl, Vitek talked about his one-and-a-half-year stay at Birkenau's "sickbay" without giving any specifics. He reported that he had been the head physician of one of the hospital barracks, in which there were cases of typhus, and that he was in charge of the care for about 800 patients. The whole camp had about 16,000 inmates. It is unclear to which hospital the witness was referring. He did not expressly mention the Gypsy camp.

Karl Hoffmann, Otto Ambros's defense lawyer during the I.G. Farben Trial, then asked Dr. Vitek – departing from the “fact” established during earlier trials that homicidal gassings had occurred at Birkenau – whether he thought it possible that detainees participated in them. Vitek replied:<sup>333</sup>

*“Inmates did not participate in the gassing itself. The inmates participated in the burning of the gassed bodies. This was the so-called Sonderkommando (special detail).”*

Vitek did not mention Mengele and his activities at all.

#### 4.1.4. Heller

In Chapter XIV of his book, Nyiszli writes:

*“The day after the liquidation I went on official business into Camp ‘F,’ where I chatted with them, and so with the renowned Prague physician Dr. Heller, former chief physician of the Czech camp, as well. From him I heard recounted the sufferings and ruin of the finest flower of Czech Jewry. Since that day, the eight doctors have died as well. They were true doctors! With profound respect I pay tribute to their memory!”*

Although Czech mentions a Dr. Heller, reg. no. 146703, who is said to have been transferred to Mengele's Camp Sector BIIf, the source of this information is Nyiszli himself (Czech 1974, p. 48).

Miroslaw Kárný informs us that Dr. Otto Heller, for whom he gives no registration number, was the head physician of the infirmary inside the Theresienstadt family camp (Sector BIIfb), without giving any more details.<sup>334</sup>

#### 4.1.5. Nyiszli's Three Assistants

The episode of Mengele assigning assistants to Dr. Nyiszli can be found in Chapter XVIII of his book:

*“The first whose hand I shake is Dr. Görög Dénes, a private university lecturer and pathologist at the State Public Hospital of Szombathely. He is a short, thin man of about forty-five years of age who wears thick glasses. He makes a good impression on me. I have the feeling that we will be good friends. The second is a short, stocky individual of about fifty years of age, with a hunched back and a very ugly face. He is Fischer Adolf, autopsy assistant for twenty years at the Prague Institute of Anatomy. As a Czech Jew, he has been an inmate of the K.Z. for five years already. The third is Dr. Körner József, a physician from Nice, inmate of the K.Z. for four years already. A taciturn but qualified young man, he is only thirty-two years old.”*

<sup>333</sup> Official Record. United States Military Tribunals Nürnberg. Case No. 6, Tribunal 6. U.S. vs Carl Krauch *et al.* Volume 12, Transcript (English), pp. 3972, 3975.

<sup>334</sup> Kárný 1997, p. 171.

In a report of July 4, 1945, a former Jewish Auschwitz inmate from Hungary wrote about Dénes as follows (see Section 4.3.2.):

*"When our transport arrived Mengele's first question was whether there was a pathologist among us, and he kept repeating the same question till he found the pathologist of the public hospital of Szombathely, Dr Dénes Görög."*

This deportee, of whom we know only his initials S.M., arrived at Birkenau on June 30, 1944. If his claims are true, since Nyiszli was transferred from Monowitz to Birkenau's Sector BIIf on June 27, 1944 and stayed there for another five days before being taken to Crematorium II (which took place on July 2; see p. 190), it follows that Mengele had already found a prosector when he brought Nyiszli to the crematorium.

We know nothing about an Adolf Fischer. Helena Kubica mentions him together with Görög and Körner, but only backed up by Nyiszli's book (Kubica 1997, p. 404).

Körner's name, as seen earlier (Section 3.1.3f.), shows up on the June 27, 1944 transfer order from Monkowitz's inmate infirmary to Birkenau's Sector BIIf with the name Jecheskiel and registration number 169840, which was assigned to Jews deported from France on December 20, 1943 (Czech 1989, p. 684). In the list of this transport, we find a Koerner Jacheskiel, born December 6, 1912 in Rohsadna.<sup>335</sup> Hence, by the summer of 1944, Körner had been in Auschwitz for a few months, not for four years.

#### 4.1.6. Dina

This detainee is mentioned by Nyiszli at the end of his Chapter IV:

*"Dr. Mengele visits the experimental barracks every day. He takes part in the research with keen interest, working together with two prominent doctors and a painter named Dina who prepares, with great skill, the drawings needed for the work. She is from Prague, and she has been in the Czech camp for three years. As Dr. Mengele's associate, she enjoys certain advantages. She is counted among the 'prominent'!"*

This is Dinah Gottliebová. How much she was traumatized by Mengele's alleged terrible experiments can be deduced from her drawing depicting her boss on a bicycle (see Document 23)! As I noted elsewhere, she was left alive by Mengele, along with the other "keepers of secrets," Epstein, Vitek/Weisskopf and Martyna Puszyzna (Mattogno 2008, p. 12; see the Appendix). Mengele evidently thought he had nothing to fear from these inmates.

---

<sup>335</sup> Klarsfeld 1978, Liste alphabetique du convoi N° 63 (the book is unpaginated).

#### 4.1.7. Michel, Pipel and Dajen

About “Michel,” Nyiszli says only that he was a “French-born cook” who worked in the non-existent kitchen of the *Sonderkommando* of Crematorium II (Chapter XXIV). In the respective list of prisoners published by Friedler *et al.*, no “Michel” of French origin can be found.

Pipel is not a proper name, but the term denoting servants of “prominent” inmates and SS men, hence that person is impossible to identify.

Dajen is a Hebrew word (*dajjân*) that designates a judge, especially of a rabbinical court. A “Dajan” is also mentioned in Salmen Lewental’s manuscript.<sup>336</sup> In the French edition of the manuscripts by the *Sonderkommando* members, Ber Mark states that Leib Langfus was the “dayan” (Mark 1982, p. 297, Note 2, p. 298, Note 2). In the Auschwitz Museum’s edition of those texts, in Lejb Langfus’ manuscript, a “Dajan of Maków” enters the scene prior to the deportation to Auschwitz. Here a footnote states that this person was a judge of a rabbinical court who was probably assigned to the *Sonderkommando* after the selection.<sup>337</sup> Since the authors write about a different person, it is clear that this is not the same “*Dajan*.”

The “Dajan” was probably a figure typical of the fairy tales circulating in the camp.

#### 4.1.8. Bennamia [*Bennahmias*] and Olleé [*Olère*]

These are said to have been two members of the *Sonderkommando*. Nyiszli never named Bennamia in his book, but in 1948 he put his name on the list of five inmates, three of whom testified “in front of the Nuremberg tribunal”:

“*Bennamia Daniel, Athenian, Athens, rue Sokrates 8, stoker of Crematorium I.*” (TVN)

This reference is rather enigmatic because, as far as is known, Daniel Bennahmias did not testify in the post-war period. His first public statement was an interview he granted in 1986. His testimony was collected in 1993 by Rebecca Camhi Fromer in her book *The Holocaust Odyssey of Daniel Bennahmias, Sonderkommando* (The University of Alabama Press, Tuscaloosa). It is not clear how Nyiszli became acquainted with the name “Bennamia” during the years 1946 through 1948.

David Oler (artist’s name *Olère*) arrived at Auschwitz on March 4, 1943 with a Jewish transport from Drancy, and was registered under number 106144. Czech informs us that “all detainees selected from this transport [100 people] are assigned to the *Sonderkommando*” (Czech 1989, p. 430), which

<sup>336</sup> “Handschrift von Salmen Lewental”, in: Czech *et al.* 1996, p. 244.

<sup>337</sup> “Lejb (*Langfus*), [Aussiedlung]”, *ibid.*, p. 98.

confirms once more that the story of the extermination of this group of prisoners every four months, as Nyiszli claimed, is untrue.

In his book, Nyiszli speaks of a Parisian painter in the imaginary context of a message written by the *Sonderkommando* of Crematorium II destined for the outside world. It is an imaginary context because the message, presumably written on three sheets of parchment, was allegedly hidden inside a sofa manufactured in the non-existent carpentry shop of the crematorium:

*"Even if we do not survive we will ensure that the world comes to know of the cruelty and banal wickedness, unimaginable to the human mind, of a people that holds itself to be superior.*

*A message must go out to the world from here! Perhaps it will be found sooner, perhaps later, after years. Even then it will proclaim their guilt. The 200 members of the Crematorium I Sonderkommando will sign the message in the consciousness of their approaching death. And the sofa bed will take it out to the world beyond the barbed wire, to Oberscharführer Mussfeld's apartment, for now, in Mannheim.*

*The message is completed. It exhaustively describes the horrors perpetrated here in the last few years. We name the executioners of those who perished here. We report the approximate number of the dead. We make known the method and instruments of extermination. The message is written on three large sheets of parchment. The Sonderkommando clerk, a painter from Paris, wrote it in beautiful characters, and to ensure that the writing would not fade, it was written on the model of old parchment scrolls with India ink. The fourth sheet contained the 200 signatures of the Kommando. The parchment sheets were stitched together with fine silk thread. Rolled into a scroll, it was placed in a thin, cylinder-shaped metal canister made by one of our tinsmiths which was then soldered shut to make it air- and watertight. Our carpenters placed this case in the wool stuffing between the springs of the sofa.*

*Another such message with the same text and signatures, also in a soldered metal canister, was buried in the courtyard of Crematorium II." (End of Chapter XXI)*

The Auschwitz Museum assures us that, between 1945 and 1980 at the ruins of the Birkenau crematoria, several manuscripts of the *Sonderkommando* were indeed found (Czech *et al.* 1996, p. 7), which were then translated and published, as far as was possible. The one mentioned by Nyiszli was never found.

Here I make a short side note on the purpose of these messages. At least in Nyiszli's case it is acknowledged that, in his fantastic story, there is a logic that is missing in the aforementioned manuscripts. In fact, as I pointed out in 1996, most striking about these manuscripts found after the war is a radical dissonance common to them all indiscriminately: These documents are said to have been written by members of the *Sonderkommando* for the historical record, in order to inform the world of the horrors of the Birkenau "death factory." But what do these documents contain? Sketches of the crematoria and gas

chambers? Descriptions of the structure and operation of the gas chambers? Descriptions of the structure and operation of the cremation furnaces? The number of Zyklon-B cans used per gassing? Lists of the transports of Jews gassed? The number of people gassed? The number of corpses cremated? Lists containing the names of *Sonderkommando* members? Lists naming the SS men involved?

Nothing of that kind. Any information about gas chambers and gassings is so sparse and vague that it not only conveys no new information in this regard, but for any reader not acquainted with knowledge on the subject, these writings would actually be incomprehensible (Mattogno 1996, pp. 63-68).

As an example, I may add here that the "Lejb" manuscript, one of the longest, devotes 89(!) pages to the antecedents, followed by an account of the deportation train's arrival at Auschwitz, a narration that goes on for almost eleven pages! (Czech *et al.* 1996, pp. 73-129)

Returning to Nyiszli, when he wrote his book, he was unfamiliar with the name Olère, and only as late as 1948 did he start using the distorted spelling Olleé. He described this person as follows:

*"D. Olleé was a stoker at the 15th cremation furnace of Crematorium I during the day shift, and during the night shift he shoveled coke under the corpses of thousands of people. [...] The 15th furnace is the last of the row of sinisterly aligned furnaces in the cremation hall. Here, at the end of the great hall, D. Olleé shovels the coke."* (TVN)

Another presumed member of the *Sonderkommando*, Dov Paisikovic, speaks as follows of Olère:<sup>338</sup>

*"Moreover a Jew from Paris called 'Oler' had been in the Sonderkommando already for a long time. He was an artist painter, and in the period when I know the Sonderkommando [since early May 1944], he had to paint paintings exclusively for SS men."*

In a subsequent statement (August 10, 1964) written in Polish, Paisikovic claimed to have met two *Sonderkommando* members from France, "one of them was an artist, a painter, whose name was probably Oler. He did not know and did not understand the Polish language. He painted various paintings for the SS in the 'dentists' room."<sup>339</sup>

Paisikovic's statement not only stands in contrast to Nyiszli's, but also to the themes of Olère's paintings (see Klarsfeld 1989). It must be assumed that Olère did not testify during any trial, did not make any official deposition, did not write any report, but entrusted his testimony to some fifty paintings dealing with such vast and disparate themes that, if they represented real scenes, Olère would have been present everywhere in the camp. Actually, as I have

<sup>338</sup> Declaration by D. Paisikovic, Vienna, October 17, 1963, p. 3. RvO, c[21]96.

<sup>339</sup> APMO, Zbiór Oświadczenia, Vol. 44, p. 98.



shown elsewhere,<sup>340</sup> Olère's paintings are simple illustrations of the propaganda spread by the camp's resistance movement: visual propaganda instead of written propaganda.

The strange fact is that Paisikovic, like Nyiszli, was evacuated to Mauthausen, then to Melk, and finally released by the Americans from the Ebensee Camp,<sup>341</sup> but the two never mentioned each other. However, while Nyiszli claims that, on the day of the evacuation, only four members of the *Sonderkommando* were still alive – he and his three assistants – Paisikovic asserted:<sup>338</sup>

*“82 prisoners of the Sonderkommando – including us of the Sonderkommando of Crematorium II – survived until the evacuation of Auschwitz. On evacuation, on January 18, 1945, disorganization already reigned among the SS.”*

#### 4.1.9. *Rottenführer* Holländer, Eindenmüller, Dr. Klein

*Rottenführer* Holländer and *Rottenführer* Eindenmüller are mentioned by Nyiszli in his Chapter XXIV, together with *Oberscharführer* Seit (recte: Seitz). Holländer is mentioned only by Nyiszli (and plagiarized by Filip Müller). It is unknown whether he ever existed. Eindenmüller appears in the card file of Auschwitz SS members, but his deployment to the crematoria is likewise only claimed by Nyiszli and, in his wake, by Müller.<sup>342</sup>

Nyiszli states that “Dr. Klein, SS Surgeon-Major,” was still in Birkenau on January 1, 1945 (Chapter XXXVII). Since that is New Years Day, getting that date wrong is quite unlikely. Dr. Fritz Klein, however, was merely an SS *Untersturmführer* (lieutenant, the rank of a major corresponded to *Sturmbannführer*), and he was transferred to the Neuengamme Camp on December 15, 1944 (Phillips 1949, p. 717).

#### 4.1.10. Mengele

Nyiszli attributes three types of crimes to Dr. Mengele:

- 1) selection at the ramp,
- 2) research on twins with killing the individuals studied,
- 3) research on the degeneration of the “Jewish race.”

The crimes of the first type evidently concern selections for the “gas chambers.” Here, Nyiszli's statements are false and unfounded even from an orthodox point of view:

<sup>340</sup> Mattogno 2015a, Chapters 10.2.4., 13.3.2., 18.4.6.3.

<sup>341</sup> Declaration by D. Paisikovic, August 10, 1964; APMO, Zbiór Oświadczenia, Vol. 44, pp. 96f. S. Klarsfeld speaks of Mauthausen and Melk (1989, p. 7); Sonja Knopp informs us that he was liberated at Ebensee on May 6, 1945 (Knopp 2009, p. 68, Note 283).

<sup>342</sup> Piper 2000, “List of SS Men Employed Directly in the Gas Chambers and Crematoria,” pp. 235f.

*"One after another, the Hungarian Jewish transports arrive at the ramp. It often happens that two trains will arrive together and pour forth from their insides thousands of people.*

*What Dr. Mengele does at the ramp cannot even be called selection anymore. His arm moves in only one direction. To the left! Entire trains thus go, without remainder, into the gas chambers or onto the pyres."* (Chapter XIV)

As I pointed out earlier, no less than 107,200 Hungarian Jews were either registered or sent to the Birkenau transit camp, and no significant Holocaust historian asserts that entire transports were exterminated.

Nyiszli claims that Mengele studied "phenomena such as none will ever decipher, the cause of multiple births" (Chapter XXX), and in Chapter VIII, he points out that the immediate purpose was

*"the multiplication of the German race! The end goal, in turn, is that there should be enough Germans to replace the Czech, Hungarian, Polish and Dutch peoples, condemned to extermination, in the areas inhabited by these peoples and now declared Lebensraum for the Third Reich."*

This is a puerile and nonsensical accusation. This also applies to the alleged studies on the degeneration of the "Jewish race," which is not a National Socialist theory, but Nyiszli's pathetic invention. He claims:

*"Just as race research is built upon a false theory, the idea of a superior race is pseudoscientific; so too is Dr. Mengele's twin-research work pseudoscientific and based on a false theory. False as well, and leading to massacre here, is the degenerative theory of dwarves and cripples with which they hope to prove the inferiority of the Jewish race."* (Chapter XIX)

According to this theory,

*"the Jewish people, which, despite counting six thousand years of history, has had no right to exist for centuries now, because in the course of their thousands of years of existence they have degenerated into dwarves and cripples."* (Chapter XIX)

Mengele was not "a race biologist" (Chapter XV), but an anthropologist. His duties at Auschwitz were summarized by the SS garrison physician Dr. Wirths in an "Evaluation of SS *Hauptsturmführer* (of the reserve) Dr. Josef Mengele born on March 16, 1911" dated 19 August 1944:<sup>343</sup>

*"SS Hauptsturmführer Dr. Josef Mengele serves his duty at the office of the SS garrison physician Auschwitz, since May 30, 1943 [...]  
During his activities at Auschwitz Concentration Camp, he has applied his knowledge practically and theoretically as a camp doctor during the fight against severe epidemics. With circumspection, perseverance and vigor, he has fulfilled all the tasks assigned to him often under the most difficult conditions to the complete satisfaction of his superiors and has shown himself capa-*

<sup>343</sup> Kubica 1997, pp. 414f.; subsequent page numbers from there, unless otherwise stated.

*ble of coping with every situation. In addition, as an anthropologist, he has eagerly used the short time off-duty at his disposal to educate himself, and has made a valuable contribution with his work by evaluating the scientific material of anthropological science made accessible to him by his office. His achievements are therefore to be described as excellent. [...]*

*In the most conscientious fulfillment of his duty as a physician, he contracted typhus during the combat against epidemics in Auschwitz. Due to his special achievements, he was awarded the War Merit Cross II. Cl[ass]. w/Sw[ords].*

*In addition to his medical knowledge, Dr. M[engele]. has special knowledge as an anthropologist. He appears to be suitable for any other assignment and also for the next higher assignment."*

From this document it appears that Mengele's main job was camp physician, and as such he distinguished himself in the fight against epidemics. He performed his activity as an anthropologist in his spare time (!), hence without a specific superior directive.

From the documents on Mengele reproduced by Kubica in the article mentioned earlier, it is evident that he performed his anthropological activity only *in vivo*, as Nyiszli would say, namely research in the areas of anthropometry (pp. 388, 393) and clinical psychiatry (p. 392). The documentation also includes analyses of x-ray images, urine and blood samples taken from inmates (pp. 394f.), a clinical record (pp. 398f.), as well as patient charts with temperature curves (pp. 400-402). He was also involved in research on the noma epidemic raging in the Gypsy camp, as is demonstrated by him sending the head of a 12-year-old boy to the Hygienic-Bacteriological Research Institute of the Waffen SS Southeast (Hygienisch-Bakteriologische Untersuchungsstelle der Waffen-SS, Südost) for histological examination (p. 394). The sender was the "Inmate Infirmary Gypsy Camp Auschwitz II, BIIe" ("Häftlingskrankenbau Zigeunerlager Auschwitz II, BIIe"). Noma, which spread among the children in this camp sector, is a disease that develops in the mouth and destroys the face, which is why it is also called *noma facies*.

Nyiszli paints Mengele as an omnipotent character who could order the "gassing" of entire sectors of the Birkenau Camp, as in the case of Sector BIIc:

*"Dr. Mengele rises from his seat and, as if he has just made up his mind on the question, he says to Dr. Thilo: 'I am no longer in a position to feed the debilitated residents of Camp C who are not working. I will liquidate them within two weeks!'"* (Chapter XXVII)

*"The camp's numbers had been reduced by ten thousand heads, and the K.Z. archives had been increased by one piece of paper. On the piece of paper stood a brief report: 'The section of Concentration Camp Auschwitz inhabited by Czechs, the so-called Czech camp, has been liquidated due to a high incidence of cases of petechial typhus!' Signed: Dr. Mengele, Hauptsturmführer, I. Lagerarzt."* (Chapter XIV)

It is naïve and childish for any person to think that a mere *Hauptsturmführer*, hence captain, had the obligation to feed the detainees of an entire camp sector, and that he had the competence to kill them if he could not feed them.

Just as puerile is Nyiszli's claim that Mengele was "containing the spread of epidemic disease" by "gassing":

*"Located next to the Czech camp is Camp C, the camp for Hungarian women; the number of its inhabitants often reaches 60,000, despite the transports transferred each day to more-distant camps. In this overcrowded camp it happened one day that the doctors found symptoms of scarlet fever among a few of the inhabitants of one of the barracks. On Dr. Mengele's orders, this barracks as well as the ones lying to its left and right were placed under lockdown. The barracks lockdown lasted from morning to evening, when trucks arrived and took the inhabitants of all three barracks to the crematorium. Such were the effective measures ordered by Dr. Mengele for containing the spread of epidemic disease.*

*The Czech camp and the three barracks of Camp C thus fell victim to Dr. Mengele's actions to contain the epidemic. Fortunately, the barracks doctors caught on in good time, and if an infectious disease raised its head anywhere, they were careful not to bring it to the attention of the SS medical authorities. If possible, they hid such patients in some out-of-the-way box in the barracks and cared for them according to the meager means available, but they did not refer them to the hospital because there the SS doctors check the patients every day, and the emergence of an infectious disease could bring on the complete liquidation of the patient's respective barracks, as well as 2-3 of the neighboring barracks. In the medical jargon of the SS, this method is known as broad-based epidemic containment. The result of an action is 1-2 truckloads of ashes."* (Chapter XV)

It is unclear how the inmate physicians could conceal sick prisoners, if the dead had to be present also during the roll call:

*"If the barracks has any dead – there are 5 or 6 each day, sometimes as many as 10 – they too figure in the roll call. They must stand there at the end of the row, propped up on either side by a pair of prisoners, as long as the counting goes on, for dead or alive, the headcount must add up!"* (Chapter III)

But this is not the issue. From extant documents it results undeniably that "containment of epidemics" was carried out with medical measures, and that patients suffering from infectious disease were regularly admitted to the inmate hospitals (see Mattogno 2016c, Chapters 2 to 4, pp. 42-85).

#### 4.1.11. Was Nyiszli Jewish at all?

The question may seem like a bad joke, but Nyiszli's book contains many expressions that make it legitimate. At the beginning of Chapter VII, he writes:

*"Within a few minutes, the doors are flung to one side and the wagons disgorge from within themselves the chosen people of Israel"*

This observation has all the air of brutal sarcasm. In Chapter XII, he states:

*"After all, in this time of racial laws, even in my civilian life, I was banned from the medical treatment of Christian, or rather, Aryan patients."* (My emphasis)

In his account in Chapter XXXI of the killing of the two deportees from Litzmannstadt, father and son, he makes another surprising statement:

*"I ask them whether they want anything to eat. They are very hungry, they say. I tell one of the Sonderkommando to bring food for them. They immediately receive a plentiful portion of meat stew with macaroni. Only the Sonderkommando has such food. They immediately start in on it and greedily consume the fine food which they have not tasted for so long. They do not know, though I do, that they are consuming their death-house meal, their 'last supper.'" (My emphasis)*

And furthermore:

*"It is November 1, 1944, the Day of the Dead."* (Chapter XXXII)

The Jewish New Year (*rosh ha-shanah*) falls in the beginning of September yet is completely ignored by Nyiszli, who instead observes (Chapter XXXVII):

*"Amid such doubts and hopes, the first of January 1945 arrived. New Year's!"*

Precisely when claiming his affiliation to Judaism, Nyiszli denies it with a blatant blasphemy:

*"What a horrible drama of our Jewish existence that I, a Jewish doctor, must examine them with precise clinical methods before they go to their deaths, and then dissect their still-warm bodies. I feel this horrible irony of our Jewish destiny with such passion that my nerves, in my impotence, are strained almost to the point of madness.*

*By whose will has this series of horrors descended upon our unfortunate people? Perhaps by God's! He has long since hidden himself in shame, then, for even He did not will this much."* (Chapter XXXI; My emphasis)

It must be agreed that Nyiszli was really a Jew of his own class!

## 4.2. Dr. Charles Sigismund Bendel, *Sonderkommando*

### 4.2.1. A Professional Witness

Dr. Bendel can be seen as a kind of professional witness. He testified for the prosecution during the Belsen Trial (staged from September 17 to November 17, 1945),<sup>344</sup> during which he was interrogated by Colonel Backhouse at the hearing on October 1, 1945 (Phillips 1949, pp. 130-135). On October 21, 1945, he also signed a declaration for this trial that was recorded as “Production N° 24”,<sup>345</sup> which later became Document NI-11390. Bendel then participated in the Tesch Trial (staged from March 1-8, 1946; United Nations... 1947, Vol. I), during which he was interrogated by Major Draper on the second day of the trial, March 2, 1946.<sup>346</sup> In 1946, a statement by Bendel appeared in the book *Témoignages sur Auschwitz* (*Testimonies on Auschwitz*).<sup>347</sup> On October 7, 1947, Bendel was questioned by police officer Pierre Berillet, who belonged to the National Security Directorate of the French Department for the Interior. This resulted in a protocol that was included in the files of the trial against the Auschwitz camp garrison (staged from November 25 to December 16, 1947; see Bendel 1947). Bendel also appeared as a witness for the prosecution during the I.G. Farben Trial on March 18, 1948 (see Bendel 1948).

### 4.2.2. Nyiszli and Mengele

Bendel was born in 1904 in Piatra, Romania, but moved to France where he was arrested on November 4, 1943 and interned in the Drancy camp. From there he was deported to Auschwitz on December 10, 1943. His name (“Bendel, Sigismund”) is actually registered in the deportation list of Transport No. 64, which departed from Drancy on December 7, 1943. The transport included 1,000 people, of whom 267 men were enrolled in the camp on December 10 with numbers 167442-167708 (Bendel’s number was 167460).<sup>348</sup> According to his account, Bendel was sent directly to Monowitz, where he remained from December 10, 1943 to January 1, 1944, the day he was transferred to Auschwitz and assigned to Block 28, where he remained until February 26,

<sup>344</sup> United Nations... 1947, Vol. II, pp. 93-124. Bendel’s deposition is summarized in 10 lines on p. 21. For a complete account of the trial see Phillips 1949.

<sup>345</sup> TNA. WO 309-1603.

<sup>346</sup> The minutes were then classified as Document NI-11953. The initials “NI” (Nazi Industrialists) refer to the I.G. Farben Trial.

<sup>347</sup> This declaration is headlined “*Le Sonderkommando*” and signed by “Dr. Paul Bendel, 167.460.” Krewer *et al.* 1946, pp. 159-164.

<sup>348</sup> Klarsfeld 1978, “Convoi N° 64 en date du 7 Decembre 1943” and “Liste alphabetique du convoi N° 64.”

1944. The following day, he was sent to the Birkenau Gypsy camp and stayed there until June 1. On June 2, he was assigned to the *Sonderkommando* of the crematories as a physician. He held this position until January 17, 1945.

Within the framework of the present study, Bendel's testimony is particularly important because he claims to have been in a position where he would have been a colleague of Nyiszli. Hence, these two physicians were together in the *Sonderkommando* since the beginning of July 1944 until the evacuation of the Auschwitz Camp, that is, roughly six and a half months.

Nevertheless, Bendel never mentioned Nyiszli in his numerous statements, although he did mention the presence of other physicians in the *Sonderkommando* (Krewer *et al.* 1946, p. 159):

*"We were three doctors assigned to this task."*

*"Q. Dr. Bendel, you were the doctor in this sonderkommando [sic] in Auschwitz-Birkenau?"*

*A. I was one of the three doctors who were attached to this sonderkommando."* (Bendel 1948, p. 9588)

He never mentioned the names of the other two doctors. Bendel even spoke of the dissection room, but in reference to the "twin Crematoria 1 and 2," which, "with their ultra-modern dissecting room and their museum of anatomical exhibits," were among the best ever done in this line (Krewer *et al.* 1946, p. 160).

For Nyiszli, however, only one such dissection room existed, that of Crematorium I (II in today's nomenclature), of which he was in charge, yet without any "museum of anatomical exhibits."

In this context, Bendel declared elsewhere (NI-11390, p. 7; Engl. version):

*"Dr. Peter MENGLE [sic] was in charge of the medical side of the crematoriums and had a dissection room in one of them."*

During the I.G. Farben Trial, Prosecutor Minskoff asked Bendel whether he wanted to make any additions or corrections to Document NI-11953, which had been filed by the prosecution as Exhibit No. 1811. Bendel replied that he had in front of him the German translation of this document, which contained a mistake in a sentence translated into English in the courtroom as follows:

*"Did you ever see the Prussic acid gas which was used?"*

*I have seen the cans. I also dissected some of the corpses of people who were gassed."* (Bendel 1948, p. 9587)

In the German version of this document, the translated exchange reads pretty much the same (NI-11953, p. 3; German translation):

*"Q.[estion] Have you ever seen Prussic acid gas that was used?"*

*A.[nswer] I have seen the cans. I dissected some of the corpses of those people who had been gassed"*

In the English translation of Bendel's deposition made during the Tesch Trial, the passage quoted above reads as follows (NI-11953, p. 2, English version):

*"Q. Did you ever see this prussic acid gas which was being used?*

*A. I have seen the tins. I have opened some of the bodies of those people who had been gassed."*

Bendel explained (Bendel 1948, p. 9587):

*"This is a mistake in translation, since I never said that I dissected any corpses. This was done by a special detail of doctors in the concentration camp crematorium. What I wanted to say is that I saw the empty containers after the gassing had taken place."*

From this it seems to be clear that Bendel didn't know anything about Nyiszli and only very little about the dissection room inside Crematorium II at Birkenau.

Bendel testified in French, and his statements were translated into English; the English translation was in turn translated into German. If there was a translation mistake from French to English, it is a mystery how a sentence about empty cans seen after a gassing can turn into "I have opened some of the bodies of those people who had been gassed."

Like Nyiszli, Bendel was also chosen directly by Mengele:

*"Question: In June, 1944, was your employment changed?*

*Answer: Indeed it was changed. Dr. Mengele gave me the honour to attach me to the crematorium."* (Phillips 1949, p. 131)

Asked about his duties as a *Sonderkommando* physician, he replied in a very imaginative way (*ibid.*, p. 135):

*"In case somebody had a wound amongst the people of the Sonderkommando. I remember one case, when one man was working, and he burned both his feet in the human, searing fat, which was so hot. It was my duty to give him a dressing."*

Regarding his activity in the Gypsy camp, where he stayed for three months, Bendel was rather evasive. The general narrative is this (*ibid.*, p. 131):

*"On 1st January, 1944, I was transferred to the main camp, and on 27th February, 1944, into the gypsy camp in Birkenau, where I worked as a doctor. The senior doctor was called Dr. Mengele. He was in charge of the whole medical side of that camp, particularly infectious diseases in which Professor Epstein from Prague and myself assisted. Dr. Mengele engaged in the research of injections in the crematorium. These were injections which were supposed to produce instantaneous death, and in the gypsy camp he worked mainly on reserach tests against twins. He continued to make all sorts of tests on these twins, but it was not enough. He wanted to see them dead, to see what they looked like."*



While confirming his working relationship with Dr. Epstein, Bendel knew nothing about the “experimental barracks” at the Gypsy camp, in which he is said to have worked as Epstein’s assistant, if we follow Nyiszli. And it is clear that he knew only from hearsay about Dr. Mengele’s alleged research activities.

As pointed out earlier, Nyiszli mentioned Bendel as a member of the *Sonderkommando* only in 1948, hence at the end of the long storyline of his six statements. Nyiszli probably had only indirect knowledge of this, because he introduced him as a “*Sonderkommando* physician of Crematorium I,” while Bendel claimed to have been active as a physician at all four crematoria.

Despite the alleged coexistence of Nyiszli and Bendel in the same place and at the same time, they not only knew nothing of each other but recounted what they had “seen” in a completely different way. Before comparing their statements, it is necessary to determine the degree of Bendel’s trustworthiness as a witness.

#### 4.2.3. The Crematoria

On the history of the Birkenau crematoria, Bendel knew only what could be derived from the rumors circulating in the camp (Krewer *et al.* 1946, p. 161):

*“The foundations of these imposing red-brick buildings were laid in March 1942. Thousands of prisoners worked on them and died in order to build them.”*

As indicated earlier, Nyiszli amplified the tone of this rumor in his book by writing that “tens of thousands of prisoners [had] built these gigantic buildings” and that “Every stone in these buildings is stained with the blood of tens of thousands of unlucky Jewish deportees” (Chapter VI).

The date indicated by Bendel is incorrect; excavation works for the foundations of Crematorium II, the first of the four to be built, began on June 2, 1942 and ended in July (Mattogno/Deana 2015, p. 232), so the foundations of the building were not laid before August. Bendel added (Krewer *et al.* 1946, p. 161):

*“Completed in January 1943, their inauguration was honored by the presence of Himmler in person [...]”*

During the I.G. Farben Trial, Bendel told a variation of this fairy tale:

*“An eye witness told me about the visit of Himmler, when the crematorium I and II [= II and III] were inaugurated. At that visit, as a special spectacle a thousand people were gassed who had been brought to Germany into the camp from France.”* (Bendel 1948, p. 9609)

Crematorium II came into operation on February 20, 1943, but its “inauguration,” that is, the official hand-over procedure of the facility to the camp authorities, took place on March 31 (Mattogno/Deana 2015, pp. 237f.).

Czech states that this “special attraction” event took place on March 13, 1943, when a transport of 2,000 Jews from Krakow arrived. 484 men among them were admitted into the camp (reg. nos. 107990-108409), and so were 24 women (reg. nos. 38307-38330). The remaining 1,492 are said to have been gassed. This claim is based on Henryk Tauber’s testimony.<sup>349</sup> According to a list of transports clandestinely compiled by a group of inmates working in the camp’s Political Department under the supervision of Kazimierz Smoleń, the above-mentioned registration numbers were assigned on March 14, 1944 (NOKW-2824).

It is a well-known fact that, after the visit of July 17 and 18, 1942, Himmler never return to Auschwitz. It is just as well-known that Crematorium III’s hand-over procedure (*Übergabeverhandlung*) took place on June 24, 1943 (Mattogno/Deana 2015, p. 244).

Hence, Bendel accumulated a surprising number of errors in just a few lines: 1) Crematorium II was not inaugurated in January, but in March 1943; 2) Crematoria II and III were not inaugurated together; 3) Himmler did not attend the inauguration of any crematorium; 4) according to the orthodox narrative, the alleged gassing victims came from Poland rather than from France, and numbered almost 1,500 rather than a thousand.

Incredibly, this tale was repeated in its essentials by Walter Rosenberg aka Rudolf Vrba at the beginning of the 1960s. He even claimed to have been an eyewitness of this event (Vrba/Bestic 1963, pp. 15f.):

*“Heinrich Himmler visited Auschwitz again in January, 1943. This time I was glad to see him arrive [...]. He was to watch the world’s first conveyor belt killing, the inauguration of Commandant Hoess’s brand new toy, his crematorium”*

On that occasion, he said, “a special transport of 3,000 Polish Jews” was “gassed.”

According to Bendel, Crematoria II and III had 16 cremation furnaces each with a capacity of 2,000 corpses per day, and Crematoria IV and V had eight furnaces each with a capacity of 1,000 corpses per day,<sup>350</sup> resulting in a total of 6,000 corpses per day. Bendel copied this capacity from Alfred Wetzler’s report that was published in November 1944 by the War Refugee Board, but, as will be seen later (Section 4.3.1.), Wetzler had claimed nine four-muffle furnaces each for Crematoria II and III, while Bendel claimed 16 furnaces (meaning muffles), which can be interpreted as five furnaces of three muffles each – the actual situation – plus the waste incinerator located in the chimney wing (*Müllverbrennungsofen*), which was not used for cremations. How

<sup>349</sup> Czech 1989, p. 440; Czech speaks of a transport of Jews from Krakow with 2,000 persons, of which 484 men (107990-108409) and 24 women (38307-38330) were admitted to the camp. The remaining 1,492 were allegedly gassed.

<sup>350</sup> Bendel 1947, p. 210r; Krewer *et al.* 1946, p. 161.

Wetzler's 36 muffles could have had the same cremation capacity as Bendel's 16 muffles is a mystery.

Even for Bendel huge flames shot out of the crematorium chimneys:

*"In the period from July – and particularly in that month, the smoke and flames rose up to about ten meters"* (Bendel 1948, p. 9606),

which, as I have already pointed out earlier, is utterly absurd as to the flames. Bendel reports another fantastic story circulating around the camp:

*"At the time I entered the Sonderkommando, the throughput of these furnaces had been deemed insufficient, and they were replaced by three cremation pits, each 12 meters long, 6 meters wide and 1 m 50 deep. The capacity of these pits was formidable: a thousand people in an hour."* (Emphasis in original; Krewer et al. 1946, p. 161)

Aerial photographs taken in 1944 never show three huge smoking sites in the Birkenau area, but always only one which was very small (see Mattogno 2016b), and the cremation capacity claimed by Bendel is absurd (see Mattogno/Kues/Graf, Vol. 2, Chapter 12).

Among the legends circulating inside the camp, the story of the crematoria's replacement by cremation pits was so widespread that it was even mentioned by Judge Jan Sehn (1946, p. 126):

*"The experience of August 1944 of cremating corpses in pits proved that this was the most economical method, so the crematoria ceased their activity, and since then corpses were burnt only in pits, and according to the project, the sixth crematorium was based on the principle of burning corpses in open pits."*

Bendel could not resist the temptation to tell another propaganda lie, that of the recovery of human fat. The capacity of the ditches, in his view,

*"was further increased by breaking open a conduit to channel human fat to a recovery pit."* (Krewer et al. 1946, p. 161)

As I have shown elsewhere (Mattogno 2014), this is arrant nonsense, because human fat has an ignition temperature of just 184 °C,<sup>351</sup> much lower than the ignition temperature of dry wood, which ranges between 325 and 350°C.

#### 4.2.4. The "Gas Chambers"

Bendel gives a precise description of the crematoria's "gas chambers." I will deal with this in detail when comparing it with Nyiszli's description, since both witnesses claim to have seen them with their own eyes and at the same time. This also applies to their accounts of the *Sonderkommando*, whose comparison is even more surprising. Here I merely state that for Bendel Cremato-

<sup>351</sup> The lowest temperature at which fat emits sufficient vapor in air to cause ignition upon contact with a flame or spark.

ria II and III each had 2 “gas chambers” measuring  $10\text{ m} \times 4\text{ m}$  or  $10\text{ m} \times 5\text{ m}$  and a height of 1.5 m, with a claimed capacity of 1,000 people each. Crematoria IV and V also had two “gas chambers” measuring  $6\text{ m} \times 3\text{ m} \times 1.5\text{ m}$ , with a capacity of 500 people each.

This statement by itself should suffice to indict Bendel as a foolish impostor, because the premises he claims to have seen had completely different dimensions. I have already mentioned earlier that Morgue #1 – the alleged “gas chamber” of the Crematoria II and III – measured  $30\text{ m} \times 7\text{ m} \times 2.41\text{ m}$ . Even if it was indeed divided into two rooms – a claim not supported by any document – this still would have resulted in two rooms measuring  $15\text{ m} \times 7\text{ m} \times 2.41\text{ m}$ . During the I.G. Farben Trial, Bendel, harassed by a defense lawyer, tried to somehow circumvent the absurdities resulting from his claims (Bendel 1948, p. 9600):

*“I can not give exact measurement of it. I just guessed that it was. I said 10 meters by 4 meters, and this is quite uncertain. I am not quite sure. It's just an estimate on my part.”*

Even if we accept this as an excuse for his grossly wrong estimates regarding the lengths and widths of the rooms, it cannot explain the height he gave, because here the quantitative question turns into a qualitative one: any person of medium height entering a room which is merely 1.5 m high has to bend over, while one has a space of some 70 centimeters above one's head in a room 2.4 meters high. How could anyone commit such an absurd error?

As for Crematoria IV and V, according to Franciszek Piper, each of them had four “gas chambers,” all of different sizes, namely (Piper 2000, p. 162):

- Chamber 1:  $7.72\text{ m} \times 12.35\text{ m}$
- Chamber 2:  $8.40\text{ m} \times 11.69\text{ m}$
- Chamber 3:  $3.70\text{ m} \times ?$
- Chamber 4:  $3.70\text{ m} \times ?$

Chambers 3 and 4 resulted from an unequal division of a room originally measuring  $3.70\text{ m} \times 11.69\text{ m}$ . The height of all these chambers was 2.20 meters.

How can we reconcile Bendel's two “gas chambers” of  $6\text{ m} \times 3\text{ m} \times 1.5\text{ m}$  with the four “gas chambers” of the aforementioned dimensions claimed by the orthodoxy? And here as well, how could it have been possible to misestimate a ceiling that was 2.20 meters from the floor as being merely 1.5 meters high?

Bendel was questioned about the absurdities resulting from his statements. His responses evince chutzpah and obtuseness. During the Tesch Trial, defense lawyer Dr. Otto Zippel cross-examined the witness as follows (NI-11953, p. 4):

*“Q. You have said that the gas chambers were ten metres by four metres by one metre sixty centimetres: is that correct?”*

A. Yes.

Q. Is it right that they are 64 cubic metres?

A. I am not very certain. This is not my strong side.

Q. How is it possible to get a thousand people into a room of 64 cubic metres?

A. This one must ask oneself. It can only be done by the German technique.

Q. Are you seriously suggesting that in a space of half a cubic metre you could put ten men?

A. The four million people who were gassed in Auschwitz are the witnesses. ”

In terms of surface area, 1,000 people in a room measuring 10 m × 4 m (40 m<sup>2</sup>) correspond to a density of (1,000 ÷ 40 =) 25 people per square meter! From this point of view, Bendel was a new Gerstein. But the absurdities do not end there. Bendel also stated (*ibid.*, p. 2):

*“Each chamber was 10 metres long and 4 metres wide. The people were herded in so tightly that there was no possibility even to put in one more. It was a great amusement for the SS to throw in children above the heads of those who were packed tightly into these rooms.”*

In this interrogation, Bendel had stated that the “gas chambers” were “about 5ft 8ins” high (*ibid.*), or some 1.70 m, but, as seen above, he considered a height of 1.60 meters to be correct. In the statement of October 21, 1945, he explicitly stated that these rooms were “1 1/2 meters high” (NI-11390, p. 1).

But this makes little difference: whether the height was 1.5 m or 1.6 m, how could it be possible to hurl children over the heads of the people with such a low ceiling? As pointed out earlier, in order to enter these “gas chambers,” most victims would have had to bend over because the rooms were lower than the average height of a person.

For the “gas chambers” of Crematoria IV and V, the situation would have been even worse, because a room of m 3 m × 6 m × 1.5 m, hence 18 m<sup>2</sup> and 27 m<sup>3</sup>, is said to have contained 500 people, or on average nearly 28 people per square meter and 18.5 per cubic meter!

The only possible explanation – apart from calling Bendel a liar – is that the victims were Lilliputian Jews!

Despite this fantastic overcrowding of 28 people per square meter, the victims were surprisingly able to move around quietly (Phillips 1949, p. 132):

*“One heard cries and shouts and they started to fight against each other, knocking on the walls.”*

Bendel also said that

*“anybody who has ever seen a gas chamber filled to the height of one and half metres with corpses will never forget it.” (Ibid.)*

Regarding the height of the “gas chambers,” Bendel said on that occasion only that they “gave the impression that the roof was falling” on the heads of the victims (*ibid.*). If the ceiling was one and a half meters high, Bendel could not

have seen that scene because there were no presumed “gas chambers” of that height. If, on the other hand, the ceiling was much higher, then this heap of corpses one and a half meters high would not have filled up this room, so it wouldn't have been a “gas chamber full of corpses.” But be that as it may, Bendel's statement is clearly false.

Although he claims to have served in all four Birkenau crematoria, Bendel describes the alleged gassing activity only with reference to Crematorium V.

He claims to have joined the *Sonderkommando* on June 2, 1944. He described his first day of work as follows (Krewer *et al.* 1946, pp. 161f.):

*“One day in June 1944, at 6 o'clock in the morning, I join the day shift (150 men) of Crematorium 4. [...] It is midday when a long column of women, children, old men comes into the yard of the crematorium. These are people from the Lodz Ghetto.”*

During the Belsen Trial, he stated in this regard:

*“The first time I started work there was in August, 1944. No one was gassed on that occasion, but 150 political prisoners, Russians and Poles, were led one by one to the graves and there they were shot. Two days later, when I was attached to the day group, I saw a gas chamber in action. On that occasion it was the ghetto at Lodz – 80,000 people were gassed.”* (Phillips 1949, p. 131)

Did Bendel start his work in June or in August? This contradiction is difficult to resolve, because both dates have their logic.

As I pointed out earlier, the first transport from the Lodz Ghetto arrived at Auschwitz on August 15, 1944, and eight others followed until the end of the month. Hence, if Bendel's first day of activity was in August 1944 (exactly between 15 and 31), what did Bendel do as a member of the *Sonderkommando* between June 2 and mid-August? Since this is almost two and a half months, the question is more than justified. He, the *Sonderkommando* physician, never witnessed a “gassing” during this time? If, however, his first day at work was in June, he could not have seen any transport from the Lodz Ghetto. Here we have to deal with one of the many false statements by this witness. In addition, the number of claimed victims – 80,000 – is over the top, as I pointed out earlier.

In August 1944, according to Bendel, 150 Russian and Polish political prisoners were shot at the pits. The only reference to these nationalities appearing in the Auschwitz *Kalendarium* during the month concerned is the transfer of 750 Polish and Russian prisoners from Birkenau to the Neuengamme Camp on August 25 (Czech 1989, p. 862).

Bendel's statements are therefore false.

His first day at the *Sonderkommando* unfolded as follows. Bear in mind that we are talking about Crematorium V (Krewer *et al.* 1946, p. 162):

*“Some hundred meters from the crematorium one sees white smoke emerging. [...] Finally, we arrive. Everyone is assigned to their work. Having come as a*

*spectator, I try to satisfy my curiosity. I would like to know the origin of this smoke. And so, behind the crematorium, I get acquainted with the pits where some remains of the evening's convoy were being consumed. A few meters from there, men are busy around heaps of ashes, busy reducing them into a very fine powder; that's all that's left of the three thousand people who had passed this way on the previous day."*

During the Belsen Trial, Bendel stated in this regard (Phillips 1949, p. 131):

*"I came at seven o'clock in the morning<sup>[352]</sup> with the others and saw white smoke still rising from the trenches, which indicated that a whole transport had been liquidated or finished off during the night. In Crematorium No. 4 the result which was achieved by burning was apparently not sufficient. The work was not going on quickly enough, so behind the crematorium they dug three large trenches 12 metres long and 6 metres wide."*

The only area of the Birkenau Camp from which smoke emanates that can be seen on aerial photographs taken in 1944 is about 20 meters north of the northern wall of Crematorium V, hence it makes no sense to say that the smoke rose "Some hundred meters from the crematorium."

Only on this occasion did Bendel get "acquainted" with the pits, which means that until then he was unaware of their existence. This would make sense only if the scene took place in early June, but in that case, he could not have seen any convoy coming from the Lodz Ghetto.

The story of crushing the cremation remains had already been put into Rudolf Höss's mouth of by way of his "first statement":<sup>353</sup>

*"After cleaning out the pits, the remaining ashes were crushed. This happened on a cement slab where inmates pulverized the remaining bones with wooden pounders."*

Where did this alleged crushing occur? David Olère located it inside Crematorium V in a drawing showing two inmates crushing bone residues with wooden pestles (Klarsfeld 1989, p. 77). Filip Müller, another prominent member of the *Sonderkommando*, placed it near Crematorium V instead, where "Moll had a concrete surface made of about 60 meters long and 15 wide" (Müller 1979a, p. 212).

Needless to say, there is no material or documentary trace of this large concrete surface. But let's turn back to Bendel's story. The transport from the Lodz Ghetto arrived at noon. Its 800-1,000 people undressed in the courtyard (Krewer *et al.* 1946, p. 162):

<sup>352</sup> At 6 AM according to Krewer *et al.* 1946, p. 161.

<sup>353</sup> NO-1210. The original document, signed by Höss, from which I took the quotation, is located at the Military Intelligence Museum at Chicksands, UK. In his essay written while in a Krakow prison, Höss wrote: "During the first interrogation they beat me to obtain evidence. I do not know what is in the transcript, or what I said, even though I signed it, because they gave me liquor and beat me with a whip. It was too much even for me to bear." Paskuly 1996, pp. 179f.

*"The doors of the Krematorium opened, and they entered the big room which served as an undressing room in winter."*

In this room, the victims were "packed together like sardines" (*ibid.*). The room in question is defined by Piper as an "undressing room" (*Auskleide-raum*) and measured 19.84 m × 12.35 m, some 245 square meters (Piper 2000, p. 168). If 1,000 people entered that room, their density would have been about seven per square meter. If they were already "packed together" in there, what would have been the situation if they had entered in two groups of 500 people each of the two 18-square-meter rooms, resulting in a packing density of almost 28 people per square meter?

Piper does not say that this "undressing room" was used only in winter. It is unclear why it should not have been used even in summer as well, and why the victims would then be forced to undress outdoors in the courtyard.

Meanwhile, the Zyklon B was brought (Krewer *et al.* 1946, p. 162):

*"The Red Cross ambulance arrives. Dr Klein, Obersturmführer, gets out. He is carrying the gas cans."*

However, according to the orthodox narrative, SS *Untersturmführer* Dr. Fritz Klein had nothing to do with the delivery of Zyklon B to the crematoria. Piper, in his list of doctors involved in selections and gassings, does not even mention him.<sup>354</sup> Bendel's lie is probably tied to the fact that Dr. Klein was one of the defendants at the Belsen Trial, where he had been accused by various witnesses of having made selections for the "gas chambers." In his statement during that trial, Bendel claimed that "a doctor" came from the Red Cross ambulance without specifying who he was, but when replying to the question whether he had ever seen physicians at the crematoria, he replied:

*"Yes, Dr. Klein on one occasion when gas was being brought by the Red Cross ambulance."* (Phillips 1949, p. 133)

Then, Bendel continued, "The doors of the undressing room are opened," and the victims "enter the gas chamber" (Krewer *et al.* 1946, p. 163), or "the door" opened and the crowd passed directly "into the gas chambers" (Phillips 1949, p. 132). For Bendel, the victims' path was linear: courtyard → undressing room → gas chamber(s). However, the reality was different as shown by Blueprint No. 2036 of January 11, 1943 (Pressac 1989, p. 399) and to the modified blueprint presented by Piper (see Document 20). According to this, access to the great hall of Crematorium V – the alleged undressing room – was possible either from the furnace room through an air lock (*Schleuse*), or from the main entrance through a vestibule (*Vorraum*). From there, a door of 180 cm × 205 cm led to the "undressing room," while an opposite door of 100 cm × 205 cm provided access to "gas chamber" no. 4, from which one entered the other three. It is evident that Bendel knew nothing of any of this.

<sup>354</sup> Piper 2000, p. 239; the alphabetical list of names goes from Kitt to König.



Bendel claimed that, in Crematoria IV and V, Zyklon B was inserted into the “gas chambers” “through small windows in the wall” (NI-11390, p. 2), which basically agrees with the orthodox narrative (there were eight small windows located *on three separate walls*). However, although Bendel claimed to have been a spectator of the “gassing” he described, he did not make the slightest mention of the actual introduction of Zyklon B, which would have encountered insurmountable difficulties (see Mattogno 2015a, pp. 168-170). I will return later to his claimed details of the “gassing” procedure.

#### 4.2.5. The Number of Victims

Bendel claimed that the number of Auschwitz victims was “More than four million” (NI-11953, p. 3). During the I.G. Farben Trial, he was asked the following question by a defense lawyer (Bendel 1948, pp. 9600f.):

*“But how do you know that 4,000,000 people were gassed in Auschwitz?”*

Bendel answered arrogantly:

*“First of all, there is the source of the indictment before the International Military Tribunal. In the second place, my personal experience. In a certain period of time I witnessed the killing of hundreds of thousands of people who passed through the gas chambers of the crematoria. No doubt, these people are not able to testify now. Their ashes are now in the River Vistula.”*

In the indictment of said Tribunal we read (IMT, Vol. 1, p. 47):

*“About 1,500,000 persons were exterminated in Maidanek [sic] and about 4,000,000 persons were exterminated in Auschwitz, among whom were citizens of Poland, the U.S.S.R., the United States of America, Great Britain, Czechoslovakia, France, and other countries.”*

It is well-known that these are propaganda figures which over time have been drastically reduced by mainstream historiography: by 72.5% in the case of Auschwitz, and by a whopping 95% in the case of Majdanek! The official Auschwitz death toll currently stands at about 1,100,000 (Piper 1993, p. 202), and that of Majdanek at 74,000 (Kranz 2007, pp. 61f.).

On the other hand, and in contrast to this, Bendel defined Birkenau as “the tomb of hundreds of thousands of victims brought from all over Europe” (Krewer *et al.* 1946, p. 160) rather than millions of victims.

As for his “personal experience,” Bendel provided imaginative and conflicting data. He affirmed (Bendel 1947, p. 210r):

*“The exterminations at the Auschwitz Camp during my stay amount to 800,000-1,000,000.”*

*“Q. While you were at Birkenau, how many human beings were gassed in the crematoria?”*

*A. In Birkenau or in the crematoria during the time I was in the crematoria?”*

*Q. During the whole time you were there at Birkenau.*

*A. About one million.*" (NI-11953, p. 1)

He also provided a breakdown of the gassing victims for the months of greater activity:

*"Within 2 and 1/2 months, 450,000 persons died."* (Bendel 1947, p. 210r)

*"In May and June [1944] a total of 400,000 people were gassed, and in August about 100,000. In Sept. and Oct. the figures dropped to about 15,000 per month."* (NI-11390, p. 4)

*"Q. How many were gassed in May and June 1944?"*

*A. About 400,000.*

*Q. In August of 1944?"*

*A. From the 15th July to 1st September, 80,000."* (NI-11953, p. 3)

Since Bendel always starts with May, the 450,000 victims "within two and a half months" refer to those who died from May until mid-July. He claimed moreover another 80,000 victims from July 15 to September 1, so that the total number of victims from May to August amounts to 530,000. However, he also states that there were some 400,000 victims during the months of May and June, plus 100,000 during August, hence 500,000 victims without July, which leaves 30,000 victims for that month. On the other hand, if there were 100,000 victims in August, it is not possible that the total for August plus half of July were 80,000. In further contradiction to this, Bendel asserted (*ibid.*, p. 2):

*"During the month of June the number of gassed was 25,000 every day."*

But that figure corresponds to  $(25,000 \times 30 =) 750,000$  victims merely for the month of June! He evidently attributed to the whole month what rumors circulating in the camp attributed to a daily "record." Bendel paid tribute to this daily-record rumor himself in his French deposition (Bendel 1947, p. 210r):

*"Always thanks to this method, on June 25, 1944, 26,000 bodies disappeared on that day."*

As mentioned earlier, the "gassing" or cremation "record" was yet another one of the stereotypes of camp propaganda, which Jan Sehn embraced as well with some pertinent modifications (1946, p. 126):

*"With all installations in full operation, the figure of 24,000 corpses cremated per day was reached in August 1944!"*

Bendel stated moreover (NI-11390, p. 7):

*"During the months of May and June of 1944 I estimate that a total of 400 tins of Zyklon per month were used for killing people."*

According to Bendel, the relationship between the number of Zyklon-B cans used and the number of "gassing" victims was as follows:

*"Two tins for one thousand persons; 25,000 per day; then we may say 50 tins per day."* (NI-11953, p. 3)

This results in a need for  $(50 \times 30 =) 1,500$  cans for one month. Conversely, 400 cans would be enough for  $(400 \div 2 \times 1,000 =) 200,000$  "gassing" victims.

Ignoring the contradictions pointed out above, Bendel's statements represent a maximum of 560,000 victims from May to October 1944. Nevertheless, Bendel claimed that, during the time of his stay in Birkenau from February 27, 1944 to the evacuation of the camp, a million people were killed. Keep in mind that he entered the *Sonderkommando* on June 2, 1944, and that "the cremation furnaces worked until November 5, 1944" (Bendel 1947, p. 211), the date when mass exterminations are said to have ceased. For the period from February 27 to June 1, 1944, he could not have been a "witness" to any killing in the "gas chambers," which is why the figure he claims is both contradictory and wrong even from an orthodox point of view. This is, of course, also true for May, when he was not yet a member of the *Sonderkommando*: if we take the only data provided by Bendel – 400 cans of Zyklon B with two cans per 1,000 victims – this results in 200,000 "gassing" victims for that month which he cannot possibly have "witnessed," so that the total of the victims whom he "witnessed" decreases to some 360,000.

But there are further complications, because the witness also asserted:

*"I think the first experiments in gassing were carried out at Auschwitz in May or June of 1942"* (NI-11390, p. 6),

which is in sharp contrast to the current orthodox narrative, according to which the first experiment took place in September 1941, followed by other small-scale gassings in Crematorium I of the Auschwitz Main Camp from fall 1941 until fall 1942.

To make things worse, Bendel claimed that

*"the first gassings were camed [carried] out at Birkenau at the beginning of 1943."* (*ibid.*, p. 4)

Not putting too much weight on the individual figures Bendel gave, it is safe to say that he claimed some 530,000 gassing victims for the time starting in May 1944 until the claimed termination of the extermination program. In order to believe in the four-million-victim story, Bendel must therefore have believed that from the beginning of 1943 until May 1, 1944  $(4,000,000 - 530,000 =)$  some three and a half million people were killed!

From his many testimonies it is also clear that Bendel had no knowledge of the activities at the alleged "Bunkers" of Birkenau in the years 1942-1943, which is at least surprising. As far as 1944 is concerned, it is more appropriate to examine his statements in parallel with those of Nyiszli, which I will do in Section 4.2.8.

#### 4.2.6. Dental Gold

Another absurdity offered by Bendel relates to the amount of dental gold obtained from the corpses of the victims. The Germans feigned to despise gold, but (Krewer *et al.* 1946, p. 164):

*“This did not prevent them from recovering from their victims – between the launch of the crematoria and the month of November [19]44, the date when they ceased to operate – seventeen tons of the precious yellow metal.”*

He specified that this amount of gold had been extracted from four million corpses. At the Tesch Trial, the witness stated (NI-11953, p. 3):

*“The National Socialist government said they did not care about gold; still they managed to get 17 tons of gold out of the four million bodies.”*

Replying to a specific question by Dr. Zippel, Bendel stated that he referred to a metric ton (1,000 kg; *ibid.*, p. 4).<sup>355</sup> This assertion is nonsensical already for the fact that it relates to the fairy tale of four million victims. It is also in open contradiction to the information provided by the Auschwitz camp resistance referred to earlier, according to which 33.6 kg of gold were extracted from 100,000 corpses. For the phantom-like four million, this would correspond to 1,344 kg or 1.344 metric tons, almost 13 times less than what Bendel indicated.

#### 4.2.7. Disinfestations with Zyklon B

During the Tesch Trial, the witnesses were cajoled to support the allegation that all or most of the Zyklon B supplied to Auschwitz was used for mass murder. The prosecution's position can be inferred well from, and was the opposite of, what Bruno Tesch's defense lawyer was trying to demonstrate, namely (United Nations... 1947, Vol. I, p. 96):

*“that Tesch had no knowledge of the killing of human beings by means of Zyklon B; secondly, that Zyklon B was delivered only for normal purposes of disinfection and for medical reasons; thirdly, that parts of gas chambers were sold only for the purpose of exterminating vermin;”*<sup>[356]</sup> *fourthly, that concentration camps got the gas only in amounts which were quite normal in relation to the number of inhabitants, and only for killing vermin; and fifthly, that instruction courses were held only according to the relevant laws and regulations,*

<sup>355</sup> A U.S. short ton has 2,000 lbs or 907 kg.

<sup>356</sup> This refers to the Zyklon-B-disinfestation devices using the Degesch circulation system supplied by Tesch. These were gas chambers with the standard dimensions of 4 m × 1.35 m × 1.90 m = about 10 m<sup>3</sup>. The Americans mistranslated the order for two of these devices submitted to the Tesch Company by the Gross-Rosen Camp, which is mentioned in a Tesch letter of August 25, 1941, as “delivery of circulation equipment for two extermination chambers of 10 cubic meters each”! NO-4345, NMT, Vol. V, p. 363. The German text says: “Lieferung der Kreislaufgeräte für zwei *Entwesungskammern* [disinfestation chambers] von je 10 cbm.”

*and again only for the purpose of teaching the method of exterminating vermin."*

The witnesses for the prosecution therefore had to support the exact opposite in order to refute these five points. Bendel focused on Points 2 and 4, namely on the alleged use of Zyklon B for the purpose of killing humans, and its allegedly disproportionate supply. The latter was already discussed earlier when dealing with the number of Zyklon-B cans used for the supposed mass extermination.

Regarding Point 2, Bendel stated.<sup>357</sup>

*"At Birkenaw [sic] the disinfecting<sup>[358]</sup> of clothes was done by boiling them, there was no disinfection by gas. I know that disinfecting of clothes at Auschwitz itself was done by use of a gas chambers [sic] which was also used for killing people. At Birkenaw the gas used for killing people was prussic acid, also called Zyklon B."*

Any reader of Pressac's first book on Auschwitz knows that two disinfection facilities with shower rooms existed in Birkenau known as BW 5a and 5b, which each contained a Zyklon B "Gaskammer" (gas chamber). In 1943, the Zyklon-B disinfection wing of BW5a was converted into two rooms with hot air disinfection (Pressac 1989, pp. 53-62).

Bendel stated that the clothes of those gassed were brought to Auschwitz, where they were disinfected in a special room (although the interrogation protocol erroneously states "disinfected"; NI-11953, p. 3):

*"Q. How large was the room and how much clothing was in it?*

*A. It was a very little room. I know it because 200 men of my own Kommando were gassed in that room.*

*Q. What quantity of clothing was stored there?*

*A. Clothing belonging to about five to six hundred people.*

*Q. When was disinfection of barracks and clothing carried out in that camp?*

*A. During the whole period from 10th December 1943 until the 18th January 1945 I remember only one disinfection of barracks."*

The last statement was contradicted by Bendel himself.<sup>359</sup>

*"Disinfecting<sup>[360]</sup> of camp Tzigane, which is the name of one of the compounds at Birkenaw [sic], was done by Zyklon B also. I remember noticing the same empty tins after disinfecting as I saw at the crematorium. This disinfecting of barracks was done every 3 weeks by a special working party of SS. I think they used 2 or 3 tins of gas for each barrack."*

<sup>357</sup> TNA, WO 309-1603.

<sup>358</sup> The transcript (NI-11390) reads here erroneously "disinfecting" and later "disinfection" rather than "disinfection."

<sup>359</sup> TNA, WO 309-1603, NI-11390, p. 5.

<sup>360</sup> In transcript (NI-11390) "disinfecting."

Bendel claimed to have personally seen the fumigation of one of these barracks with Zyklon B (Bendel 1948, p. 9599). During the Tesch Trial, he was asked whether in Auschwitz and Birkenau the disinfestation of clothing and barracks was carried out by means other than the Zyklon B. He replied (NI-11953, p. 3):

*"A. It was done mainly by Lisoform. [...]"*

*A. Mainly by Lisoform. I remember only once having seen it done by gas."*

In this regard, defense lawyer Zippel confronted the witness during cross-examination, who answered mendaciously and impertinently (*ibid.*, p. 4):

*"Q. Is it known to you that Lisoform is a disinfectant only against germs, but not against insects in clothing?"*

*A. There was no disinfection intended, as these people brought into concentration camps were not brought there to be disinfected or kept clean or kept healthy, but to be disposed of."*

Considering that Bendel was a physician, his mendacity becomes evident. He played on the confusing similarity of the terms disinfection (against bacteria) versus disinfestation (against pests), and deliberately ignored the many registered detainees for whom disinfestation was of vital importance for controlling the typhus epidemics and other infectious diseases.

The fumigation chamber in which 200 men of the *Sonderkommando* are said to have been gassed was located in the so-called "Kanada I," BW 28, the delousing and effects-storage barracks (*Entlausungs- und Effektenbaracken*). Bendel described it as follows:<sup>361</sup>

*"At Auschwitz there was an underground gas chamber which was used principally for disinfestation purposes. It was about 12 metres long, 10 wide and about 1 1/2 metres high."*

The photos of this facility published by Pressac clearly show that this fumigation chamber was not located "underground" but on ground level, and that it was at least twice as high as Bendel claimed (1989, pp. 41-50, esp. Photos 7, 9 & 13). A "Listing of the disinfestation facilities, baths and disinfection systems installed in CC and PoW Camp Auschwitz" compiled on July 30, 1943 by civilian employee Rudolf Jährling, which also gives the "daily capacity (24 hrs)" of these devices, informs us that *Kanada I* had a fumigation chamber "for some 30,000 pieces of laundry, blankets, etc." daily, and the chambers of BW 5a had a "daily capacity of 8,000 blankets."<sup>362</sup> For Bendel, however, the fumigation chamber of *Kanada I* had a daily capacity of 500-600 sets of clothing!

I will return to the issue of the alleged murder of 200 *Sonderkommando* members in that fumigation chamber later.

<sup>361</sup> TNA, WO 309-1603. In the transcript (NI-11390, p. 6) it is the term "disinfection."

<sup>362</sup> RGVA, 502-1-332, pp. 9f.

#### 4.2.8. Nyiszli versus Bendel

Nyiszli and Bendel both claimed to have been *the* physician of the *Sonderkommando* and to have lived in Birkenau crematoria during the same period, from the beginning of July 1944 to the evacuation of the camp in January 1945. However, in their statements, they ignore each other, which is already a surprising fact. Since they claim to have been eyewitnesses of the same events and would have had the same experiences, their testimony should be largely, if not completely, similar. In this section, I will therefore present a comparison of their statements with regard to the most important issues.

##### 4.2.8.1. The Crematoria

On the history of the crematoria, I have already elaborated earlier.

Nyiszli claims that Crematoria II and III had 15 single cremation furnaces with a capacity of 5,000 corpses per day, and that the total capacity of the four crematoria was 20,000 corpses per day, which indicates that in his eyes even Crematoria IV and V had 15 furnaces each with a capacity of 5,000 corpses per day. Bendel speaks of 16 furnaces in Crematoria II and III, with a capacity of 2,000 corpses a day, of eight furnaces in Crematoria IV and V, with a capacity of 1,000 corpses per day. The maximum capacity of the plants was 20,000 per day for Nyiszli, 6,000 per Bendel.

According to Nyiszli, killings with the shot of a 6-mm pistol into the back of the neck were also carried out in Crematorium II. Every night, he claimed, 70 to 80 camp inmates were killed that way (Chapter XXII). Bendel says instead (Bendel 1947, pp. 211, 211r.):

*“However, I must point out that every day 150 to 200 Russian or Polish partisans were brought who had been condemned to death, and their execution consisted of a pistol shot into the back of the neck.”*

According to Nyiszli, the gas chambers were moreover only used when there were more than 500 victims; otherwise they were shot instead (Chapter XX). Bendel says the limit was 300 (NI-11953, p. 2):

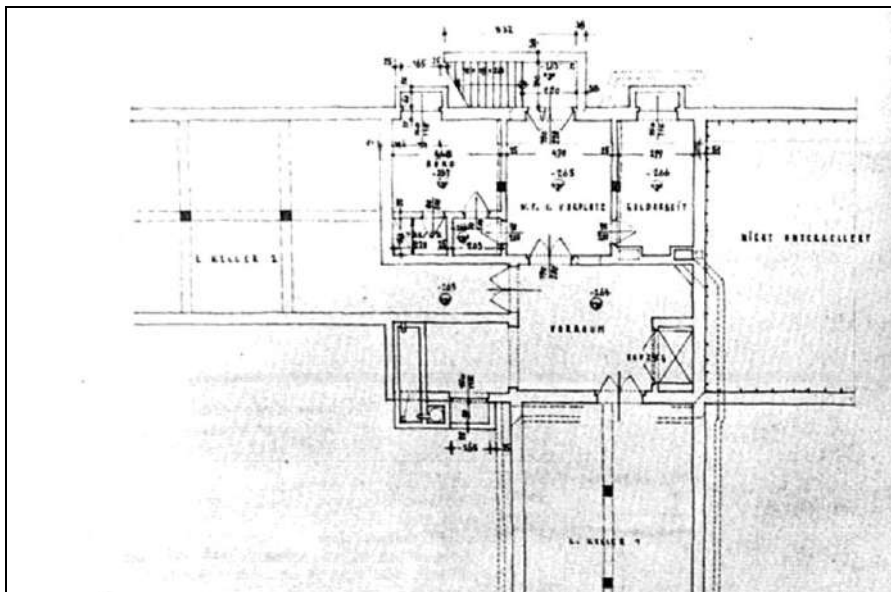
*“up to the number of 300 they were shot; above the number they were gassed.”*

##### 4.2.8.2. The “Gas Chambers”

###### Dimensions

Nyiszli carefully describes only Crematorium II. Via 10-12 steps, he descended into a large room about 200 meters long (the “undressing room”), from where, through a two-leafed oak door, one got into the “gas chamber,” which had the same length (Chapter VII). For him, Crematoria II and III had only one gas chamber.

For Bendel, these crematoria were equipped with two gas chambers each, the length of which was 10 meters.



**Illustration 2:** Blueprint of a section of the basement of Crematorium II, Birkenau; Morgue #2 (L.-KELLER 2) at top left, Morgue #1 (L.-KELLER 1) at bottom; CCO Blueprint No. 2003, drawn on Dec 19, 1942; PMO Archives, file BW 30/12, neg. no. 20922/4; Pressac 1989, p. 302.

The length of the alleged gas chamber (Morgue #1) was actually 30 meters, and that of the alleged undressing room (Morgue #2) was almost 50 meters.

Also, Morgue #2 did not directly lead into the gas chamber, but rather into a corridor some 5 meters long and 2 meters wide, which led, through a two-leafed door, into a vestibule (*Vorraum*), from where, again through a two-leafed door, one could access Morgue #1, which was arranged perpendicular to Morgue #2, see the illustration.

Bendel also mentions “massive double-winged oak doors,” but in relation to Crematorium V (Krewer *et al.* 1946, p. 163). In that building, however, all four doors leading into the alleged “gas chambers” had a single-leaf door of 100 cm × 205 cm according to Blueprint #2036.

### Capacity

For Nyiszli, 3,000 persons in one single room, for Bendel 2,000 persons distributed in two rooms.

### Method of Introducing Zyklon B

Nyiszli:

*“In the center of the room, at a distance of thirty meters from each other, a number of columns stretch from the concrete floor to the ceiling. These are not support columns, but are rather quadrangular tinplate pipes, their sides pierced throughout with holes like a grill.”* (Chapter VII)



In D45 he speaks explicitly of “four openings” for the introduction of Zyklon B.

Bendel (*ibid.*, p. 161):

*“At the center of these chambers, two latticed pipes that went down from the ceiling with an external valve served to emit the gas.”*

Nyiszli therefore saw at least four columns, while Bendel saw only two.

#### Duration of the gassing

For Nyiszli, the victims died either after 2-5 minutes (TVN), within 5 minutes (Chapter VII) or within 5-10 minutes (D45). A mechanical ventilation followed 20 minutes later:

*“Twenty minutes later the electric ventilators are switched on to remove the gas.”* (Chapter VII)

Bendel claims the shortest time: 2 minutes. The following statements refer to Crematorium V:

*“For two endless minutes, knocks against the walls are heard, screams that were no longer human. And then nothing. [...] Five minutes later, the doors are opened.”* (*ibid.*, p. 163)

*“This [screams and knocks against the walls] went on for two minutes and then there was complete silence. Five minutes later the doors were opened, but it was impossible to go in for another twenty minutes.”* (Phillips 1949, p. 132)

*“For about two minutes one heard screaming and shouting and people knocking against the walls. This was no longer something human to hear. Then there was deadly silence. Twenty minutes later the doors were reopened.”* (Bendel 1948, p. 9592)

I already noted earlier that, under the conditions described by the witnesses, execution times of five minutes or less are absurd, since it would have required the use of gigantic quantities of Zyklon B. Bendel knew nothing about the mechanical ventilation systems of the alleged “gas chambers” of Crematoria II and III or of the use of gas masks. He mentioned, however, a time of inaccessibility of twenty minutes with regard to the claimed “gas chambers” of Crematoria IV and V, which is totally unjustified. Given the structure of these alleged “gas chambers,” which could be ventilated only by means of natural draft through merely three doors of 100 cm × 205 cm (one leading into the vestibule, the others to the outside) and seven tiny windows measuring 30 cm × 40 cm, access to these rooms *without* gas masks would have been possible at best after 20 hours of ventilation, as prescribed by the “Guidelines for the Use of Prussic Acid (Zyklon) for the Destruction of Vermin (Disinfestation)” (NI-9912).

The duration of 20 minutes was undoubtedly one of the many factoids that circulated in the camp.

### Number of Victims

Nyiszli states that, during the months of May through July 1944, 550,000 Hungarian Jews were exterminated (LPR). For Bendel, as seen earlier, 450,000 people died within two and a half months starting in May 1944. Since he claims 400,000 victims for May and June, the two and a half months refer to the deportation of the Hungarian Jews. (In fact, deportations from Hungary were carried out from May 14 to July 8.) As for the total figure, Nyiszli repeats in his book the tale of four million victims for the entire period the camp existed:

*"Four million innocent people said farewell to their lives here with a last, painful glance, that they might then descend into their unmourned tomb."*  
(Chapter XXXII)

His own experience, what he claims to have seen with his own eyes, however, amounts to two million instead:

*"My eyes followed two million innocent people to the gas chambers, and I was witness to the horrors of the pyres."* (Epilogue)

Even in his contrived testimony for the I.G. Farben Trial, he wrote that "during the period of my imprisonment I was a witness to the death by gas of about 2 million people" (TVN). As stated earlier, Bendel claimed that during his stay in the camp some 800,000 to 1,000,000 people died at Auschwitz. This figure refers to the duration of the witness's stay at Birkenau, hence from February 27, 1944 until January 1945, or more precisely until November 1944, when mass exterminations ceased. Nyiszli's figure pertains to his term in the *Sonderkommando*, i.e. from the beginning of July 1944 until November 1944.

### Dental Gold

Nyiszli mentions a daily quantity of 30-35 kg of dental gold. Since he claims that on average 22,000 people were gassed every day (TVN), on average some 1.5 g of gold were extracted from each person. Hence, from the four million victims, the yield would have been some 6,000 kg, or six metric tons. Bendel talks about 17 metric tons likewise extracted from four million victims.

### The "Bunkers"

As mentioned earlier, Nyiszli knew nothing of "Bunker 2" (or, as it is sometimes called, "Bunker V" or "Bunker 2/V"), the alleged extermination installation consisting of 4 "gas chambers" which was a few hundred meters west of the *Zentralsauna*, outside the camp's fence. For him, there was only "a long thatched house" consisting of only one room that served as an "undressing room" for the victims of shootings at the two outdoor pyres.

In contrast to that, Bendel stated (Bendel 1947, p. 210r):

*"From May 15, 1944 on, a new gas chamber was set up outside the camp enclosure itself. This latter was installed in a farmhouse divided into two parts,*

*in which the detainees were gassed. From that time on, the bodies coming from this chamber were no longer cremated in the cremation furnaces, except in Crematoria I and II [= II and III]. The bodies were placed in gigantic trenches, in which the cremation took place which was carried out as follows: among the bodies, gasoline-soaked logs were put in, and the fire was lit."*

*"There were four crematoria, the fifth, called Bunker, was nothing but a farmhouse converted into a gas chamber 'to serve the cause.'" (Krewer et al. 1946, p. 160)*

For Nyiszli, there was therefore a farm cottage with only one room which was only used as a dressing room; for Bendel, there was a farm cottage with two rooms serving as "gas chambers."

Bendel's hint at the cremation trenches is not very clear. He does not say where these "gigantic trenches" were, nor how many there were. Furthermore, his phrase "the bodies coming from this chamber were no longer cremated in the cremation furnaces" is enigmatic, because "this chamber" should be the "bunker," but then it does not make sense to write that, "from that time on"—meaning May 15, 1944—the bodies resulting from it were *no longer* cremated in the crematoria's furnaces, because Bendel wrote that before that date "this chamber" had not yet been set up, so no bodies can have resulted from it prior to that date. Anyway, Bendel mentioned only three pits of 12 m × 6 m × 1.5 m located in the courtyard of Crematorium V. While Nyiszli was unaware of the existence of these pits behind Crematorium V, Bendel knew nothing about the existence of the two shooting pits.

Since these are two "eyewitness" testimonies of two people who claim to have seen the same things in the same place and at the same time, this contradiction is irremediable. However, this does not stop orthodox Holocaust scholars from resolving it with a vulgar trick. J.-C. Pressac himself wrote generically, without explicit reference to Nyiszli (1993, p. 91):

*"Toward the end of summer, when there was a lack of Zyklon B, inmates unfit for work of the convoys that were sent to Auschwitz were thrown directly into the cremation pits of Crematorium V and Bunker 2."*

To back this up, he invoked the following deposition by Hermann Langbein made during the Frankfurt Auschwitz Trial (Langbein 1965, Vol. 1, p. 88):

*"In 1944, living children were thrown into the big fires burning next to the crematoria. We heard about this in the Main Camp, and I told the garrison physician about it. Dr. Wirths did not want to believe me. He drove over to Birkenau in order to check it out. When I went to him for dictation the next day, he told me: 'It was an order by camp commander Höss that had been issued because there had no longer been enough gas.' Since then, Wirths believed everything I told him."*

Langbein, who later became a famous Auschwitz scholar, was questioned by the Vienna police on August 8, 1945. In the respective protocol, we read, among other things:<sup>363</sup>

*"Of course, Grabner was present at the mass gassings of transports that arrived at Auschwitz. In the course of these transports, about 5,000,000 people were gassed. Grabner was also present at the mass liquidations of the Russians (during the first winter alone, 1,200,000 of them were killed)."*

Langbein also testified during the Krakow trial against the Auschwitz camp garrison, where he declared during the 11th session:<sup>364</sup>

*"When in the course of these poisonings and gassings the supply of Zyklon B gas did no longer suffice, Höss gave the order that from then on gassings would be carried out with the minimum quantity of this gas, as a result of which some victims merely lost their consciousness during the gassing and were brought alive to the crematorium. I also know that Höss, due to the lack of gas, had decreed that there be systems of pyres near the crematoria, and that children were to be burned alive there, that is, without prior gassing."*

These macabre fables, circulated by the camp's resistance movement, were well-known to the detainees, as is evident, for example, by the statements of two witnesses made during the Nuremberg trial.

At the morning of January 28, 1946, Marie Claude Vaillant-Couturier testified:

*"One night we were awakened by terrifying cries. And we discovered, on the following day, from the men working in the Sonderkommando – the 'Gas Kommando' – that on the preceding day, the gas supply having run out, they had thrown the children into the furnaces alive."* (IMT, Vol. VI, p. 216)

Soon thereafter, on February 27, 1946, her "colleague" Severina Shmaglevskaya declared:

*"At that time, when the greatest number of Jews were exterminated in the gas chambers, an order was issued that the children were to be thrown into the crematory ovens or the crematory ditches without previous asphyxiation with gas."* (IMT, Vol. VIII, p. 319)

Already in 1945, a first testimony on that theme had been published in a pamphlet (Vaillant-Couturier 1945, pp. 20f.):

*"The line of grandmothers walking in small steps, mothers pushing strollers, 12-year-old children holding the hands of even smaller children, were headed slowly toward a red brick building that had the inscription 'Baths.' There they undressed, then they were locked up completely naked in a large hall, and gas capsules were thrown through an opening in the ceiling. It was the same gas as the one used for disinfection of the blocks against lice. Apparently, five*

<sup>363</sup> GARF, 7021-108-34, p. 22.

<sup>364</sup> AGK, NTN, 110, pp. 1206f.

*minutes had to be reckoned for women and three for men. Three quarters of an hour after the arrival of the train, huge flames were seen coming out of the cremation furnaces' chimneys. We knew that the people we had seen alive a short while earlier would be nothing but a little bit of ashes within a few minutes. Since the eight cremation furnaces were not enough for the job, the SS had large pits dug that were filled with dried branches soaked in a flammable liquid. It is in there where they tossed the corpses. The entire sky was illuminated by it. At a certain time, gas was missing, then they threw living children into the pits."*

This is a beautiful collection of propaganda fables on which there is no need to dwell.

#### 4.2.8.3. The "Sonderkommando"

The most striking contradictions between Nyiszli's and Bendel's story relate to the *Sonderkommando*. It should be noted first that, according to the chronology of his book, Nyiszli was assigned to the *Sonderkommando* in early June, which is also when Bendel claims to have been assigned to it. However, Nyiszli claims that his *Sonderkommando* was the twelfth in succession – the previous eleven ones allegedly having been killed to eliminate unwanted witnesses (see Chapters VI, XI, XIXf., XXVIII, XXIXf.), while Bendel claims that his was only the *third* (Krewer *et al.* 1946, p. 160):

*"The Sonder[kommando] I was part of was the third with this name, the other two having been executed at intervals of a few months."*

However, Bendel has also told the tale of the *Sonderkommandos'* periodic elimination after a few months (for Nyiszli every four months).

For Nyiszli, the *Sonderkommando* consisted of 860 inmates and 120 SS men, while there were 900 inmates and three SS men in each crematorium according to Bendel, but "without taking into account the guards" (*ibid.*), which is similar to Nyiszli's affirmation:

*"In each crematorium the watch consists of three men."* (Chapter XXIX)

The strength of the *Sonderkommando* adduced by the two witnesses, though slightly different, can be considered more or less accurate because, according to authentic wartime documents, it varied over time. On July 28, 1944, it consisted of 900 detainees and remained so until 9 August. On August 10, it dropped to 894, and the next day further down to 870. This figure remained unchanged until August 31, and is also reflected in the report dated September 7 (Mattogno 2016b, pp. 141-150).

The starkest contradiction between the two testimonies concerns the *Sonderkommando* revolt and its final outcome. Bendel reported about it in great length as follows (Phillips 1949, pp. 133f.):

*"– Do you remember 7th October, 1944?"*

– Yes, it was the day when 500 of these Special Kommandos should have been going away because they were told to work somewhere else, but it was clear enough to us that they were going to their death. They did not want to go away. On that day 100 from this Special Kommando in Crematorium No. 1 [II] and 400 in Crematorium No. 3 [IV], were killed. In No. 3 they were killed one by one with a fatal shot in their neck from a gun. The other hundred were put in rows in lines of five and one single S.S. man passed by and gave them a shot in the neck. Kramer was Kommandant of the camp at the time and was present at these killings.

– Do you remember an occasion when four girls were hanged?

– Yes, in the women's compound in Auschwitz in Decembre, 1944. They were accused of passing on dynamite to us for the purpose of exploding the whole crematorium. They were working in a munition factory called 'Union' It was a public hanging ordered by Hoessler, who was Lagerführer at Auschwitz. [...]

– On 7th October, 1944, is not true that the crematorium was set on fire?

– We set fire to Crematorium No. 3. Five hundred people took part in this revolt. They had firearms in Crematorium No. 1, but because of a misunderstanding they could not be used, for the people of No. 1 Crematorium saw No. 3 burning too late.

– Do you know who was the Kommandant of the whole of Auschwitz on 7th October, 1944?

– I could not say.

– You said that a number of people from the Sonderkommando were shot. Was there any senior S.S. officier present?

– There were a number of S.S. present during these killings. A whole company of S.S. came specially from Auschwitz. I do not know about senior ranks, but the main killer was Rottenführer Barowski. [...]

– Were these explosives used during the attempted escape?

– No."

Bendel carefully described this event in his subsequent statements:

"Of these 900 men, 200 were gassed on September 27, 1944. 500 were executed with a pistol shot into the back of the neck in front of my own eyes during a revolt unique in the annals of the concentration camp, which took place on October 7, 1944. [...] Seeing that sooner or later we would have suffered the fate of the wretches who had been exterminated, we had decided at Crematorium 4 to revolt. On October 8, at noon, 300 of us had to go to Gleiwitz on order of the Germans. We knew that, after the example of the 200 had been set, this was in fact about a new extermination. Then we attacked about twenty SS men who carried the lists. We did not know that there was a reinforcement company nearby. After we set the cremation furnace on fire, this company encircled us and reduced us to helplessness before the other detainees which were in the other crematoria had time to come to our rescue, as had been planned. As I have already told you, 500 men were executed with a pistol shot into the back of the neck, and I myself with my colleague, we poisoned our-

*selves. I was saved by the head of the crematorium, who carried me to the hospital together with my colleague, who unfortunately did not survive. We poisoned ourselves to prevent giving the Germans the pleasure to indulge themselves in stripping the poor wretches they made to lie on the ground, and killing them in the manner known to you. This brutal suppression was carried out by the aforementioned Hess [sic] and Kramer, who on their orders had a company of SS men from Auschwitz I and Birkenau. [...]*

*The cremation furnaces operated until November 5, 1944 with the 200 survivors of the Sonderkommando. On this date, these 200 men were employed in the destruction of these furnaces, the Germans not wanting to leave traces behind. This destruction took place until November 27, when we were brought back to the Birkenau Camp. In this camp, we were locked up in a block. Thirty of us were sent to Crematorium 4, which had not been destroyed, to incinerate the corpses of those who had died a natural death. The next day, 100 left for an unknown destination, and we lost all traces of them. The remaining 70 were used to destroy with dynamite the reinforced concrete foundation of the cremation furnaces. On January 18, 1945, the evacuation of Birkenau and Auschwitz took place. Towards this date, the Germans locked us up in a block, certainly with the intention of destroying us. The hectic pace of the departure certainly did not allow them to carry out their project. During our transfer to the Mathausen Camp [Mauthausen], some thirty people tried to escape. They were killed on the spot. Upon arriving at the camp, those who had been part of the Sonderkommando were ordered to present themselves immediately. Some obeyed this order (about a dozen), who were taken away, and we never heard of them again. The rest was scattered among the other detainees, and I know that some twenty died of exhaustion during our stay at the Ebensee Camp.”* (Bendel 1947, pp. 210r, 211)

The killing of 200 *Sonderkommando* members on September 27, 1944 alleged by Bendel was completely unknown to Nyiszli. Bendel, as we have seen earlier, claimed that there was “an underground [fumigation] gas chamber” in Auschwitz and explicitly stated (NI-11390, p. 6):

*“I know that on 27th Sept. 1944 200 men from the special prisoners’ squad which worked in the crematorium at Birkenau were taken to Auschwitz and gassed there. Then their bodies were brought back to Birkenau and burned there.”*

However, at that point in time, the only gas chambers in existence at the Auschwitz Main Camp were fumigation chambers for clothes.

Pressac considered a similar statement by Henryk Tauber as “impossible,” because the *Sonderkommando* men, who are said to have been very familiar with the alleged homicidal “gas chambers” at Birkenau, never would have entered such a “gas chamber” voluntarily. Pressac concluded (1989, p. 498):

*“This execution by gassing still remains to be proved.”*

Pressac overlooked an even more important argument. He himself reported the testimony of a prisoner who had worked in the fumigation chamber at the Main Camp, at the so-called Kanada I clothes-storage area. This inmate, Josef Odi, described the gassing procedure as follows (1989, p. 41):

*“Two prisoners put on gas masks and then went into the middle of the chamber with cans of Zyklon-B. One prisoner stood near the entrance and watched to see that the two prisoners in the middle of the room didn't poison themselves. Using special chisels, the two men opened the cans of Zyklon-B, poured it on the floor and withdrew rapidly, closing the gas-tight doors behind them.”* (Emphasis in original)

This would inevitably also have been the procedure for executing the 200 *Sonderkommando* men with Zyklon-B gas in that chamber, because that fumigation chamber had no windows or openings for introducing Zyklon B from the outside. Can anyone seriously believe that these men would have allowed any SS man to enter the gas chamber, open up some Zyklon-B cans, and spread their contents on the floor without reacting?

Czech gives an earlier date for this event – September 23, 1944 – but does not explicitly mention the fumigation chamber of Kanada I. She states that the 200 members of the *Sonderkommando* were taken to the Auschwitz Main Camp “and are led to a not-very-large building in which clothing items and other goods are disinfected.” They were made drunk, and then “Zyklon B is thrown in through a window, which kills them” (1989, pp. 886f.). This cannot refer to the Kanada I fumigation chamber, since it did not have any windows.

While the *Sonderkommando* initially had some 900 members, Bendel gives a number of 700 for October 7, 1944, while Nyiszli still has 860 members on October 6. Of these, 853 died before the evacuation of the Auschwitz Camp (as did 70 SS men), so that only seven members stayed alive: Nyiszli and his three assistants, an engineer, a chief stoker and a “Pipel.”

Bendel testified instead that of the 700 *Sonderkommando* members, 500 were killed and 200 remained alive until the evacuation of the Auschwitz Camp. He also claimed that the commander of the Birkenau Camp, Josef Kramer, whom Nyiszli never mentioned, was present during the executions. On the other hand, Bendel knows nothing of the escape of twelve *Sonderkommando* men during the revolt, who were caught again later (Chapter XXIX). The alleged shooter, *Rottenführer* Barowski, is an unknown character in orthodox Holocaust historiography.

Bendel said that neither the firearms nor the explosives smuggled into Crematorium II were used during the uprising. Nyiszli in his book asserted the exact opposite:

*“The Sonderkommando has seized control of Crematorium I; it is shooting and launching hand grenades at the lines of SS mustering before the gate. [...] A terrible explosion follows. Seven SS lie in their own blood, wounded or*



*dead, the commander among them. The bottle was filled with ecrasite.*" (Chapter XXIX)

For Bendel, the cremation furnaces worked until November 5, 1944, operated by the 200 survivors of the *Sonderkommando*; for Nyiszli, after the extermination of the 12th *Sonderkommando*, a 13th was established, which initially consisted of 30 detainees, but was later increased to 460. The furnaces worked until November 16, because on the 17th came the order stop the killings. On that same day, the 13th *Sonderkommando* was eliminated, all except Nyiszli and his three assistants, that is.

If we follow Bendel instead, the 200 remaining *Sonderkommando* members began dismantling the crematoria on November 5, which they did until November 27, although Czech wrote that the preliminary work (dismantling of the technical equipment inside Crematorium II) began only on November 25 (1989, p. 933).

On November 27, Bendel was locked up with his comrades in a block, where he remained until January 18, 1945. Nyiszli, on the other hand, spent the last days at Auschwitz inside Crematorium V.

Next, both were evacuated to Mauthausen. Here the anecdote of the SS soldiers walking among the detainees asking those to step forward who had been part of the *Sonderkommando* turns naïve, if not to say fatuous: for Bendel, as quoted earlier, "Some obeyed this order (about a dozen)." These volunteer inmates must have been either demented or suicidal. Bendel mentioned the Ebensee Camp, and he evidently was also transferred there, just like Nyiszli, but the two did not meet, or at least they didn't mention it. Seen from their point of view, this is quite improbable, because both claimed to have been the only *Sonderkommando* physician who had been saved.

Bendel and his colleague ("*avec mon collègue*") – here he forgot that he had claimed to have had two colleagues: "We were three doctors assigned to this task" (Krewer *et al.* 1946, p. 159) – who poisoned themselves, although Bendel was saved by the crematorium Kapo, who took him to the hospital. Bendel's colleague died, so he was the only surviving physician (Bendel 1948, p. 9589):

*"Q. And were you the only surviving of the doctors?"*

*A. Yes, unfortunately."*

However, Nyiszli also claimed to have been the only surviving *Sonderkommando* physician, indeed the only one of the entire *Sonderkommando*! He had not poison himself but was saved by Dr. Mengele instead.

As we can see, the two so-called *Sonderkommando* physicians, who were assigned to this position only a few days apart from each other, who remained there until the evacuation of the camp, who saw the same places and witnessed the same events during same period of time, gave accounts of their al-

leged experiences which mutually contradict each other totally and insurmountably, and both are riddled with absurdities and blatant lies.

### 4.3. Gassings and Cremations at the Auschwitz Camp

#### 4.3.1. The Defendants' Knowledge during the I.G. Farben Trial

As explained earlier, Nyiszli was summoned to the I.G. Farben Trial, but was not allowed to testify during the hearing. Given the extraordinary importance that was later attributed to his book, this fact is very strange. Provan's explanation that Nyiszli "was not called to the stand, presumably because he was only at Monowitz for about two weeks, and could provide little in the way of useful evidence" (Provan 2001, p. 29), is inconsistent for a simple reason: the prosecution also wanted to show that the IG-Farben Trust, as a 42.5% shareholder of the Degesch Company occupying five out of eleven positions on its board of directors, was responsible for the production and distribution of Zyklon B, which, according to the indictment, was used in Auschwitz for exterminations, and that the defendants were aware of that claimed fact. The prosecution's *Documents Books* contain the documents upon which the charges are based. On the one hand, they show perfectly what the prosecution's strategy was, and on the other hand, with what documents they were trying to prove their accusations.

Book No. 82<sup>365</sup> summarizes the extermination charge as follows. The sentences underlined by me relate to propaganda themes that have long since been abandoned by the Holocaust orthodoxy:<sup>366</sup>

*"The Auschwitz concentration camp was established for the main purpose of exterminating human beings. Life or death of the inmates depended solely upon their fitness for work. All who were considered fit to work were used as slave laborers; all who were not considered fit to work were exterminated in gas chambers and their bodies burned.*

*When the remainder of dead exceeded the capacity of the specially constructed crematoria, the 'overflow' of human beings was burned in huge open bonfires. Here many victims were also burned alive. In Auschwitz alone, three to four million persons were exterminated, and another one-half million died from disease and starvation.*

*The decision between life and death of newly arrived inmates was made pursuant to a screening system which operated as follows: There were two SS doctors on duty to examine the incoming transports of prisoners. The prisoners would be marched by one of the doctors who would make spot decisions as they walked by. Those who appeared fit for work were sent into the camp. Others were sent immediately to the extermination chambers. Children of ten-*

<sup>365</sup> Books 82, 83 and 89 which I examine in this chapter are reproduced in: *National Archives Microfilm Publications*, Microfilm Publication M892, Roll 45.

<sup>366</sup> Index to Document Book 82. I.G. Farben Case - Count III/C, p. 1.

*der years were usually exterminated, since by the reason of their youth, most of them were considered unable to work. Steps were taken to conceal from the victims the fact that they were to be exterminated and it was represented to them that by going through the gas chambers they were only going through a bathing and delousing process. It took from three to fifteen minutes to kill the people in the death chamber, and when their screaming had stopped it was assumed they were dead. About a half hour later the doors were opened and the bodies removed, whereupon special commandos of the SS took off the rings and extracted the gold from the teeth of the corpses. The bodies were then cremated and after cremation, their ashes were used as fertilizer. In some instances, attempts were made to utilize the fat from the bodies of the victims in the commercial manufacture of soap."*

This framework of the indictment was based on very few documents, which are summarized in the index with more or less emphasis depending on the importance attributed to them by the prosecution:

- NI-12207. The indictment of the Tesch Trial,<sup>367</sup> which I have dealt with earlier.
- NI-034. The affidavit by Rudolf Höss of May 20, 1946.<sup>368</sup>

*"Affidavit of Rudolf Hoess, SS Commandant at concentration camp Auschwitz. 'I was commandant of Auschwitz until 1 Dec. 1943 and I estimate that at least 2,500,000 victims were executed and exterminated there in gas chambers and crematories [...]*

*Mass executions in gas chambers began during summer 1941 and lasted until fall 1944. I supervised personally the executions in Auschwitz until 1 Dec. 1943. After I had constructed the extermination buildings in Auschwitz, I used Cyclon B, a crystallized prussic acid, which was thrown into the death chambers through a small opening. [...]*

*I assume with certainty that this firm knew the purpose of the use of Cyclon B delivered by it. This they would have to conclude from the fact that the gas for Auschwitz had been ordered continually and in great quantities, while for the other departments<sup>[369]</sup> of SS troops, etc. orders were placed only once or in 6 month intervals. I cannot recall the exact quantities of Cyclon B which we received from Tesch and Stabenow; however I estimate at least 10,000 cans, that is, 10,000 kilos had been supplied by them in the course of 3 years. This figure is arrived at by computing the number of 2 1/2 million gassed people and the consumption of an average of 6 cans for every 1500 people. '"*

Here the propagandistic claims that have ended in the dustbins of history are of the death-toll figure of two and a half million gassing victims, of the beginning of mass exterminations in the summer of 1941, and of hydrogen cyanide

<sup>367</sup> Document Book 82. I.G. Farben Case - Count III/C, p. 1, pp. 1-30.

<sup>368</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 31-40; the extracts quoted are from the first three pages.

<sup>369</sup> Curiously, here and in the German text the English term "departments" appears instead of the most-obvious German term "Abteilungen."

“crystals.” The introduction of the Zyklon B occurred through “a small opening” – just one! – and the amount Höss “calculated” is only half the amount which Alfred Zaun, Tesch & Stabenow’s accountant, gave for the years 1942 and 1943 alone: 19,653.5 kg (Affidavit, Oct. 26, 1945, NI-11396). The calculation method is clearly made-up. The “dosage” of Zyklon B is also in contradiction to Bendel’s statement: 2 kg for 1,000 people, or 3 kg for 1,500 people.

– NO-2368 [NI-6190]: The statement by Friedrich Entress of April 14, 1947:

*“Affidavit of Friedrich Entress, SS doctor at concentration camp Auschwitz.*

*‘Two old farm buildings were used as the first gas chambers; these buildings had been specially reconstructed for the gassing. This reconstruction was carried out by the SS Construction Office. The windows were bricked up, the partitioning walls taken out and a special door put in, which shut the chamber airtight. The space was made to hold three hundred persons. The prisoners had to undress in a barrack situated next to the gas chamber and were then taken into the gas chamber. After the doors were closed, the gas (Zyklon B) was thrown by three SS men through slits which could be shut, into the gas chambers.’<sup>370</sup>*

*‘The new crematoria were built in such a manner that the complete process of liquidation could take place in one building. The prisoners were first taken to the dressing rooms and then to the gas chambers. The new gas chambers had properly constructed chutes [‘Schächte,’ shafts] through which the gas was let in and a modern ventilation system [‘Entlüftungsanlage,’ air-extraction system]. Adjacent to the gas chambers [‘anschliessend an die Gaskammer,’ adjacent to the gas chamber] the crematoria [‘Verbrennungsöfen,’ cremation furnaces] were situated, so that the crematoria [‘Crematorien’] could carry out the liquidation of the prisoners in an assembly line manner (Laufendes Band).’”*

The poor Dr. Entress knew nothing about the alleged extermination and tried to cobble together a story – and a bad one at this – using the little “information” he had learned during his imprisonment.

He had no idea that the two “farmhouses”, according to the claimed SS jargon, were to be called “Bunkers.” He claims that they had been remodeled by the Auschwitz Construction Office, but there is not the slightest documentary trace about them. The mainstream narrative has it that these buildings had two (Bunker 1) or even four gas chambers (Bunker 2), but for Dr. Entress their internal walls had been torn down to get one single room. They are said to have had two and eight doors, respectively, but for Entress there was only one. According to camp commander Höss, their capacity was 800 and 1,200 people, respectively, but just 300 for Entress. Only one barracks next to the gas chamber was used as an undressing room according to him, but star wit-

<sup>370</sup> In German: “Zyklon B”; “durch verschliessbare Öffnungen in die Gaskammer”, “through closeable openings into the gas chamber.”

ness Szlama Dragon spoke of two barracks located 500 meters from “gas chamber no. 1” and two more some 150 meters from the “gas chamber no. 2” (see Mattogno 2016a, p. 74).

Entress had quite some recollections about the crematoria as well: the openings for introducing Zyklon B were “shafts,” of which he evidently knew neither the number nor the positions. A de-aeration system he claimed for the gas chamber existed only in “Morgue #2” (the supposed undressing room) of Crematoria II and III, while “Morgue #1” (the alleged “gas chamber”) had both an areation and a de-aeration system, that is to say, two fans, one to draw in air, the other one to expel it. Finally, the cremation furnaces were not directly adjacent to the “gas chambers” in any of the Birkenau crematoria.

– NI-11957. Affidavit by R. Diels of October 5, 1945.<sup>371</sup> The witness stated that the use of gas for extermination was known to everyone in Germany, and that in particular the IG-Farben executives were aware of it.

– NI-11954. The testimony by Perry [*sic*] Broad during the Tesch Trial on March 2, 1945 (pp. 50-62):

*“Q. What was the name of the gas on the tins which you saw in Auschwitz?”*

*A. Zyklon B.*

*Q. At a rough estimate, what was the total number of people exterminated by gas while you were at Auschwitz and Birkenau?”*

*A. I would think 2,500,000 to 3,000,000.*

*Q. Who were these people who were being gassed?”*

*A. There were German deportees, then Jews from Belgium, Holland, France, the northern part of Italy, Czechoslovakia and Poland.*

*Q. How many people could be put into the crematoriums in any one operation? ...*

*A. In crematoriums 1 and 2, 3000 to 4000; in crematoriums 3 and 4, 2000; in 5 there was only a gas stove there – 800 to 1200”*

These insane statements need no further comment.

– NI-11710. This is the famous affidavit by Nyiszli (pp. 63-66) that was summarized with the following few lines:

*“Affidavit by Dr. Nikolae [*sic*] (a physician detained in Auschwitz). The witness describes the gassing of human beings with Cyclon B at Auschwitz-Birkenau. Describes in detail the extermination process by means of gassing human beings, including the method, results and medical diagnosis.”*

The excerpts of the documents in the index served the public prosecutor’s office to quickly and easily adduce the passages considered most significant. There was no excerpt for Nyiszli’s affidavit, but only a brief summary, which indicates that this document was not considered of particular importance.

<sup>371</sup> Document Book 82. I.G. Farben Case - Count III/C, p. 1, pp. 46-48; subsequent page numbers from there unless stated otherwise.

- NI-11862. The affidavit by Heinrich Schuster of October 13, 1947 (pp. 67-73). Even in this case there is a brief summary:

*"Affidavit of Heinrich Schuster (medical orderly and inmate of concentration camp Auschwitz). Describes use of Cyclon B gas at Auschwitz, knowledge of civilian population about gassing, and provides figures on quantity of Cyclon B gas needed for disinfection."*

The declaration contains well-known propaganda themes:

*"The gas chambers in the crematoria were operated by a detachment of about 800-1,000 of the strongest inmates, selected personally by SS-Oberscharfuehrer Moll, chief of this department. They were strictly isolated from the other inmates of the camp and billeted in the crematoria. In the course of time, the whole detachment was often liquidated on their way through the gas chamber. Only one French doctor, who was with this detachment, remained alive. I got to know him better in October 1943 at Birkenau. When he came to pick up medicaments, he told me of his gruesome observations. I also learned from him that Cyklon B was used in the crematoria in the gas chambers serving the gassing of human beings."*

According to one version of the tales of the time, which also appears in the account by Robert Lévy, the "French physician" was Dr. Bendel. It is not possible that Schuster knew him in Birkenau in October 1943, since Bendel was deported to Auschwitz only on December 10, 1943.

With regard to the alleged mass extermination in 1944, this witness's tale was pretty similar to that related by Nyiszli, apart from the numbers:

*"From April 1944 until about mid-October 1944 the mass extermination took on such proportions (from 15 April on 3 - 4 trains with 50 cars each, crammed with people, arrived daily) that all 4 crematoria [together] were not large enough to burn the human beings who had already been gassed. Near crematoria III and IV, therefore, 2 gigantic funeral pyres were erected, on which mountains of gassed inmates were burned the whole time. The fire and smoke could be seen 20 kilometres away."*

Notice the position of the two pyres and his ignorance of "Bunker 2" and its cremation pits. Finally, I report the following sentence only for curiosity's sake:

*"About 150,000 Hungarian Jewesses were quartered in BIIB and BIIC, as well as BIII."*

- PS-3868. The affidavit by Rudolf Höss of April 5, 1946 (pp. 76-78). Of this document, the index extracted the following passages:

*"Affidavit by Rudolf Höss, SS commandant of the Auschwitz Camp. 'The 'final solution' of the Jewish question meant the complete extermination of all Jews in Europe. I was ordered to establish extermination facilities at Auschwitz in June 1941.'*

*'The Camp Commandant at Tremblinka told me that he had liquidated 80,000 [persons] in the course of one-half year. He was principally concerned with liquidating all the Jews from the Warsaw Ghetto. He used monoxide gas and I did not think that his methods were very efficient. So when I set up the extermination building at Auschwitz, I used Cyclon B, which was a crystallized Prussic acid which we dropped into the death chamber from a small opening.'*  
*'Another improvement we made over Tremblinka was that we built our gas chambers to accommodate 2,000 people at one time, whereas at Tremblinka their 10 gas chambers only accommodated 200 people each.'*"

It is nowadays an established fact that this tale is an accumulation of absurdities, beginning with the alleged extermination order of June 1941. This dating is so foolish that even the Holocaust orthodoxy had to admit it eventually (Orth 1999). Höss's visit to Treblinka would have taken place prior to the start of mass exterminations at Auschwitz, hence "Probably it was in September 1941, but it may not have been until January 1942" (Bezwińska/Czech 1984, p. 114), while the Treblinka camp was opened only in July 1942. Höss even claimed that 80,000 Jews from the Warsaw Ghetto had already been murdered in Treblinka before his alleged visit there in September 1941 or January 1942, although the deportation of Jews from that ghetto didn't start until July 1942!

The affidavit in question was written in English and was simply signed by Höss.<sup>372</sup> It fully reflects the poor knowledge of Höss's British interrogators at that time. This explains the extreme vagueness of the description: "the extermination building," the "crystallized Prussic acid," the "death chamber," the "small opening," the capacity of 2,000 people in "our gas chambers." When Höss was extradited to Poland, he managed to "benefit" from the Polish interrogators' far more detailed "knowledge" about Auschwitz, hence his tales lost their British nebulosity.<sup>373</sup>

Further documents on the alleged extermination of the Jews at Auschwitz can be found in Document Book No. 83 and 89. The first contains Document NI-11953, which is Dr. Bendel's deposition of March 2, 1946 during the Tesch Trial,<sup>374</sup> which I discussed earlier.

Last but not least, Document Book No. 89 contains Document L-22,<sup>375</sup> the report published in November 1944 by the *War Refugee Board Report*, consisting of the statements by five detainees who had escaped from Birkenau: Walter Rosenberg, who later assumed the name Rudolf Vrba, Alfred Wetzler (April 7, 1944), Czesław Mordowicz and Arnost Rosin (May 27, 1944), as well as Jerzy Wesolowski, alias Tabeau, known as a "Polish major" (November 19, 1943).

<sup>372</sup> Reproduction of the original in: Mattogno 2017, Document 10, pp. 370-372.

<sup>373</sup> On the contents, background and historicity of Höss's various post-war statements see Mattogno 2017.

<sup>374</sup> Document Book 83. I.G. Farben Case VI Count III/B, pp. 154-164.

<sup>375</sup> Document Book 89. I.G. Farben Case VI, Count III, pp. 150-264.



The document is summarized as follows:<sup>376</sup>

*"The reports give figures concerning the size of the different transports which arrived in the Auschwitz and Birkenau concentration camps, with a breakdown according to nationalities and origin. The 'selections' for the gas chambers are described in detail as well as the actual gassing procedure with 'Zyklon.' It is mentioned that at the inauguration of the first crematorium in Mar. 1943 prominent guests from Berlin, both officers and civilians, were present and were shown through a special peephole in the gas chamber a 'program' consisting of gassing 8,000 Cracow Jews. Many details, e.g., concerning the camp hospitals, the work of concentration camp inmates for private industries, rough sketches of the camps and gas chambers give an all-around information to the public concerning the conditions in the two extermination camps."*

Alfred Wetzler's report notoriously contains a detailed description of the alleged extermination facilities and procedures at Birkenau. I quote the passage concerning the inauguration of the first Birkenau crematorium:<sup>377</sup>

*"At the end of February, 1943 a new modern crematorium and gassing plant was inaugurated at BIRKENAU. [...]"*

*Prominent guests from BERLIN were present at the inauguration of the first crematorium in March, 1943. The 'program' consisted of the gassing and burning of 8,000 Cracow Jews. The guests, both officers and civilians, were extremely satisfied with the results and the special peephole fitted into the door of the gas chamber was in constant use. They were lavish in their praise of this newly erected installation."*

Leaving aside the contradiction regarding the inauguration month, the visit of important guests from Berlin is a fairy tale invented to give an irrelevant event of German history national importance: the "first crematorium" of Auschwitz-Birkenau was so significant for all of Germany and the Reich's government that eminent military and civilian personalities from Berlin were brought in to attend its inauguration! There is, of course, no trace of this in the documents. As for the Jews of Krakow, according to Czech, the number of those allegedly gassed during that inauguration was not 8,000, but 1,492, as stated earlier.

Due to its claimed accuracy, Wetzler's description of the crematoria and "gas chambers" was a central element of the indictment during the I.G. Farben Trial:<sup>378</sup>

*"At present there are four crematoria in operation at BIRKENAU, two large ones, I and II, and two smaller ones, III and IV. Those of type I and II consist of 3 parts, i.e.: (A) the furnace room; (B) the large hall; and (C) the gas*

<sup>376</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 6.

<sup>377</sup> From the original text: "The Extermination Camps of Auschwitz (Oswiecim) and Birkenau in Upper Silesia." FDRL, WRB, Box No. 6, pp. 12f.

<sup>378</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 13.

*chamber. A huge chimney rises from the furnace room around which are grouped nine furnaces, each having four openings.*

*Each opening can take three normal corpses at once and after an hour and a half the bodies are completely burned. This corresponds to a daily capacity of about 2,000 bodies. Next to this is a large 'reception hall' which is arranged so as to give the impression of the antechamber of a bathing establishment. It holds 2,000 people and apparently there is a similar waiting room on the floor below. From there a door and a few steps lead down into the very long and narrow gas chamber. The walls of this chamber are also camouflaged with simulated entries to shower rooms in order to mislead the victims.*

*This roof is fitted with three traps which can be hermetically closed from the outside. A track leads from the gas chamber to the furnace room. The gassing takes place as follows: the unfortunate victims are brought into hall (B) where they are told to undress. To complete the fiction that they are going to bathe, each person receives a towel and a small piece of soap issued by two men clad in white coats. They are then crowded into the gas chamber (C) in such numbers there is, of course, only standing room.*

*To compress this crowd into the narrow space, shots are often fired to induce those already at the far end to huddle still closer together. When everybody is inside, the heavy doors are closed. Then there is a short pause, presumably to allow the room temperature to rise to a certain level, after which SS men with gas masks climb on the roof, open the traps, and shake down a preparation in powder form out of tin cans labeled 'CYKLON' 'For use against vermin,' which is manufactured by a Hamburg concern.*

*It is presumed that this is a 'CYANIDE' mixture of some sort which turns into gas at a certain temperature. After three minutes everyone in the chamber is dead. No one is known to have survived this ordeal, although it was not uncommon to discover signs of life after the primitive measures employed in the Birch Wood.*

*The chamber is then opened, aired, and the 'special squad' carts the bodies on flat trucks to the furnace rooms where the burning takes place. Crematoria III and IV work on nearly the same principle, but their capacity is only half as large. Thus the total capacity of the four cremating and gassing plants at BIRKENAU amounts to about 6,000 daily."*

This description contradicts what Nyiszli had described in his book. What Nyiszli wrote there is also in sharp contrast to all the other, more important testimonies as collected in the case files, *i.e.*, those by R. Höss, F. Entress, P. Broad and C.S. Bendel. This is most likely the reason why prosecutor Minskoff declined to have Nyiszli testify during the trial. This very rejection probably led Nyiszli, as a sort of childish revenge, to invent his own trial deposition which, however, never happened. One can certainly believe Nyiszli when he claims that he had brought a copy of his book to Nuremberg, but apparently it had the exact opposite effect of what he claimed:

*"The prosecutor lifted a copy of my book from his desk.*

*'In that regard, the doctor's statement is also important because he put it in writing in a 1946 volume, thus submitting his experiences. We requested this copy from the author. Our experts have examined its data and, having compared them with the documents available during this trial for the past two years, regard it as documentary material because with its description it has shed light on hitherto still rather unknown details.'"* (TVN)

Nyiszli's book was undoubtedly examined, but was found to be totally discordant with the material already collected by the prosecution, so it was not taken into account in any way, and Nyiszli was not admitted as a witness. His claim that the active ingredient in Zyklon B was chlorine, and the description of the invented gassing scenario based on this false assumption certainly did not make him trustworthy in the eyes of those who had extensive technical documentation of prime quality on Zyklon B.

Wetzler's report was a first attempt to put some order in the multifaceted and contrasting propaganda claims about the crematoria and "gas chambers" created by the resistance movement at Auschwitz, which consisted of various groups – Polish, French, Belgian, Russian, German, Czech, Slovakian, Yugoslavian – each of which had its own headquarters inventing and disseminating fake news.

In many regards, the narration contained in Wetzler's report is even more nonsensical than Nyiszli's. I limit myself to some essential observations.

#### According to the actual blueprints of the crematoria:

1. the furnace room was equipped with five triple-muffle furnaces (15 muffles total) rather than nine quadruple-muffle furnaces (36 muffles total);
2. each furnace had three rather than four muffles;
3. the furnaces were lined up in a straight line along the longitudinal axis of the furnaces room, rather than grouped together in a semi-circle around the chimney;
4. the room later labeled as the victims' undressing room (Morgue #2) was located in the basement rather than on the ground floor;
5. the room later labeled as gas chamber (Morgue #1) was not on the ground floor, a little lower than the undressing room, but rather in the basement, on the same level as the undressing room;
6. the room labeled as a gas chamber was connected to the furnaces room by an elevator rather than by rails.

#### According to the current mainstream Holocaust narrative:

7. the gas chamber is said to have had four openings to introduce Zyklon B rather than three;
8. the introduction shafts are said to have been closed with simple lids made of cement or wood which could not have sealed the shafts hermetically;
9. the story of the distribution of towels and a piece of soap is a fable;

10. the cremation capacity of a single muffle – three corpses within 90 minutes (30 min/corpse) – stands in contrast to the official one: two corpses within half an hour (15 min/corpse; Piper 2000, p. 164);
11. as blueprints show,<sup>379</sup> Morgue #1 of Crematoria II and III, the alleged “gas chamber,” was partially underground; its roof was only 36 cm higher than the floor of the buildings’ ground floor. To this, we need to add several inches of soil lying on that roof. The introduction shafts themselves were only 40-50 cm high either, if we follow Pressac (1989, p. 475). Hence, it makes no sense to state that the SS men introducing the poison gas climbed onto the roof of the gas chamber.

From a technical point of view:

12. the claimed cremation capacity of 2,000 corpses within 24 hours for each of Crematorium II and III, and 1,000 for each of Crematorium IV and V, totaling 6,000 per day, is utterly absurd;
13. as pointed out earlier, the time it allegedly took for the victims to die – three minutes – is another absurdity parroted with small variations by many other witnesses, including Nyiszli himself.

Wetzler’s report is of paramount importance to the propaganda history of Auschwitz. Since both the report’s sketch and the description of Crematoria II and III are pure fantasy, it follows that Wetzler’s tale about the extermination of the Jews in homicidal gas chambers did *not* originate from members of the so-called *Sonderkommando*, but was in fact invented *without their knowledge*. This in turn proves that this tale was created by the camp’s resistance movement as atrocity propaganda without even a thought to consulting inmates working in the crematoria! Further proof for this is Filip Müller’s later claim that he had handed over to Alfred Wetzler in 1944, among other documents, “a plan of the crematorium with gas chambers” (“*einen Plan der Krematorien mit den Gaskammern*”; Müller 1979a, p. 193), which was obviously another shameless lie, because had he done so, Wetzler would have gotten it right to begin with.

#### 4.3.2. The Stories of Hungarian Jews Deported to Auschwitz

In 1945, an important collection of testimonies by Hungarian Jews deported by the Germans appeared in Budapest. The book, edited by Béla Vihar, is titled *The Yellow Book: Documents about the Martyrdom of Hungarian Jewry during the War 1941-1945*. It also contains several “protocols” of interrogations of Jews who had been deported to Birkenau. The first is a statement by Henrik Farkas dated “February 24, 1942” (which evidently must be 1945) that deals with the Birkenau Camp and in particular with the “gas chamber.” The

<sup>379</sup> In particular Plan 109/13A of September 21, 1943. Pressac 1989, p. 323.

respective description is pretty much a mere translation of what appears in Wetzler's report, and it even contains the following disclaimer:

"Here I report the technical description of the gas chamber by a Jewish engineer engaged in technical work based on his notes on the gas chamber." (Vihar, pp. 64f.)

The German expression "*Cyklon zur Schaedlingsbekaempfung*" (Zyklon for pest control) and the term "*Sonderkommando*" clearly show that the translation was not based on the English text of the War Refugee Board, but on a German text, probably the one edited by Abraham Silberschein in 1944, in which identical expressions appear (on its p. 100). The capacity given for the large hall of just 200 people is clearly a mistake, as the number of those entering the gas chamber is given as 2,000. Even the duration of the execution until the victims' demise – five minutes instead of three – is undoubtedly the result of a mistake (Vihar 1945, pp. 64f.).

Here we have to pay tribute to Alain Guionnet, who was the first scholar to draw attention to this *Yellow Book* (but also to the original Hungarian edition of Nyiszli's book). In particular, he published a complete translation of Farkas's testimony on Birkenau together with a comparative analysis with Wetzler's report, which, to be honest, is not very convincing (Guionnet 1994, pp. 23-30).

Other ex-deportees also report about Auschwitz in the *Yellow Book*. József Sproncz (Vihar 1945, pp. 71-79, undated), among other things, reports that camp inmates received German newspapers such as the *Völkischer Beobachter*, the *Oberschlesische Zeitung* and the *Krakauer Zeitung* (*ibid.*, pp 78f.). The first is also mentioned by Nyiszli, who may have taken the idea from this testimony. Although it is certainly possible that civilian workers who worked inside the Auschwitz-Birkenau camp complex passed newspapers to detainees – which in general was illegal – no one, as far as I know, explicitly mentioned the *Völkischer Beobachter*. Other ex-deportees spoke only of the general conditions inside the camp: Imre Reich,<sup>380</sup> Imréné Kenész,<sup>381</sup> Dénesné Szépvölgyi,<sup>382</sup> Géza Klein,<sup>383</sup> Jenő Vámosi,<sup>384</sup> who also referred to the "rebellion in the crematorium," which, according to him, took place "in September 1944."<sup>385</sup> The latest testimony is that of Károly Klein, written down on July 12, 1945 (*ibid.*, p. 152). Among the promoters of the book was also the "Assistance Committee of Deported Hungarian Jews" (*Magyarországi Zsidók Deportáltakat Gondozó Bizottság*), the same organization mentioned by Robert Jay Lifton in relation to a testimony by a certain "Miklof Nyifcli" of July 28,

<sup>380</sup> Vihar 1945, pp. 83-86; undated.

<sup>381</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 88-92. Protocol of March 8, 1945.

<sup>382</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 95-98. Protocol of March 8, 1945.

<sup>383</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 101f. Protocol of March 6, 1945.

<sup>384</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 111-115. Protocol of March 13, 1945.

<sup>385</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 115. "Lázadás a krematóriumban."

1945. It is unknown why this testimony was not included in the book. Chronological reasons are possible but unlikely, since the book contains a statement of a couple of weeks earlier.

A "Report by the Hungarian physician Dr. Gyula Gál. Budapest," dated March 22, 1945 and written in German on request of the Soviets, contains a long story about Birkenau. Being destined for the Soviets, the witness claimed as follows:

*"At this place, the Germans exterminated roughly 5 million people, 3 1/2 million Jews and roughly 1 1/2 Million Poles and Russians."*

The gassing of the victims took place in a "gas barracks" (*Gasbaracke*), in this way:

*"400 people at one time were brought into a room with showers, which therefore resembled a bathroom. At first, they even gave these unfortunates soaps and towels, allegedly in order to wash themselves. When all were inside, the hermetically closing doors were locked, and Zyklon B, a powder full of cyanide – the product of a Hamburg firm – was poured out over them. This powder caused death within two minutes."*

There were eight dentists who tore gold teeth out of the corpses, then the corpses were taken to the crematorium, "where they were cremated within two hours." Furthermore we read:<sup>386</sup>

*"This method was used in particular when the crematorium, scheduled for this respective extermination of 15,000 people could not keep up with the work, i.e. when more than 15,000 were to be killed. That was mostly the case when new victims came in large quantities from Hungary and Poland."*

The DEGOB website contains a vast collection of testimonies on Auschwitz, including the one by Nyiszli, both a scan of the original and a translation into English. Though the number of testimonies is substantial (3,523 testimonies by 4,838 individuals, since some statements were authored by several witnesses together), none of these testimonies mentions Nyiszli, and only one is relevant to the subject of this study. It should be pointed out that this website keeps these testimonies anonymous; for each testimony, only the initials of the witness's first and last name are given, plus the gender, date and place of birth, profession, as well as the ghettos and camps to which the witness was deported. I reproduce here the essential passages of interest to the present study:<sup>387</sup>

*"Protocol Nr. 308 [July 4, 1945]*

*Name: S. M.*

*Gender: male*

*Place of birth: Budapest*

<sup>386</sup> GARF, 7021-108, pp. 67-74, here pp. 67f.

<sup>387</sup> <http://degob.org/index.php?showjk=308>; last accessed on Jan. 24, 2018; uncorrected English translation as posted on that website.

*Date of birth: 1922*

*Place of residence: Budapest*

*Occupation: physician candidate*

*Camps: Birkenau, Mauthausen, Melk, Ebensee*

*[...] The oft-mentioned Mengele's favourite hobby was research in genetic inheritance; therefore he treated twins with special attention. Amongst the Gipsy children, there were also three pairs of twins, one in the hospital and two pairs in the kindergarten of the camp. In the morning of the 2nd of August 1944, Dr Mengele entrusted these children to the head doctor of the Gipsy barrack, Dr Rabinovits, and came to fetch them personally by car in the evening. Three days later, Mengele arrived in the hospital pretty upset and looked for the doctor responsible for the Gipsy children. He rapped him over the knuckles for not examining patients with attention, not caring about them, he claimed that doctors were interested only in extra food rations, and threatened them with severe reprisals because they had not noticed or registered on the card the easily recognisable symptoms of tuberculosis of one of the twins. As an answer to the question how this had been known, which was raised by the reproached doctor, Mengele produced with a matter-of-fact gesture a necropsy record, in which the results of a technically perfect autopsy were proficiently presented regarding the little child, who had been evidently killed earlier by gas. (When our transport arrived Mengele's first question was whether there was a pathologist among us, and he kept repeating the same question till he found the pathologist of the public hospital of Szombathely, Dr Dénes Görög.) Basing my opinion on the two or three very short conversations that I had the opportunity to have with Mengele, I join the general opinion of the hospital's doctors that Mengele had in fact neurotic disorders. Presumably spotted fever caused him maniac [sic] depression, and his obsession was to realise eugenic selections, which had been known on a theoretical level already for a long time. After the more or less six-week service in hospital, I became the Vertreter (second commander) of one of the blocks, and as such, I was in charge of around six hundred 14 to 18-year-old boys. In the first days of September, Mengele did selections among these boys and sorted out around 60 percentage [sic] of them, and closed them in a separate block. I do not know what happened to them in the end, because in the meantime I also left Birkenau, but I am convinced that they finished in the crematorium as well. In the middle of September, I arrived in Mauthausen with a transport of around 2,000 people."*

It is remarkable that this former Jewish deportee from Hungary, evidently a medical student who even knew Dr. Dénes Görög, obviously did not know anything about Nyiszli and was unaware of Mengele's alleged criminal experiments, specifically the claimed chloroform injections into the hearts of the victims.

Part 5:

Nyiszli's Statements

in the Orthodox

Holocaust Narrative





## 5.1. The Quotation Cherry Pickers

From the beginning, the nascent historiography of the Holocaust considered testimonies about the gas chambers not as objects of history which themselves required examination and verification, but as history itself. No one considered the problem that any or all parts of these testimonies could be, at their core, false or simply unreliable, and no one, with the sole exception of Jean-Claude Pressac,<sup>388</sup> bothered to analyze or evaluate them as a whole. Instead, the testimonies were broken into pieces, extracted from context and utilized in a fragmentary way to compose a mosaic of “historical reconstruction” whose tesserae, though apparently congruous and complementary, in reality belonged to different, conflicting pictures. Without doubt the founding father of this “method” was Gerald Reitlinger. In his laconic description of the presumed extermination procedure in the “gas chambers” of Auschwitz, he juxtaposes extracts from the statements of “eyewitnesses” – Ada Bimko, Miklós Nyiszli, Charles Sigismund Bendel – which are transparently false and mutually contradictory (Reitlinger 1953, pp. 150-152):

*“A letter from Messrs. Toepf [sic] to Bischoff, dated February 12th, 1943, shows that in each crematorium there were five three-door furnaces with mechanical stokers, ash tips, and corpse lifts, but in the two larger crematoria the gas chambers were on the same level as the furnaces to which the corpses were run on the rail-wagon seen and described by Dr. Ada Bimko. The underground gas chambers of the smaller crematoria were approached by a subway, gently graded, down which Dr. Nyiszli saw fathers of families pushing perambulators.*

*The aspect of the buildings, according to Dr. Nyiszli, who lived in one of them for six months, was not unfriendly, in spite of the chimneys, so ominously big for a mere bath house. [...]*

*Slowly the gas escaped from the perforations in the sheet-metal columns. Generally the victims would be too tightly packed to notice this at first, but at other times they would be few enough to sit in comfort, gazing up at the douches, from which no water came, or at the floor which, strange to say, had no drainage runnels. [...]*

*Twenty-five minutes later, the ‘exhauster’ electric pumps removed the gas-laden air, the great metal door slid open, and the men of the Jewish Sonderkommando entered, wearing gas masks and gum boots and carrying hoses, for their first task was to remove the blood and defecation before dragging the clawing dead apart with nooses and hooks, the prelude to the ghastly search for gold and the removal of the dentures and hair which were regarded by the*

<sup>388</sup> I refer in particular to his analysis of Henryk Tauber’s testimony (Pressac 1989, pp. 481-502), although it is somewhat lacking. See Mattogno 2015a, pp. 367-416.

*Germans as strategic materials. Then the journey by lift or rail-wagon to the furnaces, the mill that ground the clinker to fine ash, and the lorry that scattered the ashes in the stream of the Sola. [...] I quote Dr. Bendel, as he gave his evidence at Lueneburg:*

*'Now a real hell begins. The Sonderkommando tries to work as fast as possible. In frenzied haste they drag the corpses by the wrists. They look like devils. People who had human faces before, I no longer recognize. A barrister from Salonika, an electrical engineer from Budapest – they are no longer human beings, because, even as they work, blows from sticks and rubber truncheons are showered on them. All the time this is going on, people are being shot in front of the ditches, people who could not be got into the gas chambers because they were overcrowded. After an hour-and-a-half the whole work has been done, and a new transport has been dealt with in Crematorium No. 4.'*"

It would be all too facile to expose Reitlinger's crass errors in order to dismiss present-day, orthodox Holocaust historiography *in toto*, as the latter unfailingly does by exposing Paul Rassinier's errors in order to attack present-day revisionism.<sup>389</sup> Such is not the goal of the brief analysis which follows, even if, as we evaluate the method employed by Reitlinger, it behooves us not to forget that his book, at the time of its publication, brought together and synthesized in the highest degree all of orthodox historiography's "proofs" regarding the "gas chambers."

The letter from "Messrs. Toepf," that is, from the firm J. A. Topf & Söhne, dated February 12, 1943, was taken by Reitlinger, without any indication of its source, probably from the Soviet report on Auschwitz presented at Nuremberg as Document USSR-8.<sup>10</sup> As reproduced in Volume XXXIX of the IMT records (where Reitlinger presumably found it), the text is a retranslation into German from a Russian translation of the German original, garbled in the process with gross errors of fact and interpretation, as a comparison with the original text<sup>390</sup> demonstrates. For example, the letter, which was originally directed to the "*Zentral-Bauleitung der Waffen-SS und Polizei*" of Auschwitz, in retranslation becomes addressed to the "*Zentralbauverwaltung der SS und Polizei*." Worse, the subject of the letter (the "*Re.*" line), which in the original is "*Krematorium II und III KGL*" ("Crematorium II and III of the PoW Camp"), in retranslation becomes "*Krematorien fuer das zweite und dritte Gefangenenlager*" or "Crematoria for the second and third prisoner camp"! Most bizarrely, the retranslation misconstrues a key passage in the Topf letter in which it quotes a telegram the firm had previously received from the *Central Construction Office* such that it has the SS acknowledging the receipt of or-

<sup>389</sup> It is sufficient to cite as representative here Lipstadt 1994, pp. 51-64 *et passim*.

<sup>390</sup> APMO, BW30/34, p. 84. This document is reproduced in facsimile, with an accompanying English translation, in: Pressac 1989, p. 361. The document itself, it should be noted, is a typed copy ("Abschrift") of the original letter; the copy is signed by *Zentralbauleitung* employee SS *Untersturmführer* Josef Janisch.

ders from Topf, rather than confirming its own orders to Topf! Original text.<sup>390</sup>

*“Für Krematorium III KGL 5mal Dreimuffelöfen wird der bereits getätigte Auftrag der gesamten Maschineneinrichtung einschließlich 2 Stück endgültigen elektrischen Leichenaufzügen und einem provisorischen kurzfristig lieferbaren Leichenaufzug sowie einer praktischen Kohlenbeschickung und Aschetransportvorrichtung nochmals bestätigt.”*

*“For Crematorium III [of the] PoW Camp [with] 5 three-muffle furnaces, the order already placed for the complete mechanical installations, including 2 permanent electrical corpse elevators and one provisional corpse elevator to be available in the short term, as well as a practical installation for coal delivery and ash transport is once again confirmed.”*

Retranslation (IMT, Vol. XXXIX, p. 243):

*“Wir bestaetigen nochmals den Empfang Ihres Auftrags fuer fuer fuenf dreiteilige Verbrennungsoefen einschliesslich zwei elektrischen Aufzuegen fuer die Befoerderung von Leichen und einem zweiteiligen Aufzug fuer Leichen. Eine brauchbare Einrichtung fuer die Beheizung mit Kohle und eine Vorrichtung fuer die Entfernung der Asche sind ebenfalls in Auftrag gegeben.”*

*“We confirm once more receipt of your order for five three-part cremation furnaces, including two electric elevators for the transport of corpses and one two-part elevator for corpses. A usable device for heating with coal and a mechanism for the removal of ashes are ordered as well.”*

What matters most here, however, is how Reitlinger interpreted the document. Leaving aside minor details, we may note simply that he attributes five triple-muffle furnaces to all four of the Birkenau crematoria (“in each crematorium there were five three-door furnaces”), and that he confuses the two larger crematoria (II and III, provided with half-basement rooms identified today as “undressing rooms” and “gas chambers”) with the two smaller crematoria (IV and V, with all rooms on the ground floor), writing at once of how “in the two larger crematoria the gas chambers were on the same level as the furnaces” and of “[the] underground gas chambers of the smaller crematoria.”

From Ada Bimko, Reitlinger picks up the fable of the cart on rails which carried bodies from the “gas chamber” to the cremation furnaces, a detail “revealed” also by Wetzler but denied *ex silentio* by Nyiszli.

To the latter, on the other hand, he attributes the description of a sloping passage (“subway”), down which fathers push their children in baby carriages into the crematorium building – a description which is simply invented by Reitlinger. In this case, he seems to have been led astray by his faulty understanding of French when reading the translation of the relevant passage from Nyiszli’s book as published in 1951 in *“Les Temps Modernes.”* The image is cobbled together from two sentences. The first – *“Les bébès, le plus souvent, sont transportés dans les bras du père, ou bien ces derniers poussent la voi-*

ture” (“The babies for the most part are carried in the arms of their father, or these latter [i.e., fathers, sic]<sup>391</sup> push them in carriages”; Nyiszli 1951, p. 1662) – comes from the scene, in Chapter VII, in which the long column of selected Jews enters the courtyard of Crematorium II. The second then appears a couple of paragraphs later as the column of Jews is described arriving “*jusqu’à une rampe de fer, d’où dix ou douze marches en béton conduisent sous terre*” (“at an iron railing from which ten or twelve concrete steps lead below ground”; *ibid.*). The French term “rampe” can mean both railing and ramp. Reitlinger has therefore misunderstood, but how could he think of an “iron ramp” (like an access ramp to a garage) having concrete steps?<sup>392</sup>

Reitlinger’s reference to the gas which “escaped from the perforations in the sheet-metal columns” is also taken from Nyiszli, but the latter knew nothing of “douches” (i.e., shower heads) installed in the “gas chambers”; this particular detail Reitlinger takes once again from Ada Bimko. Moreover, while Reitlinger notes that “no water came” from these shower heads, he is careful to refrain from mentioning that, according to Bimko’s testimony, the gas came from them (Phillips 1949, p. 742):

*“The S.S. man told me that the pipes, which were in the floor, were connected to the spray fittings in the gas chamber below.”*

Reitlinger repeats Ada Bimko’s claim that there were no “drainage runnels” in the “gas chambers,” but then goes on to report Nyiszli’s claims about using hoses to wash down the blood- and excrement-soiled corpses without so much as asking himself where this filthy liquid was supposed to end up going. Once again, as in the case of the iron “ramp,” Reitlinger demonstrates an incredible lack of critical sense.

The “‘exhauster’ electric pumps” also come from Nyiszli’s account. Reitlinger obviously felt the need to flag the term (which he misspells), but as I have already explained above, the term exhauster (German *Exhaustor*) does not designate any particular system of construction, but rather is simply a generic term for a ventilation or air-exhaust device. He then transforms the large, double-leaved oak door (“[...] *un SS ouvre à deux battants la grande porte en chêne*”; Nyiszli 1951, p. 1663), which the SS manually open and which leads directly into the “gas chamber” in Nyiszli’s account, into a “great metal door” which “slid open.”

In the last section of his description, Reitlinger outdoes himself again, inventing a “mill that ground the clinker to fine ash” and confusing the Sola with the Vistula as the river into which this ash allegedly was discarded. He

<sup>391</sup> The quoted text is revised in the 1961 Julliard edition to eliminate the awkward switch in number from “*père*” to “*ces derniers*”: “*Les bébès, le plus sovent, sont transportés dans les bras du père, ou bien ce dernier pousse leur voiture*” (Nyiszli 1961a, p. 53).

<sup>392</sup> Remarkably, the same error was made by Richard Seaver when retranslating Tibère Kremer’s French version into English in 1960: “*they advanced [...] to an iron ramp, from which 10 or 12 concrete steps led underground*”; Nyiszli 1960, p. 44; emphasis added).

then caps it all off with a quotation from Charles Bendel, but of all the various statements of this notorious “eyewitness,” he sees fit to use only a few sentences from the Belsen trial record (which are practically irrelevant anyway), all the while observing a discreet silence regarding the glaring contradictions between them and the statements of Ada Bimko and Nyiszli. And this was the man who blazed the trail of orthodox Holocaust history for Raul Hilberg!

Such a pattern of selective quotation is nothing unusual in mainstream historiography. Another Holocaust exegete who distinguished himself by his use of this “method” was the French historian Georges Wellers, particularly in his anti-revisionist book *Les chambres à gaz ont existé* (*The Gas Chambers Existed*), in which he presented the customary jumble of contradictory testimonies and even a “Comparative analysis of the testimonies” – the conclusion of which, naturally, was that, while they certainly displayed some inevitable “divergences,” nonetheless “on the essential point, all these testimonies are in agreement” (Wellers 1981, pp. 96-129, here p. 129). This dodge is entirely futile and inconsequential, however, for the “essential point” of the various testimonies boils down to the existence of the “gas chambers,” and on this “essential point” they nonetheless each give divergent and mutually contradictory accounts.

Nor did Raul Hilberg himself escape this practice. His exposition of the presumed extermination procedure at Auschwitz perfectly illustrates his method of cherry-picking phrases from mutually contradictory testimonies in order to create a factitious portrait that is seemingly coherent and supported by multiple sources (Hilberg 2003, p. 1041):

*“When the Auschwitz victims filed into the gas chambers, they discovered that the imitation showers did not work [note 91]. Outside, a central switch was pulled to turn off the lights [note 92], and a Red Cross car drove up with the Zyklon [note 93]. An SS man, wearing a gas mask fitted with a special filter, lifted the glass shutter over the lattice and emptied one can after another into the gas chamber. Although the lethal dose was one milligram per kilogram of body weight<sup>393</sup> and the effect was supposed to be rapid, dampness could retard with which the gas was spreading [note 94]. Untersturmführer Grabner, political officer of the camp, stood ready with stopwatch in hand [note 95].”*

In these few lines, Hilberg calls upon five witnesses and one judge – Jan Sehn [note 91], Miklós Nyiszli [note 92], Charles Bendel [note 93], Rudolf Höss and Filip Müller [note 94], and Pery Broad [note 95] – without troubling himself in the least with the strident contradictions which they present among each other, and all the while pretending that they collectively form a harmonious portrait which is coherent with the presumed facts. Rather tellingly, out-

<sup>393</sup> This is a plausible lethal dose for hydrogen cyanide (HCN) when ingested orally. To reach this dose when inhaling gaseous hydrogen cyanide, numerous factors come into play, such as concentration in the air, breathing volume and speed, physical fitness etc.

side of this one footnote, he does not have the courage to so much as mention Nyiszli in the rest of his massive three-volume study.

Worse still, a similar method has been adopted – and indeed continues to be employed – even by the official Auschwitz State Museum in Poland. Although it has published various testimonies in whole or in part (as, for example, those of Rudolf Höss, Pery Broad, Henryk Tauber, Stanisław Jankowski, and various members of the *Sonderkommando*), it has never bothered to subject these individual testimonies to critical analysis in order to ascertain their degree of veracity, limiting itself instead to simple explanatory annotations. In the case that interests us here, Franciszek Piper, former director of the Museum and for years chair of its Historical Department, cites Nyiszli twenty times in the German translation of his study on “Extermination” at Auschwitz, with the usual mosaic of selective quotations, seeking to “document” otherwise-unknown aspects of the history of the camp of which Nyiszli remains the sole guarantor.

Piper’s first mention of Nyiszli involves a long quotation relative to the dissection hall of Crematorium II (2000, p. 115), on the disposition and furnishing of which Piper evidently knows nothing from other sources. Later in the study, he provides a detailed description of Crematoria II and III, even reproducing an architectural plan of the buildings,<sup>394</sup> but when it comes to the presumed gassings there, he is forced to alternately rely on or reject Nyiszli’s account on numerous details, including:

### 1. “Gas Chamber” Sign

Piper relies on Nyiszli about a sign in various languages allegedly posted at the entrance to the “gas chamber” saying “To Baths and Disinfection” (*ibid.*, p. 169). However, Piper stays mute about the absurd dimensions Nyiszli attributes to the “undressing room” and “gas chamber,” each 200 meters long in his description. It is worth mentioning here as well that the German translation of Nyiszli’s book referred to by Piper in his notes to his study correctly translates the relevant passage as “*einen etwa 200 Meter langen [...] Raum*” (“an approximately 200-meter-long [...] room”; Nyiszli 1992, p. 34), but the Polish translation published one year later, which Piper himself annotated, crudely falsifies the text here, saying that the room in question “*ma około 50 metrów długości*” (“has a length of about 50 meters”; Nyiszli 1996, p. 35), nearly identical to the real value of 49.43 meters! On the other hand, the two translations are in agreement in eliminating Nyiszli’s embarrassing reference to chlorine and “granular form” in his description of Zyklon B. Where the original text has

“*A beszórt anyag Cyclon, vagy Chlór szemcsés formája, azonnal gázt fejleszt, amint a levegővel érintkezik!*” (Nyiszli 1946, p. 35)

<sup>394</sup> Since the buildings were built as mirror images of one another, one plan suffices for both.

*"The material poured out is Cyclon, or chlorine in granular form; it immediately gives off gas as soon as it comes into contact with air!"* (MBV, Chapter VII)

in translation this becomes, respectively (Nyiszli 1992, p. 36):

*„Die Substanz: Zyklon B. Im Kontakt mit der Luft entwickelt sich aus der Substanz ein Gas [...]"*

*("The substance: Zyklon B. In contact with air, a gas develops from out of the substance [...])"*

And (Nyiszli 1996, p. 37):

*"To cyklon. Natychmiast po zetknięciu się z powietrzem wydziela się gaz."*

*("This is Zyklon. Immediately upon contact with air, gas develops.")*

## 2. The Capacity of the "Gas Chambers"

On this, Piper wrote (2000, pp. 169f.):

*"By beating and turning dogs on the recalcitrant, as many as 2,000 men, women and children could be jammed inside. (In practice, this capacity was used only rarely, at peak periods of arriving transports.)"*

For Nyiszli, however, the capacity of the "gas chambers" was 3,000 people, and that number did not represent an exception, but was rather the norm.

## 3. The Gassing Procedure

For his principal source here, Piper turns to former Auschwitz commandant Rudolf Höss, whose notes on "The Final Solution of the Jewish Question in the Auschwitz Concentration Camp," written for his Polish jailers while awaiting execution in 1947, provides the following quotation:<sup>395</sup>

*"It could be observed through the peep hole in the door that those who were standing nearest the induction vents were killed at once. It can be said that about one-third died straight away. The remainder staggered about and began to scream and struggle for air. The screaming, however, soon changed to the death rattle and in a few minutes all lay still. After twenty minutes at the latest no movement could be discerned."*

However, the supposed devices for introducing Zyklon B are described by Piper (drawing on still other sources) as columns "made of two layers of wire mesh" (*ibid.*, p. 166), while Nyiszli wrote of "perforated sheet-metal pipes" (Nyiszli 1946, p. 35).

## 4. Cremation Devices

Piper focuses first on the question of furnace loaders (2000, p. 171, FN 494):

*"In Crematoria II and III there was one pair of movable rollers per oven (three receptacles); in Crematoria IV and V, each receptacle had its own rollers. [...] Nyiszli, Auschwitz: A Doctor's Account, pp. 51-55"*

<sup>395</sup> Piper 2000, p. 170; verbatim taken from Bezwińska/Czech 1984, pp. 134f.



This note refers to the loading rollers (*Laufrollen*) originally placed below the door of a cremation muffle in order to facilitate the insertion of corpses into the muffle using a corpse-introduction cart before this system was replaced by more-practical introduction stretchers.<sup>396</sup> Piper explains all this to his reader in his text. Though cited as a source, Nyiszli not only does *not* confirm Piper's description, he flatly contradicts it. Nyiszli knew nothing of triple-muffled furnaces, but rather believed that in each of the four crematoria there were fifteen individual furnaces with one muffle each. Likewise, Nyiszli knew nothing of the corpse-introduction cart having been replaced by stretchers. He instead described devices more or less corresponding to the corpse-introduction carts, which were no longer in use in Birkenau by 1944 (see p. 200). Moreover, Nyiszli never mentions the rollers and never talks about the furnaces of Crematoria IV and V. Piper's reference to the "rollers" probably derives from a slightly too-casual translation of the German version (Nyiszli 1992, p. 39):

*"Jeweils drei werden auf ein aus Stahlplatten hergestelltes Rollgestell gelegt. Automatisch öffnen sich die schweren Eisentüren [...]."*

*"Three at a time are placed on a rolling framework made of steel plates. The heavy iron doors open automatically [...]"*

The Hungarian text states instead:

*"These [the members of the cremation Kommando] then place them [the corpses] three at a time on a pushing device made of steel plates. The furnace's heavy iron doors open automatically. The device moving on iron wheels rolls into the glowing furnace, drops its load, slides back, heated to incandescence."* (MBV, Chapter VII)

## 5. Duration of the Cremations

Piper asserts that, according to the statements of members of the *Sonderkommando*, "Crematoria II and III could each burn about 2,500 bodies per day." In a note to the quoted passage he then explains (2000, pp. 171f.):

*"According to Feinsilber and Tauber, about 2,500 corpses per day were burned in each of Crematoria II and III; according to Höss, approximately 2,000. [Sources for Alter Feinsilber, Henryk Tauber, Kurt Markus, Rudolf Höss and Pery Broad...]; Nyiszli, Auschwitz. A Doctor's Account, p. 55"*

On the page indicated, however, Nyiszli not only advances a capacity of 5,000 corpses per day for Crematorium II, but also affirms that the total capacity for the four Birkenau crematoria was in fact 20,000 corpses per day – because, as mentioned earlier, he believed that each crematorium was equipped with fifteen single-muffle furnaces. Piper shows not the least concern for these incredible absurdities in his supposed source, going on to tranquilly affirm that

<sup>396</sup> For this question, and that of Nyiszli's numbering of the cremation furnaces immediately following, see the discussion in Section 3.2.3.

Crematoria IV and V had a daily capacity of 1,500 corpses each (*ibid.*, p. 173), or 3,000 between them, instead of the 10,000 claimed by Nyiszli!

#### 6. The "Bunkers" of Birkenau

Piper dedicates an entire section to the "Bunkers" of Birkenau and provides a plan and a detailed description of "Bunker 2," alleged to have contained four "gas chambers" (*ibid.*, pp. 138-140). As I have pointed out above, however, for Nyiszli there existed neither a "Bunker 2" nor four "gas chambers," but merely a run-down farmhouse with a single room which served as an undressing room for the victims who were to be shot at the two burning pits. Piper takes not the slightest notice of so extreme a contradiction from a source he is elsewhere content to use, pretending instead, as with all the others, that it simply does not exist.

#### 7. Executions

Referring to Chapter IX of Nyiszli's book, Piper writes that small groups of people were executed with firearms in the crematoria (*ibid.*, p. 179):

*"including Soviet prisoners of war and Poles sentenced by the summary court in Katowice."*

In reality, the victims whom Nyiszli speaks of are completely different from those claimed by Piper, namely women selected from Sector BIIC (women's camp):

*"They are the selected from camp section C [...] every evening at seven a truck brings seventy over."* (MBV, Chapter IX; Nyiszli 1992, p. 48)

Later, in Chapter XXII, Nyiszli returns to the theme, and the class of victims expands to include men:

*"[...] each evening around seven o'clock, a truck passes through the crematorium gate and brings seventy to eighty women or men for liquidation. They are the daily selections of the K.Z. They arrive here from the barracks and the hospitals."* (Nyiszli 1992, p. 85)

Contrary to what Piper claims, the routine ("nightly") executions Nyiszli claimed to have witnessed at the crematorium evidently had nothing to do with Soviet POWs or Poles condemned to death by the Gestapo.<sup>397</sup>

#### 8. The Sonderkommando Revolt

At one point in his study, Piper refers to Nyiszli's assertion that the *Sonderkommando*, when he entered it in June of 1944, consisted of 860 prisoners (Piper 2000, p. 185, FN 558). As I have pointed out earlier, Piper af-

<sup>397</sup> Admittedly, in Chapter XXIX Nyiszli does dissect the corpse of a Russian officer shot during an escape attempt (and thus not executed *per se*), and in Chapter XXXVII he talks to a group of Poles condemned for various offences by the Gestapo. The latter incident is alleged to have occurred at Crematorium V on January 1, 1945, after the "suspension" of regular killing operations at Birkenau, and marks the last occasion Nyiszli speaks of executions at the camp; it is also the sole occasion he speaks in the book of the execution of non-Jewish Poles.

firms that, during the course of the revolt on October 7, 1944, 451 prisoners were killed and 212 were left alive (Piper 2000, p. 187), whereas Nyiszli of course writes that 853 were killed and only 7 survived (MBV, Chapter XXIX).

A few lines further still, Piper relates that, after the revolt was suppressed, in the courtyard of Crematorium II

*"First, Dr. Mengele's assistants—the physicians Nyiszli, Korner and Görög, and laboratory technician Fischer—were picked out, along with 30 prisoners who would work in Crematorium V, the only one still operating."* (Piper 2000, p. 188)

Nyiszli, on the other hand, recounts that on this occasion the only people "picked out" from among the inmates were himself and his three assistants: the entire twelfth *Sonderkommando* was exterminated, and the thirty prisoners in question were not survivors of the revolt and were not even part of the *Sonderkommando*, but rather were a simple squad of prisoners instituted after the extermination as the core of a new, thirteenth *Sonderkommando* (MBV, Chapter XXXV)!

For Piper, of the 212 survivors – all exterminated according to Nyiszli – 70 were assigned to the *Abbruchkommando* (demolition squad) while the remaining 100<sup>398</sup> were told that they would be transferred to the Gross-Rosen concentration camp. Among the latter group, Piper assures us, was also included "the *Sonderkommando* physician, Dr. Pach" (Piper 2000, p. 188)<sup>399</sup> – a personage who did not exist at all for Nyiszli, he being, by his own account, the *only* doctor of the *Sonderkommando*.

These 100 prisoners, Piper continues, were also soon killed. In the relevant note he indicates the number of those killed according to various witnesses: 170 for the anonymous note of November 26, 1944 (attributed to Lejb Langfus), only 100 for Szlama Dragon. At his footnote's conclusion, he then adds the following citation: "Nyiszli, *Auschwitz. A Doctor's Account*, p. 198" (*ibid.*, p. 188, FN 568). On the pages cited, however, Nyiszli recounts the extermination of the *thirteenth Sonderkommando* (not the remnants of the twelfth), which according to him consisted of 460 prisoners; these were first gathered in the furnace hall of Crematorium III then taken outside the camp to be killed, with the exception of Nyiszli himself and his three assistants (MBV, Chapter XXXV).

For his part, Piper recounts the story as follows (*ibid.*):

*"They were killed not far from the camp and their bodies delivered to the crematorium the next day to be burned."*

In the attached footnote he then elaborates (*ibid.*, Note 569):

<sup>398</sup> Adding the numbers up, this makes for  $4 + 30 + 70 + 100 = 204$  prisoners. Piper has forgotten to clarify the fate of his remaining eight survivors.

<sup>399</sup> For more on Pach, see in particular Section 5.2.2.

*"Nyiszli saw their burned bodies; they were brought to Crematorium II the next day for immolation. He reports that they had been killed with flamethrowers, a conclusion certainly prompted by the visible burns on their bodies. Most probably, however, they had been shot and then brought to the crematorium after an unsuccessful attempt at burning in the open air."*

Leaving aside the fact that the context of Nyiszli's account is in total and irremediable conflict with Piper's, Nyiszli as a witness did not conclude anything, but rather declares with certainty that the prisoners in question were killed using flamethrowers, firmly counting this procedure on his ongoing list as "the seventh type of death" which he has seen used by the SS (MBV, Chapter XXXV).

Furthermore, Piper's explanation is manifestly a shabby *ad hoc* deception, for he himself has previously asserted in another publication that, during the Hungarian action at Birkenau, bodies were routinely "burned at the rate of about 5,000 corpses in 24 hours in the incineration pits near the crematoria" and that "[the] same number were incinerated in the pits of bunker 2" (Piper 1994, p. 173). As such, it clearly is absurd to suggest that the SS should have failed in an "attempt at burning [the bodies] in the open air" – that is, in those very same cremation pits – when there were only 100 corpses to be burned.

Next, a long quotation from Nyiszli's book permits Piper to describe the presumed living conditions of the *Sonderkommando* men in the crematoria (2000, pp. 191f.). To this, Piper then adds (*ibid.*, p. 193):

*"Dr. Pach continued to treat the patients [in the crematorium's infirmary]. In addition, Drs. Miklós Nyiszli (from June 1944) and Charles Bendel (from August 1944) acted as Sonderkommando physicians."*

In their respective statements, however, Nyiszli and Bendel not only ignore one another, but each pretends to have been the *only* doctor of the *Sonderkommando*, and the only doctor to have survived! In a note here, Piper refers to Nyiszli's book (with a prudent "*passim*"; FN 590), as well as to the later fanciful account by Filip Müller, of which I will have more to say in Chapter 5.2. In truth, of course, as I have noted earlier, Nyiszli mentions Bendel only once in his book, and then not in relation to the *Sonderkommando*. Had Piper indicated the precise page in which this sole reference occurs, he would have placed his whole factitious construct at risk. This is what Nyiszli actually wrote:

*"The Gypsy camp has a point of special interest, the experimental barracks located there. Professor Dr. Epstein [...] is chief of the research lab. [...] His assistant is Dr. Bendel, lecturer in the faculty of medicine at Paris."* (MBV, Chapter IV)

A "Dr. Bendel" thus appears in Nyiszli's book, once and only once, as assistant in the research lab at the Gypsy camp; of his supposed presence at the crematoria as a doctor for the *Sonderkommando*, Nyiszli knows nothing what-

soever. Despite this obvious fact, Piper puts both men in the *Sonderkommando*, at the same time, and even has the effrontery to cite their respective statements in various places, without ever informing his readers of this glaring contradiction between them. It is only too evident that such a “method” of citation is not only poor scholarship, it is actively deceptive.

Nor is Piper's scholarly malfeasance limited to selective or misleading citations. I have exposed above a falsification in the Polish translation of Nyiszli's book which Piper annotated and endorsed, but it is not the only such manipulation. Another, no less crude, appears in the very same chapter, the seventh. The original text is as follows:

*“The whine of electric motors becomes audible. They have turned on the giant blowers which fan the fire to the proper temperature inside the furnaces. **Fifteen** blowers of this kind are in operation at once! One is installed next to each furnace. The cremation hall is about **150 meters** long, a brightly lit, white-washed, concrete-floored space with enormous, iron-barred windows. The **fifteen** cremation furnaces are installed separately in large red-brick structures.”* (MBV, Chapter VII, emphasis added)

Here is the Polish version (Nyiszli 1996, p. 34):

*“Odzywa się szum prądnic, rozpoczynają pracę ogromne wentylatory: w piecach podnosi się temperaturę do najwyższego stopnia. Pracuje jednocześnie kilka dużych wentylatorów. Przy każdym piecu jeden. Pomieszczenie, w którym pali się zwłoki, jest duże, jasne, wybielone, z betonową podłogą i olbrzymimi, okratowanymi oknami. Paleniska obudowano czerwoną cegłą, każdy piec osobno.”*

And here it is again, retranslated into English:

*“The hum of electric generators is heard, enormous ventilators start to work: in the furnace the temperature rises to the highest degree. Several large ventilators are working simultaneously. There is one beside each furnace. The room in which the bodies are burned is large, brightly lit, painted white, with a concrete floor and huge, barred windows. The hearths are encased in red brick, each furnace separately.”*

Smaller differences aside, we note at once that all absurd references to the 150-meter length of the room and to fifteen ventilators in operation beside fifteen separate furnaces have been eliminated.

Similarly, further along in the same chapter the phrase “Four large mechanical freight elevators are in operation here” (MBV, Chapter VII) becomes, in Polish, “*pracuje tam wielki dźwig towarowy*” (Nyiszli 1996, p. 39) which translates to “a large freight elevator is working here.”

Later, speaking of the “thatch-roofed farmhouse” near the two pyres in Chapter XIII, Nyiszli affirms that “There is no gas chamber which they believe to be a shower room,” since as far as he is concerned the house is a simple undressing room for the victims who are to be shot at the pyres. The Polish

version, on the other hand, eliminates Nyiszli's embarrassing reference to the non-existence of gas chambers in the building: "*Nie ma budynku, który mogliby uważać za łaźnię*" (*ibid.*, p. 64), which translates to "There is no building which could be considered a bathhouse."

The deception is then completed with a pair of captious annotations by Piper. First, on the "thatch-roofed farmhouse" (*ibid.*, p. 176, Note 27):

*"This is the provisional gas chamber which was put into operation in mid-1942 following the adaptation of a farmhouse in Brzezinka (Birkenau). After the four crematoria and gas chambers started operating, this chamber was not used. It resumed operation again in May 1944, during the period of mass influx of Hungarian Jewish transports. It was initially called 'white house' or 'bunker 2,' in 1944 the name 'bunker 5.' was also used."*

And then on the shootings at the pyres (*ibid.*, Note 28):

*"This system of execution by shooting was rare. Usually the corpses of people murdered with gas in the gas chamber were burned."*

Thus, the mention of the "farmhouse," which for Nyiszli explicitly was *not* a "gas chamber," becomes for Piper a confirmation of "the gas chambers"! Naturally he does not explain why Nyiszli himself never used any of the names for the building, allegedly in common circulation, of "white house" or "bunker 2" or "bunker 5." And then in the second note, the shootings at the pyres which Nyiszli describes as the *only* system in use at the location, are transformed by Piper into a rarity!

Another manipulation in the Polish version concerns the description of the activities of the "Dayan." The passage in Nyiszli's original reads as follows:

*"I had no other arguments. The Ober accepted them, and at my suggestion the man was sent to the so-called Canada rubbish heap burning in the courtyard of Crematorium II. [...] The Canada rubbish heap was a constantly burning mound; in this place hundreds of thousands of photographs of married couples, elderly parents, attractive children and beautiful girls burned in the company of thousands of prayer books."* (MBV, Chapter XXXV, emphasis added)

The Polish version, in turn, reads (Nyiszli 1996, p. 150):

*"Nie miałem innych argumentów, ale Oberscharführer zgodził się i z tymi i na moją prośbę dajan został przydzielony do pracy przy śmietniku znajdującym się na podwórzu II krematorium. [...] Ten wielki śmietnik ciągle płonie."*

And translated into English:

*"I had no other arguments, but the Oberscharführer accepted them and on my prayer the dajan was assigned to work at the garbage dump in the courtyard of Crematorium II. [...] This great garbage burns continuously."*

The Polish translation – with Piper's editorial connivance – thus finesses away the embarrassing fact that Nyiszli apparently believed that the extensive, thirty-barrack storage complex next to Crematorium IV known as "Canada" in

camp slang was actually a burning rubbish heap in the courtyard of a different crematorium some 250 meters away!

And where the translation does not falsify the original text, Piper still sometimes seeks to mislead the reader with deceptive annotations. For example, describing his departure from the crematorium with his companions after the flight of the SS in Chapter XXXVIII, Nyiszli writes:

*"With a happy feeling of liberation, we start on our way. Direction: K.Z. Birkenau! It is at a distance of two kilometers from the crematorium."*

The Polish translation is accurate (*ibid.*, p. 158), but notice the misleading comment by Piper (*ibid.*, p. 180, note 59):

*"The crematoria are directly inside that camp. Nyiszli certainly had in mind the main gate of the camp."*

Nyiszli says nothing at all about the distance to the camp's *gate*, however, he explicitly affirms that the camp itself is two kilometers away from the crematoria. And if there were any lingering doubts on that question, one would need only to look at the next two sentences in his account:

*"The flames of great fires flicker on the horizon! Probably the K.Z. is burning!"*

For Nyiszli, the K.Z. itself, not its gate, is two kilometers away on the horizon! Piper makes no attempt to confront the implications of this sort of blatant error on Nyiszli's part: he simply tries to finesse them away, pushing aside all critical sense in the process – in the hope, no doubt, that his readers will do so too.

Piper thus displays a sort of dual complicity here, conniving – indeed participating, as editor – in the manipulations of the Polish translation (of which he could not possibly be unaware), but conniving also in the many absurdities offered up by Nyiszli, allowing them to stand unchallenged wherever they may pass, without too much embarrassment, in the propaganda framework of the orthodox Holocaust narrative.

Referring to the consequences of the *Sonderkommando* revolt, Nyiszli writes at the end of Chapter XXIX:

*"Eight hundred and fifty-three prisoners had died. Seventy SS soldiers were killed. Among them were an Obersturmführer, seventeen Oberscharführer and Scharführer, and fifty-two Sturmmann, that is, mere privates,"*

In a note on this point, Piper observes that the number of SS men killed given by Nyiszli is not substantiated by other sources, rather it is refuted by *Standortbefehl* (Garrison Order) No. 26/44 of October 12, 1944, which I mentioned earlier (Section 3.6.2.). Piper then states that 451 inmates of the *Sonderkommando* were killed in the revolt while 212 survived (*ibid.*, Note 48 on p. 179). Nyiszli, on the other hand, claims that only seven inmates survived. How can we explain this blatant contradiction? Piper does not address it, and as usual

does not exhibit even the most basic critical attitude. He is therefore fully conniving both with the manipulations of the Polish translation of Nyiszli's book, which he must have been aware of,<sup>400</sup> and with the absurdities uttered by Nyiszli.

---

<sup>400</sup> The Polish translation is from 1996, while the German, more-accurate one, which Piper cites excessively in his 1999 study "*Vernichtung*," dates back to 1992.



## 5.2. The Critics

### 5.2.1 The Critique of Jean-Claude Pressac

Apart from discussing it in reference to the presumed cremation ditches of “Bunker 2/V,” Pressac also deals with Nyiszli’s testimony in connection with the technical aspects of the “gassing” procedure in Crematorium II. Introducing the latter question, Pressac writes (1989, p. 473):

*“I have taken from Dr Nyiszli’s book only Chapter Seven, describing the gassing of a convoy at Krematorium II, this being one of the best-known accounts. Many details can easily be verified using contemporary documents. The description is entirely accurate, EXCEPT for certain FIGURES which are very WRONG indeed.”*

Despite calling it “entirely accurate,” Pressac nonetheless admits that “the **stark contrast** between the general precision of the account and [the] enormous errors that it contains” induced him to check the relevant numbers in the first Hungarian edition of Nyiszli’s book, since he suspected that the French translation he was using, that of Tibère Kremer, “must be at fault.” Checking the Hungarian, however, only confirmed the presence of these “enormous errors” in Nyiszli’s original text (*ibid.*).<sup>401</sup>

After comparing Nyiszli’s numbers with the various numbers known or presumed to be correct by modern historiography, and after identifying “multipliers” for each (*i.e.*, factors by which Nyiszli’s numbers are exaggerated), Pressac arrives at the following conclusion at the end of his analysis (*ibid.*, p. 475):

*“The average of the different multipliers [is] almost exactly 4. If we apply this to the official total of 4 million victims we arrive at a figure much closer to reality: 1 million. This calculation is by no means scientific or rigorous, but it shows that DOCTOR NYISZLI, a respectable ACADEMIC, TRAINED IN GERMANY, multiplied the figures by FOUR when describing the interior of Krematorium II and when speaking of the number of persons or victims.”*

For Pressac this means that, apart from the “exaggerations,” Nyiszli’s testimony is precise and therefore trustworthy. Nonetheless, Pressac himself identifies not less than twenty-five “errors” in this one chapter (VII) of Nyiszli’s book, many of which indeed are not numerical in nature (*ibid.*, pp. 474f.).

In sum, Pressac believes that Nyiszli was “an authentic witness,” something which, in his opinion, “can easily be proved,” but that “the mystery of the ‘multiplier’ still remains complete.” A few paragraphs later he adds:

<sup>401</sup> All emphases and capitalizations here and below in original unless otherwise noted.

*"The case of Dr Miklos NYISZLI's book is baffling. In my opinion, it contains the most impressive evocation of the 'demential nightmare' experienced by the thousand men of the Sonderkommando." (ibid., p. 479)*

This is a judgment, at last, with which one can entirely agree, though only on the condition that one take the expression "demential nightmare" literally.

Pressac holds, incomprehensibly, that Nyiszli really did live in Crematorium II (a possibility which is excluded by the series of absurdities proffered by him in his book on the layout of this building – see Chapter 3.7). In support of this conviction, Pressac offers a "proof" – even as he acknowledges yet again that "The problem of the completely false figures in Chapter Seven still remains." This problem is all the more serious in that, for Pressac, these exaggerations or errors apparently could only have been somehow intentional:

*"I consider it to be quite impossible that these wrong figures could simply be 'careless,' since they are in such stark contrast to the precision and truth of other passages in the book." (Ibid.)*

But then, why would a "respectable academic" ever have taken recourse to such silly falsifications?

The proof in question is this: in Chapter XIX of his book, Nyiszli writes of "the four lightning rods placed at the corners of the crematorium chimney" – lightning rods which, Pressac notes, also appear in a drawing by David Olère (*ibid.*).<sup>402</sup> Pressac comments (*ibid.*).<sup>403</sup>

*"But both [men] commit a slight error.*

*Photograph PMO neg. no. 20995/507 shows the south side and west end of Krematorium III with, rising 2 metres above the chimney, four lightning conductors that are not 'at the four corners' but in the centre of each of the four sides of the chimney.<sup>[404]</sup> Scarcely visible at a distance of 100 metres – the distance at which the photograph was taken – they become totally invisible beyond 200 metres. Only prisoners working within the precincts of Krematorien II and III could see and remember them. This, admittedly minor, detail could not be dreamed up."*

This "proof" is rather naïve and demonstrates, if anything, the opposite of what Pressac supposes. The so-called *Hauptstrasse* or main road which led to the Birkenau sewage-treatment facility and *Zentralsauna* passed between the fences of Crematorium II and III just a few dozen meters from their respective

<sup>402</sup> Pressac here quotes from the 1961 English translation of Richard Seaver. The picture by Olère is reproduced by Pressac on p. 259.

<sup>403</sup> PMO neg. no. 20995/507 is reproduced on p. 342 of Pressac's book.

<sup>404</sup> The four lightning rods, in the same position, appear also in photograph PMO neg. no. 20995/506 from January 1943, which shows the southwest side of Crematorium II. The picture is reproduced twice on pp. 335 and 373 of Pressac's book, but the image resolution makes them difficult to see there. Curiously, the picture itself fails to show the presumed Zyklon-B-introduction chimneys on the roof of Morgue #1; these were, Pressac assures the reader in his notes to the image, "installed later."

chimneys. This can be clearly seen in a photograph showing a group of women and children on this road in front of Crematorium III which was published in *The Auschwitz Album*, the French edition of which was co-edited by Pressac himself (Freyer *et al.* 1983, Photo 153, p. 177). Anyone who passed along that road would have been able to see the position of the lightning rods on the chimneys distinctly. And of course, anyone who found themselves in one of the courtyards of the crematoria would have seen them still more distinctly.

Now the fact that Nyiszli, who pretended to have lived for six-and-a-half months in Crematorium II, nonetheless described an erroneous position for the lightning rods demonstrates, according to Pressac's logic, that he must have seen the chimneys of Crematoria II and III from such a distance that he could not clearly distinguish the position of their lightning rods – in other words, *not* from the crematorium courtyard!

The question actually is more complicated still, for in his book Nyiszli “sees” the lightning rods at the four corners of the chimney on two occasions, once from outside and once from inside the crematorium courtyard. In fact, of the two references to them in his book, the first occurs in the context of Nyiszli's arrival at Auschwitz, while he is still undergoing selection on the ramp:

*“Until the selection of the group, four thousand people strong, is completed, I have time to look around myself. In the light of the fading day, the landscape I saw from inside the wagon now leaps to life. Here there is much more to see. The first thing that draws my attention – rivets it, so to speak – is a gigantic square chimney, tapering toward the top and built of red bricks, which emerges from the top of a factory-like, two-story building, also built of red bricks. It's a strange shape for a factory chimney, but what is really impressive is the column of fire 8-10 meters high which gushes from its mouth **between the lightning rods at its four corners.**”* (MBV, Chapter I; emphasis added)

The second mention refers to the time of the alleged extermination of the Jews from Corfu, while Nyiszli was in the courtyard of Crematorium II:

*“My glance wanders over the crematorium chimney: the lightning rods placed **at the square chimney's four corners**, all heavy iron rods, have melted from the terrible fire and are now bent downwards.”* (MBV, Chapter XIX; emphasis added)

Thus, Pressac's argument – that “[o]nly prisoners working within the precincts of Krematorien II and III” could have observed the lightning rods, and thus that the detail of their existence “could not have been dreamed up” – appears entirely without foundation. If we are to accept Nyiszli's testimony here, we must admit that anyone could in fact have seen the lightning rods from outside the precincts of the crematoria – from the ramp, for example. Indeed, if anything, the fact that, while clearly knowing of their existence, Nyiszli nonethe-

less got their placement incorrect might even be taken to suggest that he never got a closer look.

Pressac often reasons, as here, on the basis of a simplistic schematization which allows for only two possibilities; in fact, there were always multiple possibilities. In the case at hand, for example, an *Arbeitskarte* (work card) for the electricians' unit ("*An die: Elektriker*") has been preserved from the Auschwitz Central Construction Office, dated October 17, 1942, with the heading "Lightning conductor for Crematorium n. 11 [sic] BW30 K.G.L. [*Kriegsgefangenenlager*; PoW Camp = Birkenau]," which orders "Preparation and mounting of a four-part lightning conductor on the chimney of Crematorium 1 [= II] in the K.G.L." The work was carried out between October 23 and 27 of the same year.<sup>405</sup> A similar *Arbeitskarte*, dated February 9, 1943, has been preserved for Crematorium III as well; in its case, the work was executed on June 21 and 22, 1943.<sup>406</sup> Obviously the installers would have known about the work they had done, and there's nothing in the documents to suggest that they were sworn to secrecy on the subject.

Strangely, if typically, Pressac dwells at length over this irrelevant detail but says nothing at all about the absurdity of Nyiszli's claim to have *seen* the lighting rods *melted* and bent toward the ground. If nothing else, one wonders why they would have melted on the night of the Corfu "extermination" but not on the day of Nyiszli's arrival, when he allegedly observed "[a] column of fire 8-10 meters high" gushing up from the chimney between them.

### 5.2.2 The Critique of Charles D. Provan

As I have noted in passing earlier, in 2001 *The Journal of Historical Review* published an important article by the late American researcher Charles Provan titled "New Light on Dr. Miklos Nyiszli and His Auschwitz Book."

By his own account, Provan began his study hoping to answer "[the] most radical of the revisionist questions [...] Did Dr. Nyiszli even exist?" Having seen, in an early edition of his book, an image of the cover page of Nyiszli's doctoral dissertation, *Selbstmordarten auf Grund des Sektionsmaterials des Breslauer Gerichtsärztlichen Instituts von Juni 1927-Mai 1930* (*Types of Suicide on the Basis of Autopsy Materials from the Breslau Forensic Medical Institute, June 1927 to May 1930*), Provan decided to obtain a copy of it and found confirmation there of some of the statements made by Nyiszli in his book. At the end of the dissertation, Nyiszli expressed his "heartfelt gratitude to Professor Dr. Reuter and Professor Dr. Strassmann." In his book, Provan noted, Nyiszli mentions "[a] Dr. Strasseman [sic]" and writes of having spent

<sup>405</sup> RGVA, 502-2-8, pp. 8-8a. Document reproduced in Mattogno 2015c, pp. 127f.

<sup>406</sup> RGVA, 502-1-315, pp. 22-22a.

three years "at the Boroslo [sic] Institute of Forensic Medicine" (Provan 2001, pp. 20-22).

In the interests of truth, one should note that Nyiszli actually does spell *Strassmann* correctly in his book; Provan's use of "sic" here is due to his reliance on the English translation by Richard Seaver, which renders the name incorrectly. "Boroslo" in turn is Seaver's attempt to naturalize "Boroszló," the Hungarian spelling for *Breslau* (today, in Polish: Wrocław). The relevant passages in Nyiszli's book are as follows:

*"Fifteen years earlier the Dean of Medicine of the Friedrich-Wilhelms-Universität in Breslau had shaken my hand and, wishing me good luck and a prosperous future, conferred upon me my doctor's diploma, cum laude."* (MBV, Chapter II)

*"Apart from myself, no one here knows that for three years, working directly from corpses, I studied every form of suicide as assistant to His Excellency Professor Dr. Strassmann at the Institute of Forensic Medicine in Breslau. What I knew then, present-day prisoner number A-8450, doctor of the K.Z., knows too."* (MBV, Chapter V)

The dissertation furnishes other biographical details about Nyiszli as well. He was born in Simleul-Silvaniei in Transylvania on June, 1901, and "attended elementary school for four years and the Humanistic Roman Catholic Episcopal Higher Gymnasium"<sup>407</sup> in that town (*ibid.*, p. 22). This latter course of schooling could not have been a common thing for a Jew at the time, and may help explain the fact, discussed earlier, that he undoubtedly was a very peculiar Jew, if the evidence of his book is to be believed.

Having discussed Nyiszli's dissertation and other biographical details, Provan next turns to an analysis and commentary on Nyiszli's deposition of July 28, 1945 (*ibid.*, pp. 22f.):

*"There are several unmistakable parallels between this document and Dr. Nyiszli's later book, but noticeable differences too. Among the parallels were his selection to perform autopsies by Dr. Mengele, his residence in crematorium I, and his unusual assertion that the victims of the gas chamber at crematorium I were executed with chlorine granules. 'The ganuales (sic) fell down and through contact with the air, a chlorine gas was produced which within five to ten minutes caused death through agonizing suffocation.' [...]*

*The differences between Nyiszli's deposition of 1945 and his subsequent book are marked, and in some cases irreconcilable. For example, Nyiszli states in his deposition that he arrived at Auschwitz on May 22, 1944, stayed one day, and then was transferred to a labor detail in the sub-camp Monowitz. After about two weeks (thus in June 1944), all doctors with experience in pathology were asked to report to the authorities. Nyiszli and one other doctor (evidently a Hungarian who had worked at Strasbourg University) did so, and were tak-*

<sup>407</sup> The word *Gymnasium* here is used in the German sense of "university prep high school."

en to crematorium 1 at Birkenau. After several hours Dr. Mengele appeared, and examined the two doctors. In Auschwitz,<sup>[408]</sup> Nyiszli never goes to Monowitz; is recruited as a pathologist by Dr. Mengele in May, not June, 1944; and his fellow pathologist has disappeared!

In his deposition, Nyiszli describes his and the other pathologist's duties as including taking the measurements of abnormal people, who were then shot by a German officer working for Mengele. The two doctors would then autopsy the victims, after which they would dissolve the bodies and ship the bones to a renowned anthropological institute in Berlin-Dahlem. On one night, according to Nyiszli, Mengele ordered the two pathologists to assist him with a group of fourteen Gypsy twins. Nyiszli, ordered by Mengele, undressed a fourteen-year-old girl, and placed her on the dissection table, whereupon Mengele gave her a shot to cause sleep, then killed her with a chloroform injection. She was then removed to another location. The remaining thirteen twins were one by one treated in the same manner. When all fourteen twins were dead, Mengele asked Nyiszli and his colleague how fast they could do the autopsies. They told him four a day, to which Mengele agreed. Interestingly, and disconcertingly, this story is omitted from *Auschwitz*. Dr. Lifton and I believe that it was left out due to Nyiszli's admitted involvement in the murders. In the absence of the threat of his own death, Nyiszli could be considered an accomplice.

Another oddity is this description of cleaning out the crematorium gas chamber: 'The special command rinsed off the corpses with a water hose and then began the transport of the corpses in an elevator up to the boiler room.' Note that here Nyiszli correctly lists crematorium 1 as having one elevator, not four, as in his book.

At the end of his 1945 deposition, Nyiszli mentioned that all personnel of the *Sonderkommando* were killed on November 17, 1944 – except for the doctors who worked for Mengele, and their assistants. They were ordered away from the machine guns by Dr. Mengele himself: he needed their further help for his racial biology work. In *Auschwitz*, however, Dr. Mengele saves Nyiszli and the others on the date of the Auschwitz camp revolt a month earlier, which goes unmentioned in his deposition."

As far as the story of the fourteen twins<sup>409</sup> is concerned, the hypothesis formulated by Lifton and accepted by Provan – that Nyiszli suppressed it in his book because it implicated him in Dr. Mengele's alleged murders – seems rather dubious.

It is difficult to see in Nyiszli's behavior in this story a kind of complicity in murder, especially since the *Sonderkommando* staff, according to the ortho-

<sup>408</sup> Here and elsewhere below Provan uses *Auschwitz* (italicized in his text, set in roman type in quotations here for contrast) as an abbreviation for the title of Nyiszli's book, *Auschwitz: A Doctor's Eyewitness Account* in Richard Seaver's 1960 English translation.

<sup>409</sup> The full text of the passage referred to by Provan can be found in the highlighted section in the translation of Nyiszli's deposition in Chapter 2.1. Lifton also cites the passage (uncritically) in his 1986 book *Nazi Doctors*, pp. 350f.

dox narrative, carried out a work of collaboration that was far more compromising, but no one has ever talked about complicity in mass murder in this regard. Of course, Nyiszli could not know back then what the world would make of the *Sonderkommando*'s actions, or of his actions, for that matter. But if Nyiszli had genuinely been concerned about appearing complicit in murder, he would hardly have included the story of the father and son from Litzmannstadt in Chapter XXXI, in which his actions surely must be considered every bit as compromising: He knowingly misled the pair so as to obtain "*in vivo*" observations prior to their murder.

It is strange, on the other hand, that Provan did not notice the blatant contradictions between the story in Nyiszli's 1946 deposition and the similar story of the *ten* twins in Chapter VIII of his book. In it, Nyiszli relates how, while performing an autopsy on "a pair of twins" as part of a group of "corpses of gypsy children under ten years of age" which Dr. Mengele had assigned to him, he observes something unusual:

*"In the outer wall of the left ventricle is a tiny, round, pale-red spot, caused by a pin prick, it barely stands out against the surrounding color. I can't be wrong! The pinprick could have been made by a very fine needle. Naturally a hypodermic needle! The child received an injection, but for what reason? Someone might receive an injection to the heart in the case of an emergency due to cardiac insufficiency perhaps. I soon figure it out. I open the heart, expose the left ventricle. In an autopsy, one would normally ladle out and weigh the blood in the left ventricle of the heart. That's not possible to do here, because the blood has coagulated into a hard, clotted mass. With tweezers I pull the blood clot apart, sniff it. The characteristic, powerful smell of chloroform hits my nostrils. The child received a chloroform injection to the heart! For no other purpose than that the blood in the left ventricle of the heart should coagulate due to the injected chloroform and, depositing against the heart valves, provoke immediate cardiac arrest.*

*My knees shake with excitement. I have discovered the Third Reich's darkest medical secret. So they kill people here not just with gas, but also with injections of chloroform administered to the heart! Sweat bathes my forehead. It is fortunate that I am alone. In front of others I would scarcely have been able to conceal my emotion. [...] If Dr. Mengele were to suspect that I know the secret of his injections, ten doctors of the political SS would be on hand to witness my death!" (MBV, Chapter VIII; emphasis added)*

Hence, that which, in Nyiszli's 1945 deposition, Dr. Mengele had openly done in his presence – injecting chloroform into the heart in order to kill subjects for autopsy – becomes, in Nyiszli's 1946 book, the discovery of a dark state secret on his part – a discovery which Mengele would ineluctably have punished by the killing of the discoverer!

In the book, Nyiszli thus reveals a simplistic psychology expressed with tawdry rhetoric: why would someone who had learned the supposed "terrible

secret” of the mass extermination of Jews in gas chambers and nonetheless been left to live have ever felt the need to worry about the discovery of a few more killings using chloroform injections to the heart – killings which, in the “economy” of the Holocaust, would have represented a drop in the ocean?

It's worth noting here that the substance used for lethal injections according to the orthodox Holocaust story was not chloroform but rather phenol. For example, in its statement of grounds for sentencing at the Frankfurt Auschwitz Trial on August 19-20, 1965, the court wrote (Rüter 1981, pp. 416):

*“Nearly every day in the HKB,<sup>[410]</sup> among inmates who reported sick and, after an examination by an inmate physician, were presented to the camp physician (so-called physician presenters<sup>[411]</sup>), those whom the camp physician deemed unfit for work were selected nearly every day. They were subsequently killed with phenol injections. The number of inmates killed in this way could not be ascertained. It was, in any event, several thousand.”*

Moreover, various order forms for phenol had been taken into evidence previously as “proofs” of this presumed homicidal practice.

The Auschwitz State Museum is in possession of a photo which depicts a request for 5 kg of phenol, sent by SS *Sanitätsdienstgrad* (orderly in the SS medical service) SS *Unterscharführer* Josef Klehr to the camp pharmacy (*Apotheke*). A syringe was placed on top of the request form, and then the photograph in question was taken. The caption explains that the two items together served to administer “lethal injections of phenol” (Długoborski/Piper 2000, Vol. II, p. 324)

The same document (without the syringe, of course) was sent by the Museum to the court in Frankfurt staging the Auschwitz Trial, where it was admitted into evidence as Exhibit No. 127.<sup>412</sup>

In 1966, Polish researcher Jerzy Frąckiewicz published a letter from the “*Häftlings-K-Bau Golleschau*”<sup>413</sup> dated February 26, 1943 and directed “to the pharmacy of Auschwitz CC, Upper Silesia” (“*an die Apotheke des K.L. Auschwitz O/S*”) in which, listed among various “materials for dressings and medicines,” a requested was made as well for “five liters of phenol” (*5 Liter Phenol*”; Frąckiewicz 1966, p. 72).

The “evidence” thus is clear: if prisoners were killed by lethal injection at Auschwitz, the injected poison was phenol. Yet Nyiszli knows nothing of this pretended use of the chemical for homicidal purposes, and never once mentions it.

<sup>410</sup> *Häftlingskrankenbau*, inmate infirmary.

<sup>411</sup> *Arztvorsteller*, that is, those presenting themselves to the physician for examination.

<sup>412</sup> Frankfurt Auschwitz Trial, attachment 6 to the protocol of the main proceedings of Jan. 28, 1965, Ref. 4 Ks 2/63, Main Acts, Vol. 107, Document No. 127.

<sup>413</sup> “Golleschau Prisoners’ Hospital.” Golleschau (Polish Goleśzów) was a sub-camp of Auschwitz located in the town of the same name some fifty kilometers away near the Czech border.



Provan was so struck by the gross errors contained in Nyiszli's book that he even suspected that Nyiszli might not be its author. In particular, he was troubled by the fact that this "witness" spoke of four elevators in Crematorium II (Nyiszli's "Crematorium I") when, as is well known, there was only ever one:

*"Now, if Nyiszli had actually lived in crematorium 1 at Birkenau, as he claims, he would have to have known that there was only one elevator."*

Initially Provan thought the problem might be due to a simple error of transcription. The Hungarian text of the passage in question says "*Négy nagy teherfelvonógép*" (four large [freight] elevators), where *négy* means "four" and *nagy* means "large"; perhaps, Provan reasoned, Nyiszli had intended "*Nagy nagy teherfelvonógép*" (large, large elevator), but "his transcriber wrote the similar sounding (in Hungarian), but mistaken, 'four large elevators'" instead (2001, p. 22). However, after corresponding with a personal friend of Nyiszli's who claimed to have seen him directly working on the book (that is, without a "transcriber"), Provan later abandoned this hypothesis (*ibid.*).<sup>414</sup> Curiously, however, he failed to draw the obvious conclusion that if Nyiszli *knew* in 1945 that Crematorium II had only one elevator, then he must have intentionally *lied* about that fact in 1946, perhaps in order to make more credible his claims regarding the transport of 3,000 corpses from the crematorium's sub-basement to the cremation hall on the ground floor in a single day.

In the course of his research, Provan found yet another confirmation of Nyiszli's authorship, namely, evidence of Nyiszli's stay in America in 1939-1940, of which this passing reference appears in the book:

*"My boss, it seems, is pleased. He has a little difficulty reading my block-capital handwriting. I became accustomed to writing this way in America!"* (MBV, Chapter VIII)

Through the National Archives in Washington, Provan was able to locate Nyiszli's information on the passenger list of a ship which arrived in New York city on December 1, 1939, thus confirming this detail (*ibid.*, p. 23).

Provan also sought to find confirmation of Nyiszli's activities at Birkenau in the testimony of other witnesses, and here things become more complicated.

He turns first to ex-*Sonderkommando* man Filip Müller who in 1980 wrote in response to questions from the late Australian revisionist John Bennett:

<sup>414</sup> A stronger argument against Provan's "large, large" hypothesis is easily found in the Hungarian text itself. Due to a quirk of grammar, nouns are not marked for plurality after a number word in Hungarian, such that the noun *teherfelvonógép* remains unchanged whether the phrase is "*nagy teherfelvonógép*" (large elevator, singular) or "*négy teherfelvonógép*" (four elevators, plural). However, Hungarian does mark plurals in other contexts, and one need only look at the next sentence of Nyiszli's text to confirm that he does indeed intend a plural here: "They pile the dead on to these [*ezekre*, plural], twenty, twenty-five to an elevator" (MBV, VII, emphasis added). Nyiszli thus is explicit that there are multiple elevators in the building.

*"I got to know Dr. Nyszli [sic] very well in early summer 1944. He had to work in the Sonderkommando with his colleagues, Prof. Görög and others, as a pathologist for Dr. Mengele. He was an outstanding and optimistic man ... I never saw Dr. Nyszli again after the war. He is supposed to have died in 1949–1950."* (Provan 2001, p. 24)

Here arises, however, the non-trivial problem – unacknowledged by Provan – that in his book of memoirs, published the year before, Müller not only never mentions Nyiszli, but explicitly asserts that there were only two physicians for the *Sonderkommando*, Dr. Pach and Dr. Bendel.

Müller introduces the former with the explanation that he was in charge of a sort of infirmary for patients from the *Sonderkommando* in Block 13 of Camp Sector BIId (Müller 1979a, p. 100):

*"In charge of this hospital was Dr Jacques Pach, at that time the only doctor in the Sonderkommando. A very sensitive and intelligent man of about thirty-five, Dr Pach had come to Birkenau with a transport from France. His parents, as he told me, had emigrated to France from Poland. [...] It was in the spring of 1943 that Jacques Pach was appointed as doctor in the Sonderkommando."*

Müller devotes the next few pages to a description of Dr. Pach's activities, then returns to him later in the book with this additional detail (*ibid.*, p. 238):

*"Once Dr Pach's ward for in-patients had been set up, the treatment of Sonderkommando out-patients was taken over by Dr Bendel."*

According to Müller's account (*ibid.*), this in-patient ward was a new facility set up in the inmate infirmary in Camp Sector BIIf after the lodgings for the *Sonderkommando* were moved from BIId to the crematorium buildings in late June 1944 – hence after Nyiszli, by his own account, had become the sole doctor of the *Sonderkommando* in May 1944. Needless to say, Nyiszli knows nothing of this change of lodgings; for him, the *Sonderkommando* had always lived in the crematoria.

A "Pach Jean" (not *Jacques*) appears on the list of deportees on transport number 8 from Angers, France, which departed on July 20, 1942, and arrived at the camp the next day.<sup>415</sup> He was born June 15, 1908 in Bucharest, and thus it is probable that his family relocated to France from Romania rather than from Poland.

A Dr. Pach having duties in the camp hospital in BIIf is entirely unknown in the documentary record. The assertion that a Dr. Pach was part of the *Sonderkommando* was made, for the first time perhaps, by Henryk Tauber in his statement of May 25, 1945, but exclusively in reference to Block XI at the Auschwitz Main Camp, where the *Sonderkommando* was originally lodged before being relocated to Birkenau (Piper 2000, pp. 249f.):

<sup>415</sup> Klarsfeld 1978, Liste alphabetique du convoi N° 8.

*"Our physician was Pach, a French Jew. He was a talented specialist who treated SS men and, through their good graces, managed to be transferred out of the Sonderkommando quarters to another block. When the Politische Abteilung [Political Department = Gestapo] found out about this, he was reassigned to work in our infirmary despite having spent several months in a free block."*

Tauber thus did not claim that Pach was doctor for the *Sonderkommando* in the crematoria in 1944, as maintained by Müller.

In her sworn statement of June 23, 1947, however, Hungarian deportee Olga Lengyel, who arrived in Birkenau in 1944, declared:

*"At Birkenau, an inmate, Dr. Pasche [sic] of France, whom I met while working in the infirmary, told me that he worked in the gas chamber, and that he noticed that poison gas used on victims was labeled 'Cyclone B' gas which came from 'Dessau' and 'Tabun' gas (I am not sure of the spelling) which to the best of my recollection, came from 'Dyhernfurt.' Whether these plants where Cyclone B and Tabun gas were manufactured were Farben plants, I do not know. Many people in the underground told me that important people came from all over Germany to watch the time which was required to put these people to death by various gasses used."* (NI-11932, pp. 6f.)

This Dr. *Pasche* thus was part of the *Sonderkommando* in 1944, and observed the use in the crematoria of *Tabun*, a nerve gas which at that time was still one of Germany's "secret weapons." Needless to say, this latter claim forms no part of the orthodox Holocaust narrative today; curiously, it is also wholly unknown to Nyiszli, who surely would have added it to his cumulative list of "types of death" at Auschwitz had he been aware of it. Of course, as we have noted earlier, Nyiszli also appears to have been wholly unaware of the presence, in the same buildings with him, performing the same duties, of Dr. Pach himself!

Returning to Provan's study of Nyiszli, we are helpfully reminded that "Müller also testified about Dr. Nyiszli during the 1964 Frankfurt 'Auschwitz Trial'" (Provan 2001, p. 24). Indeed, on that occasion Müller declared (Fritz Bauer..., pp. 20,696-20,699; cf. Langbein 1965, Vol. I, p. 87):

*"In 1944, during the Hungarian transports, there were two Hungarian physicians in Crematorium I in a room, pathologists. One of them, if I remember correctly, was called Dr. Nyiszli, a sturdy man. They had to conduct experiments. And they were often seen also by Dr. Mengele. [...] I once saw personally that they put a person who was hunchbacked in a barrel. They put in various salts or acids in order to obtain his skeleton. [...] And that they took flesh from people who had been shot there. They had taken it from the thighs and put it into a large bucket."*

At the time of his deposition at the Auschwitz Garrison Trial (Krakow, November 25 to December 16, 1947), however, Müller knew nothing of Nyiszli. He declared then:<sup>416</sup>

*"In the Auschwitz camp, I also saw that the flesh of the non-Jewish detainees who were shot was used for various purposes. They were often shot in the presence of Mengele and others, whose names I do not know, and with Aumeier and Grabner present as well. Right away, the flesh of their calves would be put into boxes, and in this way they put aside 6 to 8 boxes of flesh each week. It sometimes happened that a German delegation arrived with the swastika on the arm, asking in the presence of Aumeier and Grabner whether there was any human flesh. Aumeier used to say: 'We could also use horse meat, but that would be a waste!'"*

He knew nothing of Nyiszli even in 1957 when he wrote a witness account which first appeared in Czech in a book published in Prague, later translated into German (Kraus/Kulka 1957, pp. 160-164, here p. 163; 1958, p. 133):

*"I did not accept this assignment, and as punishment I was transferred to Crematorium IV [V]. [...] There I was also witness to the the 'scientific experiments' of the SS doctors Fischer, Klein and Mengele. They selected from the transports 100-150 men and women aged 18 to 30 years who were not gassed, but shot. Immediately after the shootings, they cut the flesh off their thighs and sent it to the Rajsko Bacteriological Institute, for the cultivation of bacteria. An SS who was a doctor's assistant told me this, and added that horse flesh could also be used for this purpose, but that that would be a shame."*

Note that Müller locates these fables in Crematorium V (not Crematorium II!), and that he is ignorant of Mengele's alleged experimentation on twins as well as his supposed injections to his victims' hearts with chloroform. He is ignorant, thus, not only of Nyiszli himself, but also of the crimes Nyiszli claimed to have witnessed – crimes which Müller, as a member of the *Sonderkommando*, surely would have known about.

How then does one explain his mention of Nyiszli at the Frankfurt Auschwitz Trial? The answer is simple: just three years prior to his testimony during the 97th session of the court (October 5, 1964), the Munich weekly *Quick* published a German translation of Nyiszli's book in nine installments (Nyiszli 1961b). Müller clearly read it, for he would plagiarize it shamelessly in his own book *Sonderbehandlung: Drei Jahre in den Krematorien und Gaskammern von Auschwitz* in 1979, as I documented a few years later (Mattogno 1986). Unlike in his testimony in 1964, however, Müller never mentions Nyiszli in his book, presumably to prevent curious readers from discovering his plagiarism.

<sup>416</sup> APMO, *Proces zalogi* (Trial of the Auschwitz camp garrison), Vol. VII, p. 4.

As a final confirmation of Nyiszli's presence at Auschwitz, Provan calls upon another self-proclaimed member of the *Sonderkommando*, Milton Buki, who allegedly once mentioned a "Dr. Niczly [*sic*]" as among the doctors who performed dissections for Mengele, but apart from noting that it was supplied to him "by a very helpful associate of Dr. Lifton," Provan indicates neither the source nor the date of this declaration (2001, p. 25). In any event, the fact is that in his first known testimony, that of January 4 and 6, 1946 at the Auschwitz Garrison Trial,<sup>417</sup> Buki never once mentioned Nyiszli.

Finally, Provan appeals to the testimony of a certain "Mrs. Jozsef Szabo, a Hungarian deported to Auschwitz," who claimed to have once carried a body to one of the crematoria together with three companions, one of whom then recognized "Dr. Nyiszlit Miklos [*sic*] ...from Nagyvara" (2001, p. 25). However, Provan once again reports neither a source (apart from Dr. Lifton's "helpful associate") nor a date for this statement; it thus is unclear, for example, whether it postdates the publication of Nyiszli's story in the Hungarian press.

To all this one might add that Nyiszli is not mentioned even in the manuscripts written by various *Sonderkommando* members which are alleged to have been recovered near the ruins of the crematoria. The problem of "confirmation" thus is much more complicated than the simplistic methods adopted by Provan would imply.

A similar kind of simplistic thinking dogs Provan's efforts to make sense of the contradictions of the Nyiszli problem as a whole. In a section headed "First Appearance of Nyiszli's Auschwitz Book," Provan commits a gross blunder in this regard, writing that he had located "the long-sought original edition of Nyiszli's book," namely, its publication in installments in the newspaper *Világ* (*Világ*) from February 16 to April 5, 1947, and announcing triumphantly: "Its title was: 'I Was Mengele's Autopsy Doctor in Auschwitz: A Hungarian Doctor's Diary from Hell'" (*ibid.*). Provan failed to realize that Nyiszli's book had already been published in 1946 under essentially the same (main) title. As we shall see, this serious oversight would soon lead him to make an even more serious error.

On the basis of the *Világ* text, Provan explains, he hoped to verify whether or not the original book did indeed contain the errors pointed out by various revisionists in the translations available up to that time. Predictably, he finds confirmation in it of Nyiszli's "errors" regarding 20,000 cremations per day, the construction of the crematoria in 1940, the maximum population at Auschwitz of 500,000 prisoners, the four elevators in Crematorium II, and the 200-meter length of the "undressing room" and the "gas chamber" of that same building (*ibid.*, pp. 26f.).

---

<sup>417</sup> Jan. 4: APMO, *Proces zalogi*, Vol. 45a, p. 64; Jan. 6: *ibid.*, p. 79.

Provan then seeks to explain all these “errors” with an even greater blunder of his own. After examining various references to Nyiszli in *Világ* during and immediately after the book’s serialization, he writes (*ibid.*, p. 27):

*“The next mention of Nyiszli in Vilag, so far as I have been able to ascertain, came on September 30, 1947, when an article reported on his summons to Nuremberg for the trial of IG Farben (case number six before the Nuremberg Military Tribunal). I regard this article as critical to understanding the true nature of Dr. Nyiszli’s book on Auschwitz: it provides a solution which makes sense of all the incorrect information contained therein, and allows Nyiszli’s other statements to be examined and assessed independently of his book.”*

Provan then proceeds to quote the article in question at some length. The key passage for his argument, however, comes in its first paragraph (*ibid.*, pp. 28):

*“Following its serial publication by Vilag, Dr. Miklos Nyiszli’s Auschwitz diary has gone all over the world. The extremely interesting novel (again, ‘regény’ in Hungarian) of experience entitled, ‘I Was Mengele’s Autopsy Doctor’ has been one of the most enduring documents of the German horror.”*

After a short digression dealing with issues concerning Nyiszli’s “summons” to Nuremberg which were raised by the rest of the article, Provan then returns to this paragraph with emphasis (*ibid.*, p. 29):

*“When I read in the September 30, 1947, Vilag article that Miklos Nyiszli’s book on his experiences at Auschwitz was a novel, it was as if a blindfold had fallen from my eyes. I had never considered this possibility before, but it certainly made sense on reading the article. It not only explained the inflated figures, the factual errors, and the singular account of the Sonderkommandos (thirteen in all!); it also removed all difficulties of ‘explaining away the details.’ Auschwitz is a novel. If a character in a novel meets a real personage, there is no historical issue to resolve. Dr. Nyiszli’s 1945 deposition and his 1947 affidavit disagree with the book on many details because they are recording what he actually thought was the truth, while the book was deliberately crafted as a historical novel.”*

A truly amazing interpretation, whether for its naiveté or its incoherence!

First of all, the article from *Világ* quoted by Provan does indeed present Nyiszli’s book as an “*élményregény*” (“novel of experience,” or more literally, “experience-novel”), but it does not follow from this that the writer assumed that the account it contains is fictional, let alone that Nyiszli somehow was acknowledging as much through the agency of this unknown reporter. The larger context itself makes this clear: what sense would it have made for the writer to define Nyiszli’s book as “one of the most enduring documents of the German horror” if he or she believed it was a simple (i.e., *fictional*) novel?

That Nyiszli himself insisted on the truth of his account is clear from his “Declaration” at the beginning of the book itself:

*"I, the undersigned Nyiszli Miklós, M.D., ex-prisoner of the K.Z., bearer of tattoo number A-8450, hereby declare that in the work now published, the creation of my own hand, a work which contains within it the darkest pages in the history of humanity, free from all emotion and in strict conformity with the truth, and without the slightest exaggeration or embellishment, I write as the direct spectator of, and participant in, the activity of the crematoria and cremation pyres of Auschwitz, into whose flames vanished millions of fathers, mothers and children."*

Perhaps Provan has forgotten here that he quoted this declaration himself (in Seaver's translation) just a few pages earlier: "[...] in accord with reality, avoiding the smallest exaggeration and embellishment [...]" (*ibid.*, p. 26).

Provan certainly also neglects the certainly not-irrelevant fact that the definition of the book as an *élményregény* comes not from Nyiszli but from the *Világ* reporter, and that two other articles which appeared in *Világ* on February 14 and 15, 1947 announcing the book's serial publication, explicitly declared that it was *not* a novel ("Not a novel!" [Hungarian: "*Nem regény!*"]; "Dr. Miklos Nyiszli [...] did not write a novel" [Hungarian: "*nem regényt*"]) – a fact pointed out by Provan himself! (*ibid.*)

As far as Nyiszli was concerned, his book was indeed "what he actually thought was the truth," as is clear from what he has the prosecutor Minskoff say during his imaginary deposition at the I.G. Farben Trial – namely, that the book had been examined by "Our experts" and found to be truthful, and thus accepted as "documentary material" (see Section 2.2.1.). It is evident, thus, that Nyiszli himself presented his book as an important historical document, not a novel, and that he expected others to accept it as such – even if the scene in which this confirmation was (allegedly) given itself is an invention!

Finally, as we have seen above, Nyiszli firmly defended his book against Rassiner's criticisms – which certainly were not of a literary character – affirming explicitly (see Section 2.3.2.):

*"However, I know for sure that anyone can check my writings both in their medical and technical aspects. There can be found only an image of incorruptible fidelity of the events without any exaggeration and without any passion, as I have stated it, by the way, in my statement signed with my own hand."*

Provan's "novel" interpretation thus appears little more than a banal subterfuge in order to obviate, at a stroke, the many grave historiographical and technical problems with which Nyiszli's book abounds.

Another grave oversight on Provan's part is that he limited his search for references to Nyiszli in *Világ* to 1947 and thus, shockingly, knew nothing of the series of twenty-seven articles by Nyiszli himself which appeared in the paper between April 18 and May 22, 1948 under the title *Tanú voltam Nürnberg*

bergben (I was a witness at Nuremberg). Indeed, he concludes his discussion of Nyiszli's involvement in the I.G. Farben trial as follows:

*"Although Dr. Nyiszli was summoned to Nuremberg to testify in the I.G. Farben Trial, he was not called to the stand. To explain this, Provan posits that Nyiszli, having been at Monowitz for only about two weeks, could provide little in the way of useful evidence. At some point in the trial, he was allowed to return home to Romania." (Provan 2001, p. 29)*

Because he knows nothing of the fake "testimony" which Nyiszli later published in *Világ* – in which Nyiszli recounts, in detail, his "experiences" on the stand at the trial – Provan fails to comprehend the full significance of these facts, and thus fails to draw the inevitable conclusion that Nyiszli was a fraud of unequalled impudence – or alternatively a psychopath who delivered his "testimony" in a state of hallucination.

Hence, Nyiszli was either an extraordinary impostor or a lunatic; there is no escaping from the dilemma. And both horns of this dilemma – shameless mendacity or lunacy – disqualify Nyiszli and completely destroy his credibility.

Provan concludes his study with the following observations (*ibid.*):

*"Within a few years of Világ's admission that the book was a novel, it was translated into French and German, and English, and wrongly declared to be an authentic history. This untruth aroused a storm of criticism, starting with the founder of Holocaust revisionism, Paul Rassinier, who himself had been a prisoner of the German concentration camp system for helping Jews under Nazi domination. While Rassinier's questions were justifiable on many points, they are moot, because Dr. Nyiszli's published treatment of Auschwitz was knowingly written as historical fiction, which accounts for its disconcerting mixture of truth and non-truth.*

*Thus the revisionists, although sometimes off course, were correct all along in concluding that there were serious problems with Auschwitz. For example Carlo Mattogno's critique, Medico ad Auschwitz: Anatomia di un falso, is a wonderful treatment, exhaustive and extremely thorough. Meanwhile, the defenders, translators, and publishers of the Nyiszli book have dealt with the revisionists' criticisms with silence, or by deliberately changing sections of Nyiszli's novel without advertising that. What is needed now is an annotated edition of the original book, along with a complete collection of Dr. Nyiszli's writings and testimony on Auschwitz, to clear the air on this long-standing problem."*

Given that, according to Nyiszli's own repeated declarations, his 1946 book was not a novel but rather a historical account written "in strict conformity with the truth, and without the slightest exaggeration or embellishment," Provan's risible attempt to explain it away as a conscious fiction dissolves



completely, and all the many problems which it raises, recognized (if only in minimal part) by Provan himself, remain intact.

The annotated edition and collection which Provan called for has now finally arrived, but its effect is to have “cleared the field” of a false testimony which has been taken seriously for much too long.

## Appendix



## Dr. Mengele's "Medical Experiments" on Twins in the Birkenau Gypsy Camp

In 1997, Helena Kubica, researcher at the Auschwitz Museum, published a long German article titled "Dr. Mengele and His Crimes in the Auschwitz-Birkenau Concentration Camp" (*"Dr. Mengele und seine Verbrechen im Konzentrationslager Auschwitz-Birkenau"*).<sup>418</sup> The author sifted through numerous documents on Dr. Mengele's activities at Birkenau preserved in the archives of the Museum in search of documentary proof of his presumed criminal medical experiments on twins. The situation is as follows.

Dr. Josef Mengele entered service at Auschwitz on May 30, 1943. His direct superior, SS Garrison Physician (*SS-Standortarzt*) Dr. Eduard Wirths, appointed him Camp Doctor (*Lagerarzt*) at the so-called Gypsy Family Camp (*Zigeunerfamilienlager*), located in Sector BIIe of the Birkenau Camp (p. 376).

Mengele was particularly interested in the study of twins, especially identical twins, organizing a daycare center solely for this purpose (p. 381):

*"In the gypsy camp, he caused Barracks 29 and 31 and a nursery – a sort of daycare center and pre-school – to house not only the children under his observation (these lived in Barracks 31), but all gypsy children up to 6 years of age.*

*A total of several hundred children were housed in the nursery school from 8 to 14 years of age, where they were supervised by many prisoners. [...] The barracks used as a nursery school were in slightly better condition than the others, entirely plastered on the inside, decorated with colored images representing fairy tales. For a short time, the children who lived there received a better diet – milk, butter, white bread, vegetables and meat broth concentrates, even marmalade and chocolate [...].*

*The area behind Barracks 31 was enclosed and a playground was installed, with sandboxes, carousel, swings and gymnastic equipment."*

Naturally, for Kubica, all this was intended solely for "propaganda purposes" (*ibid.*). We need only inquire, however, for whom this alleged propaganda was intended, since not even the delegate from the Red Cross who visited Auschwitz in September 1944 was permitted to visit the Birkenau Camp (Comité international... 1946, pp. 91f.).

And how about the diet, incredibly rich for a concentration camp – as confirmed by former inmate Anna Lipka (p. 389) – was this also solely intended for "propaganda purposes"?

---

Translated by Carlos W. Porter. An earlier version of this article appeared as Mattogno 2008.

<sup>418</sup> Kubica 1997; all subsequent page numbers from there, unless stated otherwise.

This scene is not easy to reconcile with the unprecedented crimes attributed to Dr. Mengele, but Kubica has decisive "proof" to hand.

An epidemic of *noma faciei*, a gangrenous illness affecting mostly children, broke out in the *Zigeunerlager* in the summer of 1943. The patients were transferred on Dr. Mengele's order to an isolated barracks in the hospital of the Gypsy Camp and, we are assured by Kubica,

*"many of the sick children were killed, always by order of Dr. Mengele, and their bodies were taken to the institute of hygiene of the Waffen-SS at Rajsko for histopathological research. There, preparations of the individual organs were prepared and preserved in glass, even including the entire head of a child, among others, for the SS academy of medicine in Graz."* (p. 379)

We learn from the pertinent footnote that the entire story is based exclusively on post-war testimonies. In this context, the author mentions a single document that she reproduces on p. 394, here reproduced in Illustration 3. The document is a bill of lading to the Institute of Hygiene of the Waffen-SS (*SS-Hygiene-Institut*) of Rajsko, Hygiene and Bacteriology Section, relating to the "head of a corpse" ("*Kopf einer Leiche*") taken from a "12-year old child" ("*12-jähriges Kind*"). Nothing is known of the child's cause of death; the only thing that is certain is that the request for histological examination originated from the *H-Krankenbau Zigeunerlager Auschwitz II, BIIe*, that is, the prisoner hospital of the Gypsy Camp. The explanation advanced by Kubica is clearly specious. *Noma faciei* (or *cancrem oris*) is a disease which destroys the orofacial tissues. It currently strikes chiefly sub-Saharan African children between the ages of 2 and 16; in the absence of adequate treatment, the mortality rate ranges between 70 and 90% (see Enwonwu *et al.* 1999). One may therefore reasonably suppose that, at Birkenau during the years 1943-1944, the mortality rate of young gypsy children stricken with *noma* was even higher. In 1943, 2,587 children below the age of 10 died in the Gypsy Camp,<sup>419</sup> including practically all those suffering from *noma*.

But then, why would it have been necessary to kill children who were almost certainly dying of disease anyway?

The obvious response to this rhetorical question is supplied by Kubica herself by citing the testimony of Dr. Jan Čespiva, who had worked as a physician in the Gypsy Camp's infirmary (p. 379):

*"There was an outbreak of noma. Entire pieces of flesh fell off due to this; the lower jaw was affected as well. I had never seen gangrene of the face like that. The crania of the children were prepared for the SS Academy at Graz. I know this because we wrote the address. The heads were preserved in benzene formaldehyde, the bodies [were cremated] in Crematorium III."*

<sup>419</sup> Thomas Grotus, Jan Parcer, "EDV-gestützte Auswertung der Sterbeeinträge," in: *Staatliches Museum...* 1995, p. 248.

29. JUN. 1944

Hyg.-bakt. Unters.-Stelle  
der Waffen-SS, Südost

Auschwitz OS., am 29. Juni 1944.

Anlegend wird übersandt: *46574/VIII/150*  
(12-jähriges Kind)

Material: **Kopf einer Leiche** entnommen am

zu untersuchen auf **Histologische Schnitte**

Name, Vorname:

Dienstgrad, Einheit: **siehe Anlage**

Klinische Diagnose:

Anschrift der einsendenden Dienststelle: **H.-Krankenbau  
Zigeunerlager Auschwitz II, B II e**

Bemerkungen: **Der 1. Lagerarzt  
K.L. Auschwitz II**  
*Mengele*  
**SS-Hauptsturmführer.**  
(Stempel, Unterschrift)

**Illustration 3:** A bill of lading to the Institute of Hygiene of the Waffen-SS (SS-Hygiene-Institut) of Rajsko, Hygiene and Bacteriology Section, relating to the "head of a corpse" taken from a "12-year old child."

It is therefore obvious that the child in question died of *noma*, and that the German physicians hoped to find a cure by studying the heads of children who had died of this disease.

This request for histological examination is the only documentary "proof" of Dr. Mengele's "crimes" to be found in the archive of the Auschwitz Museum! Not much for the so-called "Angel of Death" of Auschwitz, and Kubica, apparently aware of this, as a last resort quotes the "eyewitness" Miklós Nyiszli, who becomes thus equally crucial to her.

After creating the school already mentioned above, Dr. Mengele created an "experimental laboratory," which became the center where the "camp research in the field of twin births and congenital anomalies" was performed (p. 380) – hence, the ogre's lair. As head of this center Dr. Mengele appointed Dr. Bertold Epstein from Prague. His assistant was another Czech physician, Dr. Rudolf Weisskopf (Vitek; p. 379). Two camp inmates also worked in Dr. Mengele's laboratory: a Polish anthropology Ph.D., Martyna Puzina (p. 390), and the Czech painter Dinah Gottliebová, who produced drawings of the parts of the body of the children under examination (p. 396).

The activities of this "experimental laboratory" are well documented (p. 397):

*"The archives of the Auschwitz-Birkenau Museum contain numerous documents signed by Dr. Mengele, such as requests for analysis by the Institute of Hygiene."*

Yet no document attests to Dr. Mengele's presumed crimes. This is not at all surprising, considering the activities performed in his laboratory (p. 390):

*"As shown by reports of inmates who performed tasks in the twins' block, as well as reports from the twins themselves, the individual pairs of twins were subjected by Dr. Mengele to research of any kind, which constituted the starting point for the performance of the most varied types of experiments on the same. In general, they were subjected to anthropometric, morphological, psychiatric and radiological research. The anthropological research was initially performed in Dr. Mengele's laboratory in the sauna of the Gypsy Camp. In November 1944, this laboratory was transferred to Barracks 15, in the area of the men's hospital sector (BIIf). Every individual part of the body of the persons subjected to examination was measured in the most accurate manner: the twins were measured in pairs, comparing the results. The documentation contained annotations of the shape of the mouth, the nose, the muscles of the ears, the color of the eyes and skin of the individual parts of the body."*

There was no criminal activity, therefore, and it is easy to see what M. Puzyna and D. Gottliebová's tasks consisted of: anthropometrical studies and anatomical drawings.

Kubica adds (p. 403):

*"All the documentation, that is, photographs, drawings, descriptions and analytical results, were preserved in individual folders for every person examined,"*

and she published a few of these documents. Notwithstanding this abundant documentation, Kubica notes (p. 382):

*"Nevertheless, unfortunately, it has not been possible to find any document showing how many gypsy twins passed through Dr. Mengele's laboratory."*

But a few pages later, the Polish researcher states (p. 387):

*"The Archives of the State Museum of Auschwitz-Birkenau also contain a document which contains personal data and copies of anthropological studies on 295 inmates – Greek, Hungarian, Dutch, French and Italian Jews – upon whom Mengele performed experiments. This list also contains the names of 117 Hungarian Jewish pairs of twins in the women's sector of the camp. As for male twins from Barracks 15 of Camp BIIf, we know from the report on one pair of twins that there were 107 of them, aged from age 4 to 60."*

Thus, the total number of documented twins available to Dr. Mengele amounted to between 402 and 412. What happened to them?

A series of daily reports, not mentioned by Kubica, although they can be found precisely in the Auschwitz Museum's archives, the *Arbeitseinsatz* (la-

bor deployment) reports of the men's camp at Birkenau,<sup>420</sup> contain the heading "twins for experimental purposes" (*"Zwillinge für Versuchszwecke"*) starting from July 28 up to October 3, 1944 (the reports are complete only for the month of August). In the 35 reports which are preserved, the number of these inmates never varies: it always is 49. This absence of variation over a period of more than three months allows us to rule out any continual replacement of "guinea pigs", and is fully compatible with the "anthropometric, morphological, psychiatric and radiological examinations" mentioned earlier.

Kubica, by contrast, claims that the fate of these twins was quite a different one (p. 404):

*"The last stop in the search for several pairs of twins or individual persons was the analysis of the individual organs of the body during the autopsy. To this end, these persons were killed at Dr. Mengele's order or by Dr. Mengele himself, by an injection of phenol into the heart. The bodies were taken to the dissecting room."*

At this point, the Polish researcher unveils her "crucial witness": none other than Miklós Nyiszli! The entire story about Dr. Mengele's "crimes" originates from the ravings of this mythomaniac.

Notwithstanding the absurd lies he told, Nyiszli is nonetheless held in high esteem by orthodox historiography, but, in a sort of veiled schizophrenia, only as regards his accusations against Dr. Mengele. And in fact, his testimony constitutes the "demonstrative" framework for the accusations of every book on the subject, starting with the book by Posner/Ware on Dr. Mengele (1986), one of the most important, which is also mentioned by Kubica. The two authors cite Nyiszli on their pages 19, 20, 26, 33, 34, 38, 39, 40, 41, 53 and 152. In fact, the entire chapter on the "crimes" of Dr. Mengele at Auschwitz is built upon Nyiszli's "testimony"! Even Robert Jay Lifton mentions him repeatedly.<sup>421</sup> Kubica cites him just as often. She even reproduces his photograph (p. 385) and cites him several times (pp. 378, 384, 404, 405, 408).

That Mengele's research did not involve the killing of twins was confirmed by Ernst Spiegel, who was deported to Auschwitz from Hungary in April 1944



**Illustration 4:** Josef Mengele (1911-1979), German physician and SS Hauptsturmführer. Photo taken by a police photographer in 1956 in Buenos Aires for Mengele's Argentine identification document

<sup>420</sup> APMO, D-AuI-3/1; D-AuII-3a/16; D-AuII-3a/25-49.

<sup>421</sup> Lifton 1986, pp. 257, 350-351, 358-364, 366-368, 370, 378, 458; notes: pp. 522f., 527-529, 533.



with his twin sister, and was assigned to the Twin Block precisely in this capacity, where he had to supervise about 80 children:<sup>422</sup>

*"I had to see to it, that they were brought to 'His Majesty Mengele.' They performed experiments on us."*

In this regard he specified:

*„The experiments were carried out in the Gypsy Camp or rather the Gypsy Block. I was present as an interpreter. I know nothing about twins having been shot and dissected during that time. I know nothing about that."*

Dr. Mengele's "crimes" are not only not attested to by one single document, they are even overtly refuted by absolutely indisputable facts. In his description of the first autopsy allegedly performed by him on a pair of twins, Nyiszli wrote:

*"My knees shake with excitement. I have discovered the Third Reich's darkest medical secret. So they kill people here not just with gas, but also with injections of chloroform administered to the heart!"* (MBV, Chapter VIII)

If this had been true, Dr. Mengele would have proceeded to liquidate all the witnesses of his alleged criminal activity – his collaborators who also worked with twins – before leaving Auschwitz on 17 January 1945. He certainly had enough time to do it! But he allowed *all* the "eyewitnesses" of his alleged crimes to survive, to wit:

- Dr. Bertold Epstein, one of the signers of the famous appeal by former Auschwitz inmates dated 4 March 1945;<sup>423</sup>
- Dr. Rudolf Weisskopf, liberated from Bergen-Belsen (Kárný 1995, Vol. I, p. 333);
- Martyna Puzyna, interviewed by Posner and Ware in June 1985 (Posner/Ware, p. 329);
- Dinah Gottliebóvá, who moved to the USA in 1947, where she lived until July 29, 2009;<sup>424</sup>
- Miklós Nyiszli, the purported crucial "witness", who, in his capacity as the physician of the so-called "*Sonderkommando*" at the crematoria, at the same time also would have been a keeper of the "terrible secret" of the mass gassings, as we have seen in the present study, was also quietly left alive!

But what about the twins? What happened to the victims of Dr. Mengele's experiments? Were they all killed *en masse*? Quite the contrary!

<sup>422</sup> YVA, P.25-19. As a side note, according to an interview allegedly granted to Hubert Lassier and published by the weekly *Oggi*, Mengele reportedly said: "I never executed any twins specifically to be able to do experiments." (Lassier 1983). The contents of many declarations by, or attributed to, Mengele are, however, clearly false, so that this source is without doubt spurious.

<sup>423</sup> "An die internationale Öffentlichkeit, Auschwitz, den 4. März 1945." GARF, 7021-108-46, p. 11, with handwritten signature of B. Epstein.

<sup>424</sup> After the war she went to Paris, where she married Art Babbitt in 1949 (artist's name of Arthur Harold Babitsky); see Lentz 2010, p. 24.

Kubica informs us that, in 1984, these twins were still numerous enough to form their own association (p. 429):

*"In 1984, the victims of Dr. Mengele's experiments, who had lived in the children's camp, formed the organization Children of Auschwitz Nazi Deadly Lab Experiment Survivors (CANDLES), with the self-appointed task of documenting Mengele's crimes, informing the world, capturing the 'Angel of Death' and dragging him before a court"*

The Website of the association lists almost 400 twins from Auschwitz.<sup>425</sup> Kubica also presents a list of twins from Auschwitz, consisting of over 320 names (pp. 437-455). The great majority of them were twins, but some were merely siblings, such as the sisters Tatiana Liliana and Alessandra Bucci. Both were deported to Auschwitz on March 29, 1943. The first, born on September 19, 1937, was registered under number 76484; the second, born July 1, 1939, was registered under number 76483 (Picciotto 1995, p. 157). Luigi Ferri, born on September 9, 1932, was deported in August 1944 and registered under number B-7525 (*ibid.*, p. 266). Sergio de Simone, born at Naples on November 29, 1937, was deported to Auschwitz on March 29, 1944, at the age of nearly seven years, and registered under number 179614 (*ibid.*, p. 217).

No orthodox historian has yet succeeded in explaining why these children were not gassed immediately upon arrival. In reality, this is not so surprising, because on January 16, 1945, in just the men's camp at Birkenau, there were 770 "adolescents aged up to 18 years" ("*Jugendliche bis 18. Jhr.*"), in addition to 400 invalids ("*Invaliden*")!<sup>426</sup> When the Soviets arrived, there were still 205 children at Birkenau, from just a few months up to 15 years of age, many of them twins (see Table 1).

The three documents mentioned above, the list of the CANDLES organization, the list compiled by Kubica and the Soviet list of 1945, in addition to the Soviet list of inmates liberated at Birkenau,<sup>427</sup> permit the compilation of a list of 543 twins having passed through Auschwitz (see Table 2). Of these, 376 survived until the liberation of the camp; four died in the following months, one died on the evacuation transport on January 27, 1945, and twelve perished during the existence of the camp. Nothing is known of the remaining 154.

In just three cases, Kubica notes: "died [not: killed] in the camp as a result of the experiments performed [on them]" ("*Starb im Lager infolge der durchgeführten Experimente*"; pp. 442, 449, 451), so that these three would seem to constitute Dr. Mengele's victims. It goes without saying that such an assumption is in no way backed up by proof of Mengele's personal complicity.

\* \* \*

<sup>425</sup> The list may be consulted at: <https://candlesholocaustmuseum.org/learn/twins-found-by-candles.html> (last accessed on Jan 21, 2018).

<sup>426</sup> "*Arbeitseinsatz für den 16. Januar 1945.*" RGVA, 502-1-67, p. 17a.

<sup>427</sup> GARF, 7021-108-23.

In conclusion, the known facts are as follows:

Dr. Mengele's alleged crimes are not substantiated by any document. No document shows that Mengele ever killed even one single child, or that one single child was ever killed on his orders. The crucial and sole witness, the one upon whose testimony the whole accusation is based, was an extraordinarily imaginative impostor. Dr. Mengele's closest collaborators, including this presumed crucial witness, and at least 543 of his "victims" were allowed to live. But then, how could anyone seriously believe in the fable of the "Angel of Death" of Auschwitz?

## Tables

Table 1: Name Table of Children Found by the Soviets at Birkenau<sup>428</sup>

Reg. No.	Last Name	Given Name	Sex	Age	Nationality	Country of Origin	Arrival at Auschwitz
?	?	V.L.	M	10	Polish		12 Aug. 1944
78254	Abrahamson	Helli	F	10	Jewish	Holland	June 1944
A-7739	Adler	Mano	M	12	Jewish	Hungary	May 1944
A-26885	Ajzenberg	J.I.	F	8	Jewish	Slovakia	2 Nov. 1944
?	Altmann	B.	F	3	German		June 1944
B-5405	Apelbaum	Edek	M	8	Jewish	Poland	July 1944
B-5406	Apelbaum	Milek	M	8	Jewish	Poland	July 1944
?	Bauer	Sary	F	15		Hungary	July 1944
A-26857	Beer	Pawlonna	F	8	Jewish	Slovakia	2 Nov. 1944
?	Bein	Piroska	F	15	Block 10	Hungary	?
A-25981	Benger	Eva	F	13	Jewish	Hungary	3 Nov. 1944
B-2780	Bierman	Ephraim	M	14	Jewish	Poland	2 Jul. 1944
B-14006	Binet	Robert	M	5	Jewish	Slovakia	2 Nov. 1944
B-14005	Binet	Gaspar	M	6	Jewish	Slovakia	2 Nov. 1944
A-20851	Binet	Martha	F	3	Jewish	Slovakia	3 Nov. 1944
A-7199	Bleier	Edit	F	9	Jewish	Hungary	July 1944
A-12080	Bleier	Ernö	M	9	Jewish	Hungary	July 1944
B-14615	Bleier	Istvan	M	14	Jewish	Hungary	Early July 1944
B-13979	Blum	Palko	M	6	Jewish	Slovakia	2 Nov. 1944
A-26847	Blum	Vera	F	11	Jewish	Slovakia	3 Nov. 1944
n/a	Bodanska	H.G.	F	6½	Polish		born in camp
?	Borowski	J.V.	M	3	Polish		12 Oct. 1944
B-14003	Braun	Peter	M	10m	Jewish	Slovakia	3 Nov. 1944
A-26840	Braun	Judith	F	11	Jewish	Slovakia	3 Nov. 1944
76484	Bucci <sup>429</sup>	Liana	F	7	Jewish	Italy	June 1944
76483	Bucci <sup>430</sup>	Andrea	M	7	Jewish	Italy	June 1944
B-13986	Burger	Franz	M	6	Jewish	Slovakia	2 Nov. 1944
B-13987	Burger	Thomas	M	11	Jewish	Slovakia	2 Nov. 1944
A-7057	Cengeri	L.F.	F	7	Jewish	Hungary	2 Jun. 1944
A-7058	Cengeri	J.T.	F	7	Jewish	Hungary	2 Jun. 1944
A-7264	Chybik	Ilse	F	14	Jewish	Austria	28 Jun. 1944
?	Cinsk	Jurek	M	6		Poland	?
A-9746	German	Marta	F	14	Jewish	Hungary	10 Jun. 1944
A-9745	German	Katalin	F	14	Jewish	Hungary	10 Jun. 1944
A-26877	Diamant	Eva	F	12	Jewish	Hungary	2 Nov. 1944
192752	Donten	A.R.	M	5	Polish		12 Aug. 1944
85386	Donten	Vaclava	F	13	Polish		12 Oct. 1944
A-8737	Echstein (Eckstein)	Ilona	F	9	Jewish	Hungary	July 1944
A-8738	Echstein (Eckstein)	Vera	F	9	Jewish	Hungary	July 1944
?	Einesman	Roza	F	12	?	Poland	August 1944
?	Eisenberg	Judit	F	9	?	Czechosl.	Sep. 1944
B-14706	Epstein	H.M.	M	14¾	Jewish	Hungary	June 1944
?	Epstein	Jamas	M	15	Block 18	Hungary	
A-7060	Fekete	Orla	F	7	Jewish	Hungary	June 1944

<sup>428</sup> GARF, 7021-108-23, pp. 179-198, 200-217.<sup>429</sup> Bucci Tatiana Liliana.<sup>430</sup> Bucci Alessandra.

Reg. No.	Last Name	Given Name	Sex	Age	Nationality	Country of Origin	Arrival at Auschwitz
A-12089	Fekete	Vilmos	M	7	Jewish	Hungary	June 1944
A-26919	Feldbaum	Marianne	F	13	Jewish	Slovakia	2 Nov. 1944
A-7525	Ferri	Luigi	M	12	Jewish	Italy	August 1944
A-782	Fischer	Georg	M	9	Jewish	Czechosl.	May 1944
A-781	Fischer	Josef	M	9	Jewish	Czechosl.	May 1944
A-27789	Frei	Rozsi	F	14	Jewish	Hungary	10 Jun. 1944
A-24977	Friedler	Boleslaw	M	13	Jewish	Poland	6 Aug. 1944
B-14058	Fuchs	Arpad	M	10	Jewish	Slovakia	2 Nov. 1944
A-15981	Fürst	Erika	F	13	Jewish	Yugoslavia	21 May 1944
?	Geiger	Laura	F	12	Jewish	Poland	August 1944
?	Ginter	Genjek	M	6	?	Poland	?
A-13203	Goldental	Sandor	M	10	Jewish	Hungary	5 Jun. 1944
A-13202	Goldental	Ernö	M	10	Jewish	Hungary	5 Jun. 1944
A-7205	Goldental	Manka	F	3	Jewish	Hungary	5 Jun. 1944
A-27632	Grinspan	Ruth	F	7½	Jewish	Poland	27 Jul. 1944
A-27633	Grossmann	Paula	F	6	Jewish	Poland	27 Jul. 1944
A-26945	Grossmann	Olga	F	6½	Jewish	Slovakia	4 Nov. 1944
A-26946	Grossmann	V.J.	F	6½	Jewish	Slovakia	4 Nov. 1944
A-26942	Grünbaum	Alice	F	11	Jewish	Slovakia	3 Nov. 1944
A-12958	Grünfeld	M.	F.	14	Jewish	Romania	May 1944
192812	Gunsky	Richard	M	6	Polish	?	12 Aug. 1944
?	Gutenberg	V.J.	F	9	Jewish	Poland	October 1944
190691	Gutmann	Rene	M	6	Jewish	Czechosl.	May 1944
A-17546	Hadl	Paul	M	7	Jewish	Hungary	11 Jun. 1944
A-17545	Hadl	Gyuri	M	7	Jewish	Hungary	11 Jun. 1944
A-9754	Hadl	Eva	F	13	Jewish	Hungary	11 Jun. 1944
B-14095	Hajman	J.	M	4	Jewish	Slovakia	2 Nov. 1944
?	Halpern	Gabriel	M	15	?	Poland	June 1944
B-14101	Hamburger	Julius	M	6	Jewish	Slovakia	2 Nov. 1944
A-26959	Hecht	Eva	F	2	Jewish	Slovakia	2 Nov. 1944
A-5142	Helenka	?	F	2½	Jewish	?	?
A-27638	Hellstein	Fella	F	6	Jewish	Poland	27 Jul. 1944
A-7222	Hermann	Piroska	F	13	Jewish	Hungary	2 Jun. 1944
A-2723	Hermann	Ibolya	F	13	Jewish	Hungary	2 Nov. 1944
A-27681	Herskovic	Marta	F	14	Jewish	Slovakia	15 May 1944
?	Hochstein	Paul	M	5	?	Poland	Feb. 1944
A-19999	Hochstein	S.D.	M	4¾	Jewish	Hungary	July 1944
A-26974	Hojman	Enka	F	8m	Jewish	Slovakia	2 Nov. 1944
A-6373	Holländer	Anna	F	13	Jewish	Hungary	May 1944
193985	Hutnik	S.S.	M	13	Polish	?	12 Oct. 1944
188930	Jakobson	Heinz	M	8	Jewish	Holland	June 1944
?	Jaksa-Bykonski	Hania	F	10	Polish	?	12 Aug. 1944
B-14381	Jung	?	M	4	Jewish	Slovakia	Nov. 1944
?	Kaff	Vera	F	15	Block 25	Czechosl.	May 1944
?	Kaff	Mira	F	15	Block 25	Czechosl.	May 1944
188926	Kanel	Johann	M	6	Jewish	Holland	6 Jun. 1944
A-27643	Kaplon	Irene	F	14	Jewish	Hungary	2 Jun. 1944
192813	Kapusta	H.J.	M	5	Polish	?	12 Aug. 1944
192893	Karpa	H.J.	M	9	Polish	?	12 Oct. 1944
B-14105	Keller	Ernst	M	8	Jewish	Slovakia	2 Nov. 1944
A-7213	Klein	Anna	F	11	Jewish	Hungary	mid-June 1944
A-7214	Klein	Judit	F	11	Jewish	Hungary	mid-June 1944

Reg. No.	Last Name	Given Name	Sex	Age	Nationality	Country of Origin	Arrival at Auschwitz
A-6471	Klein	Agnes	F	14	Jewish	Hungary	May 1944
?	Klein	Gyorgy	M	15	Block 18	Hungary	
A-2459	Kleinmann	Josef	M	4¾	Jewish	Czechosl.	May 1944
A-19997	Klüger	Paul	M	9½	Jewish	Poland	23 Jul. 1944
B-14132	Kohn	M.L.	M	6	Jewish	Slovakia	2 Nov. 1944
A-5139	Kohn	Klara	F	5	Jewish	Hungary	12 May 1944
A-5138	Kohn	E.K.	F	4	Jewish	Hungary	12 May 1944
B-14156	Krasnianski	Iwan	M	10	Jewish	Slovakia	3 Nov. 1944
A-26195	Kufler	Yena	F	10	Jewish	Slovakia	3 Nov. 1944
85759	Kurska	Kalina	F	6	Polish	Poland	13 Aug. 1944
B-7636	Lederer	Franz	M	14	Jewish	Czechosl.	14 Aug. 1944
B-14182	Lewinger	Peter	M	5	Jewish	Slovakia	2 Nov. 1944
?	Lieberman	Tibor	M	15	Block 18	Hungary	?
?	Liechtenstern	Kurt	M	15	Block 20	Czechosl.	June 1943
?	Löbl	Robert	M	15	Block 28	Hungary	January 1944
A-12090	Lörinczi	A.A.	M	10	Jewish	Hungary	2 Jun. 1944
A-7059	Lörinczi	L.A.	F	10	Jewish	Hungary	2 Jun. 1944
A-5123	Lustig-Brawer	Judit	F	2	Jewish	Hungary	22 May 1944
A-5121	Lustig-Brawer	A.A.	F	2	Jewish	Hungary	22 May 1944
A-5131	Malek	Judit	F	14	Jewish	Hungary	May 1944
A-7738	Malek	Jakob	M	3	Jewish	Hungary	May 1944
A-7737	Malek	Elias	M	3	Jewish	Hungary	May 1944
?	Malek	Judit	F	15	Jewish	Hungary	May 1944
?	Malek	Salomon	M	15	Jewish	Hungary	May 1944
A-27165	Mangel	Gertrud.	F	12	Jewish	Hungary	3 Nov. 1944
A-3638	Marmorstein	Valeria	F	11	Jewish	Hungary	20 May 1944
A-3637	Marmorstein	Marta	F	11	Jewish	Hungary	20 May 1944
?	Maslow	A.Ja.	M		Russian		?
A-9841	Mejer	Laure	F	13	Jewish	Hungary	17 May 1944
A-1386	Mejer	Mozes	M	13	Jewish	Hungary	17 May 1944
183959	Michuk	Tolla	M		Russian		?
?	Modiano	Samo	M	15	Block 18	Italy	August 1944
77357	Morosaw	Taissa	F	2½	Russian		April 1944
A-7064	Moses	Miriam	F	11	Jewish	Hungary	2 Jun. 1944
A-7063	Moses	Eva	F	11	Jewish	Hungary	2 Jun. 1944
?	Mucha	Jeslav	M	9	Polish		August 1944
A-27063	Neumann	Henia	F	13	Jewish	Slovakia	3 Nov. 1944
B-14206	Neumann	Gabriel J.	M	8	Jewish	Slovakia	3 Nov. 1944
B-14213	Neumann	G.L.	M	9	Jewish	Hungary	2 Nov. 1944
188931	Noach	Haskel	M	10	Jewish	Holland	6 Jun. 1944
78482	Noach	R.A.	F	13	Jewish	Holland	6 Jun. 1944
?	Orovicz	Rischek	M	5	?	Poland	?
77370	Pasankova (Michuk)	Sina	F	3	Russian	?	?
A-1437	Peterfreund	J.S.	M	12	Jewish	Hungary	June 1944
A-3630	Peterfreund	A.S.	F	12	Jewish	Hungary	June 1944
?	Pflanzen	Linka	F	5	?	Poland	Feb. 44
183970	Plawinski	Alik	M	4	?	Witebsk	15 Apr. 1943
B-1153	Pritichy	Alex	M	7	Jewish	Lodz/Poland	August 1944
A-5602	Rajngevic <sup>431</sup>	C.M.	F	14	Jewish	France	28 May 1944
A-3039	Reichmann <sup>432</sup>	Friedel	F	9	Jewish	Belgium	21 May 1944

<sup>431</sup> Rajngevic Cecilie, born on Jan. 22, 1931. Klarsfeld 1978, Transport No.74 of May 20, 1944.

Reg. No.	Last Name	Given Name	Sex	Age	Nationality	Country of Origin	Arrival at Auschwitz
A-10440	Reinitz	Georg	M	12	Jewish	Hungary	28 May 1944
B-14245	Rochlitz	Alfred	M	10	Jewish	Slovakia	3 Nov. 1944
84831	Ronbacha	Danuta	F	13	Polish	?	13 Aug. 1944
A-7054	Rosenbaum	Ruth	F	10	Jewish	Hungary	2 Jun. 1944
A-7055	Rosenbaum	Judit	F	10	Jewish	Hungary	2 Jun. 1944
?	Rosenberg	Ruth	F	11	Jewish	Hungary	June 1944
?	Rosenblum	Hana	F	12		Poland	August 1944
B-2784	Rosenwasser	Lea	F	12	Jewish	Slovakia	2 Nov. 1944
B-14232	Rosenwasser	Josef	M	8	Jewish	Slovakia	2 Nov. 1944
B-14820	Rosenzweig	Jurek	M	12	Jewish	Lodz/Poland	August 1944
A-27087	Rukovic	Erika	F	3	Jewish	Slovakia	3 Nov. 1944
A-10	Salomon	Sarolta	F	9	Jewish	Hungary	21 May 1944
A-11	Salomon	Rozalia	F	9	Jewish	Hungary	21 May 1944
A-5128	Sattler	Vera	F	12	Jewish	Hungary	17 May 1944
A-5129	Sattler	Magda	F	12	Jewish	Hungary	May 1944
A-9272	Sauer	Margit	F	14	Jewish	Hungary	mid-June 1944
A-9271	Sauer	Sara	F	14	Jewish	Hungary	mid-June 1944
179963	Sawojlo	A.I.	M	10m	Russian		born in camp
A-27153	Schick	Eva	F	13	Jewish	Slovakia	2 Nov. 1944
81753	Schlager	Laura	F	9	Jewish	Holland	June 1944
188932	Schlager	J.D.	M	11	Jewish	Holland	June 1944
B-14324	Schlesinger	Pavel	M	6	Jewish	Slovakia	2 Nov. 1944
B-14325	Schlesinger	Robert	M	11	Jewish	Slovakia	2 Nov. 1944
A-7254	Schlesinger	Martha	F	12	Jewish	Hungary	15 Jun. 1944
A-7255	Schlesinger	Judith	F	12	Jewish	Hungary	15 Jun. 1944
?	Schlesinger	Sidonia	F	14		Hungary	
?	Schuldenfrei	Moritz (Mendel)	M	11	Block 18	Belgium	April 1944
A-18951	Schwarcz	Vera	F	13½	Jewish	Slovakia	16 Jun. 1944
	Schwartz	Tamas	M	12	?	Czechosl.	August 1944
B-14295	Schwarz	Ferenc	M	11	Jewish	Slovakia	4 Nov. 1944
?	Schwarz	Iren	F	12	?	Hungary	May 1944
?	Schweid	Andor	M	15	Block 9	Hungary	?
?	Selmanovic	Mor	M	14	?	Hungary	May 1944
77303	Sluschakova	Wala	F	3-4	?	Witebsk	April 1944
A-27880	Spiro	Dora	F	9	Jewish	Poland	27 Jul. 1944
A-23221	Spirova	Frida	F	9	Jewish	Slovakia	12 Nov. 1944
A-27712	Stein	Judith	F	14	Jewish	Hungary	May 1944
B-14566	Steiner	Jindrich	M	14	Jewish	Slovakia	30 Sep. 1944
?	Steiner	Zdenek	M	15	?	Czechosl.	Sep. 1943
?	Steiner	Jiri	M	15	?	Czechosl.	Sep. 1943
81769	Stockfisch	Hariette	F	3	Jewish	Holland	June 1944
A-27126	Strauss	Gitta	F	10	Jewish	Slovakia	4 Nov. 1944
A-27127	Strauss	Lilly	F	12	Jewish	Slovakia	4 Nov. 1944
B-14272	Strauss	D.J.	M	8	Jewish	Slovakia	4 Nov. 1944
?	Stroch	Jakob		15	Block 28	Holland	?
A-6900	Teller	Katalina	F	14¾	Jewish	Hungary	20 May 1944
A-23493	Traub	Hanka	F	5	Jewish	Czechosl.	June 1944
A-23492	Traub	E.	F	5	Jewish	Czechosl.	June 1944

<sup>432</sup> Reichmann Friedel, born on Jun. 16, 1935. Klarsfeld/Steinberg, p. 435, Transport XXV of May 19, 1944.

Reg. No.	Last Name	Given Name	Sex	Age	Natio- nality	Country of Origin	Arrival at Auschwitz
188933	Van Gelder	Eddi	M	3	Jewish	Holland	June 1944
188934	Viskoper	Robert	M	6	Jewish	Holland	June 1944
?	Weinberger	Irene	F	14	?	Czechosl.	Nov. 1944
?	Weinheber	Berta	F	15	?	Czechosl.	Nov. 1944
A-27202	Weiss	M.E.	F	10	Jewish	Slovakia	3 Nov. 1944
A-27197	Weiss	Migrun	F	6	Jewish	Slovakia	2 Nov. 1944
B-14354	Weiss	Jurai	M	7m	Jewish	Slovakia	3 Nov. 1944
?	Weiss	Lilly	F	14	?	Hungary	?
A-27199	Weisshefer	B.E.	F	14¾	Jewish	Slovakia	3 Nov. 1944
A-27201	Weisz	Eva E.	F	13	Jewish	Slovakia	3 Nov. 1944
A-27660	Weisz	Elisabeth	F	11	Jewish	Hungary	July 1944
?	Weisz	Marta	F	11	?	Czechosl.	Nov. 1944
?	Weiszmann	Ibolya	F	13	?	Hungary	June 1944
A-27208	Winter	Erika	F	13	Jewish	Slovakia	3 Nov. 1944
B-14348	Winter	Otto	M	10	Jewish	Slovakia	3 Nov. 1944
?	Winzorek	Bogasta		15	Block 10	Poland	?
?	Wolkowitz	Rifka	F	5	?	Poland	August 1944
?	Wolkowitz	Fischel	M	8	?	Poland	August 1944
B-14880	Worstmann (Workman)	Gabor	M	14	Jewish	Hungary	7 Jul. 1944
?	Wurms	Juda	M	15	Block 19	Holland	?
B-14828	Zelewski	Samuel	M	11	Jewish	Lodz/Poland	August 1944
B-14827	Zelewski	Leib	M	11	Jewish	Lodz/Poland	August 1944
?	Zelmanovits	Mor	M	14	Block 18	Hungary	?
A-27218	Ziemlichova	Alice	F	13	Polish	?	2 Nov. 1944
?	Zucker	Maria	F	13	?	Poland	August 1944
A-27772	Zwischberg	Vera	F	12	Jewish	Hungary	July 1944



Table 2: List of Twins at Auschwitz

Reg. No. (L = Liberated)	Family name	Given name	Birthday/age	Liberation Date
A-348	Abeles	Elisabeth	19 Jul. 1932	?
A-77	Abeles	Peter	19 Jul. 1932	?
78254	Abrahamson	Helli	10 years	27 Jan. 1945
A-7739	Adler	Mano	15 Feb. 1932	27 Jan. 1945
Z-5618	Adler	Konrad	8 Jan. 1936	?
Z-5619	Adler	Andreas	8 Jan. 1936	?
A-6029	Adler	Fanny	15 Feb. 1932	died at Auschwitz
A-26885	Ajzenberg	J.I.	8 years	27 Jan. 1945
A-5772	Alter (Aeter)	Sari	?	?
B-5405	Appelbaum	Edek (Adolf)	6 years	27 Jan. 1945
B-5406	Appelbaum	Milek (Hilek)	6 years	27 Jan. 1945
A-1433	Bach (Back)	Isidor	25 Jun. 1927	27 Jan. 1945
A-1434	Bach (Back)	Uscher	25 Jun. 1927	27 Jan. 1945
168208	Basch	Paul	?	?
168209	Basch	Albert	?	?
B-14731	Basch	Samio	11 Jul. 1929	27 Jan. 1945
B-14732	Basch	Morton	11 Jul. 1929	27 Jan. 1945
?	Bauer	Sary	15	?
?	Baum	Miriam Shteinhoff	?	L
?	Baum	Yizchak	?	L
A-5105	Baum	Ernst (Erno)	18 Jan. 1929	?
A-5342	Baum	Magda	18 Jan. 1929	?
A-7212	Baum	Judith	31 May 1930	27 Jan. 1945
A-26857	Beer	Pawlonna	8	27 Jan. 1945
Z-2380	Behrends (Berentz)	Johann	19 Apr. 1921	?
Z-2381	Behrends (Berentz)	Frinke	19 Apr. 1921	?
?	Bein	Piroska	15	?
A-25981	Benger	Eva	13	27 Jan. 1945
B-2780	Bierman	Ephraim	14	27 Jan. 1945
A-20851	Binet	Martha	3	27 Jan. 1945
B-14005	Binet	Gaszpar	6	27 Jan. 1945
B-14006	Binet	Uszn (Robert)	6	27 Jan. 1945
?	Blau	Eva	?	L
?	Blau (Eitan)	Rachel	?	L
A-12080	Bleier	Ernö	6 Feb. 1936	27 Jan. 1945
A-5103	Bleier	Tibor	9 Jan. 1931	L
A-5104	Bleier	Miklos	9 Jan. 1931	... <sup>433</sup>
A-7199	Bleier	Edith	9	27 Jan. 1945
B-14615	Bleier	Istvan	14	27 Jan. 1945
A-26847	Blum	Vera	11	27 Jan. 1945
B-13979	Blum	Palko	6	27 Jan. 1945
?	Blyer	Yizchak Efrat	?	L
B-14003	Braun	Peter	10 months	27 Jan. 1945
A-14096	Braun	Kalman	31 May 1930	27 Jan. 1945
A-17456	Brichta	Andreas	5 Jan. 1935	27 Jan. 1945
A-17457	Brichta	Karl	5 Jan. 1935	27 Jan. 1945
A-17452	Brodth	Antol	12 Mar. 1930	27 Jan. 1945
A-17453	Brodth	Józef	12 Mar. 1930	27 Jan. 1945

<sup>433</sup> "Died at the camp as a result of experiments performed."

Reg. No. (L = Liberated)	Family name	Given name	Birthday/age	Liberation Date
A-14090	Brown	Yehudith Karen	31 May 1930	27 Jan. 1945
?	Bryer	(twin brother)	?	L
?	Bryer	Yehudith Mayer	?	L
76483	Bucci <sup>434</sup>	Alessandra	7 years	27 Jan. 1945
76484	Bucci <sup>435</sup>	Liliana	7 years	27 Jan. 1945
B-13986	Burger	Franz	6 years	27 Jan. 1945
B-13987	Burger	Thomas	11 years	27 Jan. 1945
A-7264	Chybik	Ilse	14 years	27 Jan. 1945
?	Cinsk	Jurek	6 years	?
A-7057	Czengeri	Lea	6 Jun. 1937	27 Jan. 1945
A-7058	Czengeri	Yehudith	6 Jun. 1937	27 Jan. 1945
?	Czucker	Irena Shtronwasser	?	L
?	Czucker	Lea Berkman	?	L
A-5132	David	Margit	58 years	27 Jan. 1945
?	Deitch	Hana Faiger	?	L
?	Deitch	Rache Markowitz	?	L
A-5135	Demst (Dunst)	Therese	19	27 Jan. 1945
A-5136	Demst (Dunst)	Lilly	19	27 Jan. 1945
A-9745	German	Katalin	14	27 Jan. 1945
A-9746	German	Martha	14	27 Jan. 1945
A-3628	Deutzel (German)	Ethel	22	?
A-3629	Deutzel (German)	Malvine	22	?
Z-4636	Dewüs	Margot	25 Feb. 1927	?
Z-4637	Dewüs	Elfriede	25 Feb. 1927	?
A-26877	Diamant	Eva	12	27 Jan. 1945
A-8737	Eckstein	Rona (Ilona)	8	27 Jan. 1945
A-8738	Eckstein	Vera	8	27 Jan. 1945
Z-2924	Einacker	Christian	22 Nov. 1931	?
Z-2925	Einacker	Paul	22 Nov. 1931	?
?	Einesman	Roza	12	?
?	Eisenberg	Judit	9	?
A-7218	Eisenberger	Elisabeth	28	?
?	Epstein	Jamas	15	?
B-14706	Epstein	H.M.	14 ¾	27 Jan. 1945
A-7256	Erenthal	Elizabeth	34	?
A-7257	Erenthal	Marie	34	?
113336	Ernst	Hermann	12 Mar. 1910	?
Z-5645	Ernst	Karl	12 Mar. 1910	?
A-2042	Feingold	Jakob	5 Nov. 1927	?
A-4891	Feingold	Rosa	5 Nov. 1927	?
?	Feit	Esther	?	L
?	Feit	Ita	?	L
A-12089	Fekete	Vilmos	7	27 Jan. 1945
A-7060	Fekete	Izabella	7	27 Jan. 1945
A-7740	Feld	Ludwik	19 Mar. 1904	27 Jan. 1945
A-26919	Feldbaum	Marianne	13	27 Jan. 1945
A-781	Fischer	Josef	7 Jan. 1936	27 Jan. 1945
A-782	Fischer	Georg	7 Jan. 1936	27 Jan. 1945
A-5717	Fogel	Isidor	13 May 1929	?

<sup>434</sup> Bucci Alessandra.<sup>435</sup> Bucci Tatiana Liliana.

Reg. No. (L = Liberated)	Family name	Given name	Birthday/age	Liberation Date
A-5718	Fogel	Mano	13 May 1929	?
A-15675	Frankfurt	Georg	13 Oct. 1930	27 Jan. 1945
A-15676	Frankfurt	Laslo	13 Oct. 1930	27 Jan. 1945
A-3102	Frankovitz	Morris	?	27 Jan. 1945
A-3103	Frankovitz	Jacob	?	27 Jan. 1945
A-27789	Frei	Rozsi	14	27 Jan. 1945
A-7216	Freiberger	Jolan	43	?
A-7217	Freiberger	Margit	43	?
?	Fried	Charlotte	21	?
A-5126	Fried	Jolan	21	?
A-13	Friedman	Esther	15	?
A-14	Friedman	Helena	15	?
A-12081	Friedmann	Jakob	12 Oct. 1925	27 Jan. 1945
A-12082	Friedmann	Mozes	12 Oct. 1925	27 Jan. 1945
A-7202	Friedmann	Olga	12	27 Jan. 1945
A-7203	Friedmann	Ewa	12	27 Jan. 1945
B-14058	Fuchs	Arpad	10	27 Jan. 1945
?	Fuggel	Ezra	?	L
?	Fuggel	Menasche	?	L
A-15981	Fürst	Erika	13	27 Jan. 1945
?	Fux	Miriam	?	L
?	Fux	Yona Lux	?	L
?	Geiger	Laura	12	?
?	Ginter	Genjek	6	?
?	Goldberger	Laura	27 Feb. 1929	?
A-2513	Goldberger	Josef	27 Feb. 1929	27 Jan. 1945
A-5119	Goldberger	Margit	27 Feb. 1929	?
A-13203	Goldentahl	Ernest	16 Feb. 1935	27 Jan. 1945
A-13202	Goldental	Ernö	10	27 Jan. 1945
A-13203	Goldental	Sandor	10	27 Jan. 1945
A-7205	Goldental	Manka	3	27 Jan. 1945
?	Goldenthal	Amy	?	L
A-13202	Goldenthal	Aleksander	16 Feb. 1935	27 Jan. 1945
A-7733	Gottesmann	Elias	4	L
A-7734	Gottesmann	Jenő	4	L
A-7735	Gottesmann	Joseph	?	?
A-27632	Grinspan	Ruth	7 ½	27 Jan. 1945
A-21945	Grossman	Olga Solomon	6	27 Jan. 1945
A-21946	Grossman	Vera Krieghel	6	27 Jan. 1945
A-26945	Grossmann	Olga	6	27 Jan. 1945
A-26946	Grossmann	Vera	6	27 Jan. 1945
A-27633	Grossmann	Paula	6	27 Jan. 1945
A-9269	Grossmann	Katalin	47	?
A-9270	Grossmann	Susanne	47	?
A-2518	Grosz	Lajos	22 Nov. 1903	?
A-2519	Grosz	Tibor	22 Nov. 1903	?
A-26942	Grünbaum	Alice	11	27 Jan. 1945
A-7200	Grünbaum	Berta	19	27 Jan. 1945
A-7201	Grünbaum	Jolan	19	27 Jan. 1945
A-5719	Grünberger	Oscar	9 Jun. 1925	?
A-6030	Grünberger	Sara	9 Jun. 1925	?
A-12958	Grünfeld	M.	14	27 Jan. 1945

Reg. No. (L = Liberated)	Family name	Given name	Birthday/age	Liberation Date
A-6036	Grünhut	Janka	49	?
?	Gutenberg	V.J.	9	27 Jan. 1945
?	Gutman	Menahem (Menesel)	?	L
?	Gutman	(sister)	?	L
?	Gutman	Yoel	?	L
?	Gutman	(triplet sister)	?	L
169061	Guttman	Rene	21 Dec. 1937	27 Jan. 1945
70917	Guttman	Irene	21 Dec. 1937	27 Jan. 1945
A-17545	Hadl	Gyuri	7	27 Jan. 1945
A-17546	Hadl	Paul	7	27 Jan. 1945
A-9754	Hadl	Eva	13	27 Jan. 1945
A-17545	Hadl (Hadel)	Georg Heimler	6	27 Jan. 1945
A-17546	Hadl (Hadel)	Paul Heimler	6	27 Jan. 1945
B-14095	Hajman	J.	4	27 Jan. 1945
Z-5277	Halonek	Drachomie	14 May 1936	?
Z-5278	Halonek	Anna	14 May 1936	?
?	Halpern	Gabriel	15	?
B-14101	Hamburger	Julius	6	27 Jan. 1945
Z-4975	Hanstein	Paul	27 Jun. 1898	?
B-10502	Hauptmann	Zoltan	23 Oct. 1930	27 Jan. 1945
B-10503	Hauptmann	Jenő	23 Oct. 1930	27 Jan. 1945
A-9747	Havas	Agnes	21 Aug. 1927 <sup>436</sup>	
A-9748	Havas	Judith	21 Aug. 1927 <sup>436</sup>	
A-26959	Hecht	Eva	2	27 Jan. 1945
?	Helbrun	Annetta	4 Feb. 1924	L
?	Helbrun	Stephanie	4 Feb. 1924	L
A-5142	Helenka	?	2 ½	27 Jan. 1945
148578	Heller	Paul	1 Jul. 1927	?
148580	Heller	Peter	1 Jul. 1927	27 Jan. 1945
A-27638	Hellstein	Fella	6	27 Jan. 1945
A-1435	Herbach	Andreas	3 Mar. 1925	?
A-1436	Herbach	Ladislaus	3 Mar. 1925 <sup>437</sup>	
?	Hermann	(fratello)	?	L
?	Hermann	Czvi Weisel	?	L
A-7222	Hermann	Piroska	12	27 Jan. 1945
A-7223	Hermann	Ibolya	12	27 Jan. 1945
A-27681	Herskovic	Marta	14	27 Jan. 1945
?	Herskovitz	Ruth	?	L
A-5079	Herskowicz	Gizela (Pearle)	23	27 Jan. 1945
A-5080	Herskowicz	Helena	23	27 Jan. 1945
?	Hochstein	Paul	5	?
A-19999	Hochstein	S.D.	4 ¾	27 Jan. 1945
A-5197	Hofert	Alfred	22 May 1933	L
A-7061	Hoffman	Olga	20	27 Jan. 1945
A-7062	Hoffman	Ida	20	27 Jan. 1945 <sup>438</sup>
A-26974	Hojman	Enka	8 months	27 Jan. 1945
A-5106	Holfert (Holpert)	Eugen (Jenő)	22 May 1933	?
A-5107	Holfert (Szechter)	Alfred	22 May 1933	27 Jan. 1945

<sup>436</sup> Evacuated to Germany in November 1944, liberated there on May 3 or 4, 1945.<sup>437</sup> Died on the evacuation transport on January 27, 1945 in Czechoslovakian territory.<sup>438</sup> Died after the liberation.

Reg. No. (L = Liberated)	Family name	Given name	Birthday/age	Liberation Date
A-5117	Holländer	Rosa	22	?
A-5118	Holländer	Laura	22	?
A-6373	Holländer	Anna	13	27 Jan. 1945
?	Hornung	Henry	?	L
?	Hornung	Victor	?	L
188930	Jakobson	Heinz	8	27 Jan. 1945
B-14381	Jung	?	4	27 Jan. 1945
170377	Kafka	Otto	5 Jan. 1901	?
A-7047	Kafr (Kaff)	Mira	14	27 Jan. 1945
A-7048	Kafr (Kaff)	Vera	14	27 Jan. 1945
188926	Kanel	Johann	6	27 Jan. 1945
A-27643	Kaplon	Irene	14	27 Jan. 1945
A-7220	Kastner	Iboria	28	?
A-7221	Kastner (Singer)	Klara	28	?
A-5720	Katz	Abraham	1932	27 Jan. 1945
A-5721	Katz	Chaim	1932	?
B-14105	Keller	Ernst	8	27 Jan. 1945
A-9749	Kemenski	Klara	24	L
A-9750	Kemenski	Magda	24	L
A-7049	Keppes (Köpes)	Ewa	19	L
A-7050	Keppes (Köpes)	Teresa	19	L
A-8735	Kerpel	Marta	17	L
A-8736	Kerpel	Ida	17	L
170450	Kestr	Friedrich	26 Oct. 1921	?
170451	Kestr	Hans	26 Oct. 1921	?
A-8739	Kirz (Kurz)	Lilly	22 Feb. 1900	27 Jan. 1945 <sup>439</sup>
A-8740	Kirz (Kurz)	Edith	22 Feb. 1900	L
A-14319	Kiss	Andre	5 Oct. 1928	?
A-14320	Kiss	Laszlo	5 Oct. 1928	?
?	Klein	Gyorgy	15	?
?	Klein	Bela	?	L
?	Klein	(twin brother)	?	L
A-2511	Klein	Laslo	31 Jan. 1931	?
A-2512	Klein	Gyula	31 Jan. 1931	?
A-5331	Klein	Ferenz	7 Jun. 1932	27 Jan. 1945
A-5332	Klein	Otto	7 Jun. 1932	27 Jan. 1945
A-6471	Klein	Agnes	14	27 Jan. 1945
A-7213	Klein	Anna	9	27 Jan. 1945
A-7214	Klein	Judith	9	27 Jan. 1945
A-4931	Kleinman	Martha	14 Apr. 1940	27 Jan. 1945
A-2459	Kleinmann	Josef	14 Apr. 1940	27 Jan. 1945
A-19997	Klüger	Paul	9 ½	27 Jan. 1945
A-5138	Kohn	Ewa	15 Mar. 1940	27 Jan. 1945
A-5139	Kohn	Klara	15 Mar. 1940	27 Jan. 1945
B-14132	Kohn	M.L.	6	27 Jan. 1945
80912	Kohnstein	Emilie	12 Sep. 1927	27 Jan. 1945
80913	Kohnstein	Gizela	12 Sep. 1927	27 Jan. 1945
B-14156	Krasnianski	Iwan	10	27 Jan. 1945
73492	Kraub (Traub)	Ewa	5 Jun. 1939	27 Jan. 1945
73493	Kraub (Traub)	Hanka	5 Jun. 1939	27 Jan. 1945

<sup>439</sup> Died on March 3, 1945.

Reg. No. (L = Liberated)	Family name	Given name	Birthday/age	Liberation Date
Z-1773	Kraus	Elisabeth	17 Sep. 1923	?
Z-1774	Kraus	Anna	17 Sep. 1923	?
Z-2660	Kreutz (Krentz)	Elise	19 Oct. 1876	?
Z-2661	Kreutz (Krentz)	Johanna	19 Oct. 1876	?
A-26195	Kufler	Yena	10	27 Jan. 1945
A-14321	Kühn	Gyorgy	23 Jan. 1932	27 Jan. 1945
A-14322	Kühn	Istwan	17 Dec. 1932	27 Jan. 1945
85759	Kurska	Kalina	6	27 Jan. 1945
A-7051	Labowicz	Lili	15	27 Jan. 1945
A-7052	Labowicz	Ewa	15	27 Jan. 1945
A-5544	Lachkar	Lucy	21	?
A-27700	Laks	Jona	28 Apr. 1928	<sup>440</sup>
A-14325	Laufer	Josef	12 Aug. 1930	27 Jan. 1945
A-14326	Laufer	Istwan (Stefan)	12 Aug. 1930	27 Jan. 1945
A-5722	Lazarovitz	Yizchak	?	27 Jan. 1945
A-6033	Lazarovitz	Gizela	1 Jul. 1929	27 Jan. 1945
A-5722	Lazarowicz	Isidor	1 Jul. 1929	?
170574	Lebenhart	Eugen	21 Feb. 1924	?
B-7636	Lederer	Franz	14	27 Jan. 1945
A-342	Leipen	Ervin	23 May 1937	?
A-343	Leipen	Paul	23 May 1937	?
?	Levinger	Rachel Zehira	?	L
?	Levinstein	Herman	?	L
?	Levinstein	Lili Birkenfeld	?	L
B-14182	Lewinger	Peter	5	27 Jan. 1945
A-3632	Lichtenstein	Lilly	21	L
A-3633	Lichtenstein	Malvine	21	L
?	Lieberman	Tibor	15	?
?	Lieberman	Gota	?	L
?	Lieberman	(sister)	?	L
?	Liechtenstern	Kurt	15	?
A-12083	Lipschitz	Erno	16 Jul. 1927	?
A-12084	Lipschitz	Zoltan	16 Jul. 1927	?
?	Lipshitz	Elimelek	?	L
?	Lipshitz	Zeipora Milstein	?	L
?	Löbl	Robert	15	?
A-12090	Lörenzi	Andreas	10	27 Jan. 1945
A-7059	Lörenzi	Lea	10	27 Jan. 1945
A-5141	Lövinger	Rosa	2	L
A-5142	Lövinger	Helena	2	L
?	Lövy	Miriam	4 Jun. 1928	27 Jan. 1945
A-1295	Lövy	Leopold	4 Jun. 1928	27 Jan. 1945
A-14097	Lövy (Levy)	Andor	?	?
A-14093	Löwenstein	Herman	25 Jun. 1930	?
?	Lowy (Lovy)	Miriam	6 Apr. 1928	27 Jan. 1945
A-14323	Lustig	Gyorgy (Georg)	13 Dec. 1926	27 Jan. 1945
A-14324	Lustig	Martin	13 Dec. 1926	27 Jan. 1945
A-5121	Lustig-Brauer (Braver)	Ewa	22 Dec. 1942	<sup>441</sup>
A-5122	Lustig-Brauer (Braver)	Agnes	22 Dec. 1942	27 Jan. 1945

<sup>440</sup> Evacuated to Ravensbrück, liberated near Leipzig.<sup>441</sup> Died in Auschwitz Concentration Camp.

Reg. No. (L = Liberated)	Family name	Given name	Birthday/age	Liberation Date
A-5123	Lustig-Brauer (Braver)	Judith	22 Dec. 1942	27 Jan. 1945
A-5131	Malek	Yehudith Feig	14	27 Jan. 1945
A-7736	Malek	Salomon	14	27 Jan. 1945
A-7737	Malek	Elias	3	27 Jan. 1945
A-7738	Malek	Jacob	3	27 Jan. 1945
A-27165	Mangel	G.L.	12	27 Jan. 1945
A-1386	Mayer (Meier)	Moses	1931	27 Jan. 1945
A-3841	Mayer (Meier)	Laura	1931	27 Jan. 1945
A-3637	Mermelstein	Marta	11	27 Jan. 1945
A-3638	Mermelstein	Waleria	11	27 Jan. 1945
A-3622	Michobowicz	Irena	21	L
A-3623	Michobowicz	Lenta	21	L
?	Mintz	Rivka Vered	?	L
?	Mintz	(sister)	?	L
?	Modiano	Samo	15	?
A-5770	Molnar	Suza	20	L
A-5771	Molnar	Marie	20	L
A-7063	Moses	Eva	11	27 Jan. 1945
A-7064	Moses	Miriam	11	27 Jan. 1945
?	Moskowitz	Elisabeth	?	L
A-6034	Moszkowitz	Rosa	18	L
A-6035	Moszkowitz	Helena	18	<sup>442</sup>
A-7063	Mozes	Eva	31 Jan. 1935	27 Jan. 1945
A-7064	Mozes	Miriam	31 Jan. 1935	27 Jan. 1945
A-27063	Neumann	Henia	13	27 Jan. 1945
B-14206	Neumann	Gabriel J.	8	27 Jan. 1945
B-14213	Neumann	G.L.	9	27 Jan. 1945
A-7259	Neuschlöss	Judith	17 Dec. 1927	?
A-14327	Neuschlöss	Gabor	17 Dec. 1927	?
188931	Noach	Haskel	10	27 Jan. 1945
78482	Noach	R.A.	13	27 Jan. 1945
A-1719	Nochmann	Albert	22 Apr. 1885	?
A-1720	Nochmann	Fritz	22 Apr. 1885	?
A-1766	Oppenheimer	Jaroslaus	26 Mar. 1920	?
A-1767	Oppenheimer	Sidonius	26 Mar. 1920	?
A-1442	Ories (Ovicz)	Abraham	26 Sep. 1903	27 Jan. 1945
A-1443	Ories (Ovicz)	Markus	16 Jul. 1909	27 Jan. 1945
A-1444	Ories (Ovicz)	Sandor	1	27 Jan. 1945
?	Orovicz	Rischek	5	?
A-5089	Ovicz (Edenburg)	Erika (Frieda)	?	27 Jan. 1945
A-5087	Ovicz (Owicz)	Piroska	?	27 Jan. 1945
A-5088	Ovicz (Owicz)	Rozsi (Rozhinka)	?	27 Jan. 1945
A-5090	Ovicz (Owicz)	Franciska	?	27 Jan. 1945
A-5092	Ovicz (Owicz)	Seren (Sara)	?	27 Jan. 1945
A-5093	Ovicz (Owicz)	Lina (Leah)	?	27 Jan. 1945
A-5091	Ovicz-Miskovitz	Elisabeth	?	27 Jan. 1945
A-7206	Paneth (Pacuta)	Ewa	15	L
A-7207	Paneth (Pacuta)	Sara	15	L
A-1437	Peterfreund	J.S.	12	27 Jan. 1945
A-3630	Peterfreund	Agnes	12 Nov. 1932	27 Jan. 1945

<sup>442</sup> Died in the camp on August 26, 1944.

Reg. No. (L = Liberated)	Family name	Given name	Birthday/age	Liberation Date
A-1437	Peterfreund	Istwan	12 Nov. 1932	27 Jan. 1945
?	Pflanzen	Linka	5	?
Z-5751	Pohl	Alfred	6 Nov. 1931	?
Z-5752	Pohl	Fritz	6 Nov. 1931	?
A-2514	Pollack	Abraham	21 Nov. 1924 <sup>443</sup>	
A-2515	Pollack	Jacob	21 Nov. 1924 <sup>444</sup>	
A-5417	Pollak	Rozsi	11 Mar. 1927 <sup>445</sup>	
B-1153	Pritichy	Alex	7	27 Jan. 1945
A-5602	Rajngevic	C.M.	14	27 Jan. 1945
A-7219	Reich	Olga	28	?
A-10508	Reichenberg	Efraim (Ernst)	11 Feb. 1928	27 Jan. 1945
B-10507	Reichenberg	Laslo	11 Feb. 1928	L
A-3039	Reichmann	Friedel	9	27 Jan. 1945
A-10440	Reinitz	Georg	12	27 Jan. 1945
B-14245	Rochlitz	Alfred	10	27 Jan. 1945
?	Rosen	Eva	?	L
?	Rosen	Helen	?	L
A-7054	Rosenbaum	Ruth	25 Mar. 1934	27 Jan. 1945 <sup>446</sup>
A-7055	Rosenbaum	Judith	25 Mar. 1934	27 Jan. 1945
?	Rosenblum	Hana	12	?
B-14232	Rosenwasser	Josef	8	27 Jan. 1945
B-2784	Rosenwasser	Lea	12	27 Jan. 1945
B-14820	Rosenzweig	Jurek	12	27 Jan. 1945
A-5415	Roth	Piroska	3 Nov. 1927 <sup>447</sup>	
A-5416	Roth	Hermine	3 Nov. 1927 <sup>448</sup>	
A-27087	Rukovic	Erika	3	27 Jan. 1945
?	Sainer	Ilan	?	L
?	Sainer (Novomkova)	Hana	?	L
A-10	Salamon	Charlotte Malte	9	27 Jan. 1945
A-11	Salamon	Rosa	9	27 Jan. 1945
A-5723	Salomon	Lipot	12 Apr. 1924	...
A-5724	Salomon	Dezö	12 Apr. 1924	...
A-5725	Salomon	Sandor	11 May 1931	27 Jan. 1945
A-5726	Salomon	Tibor	11 May 1931	27 Jan. 1945
147689	Salus	Georg	10 Mar. 1924	?
147690	Salus	Ladislaus	10 Mar. 1924	?
A-14094	Sander	Josef	6 Oct. 1931	L
A-7208	Sander	Rozsi	6 Oct. 1931	L
?	Sattler	Gardony (Magda)	12	27 Jan. 1945
A-5128	Sattler	Vera	12	27 Jan. 1945
A-5129	Sattler	Magda	12	27 Jan. 1945
A-9271	Sauer	Sara	14	27 Jan. 1945
A-9272	Sauer	Margit	14	27 Jan. 1945
A-12087	Schick	Jose	1	<sup>449</sup>

<sup>443</sup> Evacuated to Buchenwald.<sup>444</sup> Evacuated to Buchenwald, died on March 11, 1945.<sup>445</sup> Transferred to Buchenwald in October 1944.<sup>446</sup> Died on Mar. 14, 1945.<sup>447</sup> Transferred to Buchenwald in November 1944.<sup>448</sup> Transferred to Buchenwald in November 1944.<sup>449</sup> "Died in the camp as a result of the experiments performed on him."



Reg. No. (L = Liberated)	Family name	Given name	Birthday/age	Liberation Date
A-12088	Schick	Otto	1	?
A-27153	Schick	Eva	13	27 Jan. 1945
A-7044	Schick	Hedi	1	<sup>450</sup>
188932	Schlager	J.D.	11	27 Jan. 1945
81753	Schlager	Laura	9	27 Jan. 1945
?	Schlesinger	Harry	3 Sep. 1929	27 Jan. 1945
?	Schlesinger	(twin sister)	?	died at Au.
60721	Schlesinger	Paula	?	L
A-3624	Schlesinger	Klara	19	L
A-3625	Schlesinger	Lio	19	L
A-5773	Schlesinger	Sidonia	9 Mar. 1929	27 Jan. 1945
A-7254	Schlesinger	Martha	12	27 Jan. 1945
A-7255	Schlesinger	Judith	12	27 Jan. 1945 + 16 Mar. <sup>451</sup>
A-7732	Schlesinger	Herman	9 Mar. 1929	?
B-14324	Schlesinger	Pavel	6	27 Jan. 1945
B-14325	Schlesinger	Robert	11	27 Jan. 1945
170799	Schön	Richard	22 May 1906	?
170800	Schön	Robert	22 May 1906	?
A-7041	Schröter	Judith	12	L
A-7042	Schröter	Veronika	12	L
?	Schuldenfrei	Moritz (Mendel)	11	?
A-18951	Schwarcz	Vera	13 ½	27 Jan. 1945
?	Schwartz	Tamas	12	?
?	Schwartz	Yakov	?	27 Jan. 1945
?	Schwartz	Yehuda	?	L
?	Schwartz	Eva	?	<sup>452</sup>
A-7710	Schwartz	Elisabeth	?	L
?	Schwarz	Iren	12	?
A-14095	Schwarz	Kalman	8 Apr. 1932	27 Jan. 1945
A-5109	Schwarz	Eugen (Jenő)	13 Apr. 1915	?
A-5343	Schwarz	Elisabeth	8 Apr. 1932	?
A-5727	Schwarz	Aladar	10 Jan. 1921	?
A-5728	Schwarz	Ignatz	10 Jan. 1921	?
A-6037	Schwarz	Elisabeth	49	?
A-7730	Schwarz	Josef	13 Apr. 1925	?
A-7731	Schwarz	Adolf	13 Apr. 1925	?
B-14295	Schwarz	Ferenc	11	27 Jan. 1945
?	Schweid	Andor	15	?
A-792	Seiler	Sarah	5 Oct. 1940	27 Jan. 1945
A-793	Seiler	Hannah	5 Oct. 1940	<sup>453</sup>
169094	Seiner	Milan	16 Nov. 1933	?
71787	Seiner	Milada	?	L
71789	Seiner	Hanna	?	L
A-1199	Seligsohn	Arthur	22 Jan. 1889	?
?	Selmanovic	Mor	14	?
A-5133	Senderowicz	Gizella	18	L

<sup>450</sup> "Died in the camp as a result of the experiments performed on her."<sup>451</sup> Died on Mar. 16, 1945.<sup>452</sup> Died at Auschwitz.<sup>453</sup> Died at Auschwitz.

Reg. No. (L = Liberated)	Family name	Given name	Birthday/age	Liberation Date
A-5134	Senderowicz	Rosa	18	L
A-6024	Silberger	Judith	20	L
A-6025	Silberger	Andrea	20	L
A-7221	Singer (Sinje)	Klara	28 years	?
A-1439	Slomowicz	Markus	18 Apr. 1925	?
A-1440	Slomowicz	Josef	28 Jan. 1931	?
A-1441	Slomowicz	Idel (Juda)	26 Jun. 1933	?
A-2517	Slomowicz	Lazar Lajoz	8 May 1926	27 Jan. 1945
A-1438	Slomowicz (Slomovitz)	Simon	19 Dec. 1897	?
A-2516	Slomowicz (Slomowicz)	Salomon	8 May 1926	27 Jan. 1945
77303	Sluschakova	Wala	3-4	?
?	Solomon	Shaul Almog	?	L
?	Solomon	Slomo Almog	?	L
A-1	Solomon	Rosalia	9	27 Jan. 1945
A-17454	Somogyi	Peter	14 Apr. 1935	27 Jan. 1945
A-17455	Somogyi	Tomas	14 Apr. 1935	27 Jan. 1945
?	Spiegel	Magda Zalikovich	5 Jan. 1915	27 Jan. 1945
A-7729	Spiegel	Ernst Czvi	5 Jan. 1915	27 Jan. 1945
A-23221	Spirova	Frida	9	?
A-27880	Spirova	Dora	9	27 Jan. 1945
A-14328	Stadler	Andor	10 Jun. 1929	?
A-7258	Stadler	Vera	10 Jun. 1929	?
A-27712	Stein	Judith	14	27 Jan. 1945
147742	Steiner	Zdenek	20 May 1929	27 Jan. 1945
147743	Steiner	Georg	20 May 1929	27 Jan. 1945
B-10504	Steiner	Endre	9 Jun. 1929	?
B-10505	Steiner	Zoltan	9 Jun. 1929	?
B-14566	Steiner	Jindrich	14	27 Jan. 1945
A-8272	Stern	Lea	14	27 Jan. 1945
A-8273	Stern	Hojnol	14	27 Jan. 1945
81769	Stockfisch	Hariette	3	27 Jan. 1945
147673	Stolz	Zdenek	21 Aug. 1921	?
A-9751	Storch	Lenke	30	L
A-60	Storch (Stroch)		?	?
A-9752	Storch (Weiss)	Olga	30	L
A-27126	Strauss	Gitta	10	27 Jan. 1945
A-27127	Strauss	Lilly	12	27 Jan. 1945
B-14272	Strauss	D.J.	8	27 Jan. 1945
?	Stroch	Jakob	15	?
168786	Süsser	Fritz	21 Apr. 1904	<sup>454</sup>
170896	Süsser	Hans	21 Apr. 1904	<sup>455</sup>
A-14094	Szandor	Josef (Henryk)	10 Jun. 1931	27 Jan. 1945
?	Taub	Yizchak	?	L
?	Taub	Zerah	?	L
A-2507	Taub	Georg	18 Feb. 1933	<sup>456</sup>
A-2508	Taub	Imre	18 Feb. 1933	<sup>457</sup>
A-6900	Teller	K.J.	14 ¾	27 Jan. 1945

<sup>454</sup> In 1945 to Gross-Rosen Concentration Camp, then evacuated to Dachau Concentration Camp.<sup>455</sup> In 1945 to Gross-Rosen Concentration Camp, then evacuated to Dachau Concentration Camp.<sup>456</sup> In 1945 evacuated to Buchenwald Concentration Camp.<sup>457</sup> In 1945 evacuated to Buchenwald Concentration Camp.

Reg. No. (L = Liberated)	Family name	Given name	Birthday/age	Liberation Date
A-3100	Tesler	Hermann	1931	27 Jan. 1945
A-3101	Tesler	Uszer	1931	27 Jan. 1945
A-23492	Traub	E.	5	27 Jan. 1945
A-23493	Traub	Hanka	5	27 Jan. 1945
188933	Van Gelder	Eddi	3	27 Jan. 1945
?	Vigozcka	Rachel Vachtel	?	L
?	Vigozcka	Sarah Lushek	?	L
188934	Viskoper	Robert	6	27 Jan. 1945
?	Vissan	(twin brother)	?	<sup>458</sup>
?	Vissan	Yuppy Yan	?	L
A-7046	Wasserman	Gisella	16	27 Jan. 1945
A-7045	Wassermann	Frieda	16	27 Jan. 1945
?	Weinberger	Irene	14	?
?	Weinheber	Berta	15	?
A-6031	Weiser	Fanny	20	?
A-6032	Weiser	Jolan	20	?
?	Weiss	Jonathan Bandy	?	L
?	Weiss	Mayer (Bela)	?	L
A-160	Weiss	?	?	?
A-27197	Weiss	Migrun	6	27 Jan. 1945
A-27202	Weiss	M.E.	10	27 Jan. 1945
A-3626	Weiss	Olga	?	?
A-3627	Weiss	Malvine	?	?
A-3634	Weiss	Edith	1926	27 Jan. 1945
A-3635	Weiss	Piroska	1926	27 Jan. 1945
A-5554	Weiss	Lili	14 Nov. 1930	27 Jan. 1945
A-6026	Weiss	Ewa	10 Aug. 1922	27 Jan. 1945
A-6027	Weiss	Vera	10 Aug. 1922	27 Jan. 1945
A-8270	Weiss	Anna	19	L
A-8271	Weiss	Katalin	19	L
B-14354	Weiss	Jurai	7 months	27 Jan. 1945
A-27199	Weisshefer	B.E.	14 <sup>3</sup> / <sub>4</sub>	27 Jan. 1945
?	Weisz	Marta	11	?
A-12085	Weisz	Bela	8 Nov. 1930	27 Jan. 1945
A-12086	Weisz	Andor (Andre)	8 Nov. 1930	27 Jan. 1945
A-2509	Weisz	Hermann	3 May 1926	?
A-2510	Weisz	Lajosz	3 May 1926	?
A-27201	Weisz	Eva E.	13	27 Jan. 1945
A-27660	Weisz	Elisabeth	11	27 Jan. 1945
A-5108	Weisz (Weiss)	Sandor	1 Feb. 1930	?
?	Weiszmann	Ibolya	13	?
A-2520	Wiesel	Hermann	14 Feb. 1930	27 Jan. 1945
A-2521	Wiesel	Siegmund	14 Feb. 1930	?
A-27208	Winter	Erika	13	27 Jan. 1945
B-14348	Winter	Otto	10	27 Jan. 1945
?	Winzorek	Bogasta	15	?
186644	Wittenberg	Imre	2 Jun. 1925	?
?	Wolkowitz	Rifka	5	?
?	Wolkowitz	Fischel	8	?
B-14880	Worstmann (Workman)	Gabor	14	27 Jan. 1945

<sup>458</sup> Died at Auschwitz.

Reg. No. (L = Liberated)	Family name	Given name	Birthday/age	Liberation Date
?	Wurms	Juda	15	?
?	Zawer	Miri Sheinberger	?	L
?	Zawer	Sarah Tigherman	?	L
B-14827	Zelewski	Leib	12	27 Jan. 1945
B-14828	Zelewski	Samuel	12	27 Jan. 1945
A-5418	Zelikowic	Magda	?	?
A-3102	Zelmanowitz	Mor	7 Jun. 1931	27 Jan. 1945
A-5419	Zelmanowitz	Eva	7 Jun. 1931	27 Jan. 1945
?	Zucker	Maria	13	?
A-27772	Zwischberg	Vera	12	27 Jan. 1945



## Bibliography

### 1. Sources Used for this Study

- *Dr. Mengele boncolóorvosa voltam az auschwitz-i krematóriumban*. Copyright by Nyiszli Miklós, Oradea, Nagyvárad, 1946. Tipografia “Grafica” Oradea.
- *Dr. Mengele boncolóorvosa voltam az auschwitz-i krematóriumban*. Copyright by Világ. Debrecen, 1947.
- “Tanú voltam Nürnbergben,” in: *Világ*, April 18 – May 22, 1948.
- “S.S. Obersturmführer docteur Mengele. Journal d’un médecin déporté au crématorium d’Auschwitz,” in: *Les Temps Modernes*, No. 65, March 1951, pp. 1654-1673, and No. 66, April 1951, pp. 1855-1886.
- *Médecin à Auschwitz: Souvenirs d’un médecin déporté*. Traduit et adapté du hongrois par Tibère Kremer (Translated and adapted from the Hungarian by Tibère Kremer), Julliard, Paris, 1961.
- “Auschwitz. Tagebuch eines Lagerarztes,” in: *Quick* (Munich), Nos. 3-11, 1961.
- *Auschwitz: A Doctor’s Eye-witness Account*. A Panther Book, London, 1962.
- *Orvos voltam Auschwitzban (I Was a Doctor in Auschwitz)*. Irodalmi könyvkiadó, Bucharest, 1964.
- *Im Jenseits der Menschlichkeit: Ein Gerichtsmediziner in Auschwitz*. translated by Angelika Bihari, edited by Friedrich Herber, Dietz Verlag, Berlin, 1992.
- *Byłem asystentem doktora Mengele: Wspomnienia lekarza z Oświęcimia*. Wydawnictwo Trio, Warsaw, 1996.
- National Archives Collection of World War II War Crimes Records, Record Group 238.5.3 Official Records of the Trials before U.S. Military Tribunals. On microfilm: National Archives Microfilm Publications, Microfilm Publication M892, Roll 1-113.

### 2. General Bibliography

- Adler, Hans Günther, *Theresienstadt: Das Antlitz einer Zwangsgemeinschaft*. Mohr, Tübingen 1955; Wallstein Verlag, Göttingen, 2005.
- Adler, Hans Günther, Hermann Langbein, Ella Lingens-Reiner, *Auschwitz: Zeugnisse und Berichte*. Europäische Verlagsanstalt, Cologne/Frankfurt upon Main, 1979.
- Archives Paul Rassinier (eds.), *Les légendes qui basculent. Correspondance entre Paul Rassinier et Albert Paraz, 1950-1957*. édition hors commerce, [France], [2016].
- Baranowski, Julian, *The Łódź Ghetto 1940-1944: Vademecum*. Archiwum Państwowe w Łodzi & Bilbo, Łódź, 1999.
- Bartosik, Igor, *Bunt Sonderkommando: 7 października 1944 roku*. Państwowe Muzeum Auschwitz-Birkenau. Oświęcim, 2015.
- Bartosik, Igor, Łukasz Martyniak, Piotr Setkiewicz (eds.), *The beginnings of the extermination of Jews in KL Auschwitz in the light of the source materials*. Auschwitz-Birkenau State Museum, Oświęcim, 2014.

- Bendel, Sigismund 1947, Interrogation, in: Ministère de l'Intérieur. Direction Générale de la Sureté Nationale. "Procès-Verbal"; AGK, NTN, 153, pp. 210f. (4 pages; only the front page is paginated)
- Bendel, Sigismund 1948, Deposition, in: Official Record. United State Military Tribunals Nürnberg. Case No. 6, Tribunal 6. U.S. vs Carl Krauch *et al.* Volume 26, Transcript (English), pp. 9586-9618.
- Bezwińska, Jadwiga, Danuta Czech (eds.), *KL Auschwitz seen by the SS*. Howard Fertig, New York, 1984.
- Braham, Randolph L. 1963, *The Destruction of Hungarian Jewry*. New York, 1963.
- Braham, Randolph L. 1981a, *The Politics of Genocide: The Holocaust in Hungary*. Columbia University Press, New York, 1981.
- Braham, Randolph L. 1981b, *A Magyar Holocaust*. Gondolat-Budapest, Blackburn International Incorporation Washington. Columbia University Press, New York, 1981.
- Camhi Fromer, Rebecca, *The Holocaust Odyssey of Daniel Bennis, Sonderkommando*. The University of Alabama Press, Tuscaloosa, 1993.
- Christianson, Scott, *The Last Gasp: The Rise and Fall of the American Gas Chamber*. University of California Press, Berkeley, Cal. 2010.
- Comité international de la Croix-Rouge. *Documents sur l'activité du Comité international de la Croix-Rouge en faveur des civils détenus dans les camps de concentration en Allemagne (1939-1945)*. 2nd ed., Geneva, 1946.
- Czech, Danuta 1964, "Kalendarium der Ereignisse im Konzentrationslager Auschwitz-Birkenau," in: *Hefte von Auschwitz*. Wydawnictwo Państwowego Muzeum w Oświęcimiu, No. 8, 1964, pp. 47-122.
- Czech, Danuta 1970, "Deportation und Vernichtung der griechischen Juden im KL Auschwitz," in: *Hefte von Auschwitz*. Verlag Staatliches Auschwitz-Museum, No. 11, 1970, pp. 5-37.
- Czech, Danuta 1974, "Rola męskiego obozu szpitalnego w KL Auschwitz II" ("The role of the hospital camp for males at Concentration Camp Auschwitz II"), in: *Zeszyty Oświęcimskie*, Wydawnictwo Państwowego Muzeum w Oświęcimiu, No. 15, 1974, pp. 5-105; French: "Le rôle du camp d'hôpital pour hommes au KL Auschwitz II," in: *Contribution à l'histoire du KL Auschwitz*. Éditions du Musée d'État à Oświęcim, 1978, pp. 5-125.
- Czech, Danuta 1989, *Kalendarium der Ereignisse im Konzentrationslager Auschwitz-Birkenau 1939-1945*. Rowohlt Verlag, Reinbek bei Hamburg, 1989.
- Czech, Danuta 1997, *Auschwitz Chronicle: 1939-1945*. H. Holt, New York, 1997.
- Czech, Danuta, *et al.* (eds.), *Inmitten des grauenvollen Verbrechens: Handschriften von Mitgliedern des Sonderkommandos*. Verlag des Staatlichen Auschwitz-Birkenau Museums, 1996.
- Długoborski, Waclaw, Franciszek Piper 1999 (eds.), *Auschwitz, 1940-1945: Studien zur Geschichte des Konzentrations- und Vernichtungslagers Auschwitz*. Verlag des Staatlichen Museums Auschwitz-Birkenau, Oświęcim, 1999; the Polish edition appeared in 1995; English:
- Długoborski, Waclaw, Franciszek Piper 2000 (eds.), *Auschwitz 1940-1945: Central Issues in the History of the Camp*. Auschwitz-Birkenau State Museum, Oświęcim, 2000.

- Enwonwu, C.O., W.A. Falkler, E.O. Idibge, K.O. Savage, “Noma (cancrum oris): questions and answers,” *Oral Diseases*, Vol. 5, No. 2, April 1999, pp. 144-149; [www.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/pubmed/10522212](http://www.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/pubmed/10522212)
- Flury, Ferdinand, Franz Zernik, *Schädliche Gase, Dämpfe, Nebel, Rauch- und Staubarten*. Verlag von Julius Springer, Berlin, 1931.
- Frąckiewicz, Jerzy, “Das Nebenlager Golleschau,” in: *Hefte von Auschwitz*, Państwowe Muzeum w Oświęcimiu, No. 9. 1966, pp. 57-74.
- Freyer, Anne, Peter Hellmann, Lili Jacob Meier, Jean-Claude Pressac (eds.), *L'Album d'Auschwitz: D'après un album découvert par Lili Meier survivante du camp de concentration*. Editions du Seuil, Paris, 1983.
- Frickhinger, Hans Walter, *Schädlingsbekämpfung für Jedermann*. Helingsche Verlagsanstalt, Leipzig, 1942.
- Friedler, Eric, Barbara Siebert, Andreas Kilian, *Zeugen aus der Todeszone: Das jüdische Sonderkommando in Auschwitz*. Deutscher Taschenbuch Verlag, Munich, 2005.
- Friedman, Filip, *To jest Oświęcim*. Państwowe Wydawnictwo Literatury Politycznej, Warsaw, 1945. English: *This was Oswiecim: The Story of a Murder Camp*. The United Jewish Relief Appeal, London, 1946.
- Fritz Bauer Institut, Staatliches Museum Auschwitz (eds.), *Der Auschwitz-Prozeß*. Directmedia Publishing, Berlin 2004.
- Gilbert, Martin, *Endlösung: Die Vertreibung und Vernichtung der Juden. Ein Atlas*. Rowohlt, Reinbek bei Hamburg, 1995.
- Guionnet, Alain, “Etoile jaune et rouge,” in: *Revision*, No. 55-56, August-September 1994, pp. 23-30.
- Gutman, Yisrael, Michael Berenbaum (eds), *Auschwitz, 1940-1945: Central Issues in the History of the Camp*. Indiana University Press, Bloomington and Indianapolis, 1994.
- György, Huszár, “Magyar orvosok önéletrajzai” (Autobiographies of Hungarian doctors), *Orvostörténeti Közlemények* (Communicationes de historia artis medicinae), Vol. 32 (1987).
- Hilberg, Raul 2003, *The Destruction of the European Jews*. 3 vols., 3rd ed., Yale University Press, New Haven/London, 2003.
- Irmscher, Richard, “Nochmals: ‘Die Einsatzfähigkeit der Blausäure bei tiefen Temperaturen’,” in: *Zeitschrift für hygienische Zoologie und Schädlingsbekämpfung*, No. 34, 1942, pp. 35f.
- Iwaszko, Tadeusz, “The Housing, Clothing and Feeding of the Prisoners,” in: *Długoborski/Piper 2000*, Vol. II, pp. 51-64.
- Kárný, Miroslav 1995, *Terezínská pamětní kniha*. Terezínská Iniciativa, Melantrich, Prague, 1995.
- Kárný, Miroslav 1997, “Das Theresienstädter Familienlager (BIIf) in Birkenau (September 1943-Juli 1944),” in: *Hefte von Auschwitz*. Verlag Staatliches Auschwitz-Museum, No. 20, 1997, pp. 133-237.
- Kessler, Richard, “Rationelle Wärme-Wirtschaft in Krematorien unter besonderer Berücksichtigung der Leuchtgasfeuerung,” *V. Jahrbuch des Verbandes der Feuerbestattungs-Vereine Deutscher Sprache 1930*. Königsberg, 1930, pp. 133-143.
- Kielar, Wiesław, *Anus Mundi: Five Years in Auschwitz*. Penguin Books, Harmondsworth/New York, 1982.



- Klarsfeld, Serge 1978, *Le mémorial de la déportation des Juifs de France*. Beate & Serge Klarsfeld, Paris, 1978.
- Klarsfeld, Serge 1989 (ed.), *David Olère: A Painter in the Sonderkommando at Auschwitz*. The Beate Klarsfeld Foundation, New York, 1989.
- Klarsfeld, Serge, Maxime Steinberg (eds.), *Mémorial de la déportation des Juifs de Belgique*. The Beate Klarsfeld Foundation, New York, 1994.
- Knopp, Sonja, "Wir lebten mitten im Tod." *Das Sonderkommando in Auschwitz in schriftlichen und mündlichen Häftlingserinnerungen*. Peter Lang, Frankfurt am Main, 2009.
- Kranz, Tomasz, *Zur Erfassung der Häftlingssterblichkeit im Konzentrationslager Lublin*. Państwowe Muzeum na Majdanku, Lublin, 2007.
- Kraus, Ota, Erich Kulka, *Továrna na smrt: Dokument o Osvětimi*. Naše Vojsko SPB. Prague, 1957. German: *Die Todesfabrik*, Kongress-Verlag, Berlin, 1958; English: *The Death Factory*, Pergamon Press, Oxford, 1966.
- Krewer B., Claudette Bloch, J. Furmansk et al., *Témoignages sur Auschwitz*. Editions de l'Amicale des déportés d'Auschwitz, Paris, 1946.
- Kubica, Helena 1989, "Dr Josef Mengele i śladi jego zbrodni," in: *Przegląd Lekarski* (Medical Review), No. 1/46, 1989, pp. 96-106.
- Kubica, Helena 1997, "Dr. Mengele und seine Verbrechen in Konzentrationslager Auschwitz-Birkenau," in: *Hefte von Auschwitz*. Verlag des Staatliches Auschwitz-Museum, No. 20, 1997, pp. 369-455.
- Langbein, Hermann, *Der Auschwitz-Prozess: Eine Dokumentation*. Europa Verlag, Vienna, 1965.
- Lasik, Aleksander 1997, "Die Personalbesatzung des Gesundheitsdienstes der SS im Konzentrationslager Auschwitz-Birkenau in den Jahren 1940-1945," in: *Hefte von Auschwitz*. Verlag des Staatliches Auschwitz-Museum, No. 20, 1997, pp. 290-368.
- Lasik, Aleksander 2000, "The Auschwitz SS Garrison," in: Długoborski/Piper 2000, Vol. I, pp. 281-337.
- Lassier, Hubert, "Mengele mi ha detto," *Oggi*, No. 10, March 9, 1983, pp. 62f.
- Lensky, Robert, *Der Holocaust vor Gericht: Der Prozeß gegen Ernst Zündel 1988*. 2nd ed., Castle Hill Publishers, Uckfield, 2010.
- Lentz III, Harris M., *Obituaries in the Performing Arts, 2009*. McFarland & Company, Jefferson, N.C., 2010.
- Levi, Primo, *Se questo è un uomo*. Einaudi, Turin, 1984.
- Lévy, Robert, "Auschwitz II (Birkenau)," in: Université de Strasbourg 1996, pp. 457-466.
- Lichtenstein, Heiner, *Warum Auschwitz nicht bombardiert wurde*. Bund Verlag, Cologne, 1980.
- Lifton, Robert Jay, *Nazi Doctors: Medical Killing and the Psychology of Genocide*. BasicBooks, New York, 1986.
- Lipstadt, Deborah E., *Denying the Holocaust: The Growing Assault on Truth and Memory*. Penguin Books, New York, 1994.
- Makowski, Antoni, "Organizacja, rozwój i działalność szpitala więzińskiego w Monowicach (KL Auschwitz III)," ("Organization, Development and Activity of the Inmate Infirmary in Monowitz") in: *Zeszyty Oświęcimskie*, Wydawnictwo Państwowego Muzeum w Oświęcimiu, No. 15, 1974, pp. 107-170; French: "Organisation, développement et activité de l'hôpital des prisonniers à Monowitz (KL

- Auschwitz III),” in: *Contribution à l'histoire du KL Auschwitz*, Éditions du Musée d'État à Oświęcim, 1978, pp. 127-201.
- Mark, Ber, *Des voix dans la nuit: La résistance juive à Auschwitz*. Plon, Paris, 1982.
  - Marsalek, Hans, *Mauthausen*. La Pietra, Milan, 1977.
  - Mattogno, Carlo 1986, *Auschwitz: Un Caso di Plagio*. Edizioni La Sfinge, Parma, 1986; English: “Auschwitz: A Case of Plagiarism,” *The Journal of Historical Review*, Vol. 10, No. 1 (1990), pp. 5-24.
  - Mattogno, Carlo 1988, *Medico ad Auschwitz: Anatomia di un falso*. Edizioni La Sfinge, Parma, 1988.
  - Mattogno, Carlo 1996, *Olocausto: dilettanti allo sbaraglio. Pierre Vidal-Naquet, Georges Wellers, Deborah Lipstadt, Till Bastian, Florent Brayard et alii contro il revisionismo storico*. Edizioni di Ar, 1996.
  - Mattogno, Carlo 2004, *Auschwitz: trasferimenti e finte gasazioni*. Effepi, Genoa, 2004; German: “Das Ghetto von Lodz in der Holocaust-Propaganda: Die Evakuierung des Lodzer Ghettos und die Deportationen nach Auschwitz (August 1944),” *Vierteljahreshefte für freie Geschichtsforschung*, Vol. 7, No. 1 (2003), pp. 30-35.
  - Mattogno, Carlo 2007, *La deportazione degli Ebrei ungheresi del maggio-luglio 1944*. Effepi, Genoa, 2007; an English translation of an earlier version of this study is available online as “The Deportation of Hungarian Jews from May to July 1944: A Preliminary Account” at <https://codoh.com/library/document/357/>.
  - Mattogno, Carlo 2008, *Il dottor Mengele e i gemelli di Auschwitz*. Effepi, Genoa, 2008; English: “Dr. Mengele’s ‘Medical Experiments’ on Twins in the Birkenau Gypsy Camp” *Inconvenient History* 5.4 (2013), pp. 407-451; <http://inconvenienthistory.com/5/4/3223>.
  - Mattogno, Carlo 2014, “The Recovery of Human Fat in the Cremation Pits,” in: *Inconvenient History*, Vol. 6, No. 3, 2014; [www.inconvenienthistory.com/6/3/3332](http://www.inconvenienthistory.com/6/3/3332).
  - Mattogno, Carlo 2015a, *The Real Case for Auschwitz*. Castle Hill Publishers, Uckfield 2015.
  - Mattogno, Carlo 2015b, *Auschwitz: Le forniture di coke, legname e Zyklon B*. Effepi, Genoa, 2015.
  - Mattogno, Carlo 2015c, *The Central Construction Office of the Waffen-SS and Police Auschwitz: Organization, Responsibilities, Activities*. 2nd ed., Castle Hill Publishers, Uckfield, 2015.
  - Mattogno, Carlo 2016a, *Debunking the Bunkers of Birkenau: Black Propaganda Versus History*. Castle Hill Publishers, Uckfield, 2016.
  - Mattogno, Carlo 2016b, *Auschwitz: Open-Air Incinerations*. 2nd ed., Castle Hill Publishers, Uckfield, 2016.
  - Mattogno, Carlo 2016c, *Healthcare in Auschwitz: Medical Care and Special Treatment of Registered Inmates*. Castle Hill Publishers, Uckfield, 2016.
  - Mattogno, Carlo 2016d, *Gli Einsatzgruppen nei territori orientali occupati*. Effepi, Genoa, 2016; English in preparation.
  - Mattogno, Carlo 2016e, *Inside the Gas Chambers: The Extermination of Mainstream Holocaust Historiography*. 2nd ed., Castle Hill Publishers, Uckfield, 2016.
  - Mattogno, Carlo 2016f, *Curated Lies: The Auschwitz Museum’s Misrepresentations, Distortions and Deceptions*. Castle Hill, Uckfield, 2016.
  - Mattogno, Carlo 2016g, *Auschwitz: Crematorium I and the Alleged Homicidal Gasings*. 2nd ed., Castle Hill Publishers, Uckfield, 2016.

- Mattogno, Carlo 2017, *Commandant of Auschwitz: Rudolf Höss, His Torture and His Forced Confessions*. Castle Hill Publishers, Uckfield 2017.
- Mattogno, Carlo 2018, *Auschwitz: A Three-Quarter Century of Propaganda. Origins, Development and Decline of the "Gas Chamber" Propaganda Lie*. Castle Hill Publishers, Uckfield, 2018.
- Mattogno, Carlo, Franco Deana, *The Cremation Furnaces of Auschwitz*. Castle Hill Publishers, Uckfield, 2015, 3 Vols.
- Mattogno, Carlo, Thomas Kues, Jürgen Graf, *The "Extermination Camps" of "Aktion Reinhardt": An Analysis and Refutation of Factitious "Evidence," Deceptions and Flawed Argumentation of the "Holocaust Controversies" Bloggers*. 2nd ed., Castle Hill Publishers, Uckfield, 2015.
- Mazal, Harry W., "Zyklon-B. A Brief Report on the Physical Structure and Composition," in: <http://phdn.org/archives/holocaust-history.org/auschwitz/zyklonb/>
- McNamara, B.P., *The Toxicity of Hydrocyanic Acid Vapors in Man*. Edgewood Arsenal Technical Report EB-TR-76023, Department of the Army, Headquarters, Edgewood Arsenal, Aberdeen Proving Ground, Maryland, August 1976; [www.dtic.mil/cgibin/GetTRDoc?AD=ADA028501](http://www.dtic.mil/cgibin/GetTRDoc?AD=ADA028501).
- Morsch, Günter, Betrand Perz (eds.), *Neue Studien zu nationalsozialistischen Massentötungen durch Giftgas: Historische Bedeutung, technische Entwicklung, revisionistische Leugnung*. Metropolis, Berlin, 2011.
- Müller, Filip, *Sonderbehandlung: Drei Jahre in den Krematorien und Gaskammern von Auschwitz*. Verlag Steinhausen, Munich, 1979a; English: *Auschwitz Inferno: The Testimony of a Sonderkommando*. translated by S. Flatauer, Routledge & Kegan, London, 1979b.
- Nyiszli, Myklós 1946, *Dr. Mengele boncolóorvosa voltam az auschwitz-i krematóriumban*. Oradea, Nagyvárad, 1946. Tipografia "Grafica" Oradea.
- Nyiszli, Myklós 1947, *Dr. Mengele boncolóorvosa voltam az auschwitz-i krematóriumban*. Világ, Debrecen, 1947.
- Nyiszli, Myklós 1948, "Tanú voltam Nürnbergben," in: *Világ*, April 18 – May 22, 1948.
- Nyiszli, Myklós 1951, "S.S.Obersturmführer docteur Mengele. Journal d'un médecin déporté au crématorium d'Auschwitz," in: *Les Temps Modernes*, No. 65, March 1951, pp. 1654-1673, and No. 66, April 1951, pp. 1855-1886.
- Nyiszli, Myklós 1960, *A Doctor's Eye-witness Account*. Translated by Tibère Kremer and Richard Seaver. With a foreword by Bruno Bettelheim. Frederick Fell Edition, New York, 1960.
- Nyiszli, Myklós 1961a, *Médecin à Auschwitz: Souvenirs d'un médecin déporté*. translated and adapted from the Hungarian by Tibère Kremer, Julliard, Paris, 1961.
- Nyiszli, Myklós 1961b, "Auschwitz. Tagebuch eines Lagerarztes," in: *Quick* (Munich), Nos. 3-11, 1961.
- Nyiszli, Myklós 1962, *Auschwitz: A Doctor's Eye-witness Account*. A Panther Book, London, 1962.
- Nyiszli, Myklós 1964, *Orvos voltam Auschwitzban (I Was a Doctor in Auschwitz)*. Irodalmi könyvkiadó, Bucharest, 1964.
- Nyiszli, Myklós 1992, *Im Jenseits der Menschlichkeit: Ein Gerichtsmediziner in Auschwitz*. translated by Angelika Bihari, edited by Friedrich Herber, Dietz Verlag, Berlin, 1992.

- Nyszli, Myklós 1996, *Bylem asystentem doktora Mengele: Wspomnienia lekarza z Oświęcimia*. Wydawnictwo Trio, Warsaw, 1996.
- Nyszli, Myklós 2000, *Bylem asystentem doktora Mengele: Wspomnienia lekarza z Oświęcimia*. translated by Tadeusz Olszański, Frap-Books, Oświęcim, 2000.
- Nyszli, Myklós 2001, *I Was Doctor Mengele's Assistant: The Memoirs of an Auschwitz Physician*. translated by Witold Zbirohowski-Kościa, Frap-Books, Oświęcim, 2001.
- Olson, Kent R., *Intossicazioni acute: veleni, farmaci e droghe*. Springer-Verlag Italia, Milan, 1999.
- Orth, Karin, "Rudolf Höss und die "Endlösung der Judenfrage." Drei Argumente gegen deren Datierung auf den Sommer 1941," in: *Werkstattgeschichte*, No. 18, November 1999, pp. 45-57.
- Ottolenghi, Gustavo, *La mappa dell'inferno: Tutti i luoghi di detenzione nazisti 1933-1945*. Sugarco Edizioni, Carnago, 1993.
- Pankowicz, Andrzej, "Das KL Auschwitz in den Nürnberger Prozessen (1945-1949)," in: *Hefte von Auschwitz*, Verlag des Staatliches Auschwitz-Museum, No. 18, 1990, pp. 247-367.
- Paskuly, Steven (ed.), *Death Dealer. The Memoirs of the SS Kommandant at Auschwitz*. Da Capo Press, New York, 1996.
- Peters, Gerhard, *Blausäure zur Schädlingsbekämpfung: Sammlung chemischer und chemisch-technischer Vorträge*. Verlag von Ferdinand Enke, Stuttgart, 1933.
- Phillips, Raymond (ed.), *Trial of Josef Kramer and Forty-Four Others (The Belsen Trial)*. William Hodge & Co, London/Edinburgh/Glasgow, 1949.
- Picciotto Fargion, Liliana, *Il libro della memoria: Gli Ebrei deportati dall'Italia (1943-1945)*. Mursia Editore, Turin, 1995
- Piper, Franciszek 1993, *Die Zahl der Opfer von Auschwitz*. Verlag Staatliches Museum in Oświęcim, 1993.
- Piper, Franciszek 1994, "Gas chambers and Crematoria," in: Gutman/Berenbaum 1994, pp. 157-182.
- Piper, Franciszek 1999, "Vernichtung," in: Długoborski/Piper 1999, Vol. III.
- Piper, Franciszek 2000, "Mass Murder," in: Długoborski/Piper 2000, Vol. III.
- Poliakov, Léon, *Auschwitz*, Julliard, Paris, 1973.
- Porter, Carlos Whitlock, *Made in Russia: The Holocaust*. Historical Review Press, Brighton, 1988.
- Posner, Gerald L., John Ware, *Mengele: The Complete Story*. McGraw-Hill Book Company, New York/St. Louis/San Francisco/Hamburg/Mexico/Toronto, 1986.
- Pressac, Jean-Claude, "Les 'Krématorien' IV et V de Birkenau et leurs chambres à gaz. Construction et fonctionnement," in: *Le Monde Juif*, Vol. 38, July-September 1982, pp. 91-131.
- Pressac, Jean-Claude, *Auschwitz: Technique and Operation of the Gas Chambers*. The Beate Klarsfeld Foundation, New York, 1989.
- Pressac, Jean-Claude, *Les crématoires d'Auschwitz: La machinerie du meurtre de masse*. CNRS Éditions, Paris, 1993
- Pressac, Jean-Claude, *Le macchine dello sterminio: Auschwitz 1941-1945*. Feltrinelli, Milan, 1994.

- Provan, Charles D., “New Light on Dr. Miklos Nyiszli and His Auschwitz Book,” in: *The Journal of Historical Review*, Vol. 20, No. 1, January/February 2001, pp. 20-29.
- Rada Ochrony Pomników Walki i Męczeństwa (ed.), *Auschwitz: Nazi Extermination Camp*. Interpress Publishers, Warsaw, 1978.
- Rassinier, Paul, *Ulysse trahi par les siens*, La Librairie française, 1961; reprint: La Vieille Taupe, Paris, 1980; Rome: La Sfinge, 2006.
- Rassinier, Paul, *Le Drame des juifs européens*. Les Sept Couleurs, 1964; reprint: La Vieille Taupe, 1984; Italian: *Il dramma degli Ebrei. Edizioni “Europa.”* Rome, 1967; slightly abbreviated English translation in:
- Rassinier, Paul, *Debunking the Genocide Myth: A Study of the Nazi Concentration Camps and the Alleged Extermination of European Jewry*. Trans. By Adam Robbins, The Noontide Press, Los Angeles, 1978; PDF online at <http://aaargh.vho.org/fran/livres/debunk.pdf>.
- Reitlinger, Gerald, *The Final Solution: The Attempt to Exterminate the Jews of Europe 1939-1945*. Vallentine, Mitchell, London, 1953. Italian.: *La soluzione finale: Il tentativo di sterminio degli Ebrei d'Europa 1939-1945*. Il Saggiatore, Milan, 1965.
- Rozett, Robert, Shmuel Spector, *Encyclopedia of the Holocaust*. Yad Vashem, Routledge, New York, 2013.
- Rudolf, Germar 2003, “From the Records of the Frankfurt Auschwitz Trial, Part 2,” *The Revisionist* Vol. 1, No. 3, 2003, pp. 352-358.
- Rudolf, Germar 2016 (ed.), *Auschwitz: Plain Fact*. 2nd ed., Castle Hill Publishers, Uckfield, 2016.
- Rudolf, Germar 2017, *The Chemistry of Auschwitz*. Castle Hill Publishers, Uckfield 2017.
- Rudolf, Germar, Mattoigno, Carlo, *Auschwitz Lies: Legends, Lies, and Prejudices on the Holocaust*. Theses & Dissertations Press, Chicago, 2005.
- Rüter, Christiaan F. (ed.), *Justiz und NS-Verbrechen: Sammlung deutscher Strafurteile wegen nationalsozialistischer Tötungsverbrechen 1945-1966*. Vol. XXII, Amsterdam, 1981.
- Sanford, P. Gerald, *Nitro-Explosives: A Practical Treatise*. Crosby Lockwood & Son, London, 1906.
- Sehn, Jan, “Obóz koncentracyjny i zagłady Oświęcim,” in: *Biuletyn Głównej Komisji Badania Zbrodni Niemieckich w Polsce*. Poznań, 1946, pp. 63-130.
- Silberschein, Abraham, *Die Judenausrottung in Polen*. Dritte Serie, II. Teil, “Die Lagergruppe Oswiecim (Auschwitz),” Geneva, 1944.
- Soviet Extraordinary State Commission (ed.), *Soviet Government Statements on Nazi Atrocities*. Hutchinson & Co., London, undated (1946).
- Staatliches Museum Auschwitz (ed.), *Die Sterbebücher von Auschwitz*. K.G. Saur. Munich, 1995.
- Strzelecka, Irena, Piotr Setkiewicz, “The Construction, Expansion and Development of the Camp and its Branches,” in: Długoborski/Piper 2000, Vol. I, pp. 63-138.
- Szymański, Tadeusz, Danuta Szymańska, Tadeusz Śnieszko, “Das ‘Spital’ im Zigeuner-Familienlager in Auschwitz-Birkenau,” in: Hamburger Institut für Sozialforschung (ed.), *Die Auschwitz-Hefte*. Beltz Verlag, Weinheim und Basel, 1987, Vol. I, pp. 199-207.
- Trunk, Achim, “Die todbringenden Gase,” in: Morsch/Perz 2011, pp. 23-49.

- United Nations War Crimes Commission (ed.), *Law Reports of Trials of War Criminals*. Selected and prepared by the United Nations War Crimes Commission. English Edition. His Majesty's Stationery Office, London, 1947. Volume I: "Case No. 9. Trial of Bruno Tesch and two others. British Military Court, Hamburg"; Volume II: "Case No. 10. The Belsen Trial. Trial of Josef Kramer and 44 others. British Military Court, Luneburg."
- Université de Strasbourg, Faculté des lettres et sciences humaines (ed.). *De l'Université aux Camps de Concentration. Témoignages Strasbourgeois*. 4th ed., Presses Universitaires de Strasbourg, Strasbourg, 1996 (facsimile reprint of the original 1947 edition).
- Vaillant-Couturier, Marie-Claude, *Auschwitz*. Édition Union des Femmes Françaises, Paris, 1945.
- van Pelt, Robert Jan, R.J. *The Case for Auschwitz: Evidence from the Irving Trial*. Indiana University Press, Bloomington/Indianapolis, 2002.
- Venezia, Shlomo, *Sonderkommando Auschwitz: La verità sulle camere a gas. Una testimonianza unica*. Rizzoli, Milan, 2007.
- Vihar, Béla, *Sárga könyv: Adatok a Magyar Zsidóság háborús szenvedéseiből 1941-1945*. Hechaluc-Kiad, Budapest, 1945.
- Volli, Gemma, "La tragedia degli Ebrei di Corfù," in: *Israel*, November 4, 1946.
- Vrba, Rudolf, Alan Bestic, *I cannot forgive*, Sidgwick & Jackson, London, 1963.
- Wagner, Bernd C., *IG Auschwitz: Zwangsarbeit und Vernichtung von Häftlingen des Lagers Monowitz 1941-1945*. K.G. Saur Verlag, Munich, 2000.
- Waitz, Robert, "Auschwitz III (Monowitz)," in: Université de Strasbourg 1996, pp. 467-499.
- War Refugee Board (ed.), *The Extermination Camps of Auschwitz (Oswiecim) and Birkenau in Upper Silesia*. Executive Office of the President, War Refugee Board, Washington, D.C., November 1944.
- Wellers, Georges, "Révolte du sonderkommando à Auschwitz," in: *Le Monde Juif*, No. 18, April 1949, pp. 17f.
- Wellers, Georges, *Les chambres à gaz ont existé: Des documents, des témoignages, des chiffres*. Gallimard, Paris, 1981.
- Wróbel, Halina, "Die Liquidation des Konzentrationslagers Auschwitz-Birkenau," in: *Hefte von Auschwitz*, Wydawnictwo Państwowego Muzeum w Oświęcimiu, No. 6, 1962, pp. 3-41.

### 3. Principal Editions and Translations of Miklós Nyiszli's Book

- *Auschwitz. A Doctor's Eye-witness Account*. Translated by Tibère Kremer and Richard Seaver. With a foreword by Bruno Bettelheim. Frederick Fell Edition, New York, 1960.
- *Auschwitz: At Last the Truth About Eichman's Inferno*. Fawcett Crest Books, Greenwich, 1960.
- *Médecin à Auschwitz. Souvenirs d'un médecin déporté*. Translated by Tibère Kremer, Julliard, Paris, 1961.
- *Medico ad Auschwitz: memorie di un deportato assistente del dottor Mengele*. Sugar, Milan 1962.

- *Auschwitz: A Doctors Eye-witness Account*. Panther Books, 1962.
- *Am fost medic la Auschwitz*. Editura pentru Literatura, Bucharest, 1965.
- *Pracownia doktora Mengele: wspomnienia lekarza z Oświęcimia*. Czytelnik, Warszawa, 1966.
- *Dr. Mengele boncolóorvosa voltam az auschwitz-i krematóriumban*. Irodalmi Kiadó, Bucharest, 1968.
- *Orvos voltam Auschwitzban*. Irodalmi Könyvkiadó, Budapest, 1968.
- *Auschwitz. A Doctor's Eyewitness Account*. Fawcett Publications, Inc., Greenwich, 1969.
- *Auschwitz: a doctor's eyewitness account*. Panther Books, London, 1971.
- *Am fost medic la Auschwitz*. Editura Eminescu, Bucharest, 1971.
- *Médecin à Auschwitz: souvenirs d'un médecin déporté*. Traduit et adapté du hongrois par Tibère Kremer. Éditions J'ai lu, Paris, 1971.
- *Auschwitz. A doctor's eye-witness account*. Mayflower Books, St Albans, 1973.
- *Auschwitz. O testemunho de um médico*. Record, Rio de Janeiro, 1975.
- *Médecin à Auschwitz: souvenirs d'un mdecin déporté*. Éditions Famot, Geneva, 1976.
- *Medico ad Auschwitz*. Longanesi, Milan, 1977.
- *Auschwitz. A Doctor's Eye-Witness Account*. Mayflower, London, 1977.
- *Auschwitz. A Doctor's Eye-Witness Account*. Granda Publishing, London, 1978.
- *Un medico a Auschwitz: memorie di un medico deportato*. Edizioni Forni, Geneva, 1980.
- *Ya 'Ošwitz meštir: 'ewenatañā tārik*. Addis Ababa, 1981.
- *U službi Doktora Mengelea*. Vjesnikova Press Agencija, Zagreb, 1981.
- *Hayiti ozro shel Mengele be-Oshvits*. Mar-li, Bnei Brak, 1985.
- *Sopravvissuto a Mengele*. Sugar Edizioni, Milan, 1985.
- *Auschwitz i medici della morte*. Fratelli Melita Editore, La Spezia, 1988.
- *Hayiti ozro shel Mengeleh be-Oshvits*. Mar-li, Bene Berak, 1988.
- *Médico en Auschwitz*. Editorial Posada, México, 1990.
- *Auschwitz i medici della morte*. Fratelli Melita Editore, La Spezia, 1991.
- *Auschwitz: a doctor's eyewitness account*. Arcade Publishing, New York, 1993.
- *Dr. Mengele boncolóorvosa voltam az auschwitz-i krematóriumban*. Lajos Alapítvány, Budapest, 1994.
- *Dr. Mengele boncolóorvosa voltam*. Merényi Kiadó, Budapest, 1997.
- *Am fost medic la Auschwitz. Morti fara morminte. Laboratorul si crematoriile doctorului Mengele*. Editura Aquila '93, Oradea, 1998.
- *I Was Doctor Mengele's Assistant: The Memoirs of an Auschwitz Physician*. Frap-Books, Oświęcim, 2001.
- *Dr. Mengele boncolóorvosa voltam az auschwitz-i krematóriumban*. Magyar Lajos Alapítvány, Budapest, 2003.
- *Ich war Doktor Mengeles Assistent*. Frap-Books, Oświęcim, 2004.
- *Hayiti 'ozro shel Mengeleh be-Oshvits*. Hotsa'ah u-defus, Lipa Fridman. Bene Berak, 2004.
- *Dr. Mengele boncolóorvosa voltam az auschwitz-i krematóriumban*. Magvető, Budapest, 2004.
- *Sono stato l'assistente del dottor Mengele: memorie di un medico internato ad Auschwitz*. Frap-Books, Oświęcim, 2005.

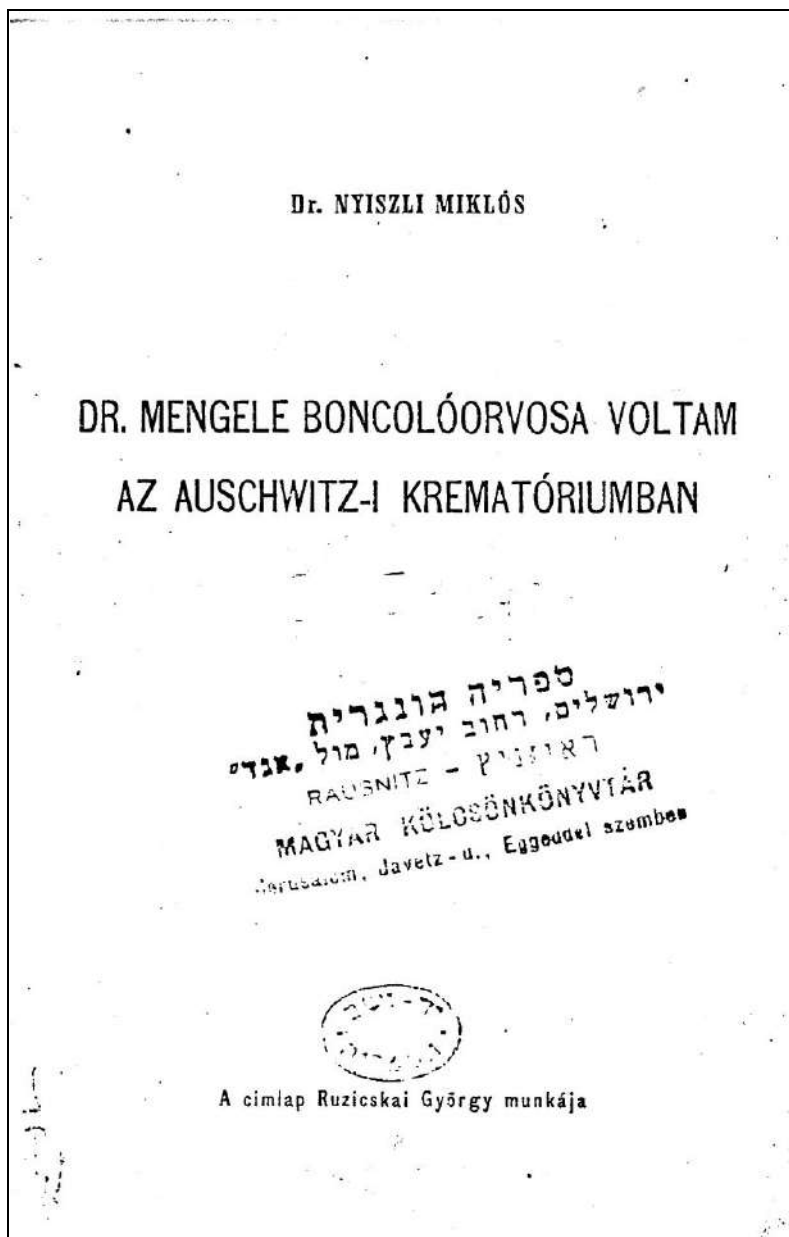
- *Im Jenseits der Menschlichkeit: ein Gerichtsmediziner in Auschwitz*. Karl Dietz, Berlin, 2005.
- *Maraṇayē toraṭuva*. Fāṣṭ Pablišin, Kołamba, 2006.
- *Byl jsem Mengeleho asistentem*. Academia, Praha, 2009.
- *Fui asistente del doctor Mengele: recuerdos de un medico internando en Auschwitz*. Frap-Books, Oświęcim, 2011.
- *Auschwitz. A Doctor's Eyewitness Account*. Arcade Books, 2011.
- *Assistent van Mengele: patholoog-anatoom in Auschwitz-Birkenau*. Verbum, Laren, 2012.
- *Sono stato l'assistente del dottor Mengele*. DeltaEdit, Parma, 2013.
- *Dr. Mengele boncolóorvosa voltam az auschwitz-i krematóriumban*. Magvető, Budapest, 2014.
- *Auschwitz: A Doctor's Eyewitness Account*. Penguin, London, 2015.



## Archive Abbreviations

- AGK: *Archiwum Głównej Komisji Badania Zbrodni w Polsce*, Archives of the Central Commission for the Investigation of Crimes in Poland, now *Instytut Pamięci Narodowej* (Institute of National Remembrance – Commission for the Prosecution of Crimes against the Polish Nation), Warsaw
- APMO: *Archiwum Państwowego Muzeum w Oświęcimiu* (Archives of the State Museum Auschwitz)
- BAK: *Bundesarchiv Koblenz* (German Federal Archives, Koblenz)
- FDRL: *Franklin Delano Roosevelt Library*, New York
- GARF: *Gosudarstvenny Arkhiv Rossiskoy Federatsii*, State Archive of the Russian Federation, Moscow
- IMT: Trials of the Major Criminals before the International Military Tribunal. Nuremberg, 14 November 1945 – 1 October 1946. Published at Nuremberg, Germany, 1947
- RGVA: *Rossiiskoi Gosudarstvennoi Voennyi Arkhiv*, Russian State Military Archive, Moscow
- RvO: *Rijksinstituut voor Oorlogsdocumentatie* (National Institute for War Documentation, Amsterdam)
- TNA: *The National Archives*, Kew Richmond, Great Britain, formerly *Public Record Office*
- YVA: Yad Vashem Archives, Jerusalem

## Documents



**DOCUMENT 1:** Title page of Miklós Nyiszli's 1946 book *Dr. Mengele boncolóorvosa voltam az auschwitz-i krematóriumban*. Copyright by Nyiszli Miklós, Oradea, Nagyvárad, 1946. Tipografia "Grafica" Oradea.

## Nyilatkozat.

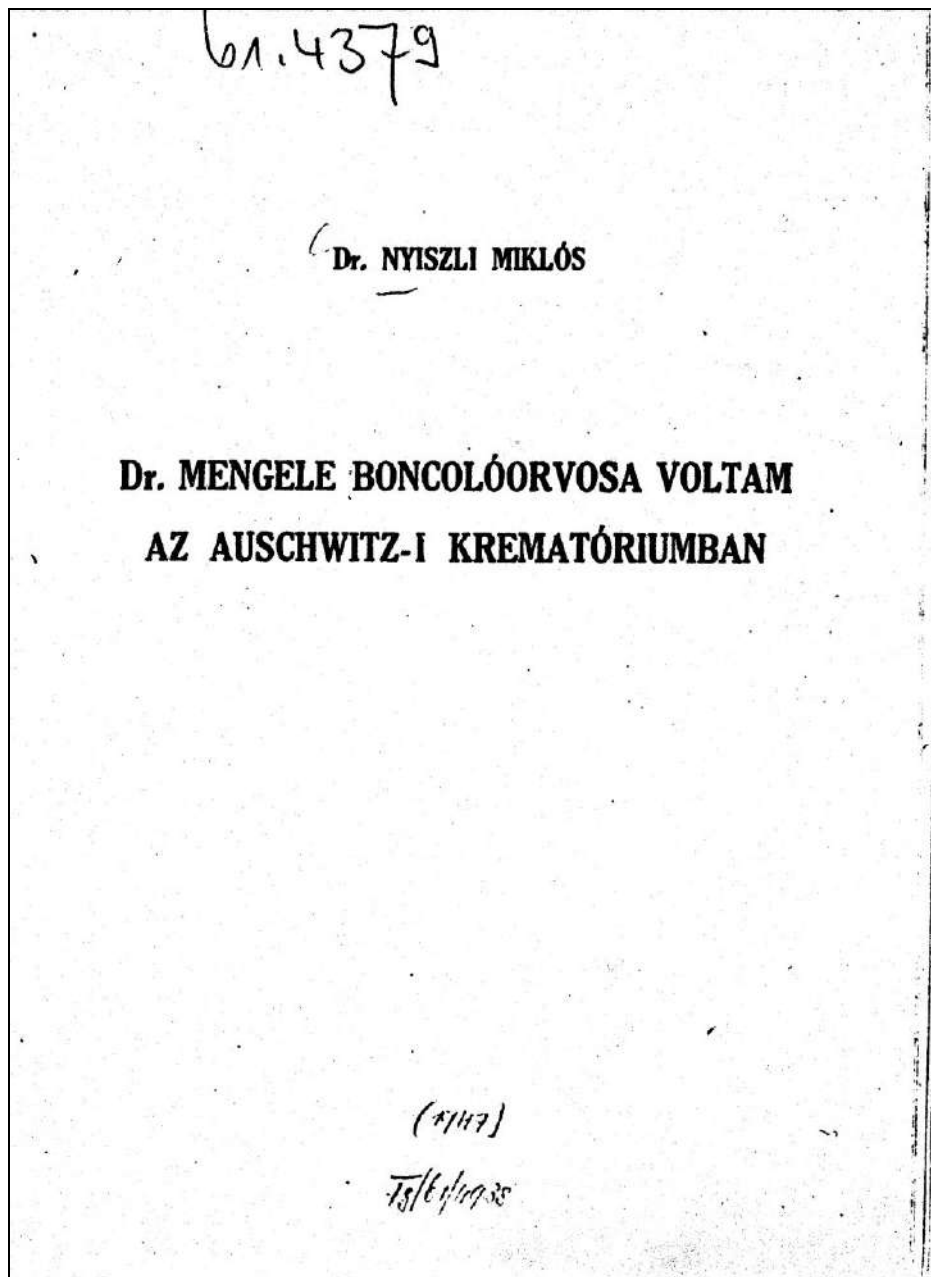
Alulírott dr. Nyiszli Miklós orvos, volt — A. 8450 — tetoválási számot viselő K. Z. fogoly, e szerzésemben megjelenő művet, mely az emberiség történetének legstétebb lapjait foglalja magában, minden indulattól mentesen, a valóságnak megfelelően, a legkisebb túlzás és kiszínezés mellőzésével írtam meg, mint közvetlen szemlélője és szereplője az Auschwitz-i krematóriumok és máglyák munkájának, melyeknek tüzeiben apák, anyák és gyermekek milliói enyésztek el.

Mint az Auschwitz-i krematóriumok I-ső orvosa, számtalan boncolási és törvényszéki orvostani jegyzőkönyvet szerkesztettem és láttam el tetoválási számom kézjegyével. Ezen okmányokat főnököm, dr. Mengele ellenjegyezte, így lettek általam a Berlin-Dahlem-i Institut für rassenbiologische und anthropologische Forschungen címén a világ egyik legelőkelőbb orvosi fóruma számára postázva. Ma is fellelhetők kell legyenek a nagy kutatóintézet irattárában.

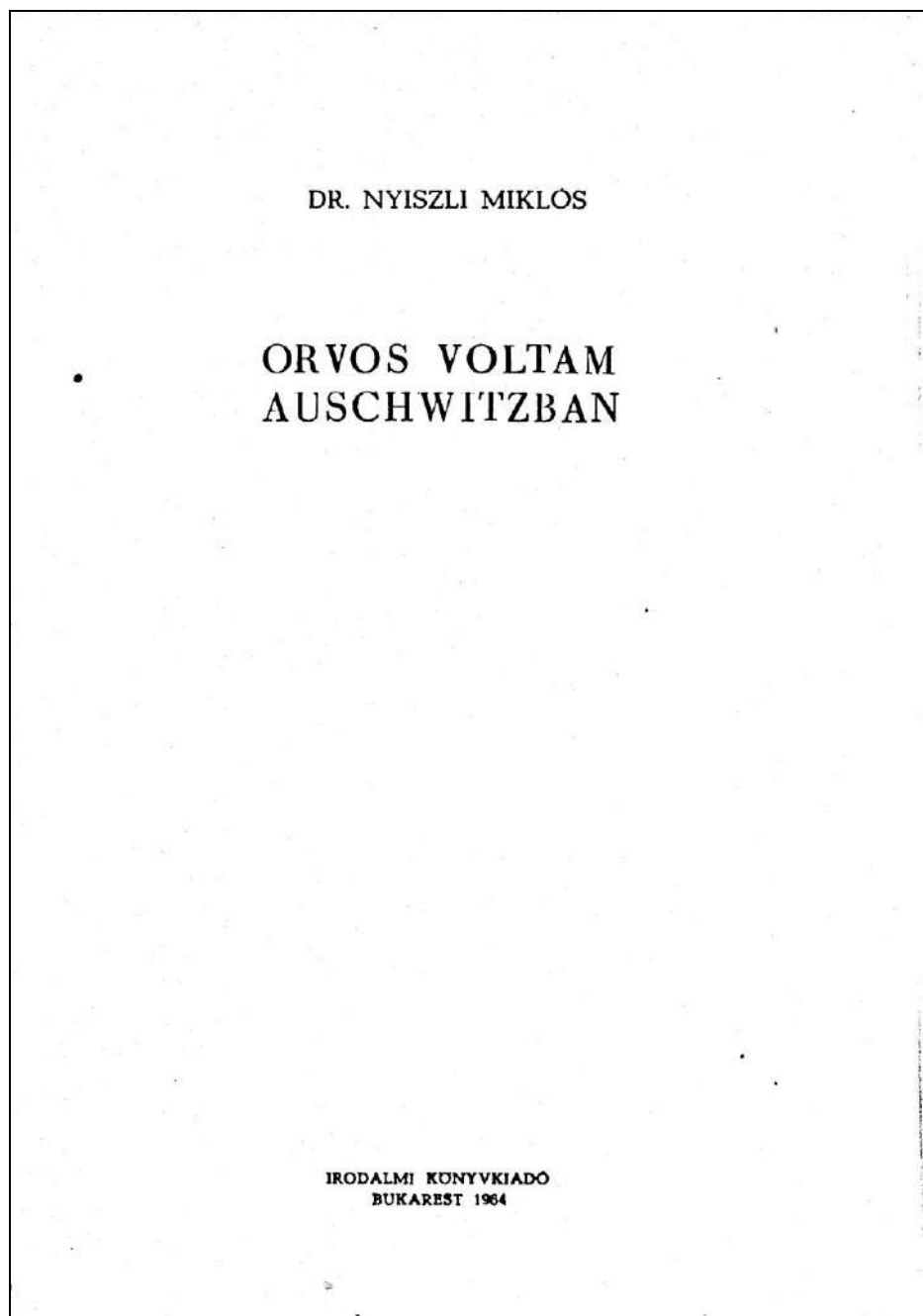
Munkám megírásával nem törekszem irodalmi sikerre. Nem író, orvos voltam, midőn a minden képzeletet fölülmúló borzalmakat átéltem és most, midőn leírásra kerültek, nem a riporter, hanem az orvos tollával írtam meg azokat.

Kelt Oradea—Nagyvárad, 1946 március havában.

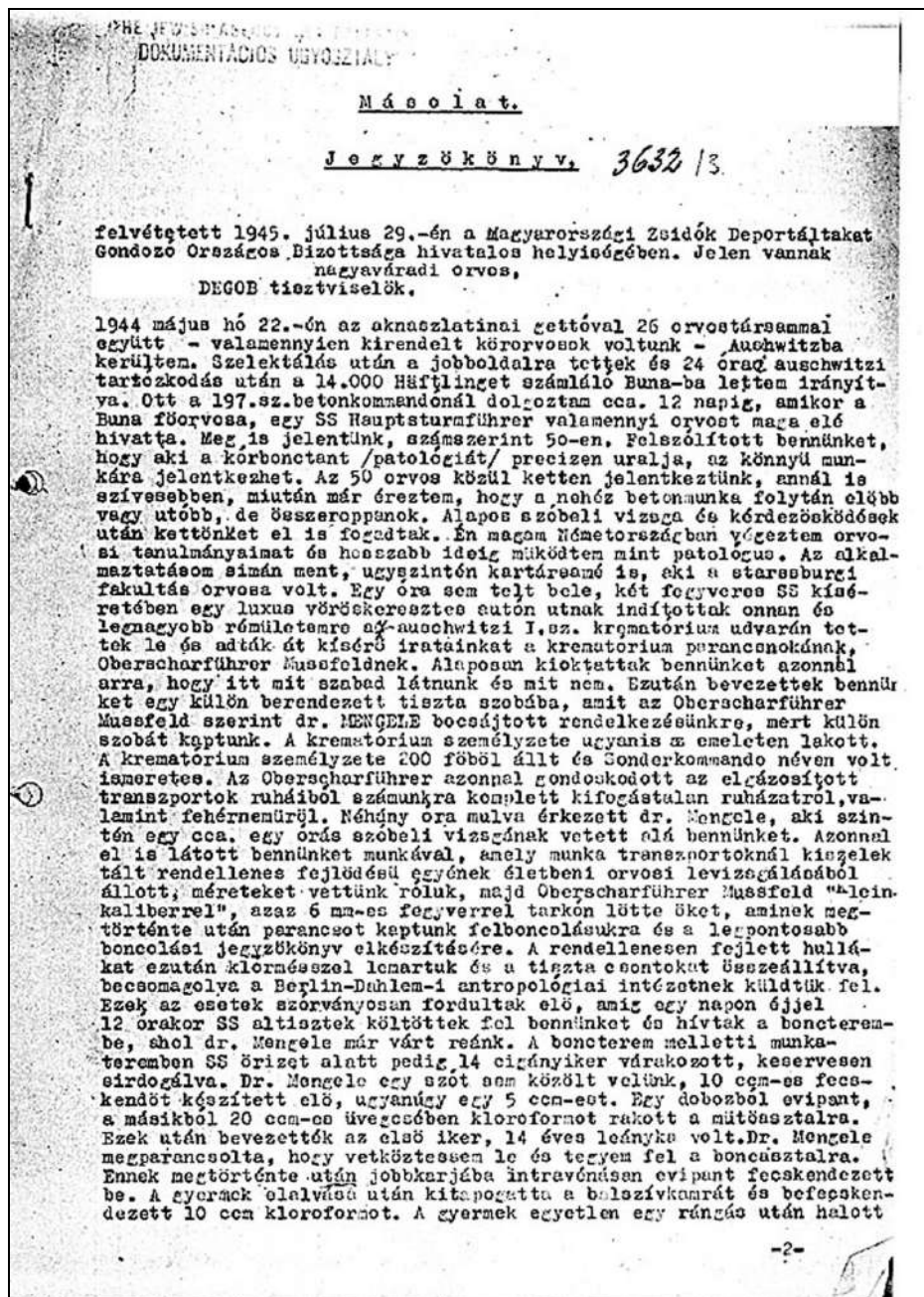
DR. NYISZLI MIKLÓS.



**DOCUMENT 1B:** Title page of the 1947 edition of Nyiszli's *Dr. Mengele boncolóorvosa voltam az auschwitz-i krematóriumban*. Copyright by Világ, Debrecen, 1947.



**DOCUMENT 1C:** Title page of the 1964 edition of Nyiszli's book: *Orvos voltam Auschwitzban*. Irodalmi könyvkiadó, Bucharest, 1964.



DOCUMENT 2: Miklós Nyiszli's Declaration of July 29, 1945. Protocol No. 3632. From the website "Deportáltakat Gondozó Országos Bizottság" ("National Assistance Committee for Deportees"); [http://degob.org/index.php?showjk\\_img=3632](http://degob.org/index.php?showjk_img=3632)

-2-

3632

volt, majd dr. Mengele a hullakamrába vitette. Így következett ezen az éjszakán mind a 14 ikernek a meggyilkolása. Dr. Mengele megkérdezte tőlünk, hogy hány hullának a boncolását vállaljuk naponta, 8 úgy gondolja, hogy 7 - 8-at el tudunk végezni. Mi erre azt feleltük, hogyha precíz tudományos munkát kíván, úgy átlag négy halottat tudunk naponta felboncolni. Ebbe bele is egyezett.

Az anyagot a tudományos boncolásokhoz a Lagerből, vagy a frissen érkező transzportokból kaptuk. Május, június, július hónapokban naponta 3 - 4 magyar transzport érkezett az auschwitzi Judenrampe-ra. A szelektálásokat Dr. Mengele és dr. Tilo végezték, felváltva. A szelektálások munkára való alkalmasság szerint, és néha egészen szeszélyesen történtek. A szelektálás a megérkezett transzportot jobb és baloldalra különítette. A jobb oldal az életet, a baloldal a krematóriumot jelentette. Százalékarányosan 75 - 80% került a baloldalra, gyermekek, gyermekek anyák, öregek, terhesek, testi fogyatékosaink, hadirokkantak. Néhány perc múlva a baloldal lassan lépkező köztömegével elindult balfelé. A krematóriumok között az út mentén voltak a Judenrampe-től és parancs szerint kanyarodott be a cca. 2000-es baloldali tömeg az 1-es, 2-es, 3-as és 4-es krematórium kapuján. A krematóriumba érve 10 - 12 betonlépcsőn egy 2000 személyt befogadó földalatti betonhelyiségbe mentek. Az első sor megtorpant a lejárattól, de midőn az összes világnyelven írt táblát "Desinfektion" és "Fürdő" elolvasták, megnyugodva lementek a helyiségbe. Ott azonnal parancsot kaptak a levetkőzésre, a terem falai körül padok voltak, a padok fölött fogasok, a fogasokon számok és az SS annyira ment a félrevezetésben, hogy figyelmeztette a tömeget, hogy mindenki jegyezze meg a fogasa számát, hogyha a fürdőből visszajön, a ruháit könnyen megtalálja. A tömeg nyugodt is lett volna, csupán az idézett elő zavart köztűtük, hogy férfi, nő, gyermek egymás előtt volt kénytelen levetkőzni. Kb. 10 pernyi vetkőzés után a 2000-es tömeget már kiadós durrásban a következő 2000 személyt befogadó betonhelyiségbe terelték, ahol azonban már semmiféle berendezés, sőt ablak sem volt. Ez volt a gázkamra. A nehéz tárgyakaitokat becsapták mögöttük, a villanyt eloltották és a következő percekben megjelent egy vöröskeresztes luxusaútó, amiből egy orvos-százas és egészségügyi altisztje négy darab cca. 1 kg-os bádogdobozt vettek ki. A négy betonlapot, ami a föld felszínéről a földalatti bunkerbe vezető szellőztetőket fedte, eltávolították, gázálarcot vettek fel, beültették a bádogdoboz fedelét és a babszenhez hasonló, liláspiros, inkább borvörös színű klórszemcséket bepattintták a négy nyíláson át a gázkamrába, majd a betonlapokkal a nyílásokat azonnal lefedték. Egy alkalommal magam is fültanuja voltam, midőn a gáz bedobásakor az orvos az egészségügyi altisztjét siettetve, azt mondta: "Gib schon das Fressen den Juden!" A gázszemcsék lehullottak és levegővel való érintkezés után klorgázt fejlesztettek, ami 5 - 10 percen belül a legkínosabb fulladásos halált idézte elő. Példára múlva elindultak a ventilátorok, a Sonderkommando beosztott emberei kinyitották a gázkamra ajtajait és ott feküdt 2000 elhalt véresen /orrvérzésből kifolyólag/ fáccsal bepiszkítva, nem egyenletesen szétzórva, a bunker egész hosszúdjában, hanem emelet-magasán egymásmellette állva, aminek magyarázata az volt, hogy a magasabb rétegekbe később érkezett el a klorgáz. A Sonderkommando a halottakat gumicsővel lemosta és megkezdődött teher

-3-

-3-

2632

liften a kazánterembe való szállításuk. A kazánterem 15 kazánból állott, mindegyik külön villanyventilátorral felszerelve. Betanult személyzet húzta a halottakat oly módon, hogy a szájukba sétatobnak a görbe felét dugták. Egy-egy kazánba egyszerre három halottat tettek, amelyek 20 perc alatt égtek hamuvá. Az elégetés előtt a fogorvos-kommandó a halottak aranyfogait eltávolította. Az u.n. hamu-kommandó gondoskodott a hamu időnkénti eltávolításáról és az esetleg el nem égett csontok szétzúzásáról. A hamut hetenként teherautón a közelben lévő Weachsel /Visztula/ folyóba dobták.

A krematóriumban az elégetéseket 1944. nov. 17.-én oroszágosan betiltották, nem is történt több gyilkosság, de hogy élő szentanui a politikai SS legsötétebb műhelytitkainak ne legyenek, a Sonderkommando 846 főből álló személyzetét az 1-es, 2-es, 3-as és 4-es krematóriumokból kivégezték a.u. 1/2 2 és 12 1/2 3 óra között. Száz magyar zsidó volt közöttük. Negyven orosz katonatiszt, a többiek zsidók voltak Franciaországból, Hollandiából, Belgiumból és Lengyelországból. Mi orvosok is ott feküdtünk bajtársainkkal a gépfegyverek előtt, de dr. Mengele - kinek fajbiológiai munkáját még nem fejeztük be - kivett bennünket a halálraítéltek közül. Munkánkat most már csendben gazdáltság és tarkolódások nélkül végeztük, az elnéptelenedett krematóriumban 1945. január 18.-ig, amikor az oroszok Varanovice-nél és Krakko-nél áttörve a frontot, 6 km-re közelítették meg éjjelkor Auschwitzot. Iresszonyú zűrzavar keletkezett az SS soraiban, bevitték bennünket a Lagerbe, ahol a soraunkra bíztak és teljesen magunkra hagytak bennünket. Ott összekeveredve a cca. 4000 főnyi Lager-focollal, többet senki sem tudta, hogy Sonderkommandók vagyunk. Még aznap éjjel idegen SS személyzet kísért bennünket transportba gyors futással Mauthausenba.

K.m.f.





[illegible]

9

1948 April 18

**DR. NYISZAI MIKLÓS:**

u. volkam  
Nürnberg

# BEVEZETÉS

# A holtak nem válnak élőkké

Dr. Mengele börtől órossa voltam Auschvitzban, elcsúsz magy jelöl, nap ómát mäsét, ezzel a háború befolyása u ám letam magy

## R E S T R I C T E D

OFFICE OF MILITARY GOVERNMENT FOR GERMANY (U.S.)  
 (Office of Chief of Counsel for War Crimes)  
 APO 696-A U.S. Army

AG 300.4  
 WC-10-233 (TDY-1181)

9 Oct 47

SUBJECT: Orders

TO : NYISZLI NICOLAUS (Roumanian)

1. Verbal order of Commanding General authorizing and inviting above named individual to proceed on or about 25 Sept 47 from Str. Vlahutz # 44 Oradea, Roumania to Nurnberg, Germany for a period of thirty (30) days to appear as Voluntary Witness at Nurnberg Trials, is hereby confirmed and made of record the exigencies of the matter having been such as to preclude the issuing of orders in advance. Upon completion of duty individual will return to Oradea, Roumania.

2. Individual will be reimbursed for travel expenses to and from Nurnberg, Germany.

3. \$7.00 per day in lieu of subsistence is authorized for travel outside Germany.

4. In lieu of witness fees, \$5.00 per diem will be paid witness while in Nurnberg.

5. TCMT TDM 801-11 P 415-02, A 2182700 S 99-999. Travel by rail a/o motor transportation is authorized. Authority Ltr CMGUS dated 10 May 47, File AG 200.8

BY COMMAND OF MAJOR GENERAL HAYS:

DISTRIBUTION:  
 (Special)



*Milton A. Sewell*  
 MILTON A. SEWELL  
 Major, AGD  
 Asst Adj Gen.

(Receipts for transportation and other expenses will be turned in to the Office of Secretary General, Room 230, Court House Nurnberg.)

DOCUMENT 4: Miklós Nyiszli's writ of summons to the I.G. Farben Trial, October 9 [recte: September], 1947; from: Nyiszli 1992, p. 184.

NI - 11710  
-1-Erklärung unter Eid

Ich, Dr. Nyiszli NIKOLAE, Arzt, wohnhaft Oradina-Maros-St. Vlachuta 44  
geboren am 17.6.1901 in Simleu-Silvaniei, Rumänien  
nachdem ich darauf aufmerksam gemacht worden bin, dass ich mich  
wegen falscher Aussage strafbar mache, stelle hiermit unter Eid  
freiwillig und ohne Zwang folgendes fest:

1. Ich war bis zu meiner Verhaftung am 15. Mai 1944 als Königlich-  
licher Kreisarzt tätig. Am 19./20. Mai 1944 bin ich mit einem  
grossen Transport aus Ungarn in das Konzentrationslager Auschwitz  
gekommen. Dort wurde ich entlauset, meine Sachen wurden mir  
abgenommen und ich bekam einen neuen Häftlingsanzug. Am  
20./21. Mai 1944 kam ich ~~mit etwa 1000 anderen Häftlingen~~  
nach Monowitz, das Konzentrationslager der IG-Farben, Werk  
Auschwitz. In Monowitz wurden wir wieder entlauset, die neue  
Häftlingskleidung wurde uns abgenommen, und wir bekamen alte,  
zerissene Häftlingsanzüge. Am nächsten Tag war ich in der  
Zell-Quarantäne. Am darauffolgenden Tag wurde ich in Block 8,  
Beton-Kommando 179, zur Arbeit auf dem IG-Farben-Baugelände  
eingeteilt. Nach etwa 2 Wochen kam der Befehl, dass <sup>(E. K. Meyer)</sup> Aerzte nicht  
mehr mit den Kommandos zur Arbeit ausreisen sollten. Wir <sup>Arzte</sup> wurden  
nach Birkenau, F-Lager, Block 12, gebracht. Dort wurden  
wir entlauset und bekamen fremde Zivilkleidung. Kurz darauf wurde  
mir von SS-Hauptsturmführer Dr. MENGLE befohlen, als Pathologe  
im Krematorium von Birkenau tätig zu sein.]

Am 18. Januar 1945 wurde ich im Zuge der Räumung des Lagers  
Birkenau nach Mauthausen gebracht. Von dort wurde ich nach Melk/  
Donau transportiert. Anfang April 1945 kam ich nach Ebensee, wo  
ich am 5. Mai in schwerkrankem Zustand von den Amerikanern  
befreit worden bin.

DOCUMENT 5: Miklós Nyiszli's Affidavit of October 8, 1947. NI-11710  
(German text).

VI - 11740

- 2 -

2. Bei der Ankunft in Monowitz am 20./21. Mai 1944 wurde uns - wie bereits erwähnt, waren wir 6000 Häftlinge - eine Ansprache gehalten. Uns wurde mitgeteilt, dass wir im Konzentrationslager der IG-Farbenindustrie, Monowitz, seien, und dass wir nicht zum Leben dort seien, sondern zum Verrecken im Beton. Ich wusste nicht, was das Wort Beton bedeuten soll. Nach ein paar Tagen habe ich von alten Häftlingen erfahren, dass auf dem Baugelände der IG-Farben, speziell bei den Kabel-Kommandos, früher 20-25 Häftlinge während der Arbeit erschossen oder totgeschlagen worden waren. Diese Häftlinge sind in die Gräben, die fuer die Kabel ausgehoben waren, geworfen und mit Beton uebergossen worden. Unter dem Beton soll eine grossere Anzahl von Häftlingen, besonders aus Breslau und Berlin, liegen.

3. IG-Farben-Ingenieure teilten die Arbeit bei allen 200 dort auf der IG-Baustelle eingesetzten Häftlings-Kommandos ein. Anhand von Zeichnungen erteilten sie den Vorarbeitern ihre Instruktionen.

4. Ich war Augenzeuge wie bei mehreren Ungluecksfaellen; selbst schwerster Natur, auf dem Baugelände keine erste Hilfe gegeben wurde. Die Kranken oder Verunglueckten mussten bis zum Einruecken saemtlicher Kommandos auf dem Baugelände liegen bleiben und erst nachdem manchmal stundenlang dauernden Appell kamen sie in den Häftlings-Krankenbau.

5. Es war allgemein bekannt, dass die Kranken nach 3-4 Wochen, falls sie nicht genesen waren, auf Transport geschickt wurden,

d.h. zur Vergasung in Birkenau *oder Golezio in Birkenau*

- 3 -

6. Als ich in dem Krematorium von Birkenau tätig war, habe ich mich in 3 Fällen überzeugt, dass ca. 2-300 Häftlinge zählende Transporte aus Monowitz zur Vergasung kamen, also Häftlinge, die bei IG-Farben gearbeitet hatten. Auch die SS-Leute haben offen darüber gesprochen.

7. Besonders gekennzeichnet waren die zur Vernichtung nach Birkenau geschickten Häftlingstransporte aus Monowitz nicht, da alle Transporte, die zur Vernichtung bestimmt waren, ihr Lager in ganz zerrissenen Kleidern und Schuhen verliessen.

8. In meiner Eigenschaft als Pathologe im Birkenauer Krematorium habe ich öfters auf dem IG-Farben-Gelände verunglückte Tote mit Begleitschreibern übernehmen und sezieren müssen. Von den Todesursachen habe ich genaue Protokolle erstellen müssen. Mit dieser scheinbar gesetzlichen, um die Häftlinge besorgt seienden Genauigkeit in einzelnen Fällen wollten die IG-Leiter im Einvernehmen mit der SS das spurlose Verschwinden von Tausenden von Häftlingen verschleiern.

9. Ich habe nach vollendeter Vergasung Zyklon B-Kerne in der Hand gehabt. Die grünen emaillierten Buschen wurden mit einem Roten Kreuz-Auto durch einen SS-Hauptsturmführer und einen SDG an Ort und Stelle gebracht, durch diese in die Gaskammern geworfen. Nach erfolgter Entleerung der Buschen wurden sie von Häftlingen mit Wasser ausgespült und von den beiden erstgenannten Personen wieder mitgenommen.

10. Zur Vergasung von Häftlingen mit Zyklon B in den unterirdischen Gaskammern von Birkenau kann ich folgendes sagen: Auf Grund meiner persönlichen Beobachtungen - ich musste das stärksten Medikamente und Augengläser aus dem Ankleideraum

neben der Gaskammer nach Durchsuchen der Handtaschen der Vergasteten herausbefördern - weiss ich, dass man die Türen verschlossen hat und das Licht zentral auslöschte, sowie die Masse der Menschen in den Gaskammern war. In diesen Augenblick ist ein schwarzlackiertes Rote-Kreuz-Auto angekommen. Es stiegen ein SS-Offizier und ein SDG aus dem Wagen. Sie hielten 4 gruen emaillierte Buechsen in der Hand. Sie gingen zu die niedrigen Betonschornsteine, die mit Betondeckeln zugeeckt waren und legten Gasmasken an. Die Buechsen wurden geöffnet und der Inhalt der Buechse - Zyklon B in koerniger Form von rosa-lila Farbe - in die Oeffnung eingeworfen. Die Koerner zerstreuten sich nicht in der Gaskammer, da sie durch perforierte Roehren abwaertsfielen, und gaben durch Beruehrung mit der Luft sofort Gas ab. Dadurch dass die Gaskoerner zu Boden fielen, hat sich das Gas zuerst auf den niedrigsten Luftschichten entwickelt und stieg dann allmaechlich hoeher. Damit kann ich es erklaren, dass die Leichen nach vollendeter Vergasung im Raum nicht verstreut lagen, sondern in turnfoemigen Haufen. Wahrscheinlich haben die Staerkeren die Schwacheren niedergeworfen, sind auf die unten Liegenden geklettert, um ihr Leben durch Erreichen noch gasfreier Schichten zu veraengern. So kam es, dass die Frauen und Kinder und alte Leute meistens unten lagen. Als Arzt stellte sich folgende Diagnose: Tod durch zentrale respiratorische Laehmung.

11. Leitende IG-Farben-Angestellte kenne ich den Namen nach nicht. In Monowitz betaetigte sich ein Professor der Chemie, der eine fuehrende Persoenlichkeit der IG sein musste. Fuehrende IG-Persoenlichkeiten mussten aber vom Vernichtungswerk Kenntnis haben, da sie meistens in der Stadt Auschwitz wohnten und man die Feuer der Krematorien sowie der offenen zwei Graeber, die Tag und Nacht brannten, bis auf eine Entfernung von 30 km sehen konnte.

- 5 -

12. Im Stammlager Auschwitz waren oeffter Besuche, in den Krematorien ebenfalls. Sie waren aber immer in SS-Uniformen, daher nicht bekannt. Zum Beispiel die Oefen von den Krematorien wurden von der Spezialfabrik Topf & Sohne geliefert. Dieser Name war auf jedem Ofen eingegossen. Bei einer Gelegenheit schickte diese Fabrik einen Spezialfachmann fuer die Revision der Apparate. Er war ein Mann von mindestens 60 Jahren. Ich habe einige Worte mit ihm gesprochen, meiner Meinung nach war er ein Ingenieur in der Uniform eines SS-Oberscharfuhrers. So war es auch fuer IG-Leute moeglich, in Auschwitz zu erscheinen und unerkant zu bleiben.

13. Vom Sonderkommando der Krematorien gingen taeglich Essenstraeger ins Lager Birkenau, wo sie - trotz strenger Vorschrift - staendig Kontakt mit dortigen Haeftlingen hatten. Dadurch war die Taetigkeit der Krematorien bei jeden Haefdling bekannt.

Ich habe jederder fuenf (5) Seiten dieser Erklaerung unter Eid sorgfaeltig durchgelesen und eigenhaendig gegengezeichnet, habe die notwendigen Korrekturen in meiner eigenen Handschrift vorgenommen und mit meinen Anfangsbuchstaben gegengezeichnet und erkläre hiermit unter Eid, dass ich in dieser Erklaerung nach meinem besten Wissen und Gewissen die reine Wahrheit gesagt habe.

*M. Nyiszli*  
 DR. NYISZLI NIKOLAE

Sworn to and signed before me this 8th day of October 1947  
 at Nuremberg by Nyiszli NIKOLAE,  
 known to me to be the person making the above affidavit.

*Benvenuto von Halle*  
 BENVENUTO VON HALLE

U.S. Civilian AGO D432532  
 Office of Chief of Counsel for  
 War Crimes  
 U.S. War Department



11. NI-11710  
Eskü alatt tett nyilatkozat.

En, Dr. Nyiszli Miklós, orvos, Oradea-1, Vlahuta u. 44. sz. alatti lakos, Románia, 1901 június hó 17. én születtem, Simleul-Sylvaniei-ben, miután arra lettem figyelmeztetve, hogy hamis ~~sakxx~~ vallomás miatt büncselekményt követek el, eskü alatt, önként, minden kényszer nélkül a következőket jelentem ki:

1. Elfogatasom idejéig, 1944. május 15-ig, mint királyi kórorvos működtem, 1944. május 19. én egy nagy transzporttal Magyarországról az auschwitz-i koncentrációs táborba érkeztem. Ott tetvetlenítettek, dolgaimat elvették és egy új fegyverruhát kaptam. 1944. május 20. én Monowitzba érkeztem, az I.G. művek koncentrációs táborába. Monowitzban ismét tetvetlenítettek bennünket, az új fegyverruháinkat elvették és rongyos ruhákat kaptunk helyettük. Másnap a sátorquaranténben voltunk. A következő napon beosztást nyertem a 8. sz. barakkba, a 197. sz. betonkommandóhoz, mely az I.G. művek építkezési telepén dolgozott. Körülbelül két hét múltán parancs érkezett, hogy orvosok, kik pathológiában jártasak nem vonulnak többé ki a kommandókkal, mi, két ilyen orvos Birkenaubá, az F. tábor 12-es barakkjába lettünk szállítva. Ott tetvetlenítettek bennünket és idegen civilruhákat kaptunk. Rövid idő múltán Dr. Mengele SS. Hauptsturmführer rendelkezése, mint kórbólcsónokok a Birkenau-i krematóriumban kellett dolgooznunk.

1945. január 18. én a Birkenau-i tábor kiürítése alkalmával Mauthausenbe vittek, Onnan Melk/Donau-ba szállítottak. 1945 április elején Ebensee-be kerültem, ahol súlyos beteg állapotban 1945 május 5. én az amerikaiak felszabadítottak.

*Miklós Nyiszli*

DOCUMENT 5A: Miklós Nyiszli's Affidavit of October 8, 1947. NI-11710 (Hungarian text).

2.

NI - 11 710

2. 1944 május 20-án, midőn, mint ahogy említettem Monowitzba érkeztem, egy beszéddel fogadtak. Hátzren voltunk. Közölték velünk, hogy mi az I.G. Monowitz-1 koncentrációs táborában vagyunk és nem élni, hanem elpusztulni a betonban a sorsunk. Nem tudtam a beton kifejezés mit jelent.

Néhány nap múlva megtudtam régi foglyoktól, hogy az I.G.-építkezési telepen, különösen a kábelkommandóknál, régebben 20-25 foglyok lóttek agyon, vagy vertek agyon munkájuk közben. Ezen foglyok holttesteit a kábelek számára készített árokba dobták és a betont rájuk öntötték.

A beton alatt így nagyvesszámú fogoly kell, különösen Breslau- és berlini származásúak, feküdjenek.

3. I.G. mernokok osztották be a munkát az összes ott foglalkoztatott 200 kommandónál az I.G.-építkezési telepen. Rajzok nyomán adták ki az előmunkásoknak az utasításukat.

4. Szemtanuja voltam több balesetnek, egészen súlyosaknak is. A telepen első segélyt nem nyújtottak. A betegek, vagy sérültek az összes kommandók bevonulásaig a telepen feküdtek és csupán a néha orákig tartó számbavétel után jutottak a kórházba.

5. Általánosan tudott dolog volt, hogy betegek, kik 3-4 hét alatt nem gyógyultak transzportba kerültek, azaz elgázosításra, vagy tarkólovásra Birkenauba.

D. Nyiszli

- MI-11710
- 3.
1. 6. Birkenau-i működésem alatt három esetben győződtem meg arról, hogy  
 2-300 foglyot számláló transzportok érkeztek Monovitzból a  
 gázkamrákba, tehát foglyok, kik az I.G. Monovitz-i telepen dolgoz-  
 tak. S.S. őrsink is nyíltan beszéltek az eseményről.
7. Különlegesen nem voltak ezek a Monovitzból Birkenaubába megsemmisítés  
 re küldött transzportok <sup>megjelölve</sup> mert minden ilyen transzport, mely megsemmisítésre küldetett, táborat rongyos ruhákban és cipőkben hagyta el.
8. Korbónenoki minőségemben a Birkenau-i krematóriumban gyakran kellett az I.G. telepen szerencsétlenül járt halottakat kisírólapokkal átvenni. Az elhalálozási okról, körülményekről pontos jegyzőkönyvet kellett felfektetnünk ezzel a látszólag törvényes eljárással, mely tömörséget mutatott a foglyok sorsa iránt néhány esetben alkalmazott pontossággal az I.G. vezetők az S.S.-el egyetemben a több ezer, nyomtalanul eltűnt fogoly sorsát akarták elkódosítani.
9. Befejezett elgázosítás után Cyclon B. szemcséket több esetben tartottam a kezemben. A zöldre emaillezott dobozokat egy vörös keresztet autó hozta, egy SS Hauptsturmführer és egy S.D.G. szálltak ki a kocsiból és ezek dobták a gázkamrákba. Miután a dobozokat kiürítették, azo-

Document 5a continued.

kat foglyok kiöltötték és az említett személyek autójukba szállva meg-  
gukkal vitték.

10. a Cyklon B. vel történő elgázosításokról a következőket mondhatom

1. Személyes megfigyölésem alapján, gyakran kellett ugyanis szem-  
üvegeket és gázszereket a vetkezőteremből, mely a gázkamra mellett  
volt, az elgázosítottak kézipodgyászaiból kiszedjek, megfigyeltem,  
az ajtót bezárták, a világítást központilag kioltották, minél a tö-  
meg a gázkamrában volt. E pillanatban érkezett egy fekete lakkozott  
vörös keresztű autó. Egy tiszt és egy S.D.S. szálltak ki a kocsiból,  
egy zománczott dobozt tartottak kezükben. Az alacsony betonkemen-  
hez mentek. Gázmaszkot csatoltak fel. Leemelték a betonfedelelet és a  
dobozok tartalmát, Cyclon B. szemcsés anyagát, mely rózsaszín és lilás  
volt a nyílásokon beszórták. A szemcsék nem szóródtak széjjel a gázka-  
mrában, mert azok lukacsos csövekben hullottak le a padozatig és le-  
vegővel való érintkezés után azonnal gázt fejlesztettek. Azt is látom, hogy  
a gázszemcsék a padozatra estek, a gáz előbb az alacsonyan fekvő leve-  
réteget telítette meg és csak fokozatosan szállt felsőbb rétegekbe.

*M. Nyiszli*

Document 5a continued.

NI-11710

4.

R.H.N. ezzel magyarázom azt, hogy a hullak befejezett elgázosítás  
 O.H.N. után nem feküdtek szerteszéjjel, hanem egyhalomban, toronyformában.  
 R.H.N. Valószínűleg az erősebbek a gyengébbeket letiportak, és azokra  
 O.H.N. kapaszkodva igyekeztek a gáztól még el nem ért régiókba jutni, meg  
 O.H.N. hosszabítani akárva néhány másodperccel életüket. Így történt az,  
 O.H.N. hogy nők és gyermekek, valamint öregek alól feküdtek. Mint orvos a  
 R.H.N. következő diagnózist állítottam fel: A halál oka: A légzési centrum  
 O.H.N. központi bénulása.

R.H.N. 11. Vezető I.G. személyeket névszerint nem ismerek. Monovitzban  
 O.H.N. működött egy vegyészprofesszor, ki vezető személyiség kellett le-  
 O.H.N. gyen. Vezető I.G. személyiségek tudomással kellett bírjanak a meg-  
 O.H.N. semmisítési munkáról, mivel nagyrészt Auschwitz városában laktak,  
 O.H.N. a krematóriumok kéményeinek és a két nyitott maglya tüzei pedig  
 R.H.N. Birkenautól 30 kilométerre is látszóttak és éjjel nappal égtek.

R.H.N. K.H.N.

5.

NI - 11710

12. Az Auschwitz-1 törzstáborban gyakran voltak látogatók, a krematóriumokban szintén, ilyenek azonban mindég SS, egyenruhákban voltak, tehát ismeretlenek. Például a krematóriumok kemencéit Topf és Fial gyár készítette, F név volt a kemencékbe öntve. Egy alkalommal ez a gyár egy szakembert küldött a kemencék és üzem felülvizsgálatára. 60 év körüli férfi volt. Nehány szót beszéltem vele. Véleményem szerint mérnök volt, egy SS-Oberscharführer uniformisában. Így az is lehetséges volt, hogy I.G. személyek is megjelenhettek Auschwitzban és ismeretlenek maradhattak.

13. A krematóriumok Sonderkommando-jaitól naponta mentek élelemért a Birkenau-i táborba, így legszigorúbb ellenőrzés mellett is adódott számukra lehetőség ottani foglyokkal érintkezni, misztal a krematóriumok működése minden fogoly előtt tudott dolog volt.

Ezen öt oldalt kitevő nyilatkozatot, melyet eskü alatt tettem, gondosan átolvastam és sajátkezűleg aláírtam, a szükséges javításokat saját kezűleg eszközöltem és nevem kezdőbetűivel jelöltem meg, és ezennel is eskü alatt jelentem ki, hogy ezen nyilatkozatot legjobb tudásom és lelkiismeretem szerint a tiszta igazságoknak megfelelően tettem meg.

*Nyiszli Miklós*  
Dr. Nyiszli Miklós

Sworn to and signed before me this 8th day of October 1947  
at Nuremberg by Nyiszli Miklós,  
known to me to be the person making the above affidavit.

Benvenuto Von Halle

U.S. Civilian AGO.D432532  
Office of Chief of Counsel for  
War Crimes  
U.S. War Department

End

NYISZLI, Nicolae Dr.	V.W."E"	Loc: Grades
		Str. Vlahuta 44.
		Romania
		Birth: 17.6.1901 in Simleul-Silvaniei
Oct.47 Req.for Trans.		Sprecher (Minskoff)
3 Oct.47 Arrived		

**DOCUMENT 6:** File memo confirming Miklós Nyiszli's arrival at Nuremberg on October 3, 1947. From: Provan 2001, p. 28.

Des personnes d'orientation différentes lisent des faits émuants relatés dans mon livre avec des sentiments divers. Un tel, avec sympathie, un tel autre avec indifférence et un troisième avec animosité. Il y en a aussi qui le lisent tel Mr. Paul Rassinier avec un ergotage bienveillant. Mais il y en a beaucoup qui passent à côté de l'essentiel et regardent les détails/ sans importance, à travers une loupe ou plutôt un ultra-microscope et ainsi, sans même le vouloir, appâtissent et minimisent la série des crimes uniques dans leur genre qui y sont relatés. Je réponds brièvement dans ce qui suit aux diverses questions soulevées par Mr. Rassinier.

1° Je le remercie de reconnaître que mon ouvrage est le premier qui donne une description précise sur le travail des usines d'assèchement d'Auschwitz et Birkenau, aussi que sur la technique de la mort donnée par le gaz. Ceci a été reconnu par la Cour Internationale de Nuremberg aussi, mais également par 17 débats publics organisés dans la présence de plusieurs milliers de déportés.

2° En ce qui concerne les chiffres que j'ai indiqués, j'ai l'honneur de vous communiquer qu'ils sont exacts. Ceci a été reconnu par un des accusés principaux du procès de Nuremberg, le Hauptsturmführer Hoess qui a été le Commandant du Camp du 1<sup>er</sup> Mai 1940 au 31 Décembre 1943 et qui selon ses aveux enregistrés transcrits S 7821 a déclaré que durant cette période 2 500 000 personnes ont été assassinées dans les chambres à gaz et 500 000 autres sont mortes par suite de la famine, de mauvais traitements et du travail épuisant. Il est donc évident l'affirmation selon laquelle les chambres à gaz ont recommencé leur travail en 1942 et qu'en Mars 1944 le Camp d'Auschwitz-Birkenau aurait déjà été évacué. Car enfin nous autres déportés hongrois ~~xxxxxxx~~  
~~xxx nous y sommes arrivés au Mois de Mai 1944 et à fin Juillet déjà~~  
550 000 Juifs hongrois ont péri dans les chambres à gaz. C'était justement en 1944 que l'énatissement a prit les proportions les plus importantes car après Stalingrad les Russes faisaient reculer les armées allemandes sur un front de plusieurs milliers de kilomètres et la perspective encore non envisagée d'une défaite a fait hâter le rassemblement de tous les ghettos encore existants et a fait hâter le travail de crématorium. A ce sujet j'ai écrit assez et d'une façon suffisamment explicite.

22 3° Donc les chiffres que j'ai indiqué sont entièrement justifiés et ceux qui critiquent sont entièrement erronés. Nous avons vu Auschwitz-Birkenau le 18 Janvier 1945 et les ~~trains~~ <sup>navires</sup> de déportés qui ont survécu, ont appelé cette évacuation: la marche de la mort; elle s'est terminée, comme je l'indique aussi dans mon journal, à Mauthausen.

4° Le nombre des Crématoriums. A savoir qu'ils fussent 4 ou 5 c'est un ergotage inutile. Cependant pour rassurer je vous communique qu'il y avait 4 à Birkenau et un à Auschwitz, distant à 3 kilomètre. Prochainement je vais vous envoyer le plan original et authentique du Camp de Birkenau, sur lequel figure chaque baraque et chaque crématorium aussi. Vous pourrez vous rendre compte quant au nombre des crématoriums.

**DOCUMENT 7:** French translation of a letter sent by M. Nyiszli to P. Rassinier and sent to him by T. Kremer's translator on October 24, 1951. Original in the *Archives Paul Rassinier*, archived at *Bibliothèque de Documentation internationale contemporaine* at Nanterre.



- 3 -

5° Durée de la crémation. Il est tout à fait inutile de nous adresser aux spécialistes du Père Lachaise, car les experts de ce crématorium ne sont que des petits artisans en comparaison avec ceux qui dirigeaient les fours en provenance des Etblsm. Topf & Soehne, entreprise spécialisée dans la construction et agencement des crématoriums. De plus je crois pouvoir prétendre au titre d'expert le plus qualifié en cette matière. J'ai eu l'occasion durant 8 mois directement et de près le travail des crématoriums. A un moment d'émotion sentimentale j'ai même formulé à l'Oberscharführer Mussfeld la demande suivante: Lorsqu'ils en auront assez de moi et que sur ordre du docteur Mengele il/ devra me liquider d'une balle dans la nuque, qu'il ne le fasse pas dans le couloir sombre de la salle, mais près du premier four. Ainsi mon camarade de service ce jour-là ne serait pas obligé de me traîner par une courroie attachée à mes poignets, le long du béton du sol, enlevant ainsi la peau de mon visage et faisant de moi un mort défiguré. Par contre, ils pourront, selon l'expression en usage m'"einschieben" dans le four à l'endroit même où je suis mort.

6° Donc la durée de la crémation est une chose à Père Lachaise et une autre à Birkenau. Ça peut durer une heure dans le premier, cela a duré pas plus de vingt minutes dans le second. Les explications sont les suivantes: Les morts du Père Lachaise étaient généralement convenablement nourris avant leur décès et leur incinération est accompagnée d'une cérémonie solennelle. En outre la durée de l'incinération est directement proportionnelle avec l'intensité de la chaleur et, en raison inverse, avec le degré hygrométrique de l'objet à incinérer. Les morts de Birkenau par suite des séjours dans les ghettos, Camp de Concentration et travail inhumain, n'étaient que peau et os, pour ainsi dire des squelettes ambulants. Les fours étaient chauffés avec de la coke et près de chacun un ventilateur ayant la hauteur d'un étage, mue par un puissant moteur électrique, était installé. L'incinération elle-même n'était pas une cérémonie, mais une "Entloesung", anéantissement à la chaîne où a été utilisé tout ce que la technique moderne peut fournir. L'anéantissement se poursuivait jour et nuit. C'est très rarement qu'un crématorium s'arrêtait pour une brève période. Lorsqu'une réparation ou entretien étaient vraiment indispensables.

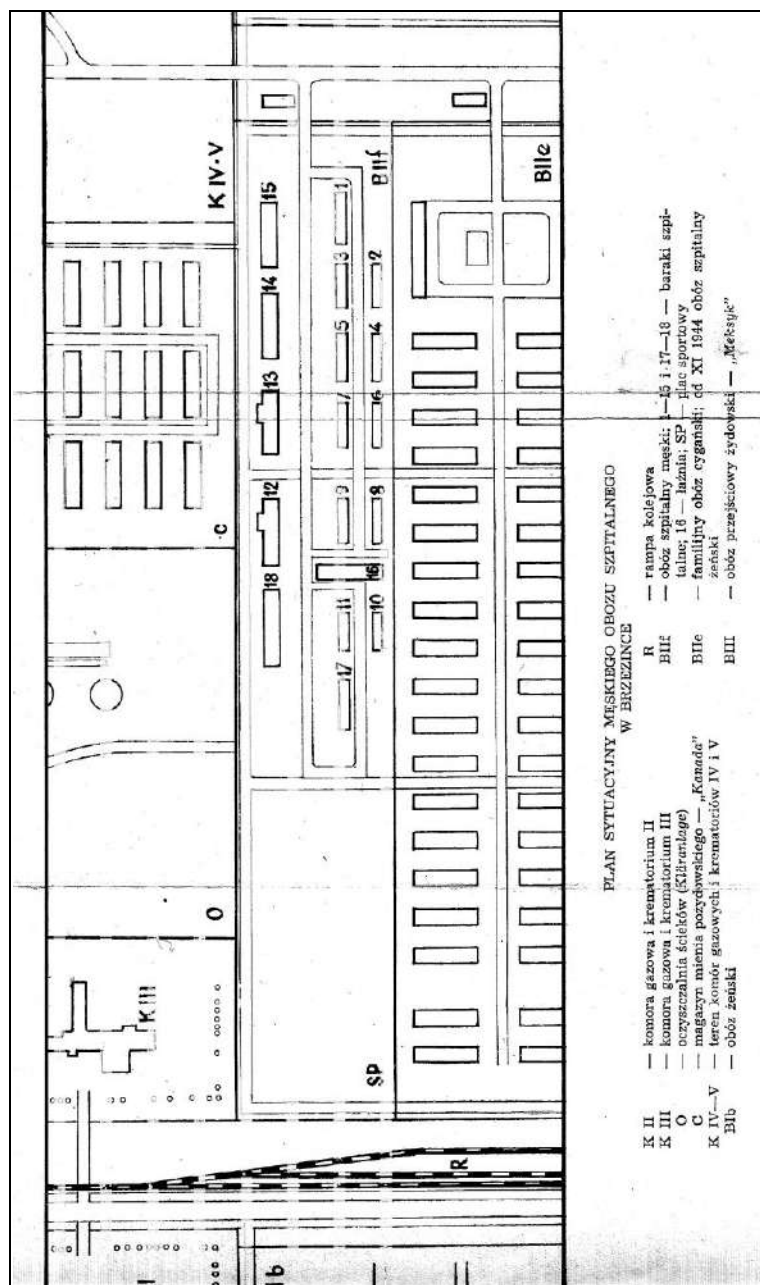
7° Le critique ne parle que des sélections périodiques qui concernaient 300 personnes et laisse complètement de côté la destruction des transports. Ces transports se composaient de quelques ~~5 à 6~~ 5 à 6 rames quotidiennes, chacune de 40 à 50 wagons, amenés de chaque coin de l'Europe, exprès pour être détruit ici. Ce n'est qu'à titre de curiosité que je mentionne que ces rames étaient très souvent composées des vieux et défectueux wagons français. Ces rames amenaient en moyenne 4000 déportés chacune (90 personnes dans un wagon). Sur ces 4000 dans les meilleurs cas 1000 étaient envoyés à droite, les autres directement dans un crématorium. Enfin outre j'ai parlé aussi de deux buchers que mon critique semble avoir complètement oubliés dans son calcul.

8° En ce qui concerne les dimensions de la salle de déshabillage et de la chambre à gaz, je veux bien admettre que je ne les ai pas mesurés. De plus je ne suis ni ingénieur, ni technicien qui pourrait établir simplement d'après appréciation la grandeur d'un endroit. Comme je l'ai dit à la préface même de mon livre, je n'avais pas écrit avec la plume d'un reporter, mais avec celle d'un médecin. Il se peut aussi qu'en 1946 lorsque j'ai écrit mon livre, sous l'avalanche des horreurs et sous le

\* En allemand dans le Texte = en français

-3-

poids des impressions suraiguës, ma vue n'ait pas été aussi claire que celle de quelqu'un qui vient de l'extérieur avec un œil scrutateur. Il se pourrait donc que les salles n'aient été que de 100 ou 120 m de long. Ceci ne change rien quant aux faits et ne peut nullement mettre en doute l'authenticité des données. Je ne peux même pas accepter d'indiquer avec précision rigoureuse les dimensions de ma propre chambre. Enfin je ~~me~~ remercie, Monsieur Rassinier, de s'être occupé des données que j'ai fournies et de les avoir trouvées uniques dans leurs points essentiels? J'approuve mon critique lorsqu'il affirme que des nombreuses publications renferment des données fausses et contribuent ainsi à faire naître le doute quant à l'authenticité des événements. Cependant je sais pertinemment que n'importe qui peut contrôler mes écrits aussi bien sur leur aspect médical que technique. On ne pourrait y trouver qu'un image d'une fidélité incorruptible des événements sans aucune exagération et exempt de toute passion, comme je l'ai dit d'ailleurs dans ma déclaration signée de ma main. Je peux cependant confier que tout ce que j'ai décrit ne ~~est qu'un~~ <sup>est un</sup> fragment, ~~de~~ <sup>est</sup> un coup d'œil, lancé dans la lueur ~~éblouissante~~ <sup>éblouissante</sup> d'un éclair. Je pourrais écrire mille fois autant si je n'étais saturé des horreurs.



**DOCUMENT 8:** Map of the men's hospital camp in Sector BIIf of the Birkenau Camp. From: Czech 1974, unpagined (between p. 48 & 49).

## BETRIEBSVORSCHRIFT

### des koksbeheizten Topf-Dreimuffel-

### Einäscherungsöfen

Vor Beschickung der beiden Koksgeneratoren mit Koks muss der Rauchkanalschieber am Ofen geöffnet werden.

Nunmehr kann in den beiden Generatoren Feuer angezündet und unterhalten werden, hierbei ist zu beachten, dass die Sekundärverschlüsse rechts und links der Ascheentnahmetüren (Koksgeneratoren) geöffnet sind.

Nachdem die Einäscherungskammern gut rotwarm (ca. 800°C.) sind können die Leichen hintereinander in die drei Kammern eingefahren werden.

Jetzt ist es zweckmässig das seitwärts am Ofen stehende Druckluftgebläse anzustellen und ca. 20 Minuten laufen zu lassen. Hierbei ist zu beobachten, ob zuviel oder zu wenig Frischluft in die drei Kammern eintritt.

Die Regulierung der Frischluft erfolgt durch die Drehklappe die sich in der Luftrohrleitung befindet. Weiterhin müssen die rechts und links der Einführtüren angeordneten Lufteintritte halb geöffnet werden.

Sobald die Leichenteile vom Schamotterrost nach der darunter liegende Ascheschräge gefallen sind, müssen diese mittels der Kratze nach vorn zur Ascheentnahmetür gezogen werden. Hier können diese Teile noch 20 Minuten zum Nachverbrennen lagern. Dann wird die Asche in den Aschebehälter gezogen und zur Abkühlung beiseite gestellt.

Zwischendurch werden neue Leichen in die Kammern nach einander eingeführt.

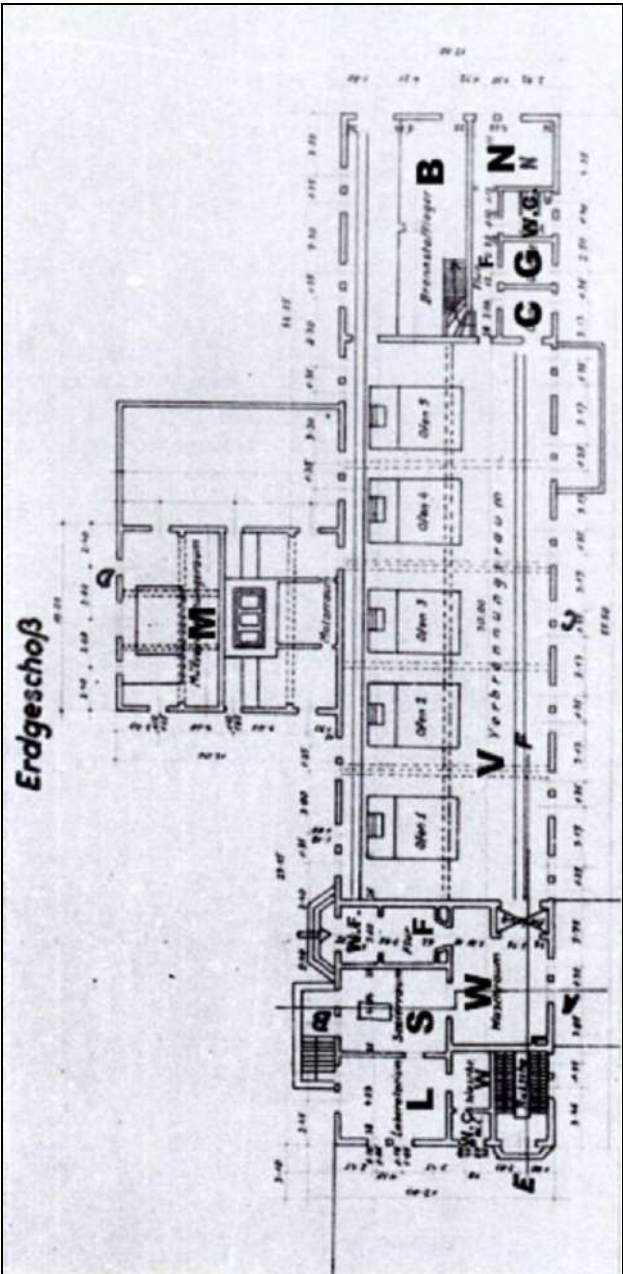
Die beiden Koksgeneratoren müssen von Zeit zu Zeit mit Brennstoff beschickt werden.

Jeden Abend müssen die Generatorroste von den Koks-schlacken befreit und die Asche herausgenommen werden.

Zu beachten ist ferner, das nach Betriebsschluss, sobald die Generatoren leer gebrannt und Glutteile nicht mehr vorhanden sind, alle Luftschieber und Türen, desgl. auch der Rauchkanalschieber am Ofen geschlossen sein müssen um den Ofen nicht auszukühlen.

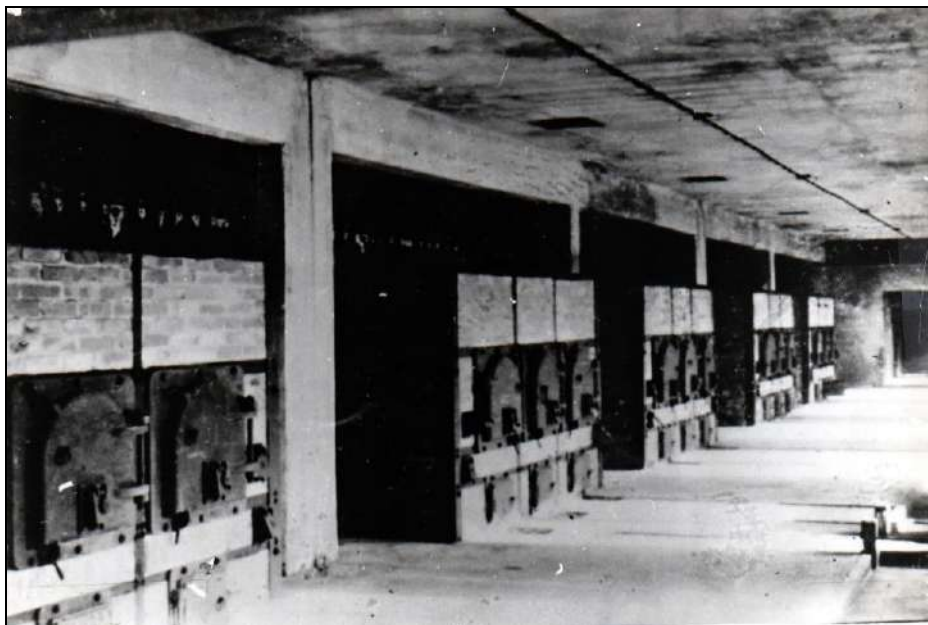
Nach jeder Einäscherung steigt die Temperatur im Ofen. Daher bitte beachten, dass die Innentemperatur nicht über 1000°C. kommt (Weissglut).

Diese Temperatursteigerung kann durch Lufteinblasen verhindert werden.



**DOCUMENT 10:** Floor plan of the ground floor of Crematorium II at Birkenau. From: Piper 2000, Vol. III, p. 150.

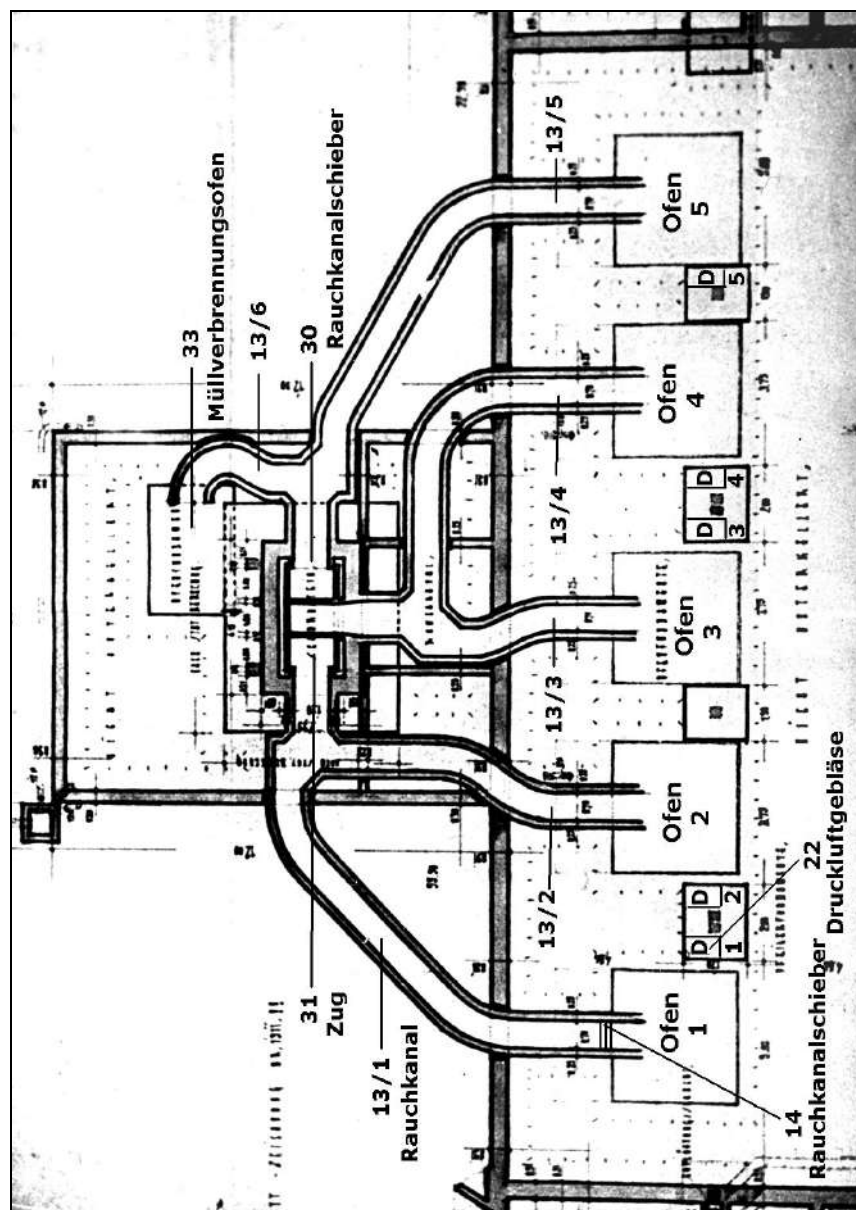




**DOCUMENT 11:** SS photo of the furnace room of Crematorium II at Birkenau (1943). From: APMO, Microfilm No. 290.



**DOCUMENT 12:** Gasifiers at the rear end of the two Topf triple-muffle cremation furnaces in the crematorium at the Buchenwald Camp. From: Mattogno/Deana 2015, Vol. III, Photo 205, p. 131.



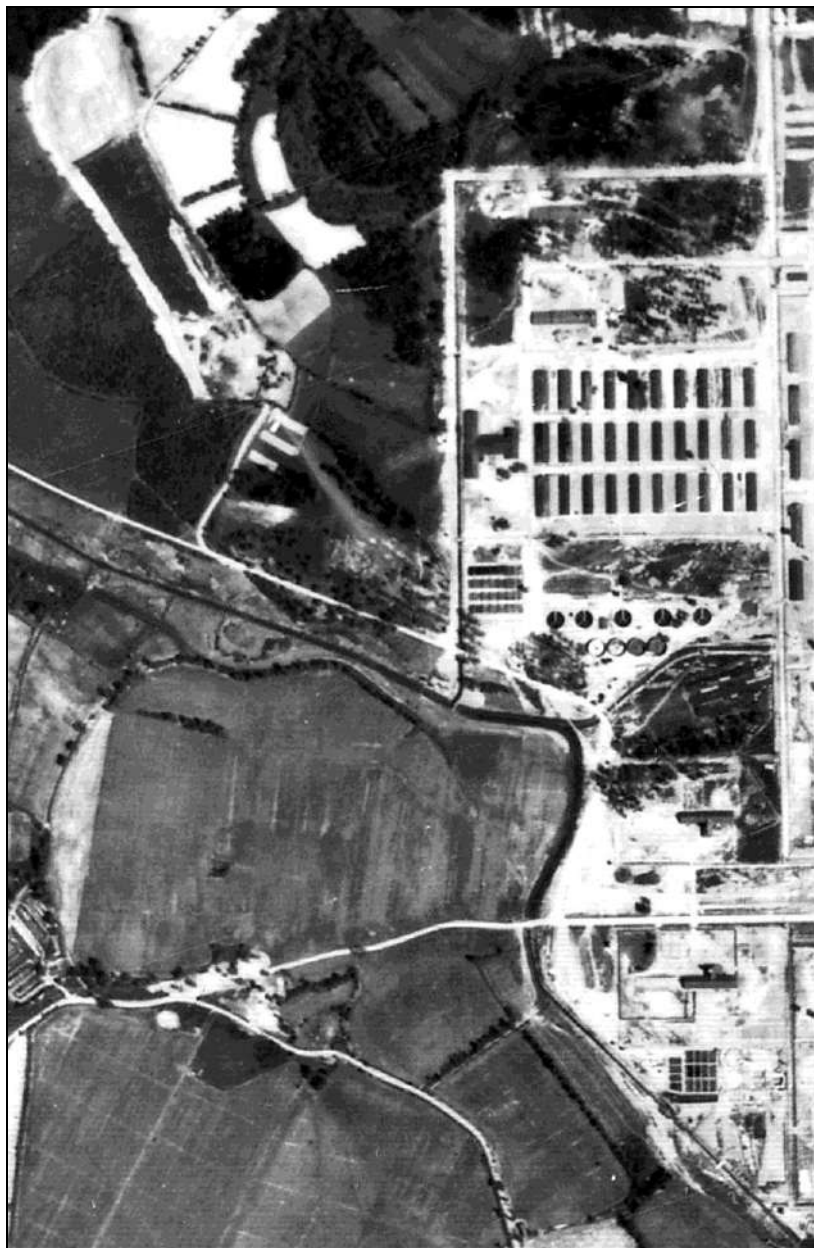
**DOCUMENT 13:** Floor plan of the cremation hall of Crematorium II (APMO, Negative No. 520, with my labels). From: Mattogno/Deana 2015, Vol. II, Document 223, p. 377.

1-5: Ofen=furnace; 13/1-6: smoke ducts/flues; 14: Rauchkanalschieber=smoke duct damper; 22 (D1-5): Druckluftgebläse=combustion air blower; 30: Rauchkanalschieber=chimney's smoke duct damper; 31: Zug=chimney duct; 33: Müllverbrennungsofen= waste incinerator.



**DOCUMENT 14:** Topf triple-muffle cremation furnaces in the crematorium at the Buchenwald Camp; blowers located between the two furnaces. From: Mattogno/Deana 2015, Vol. III, Photo 188, p. 121.

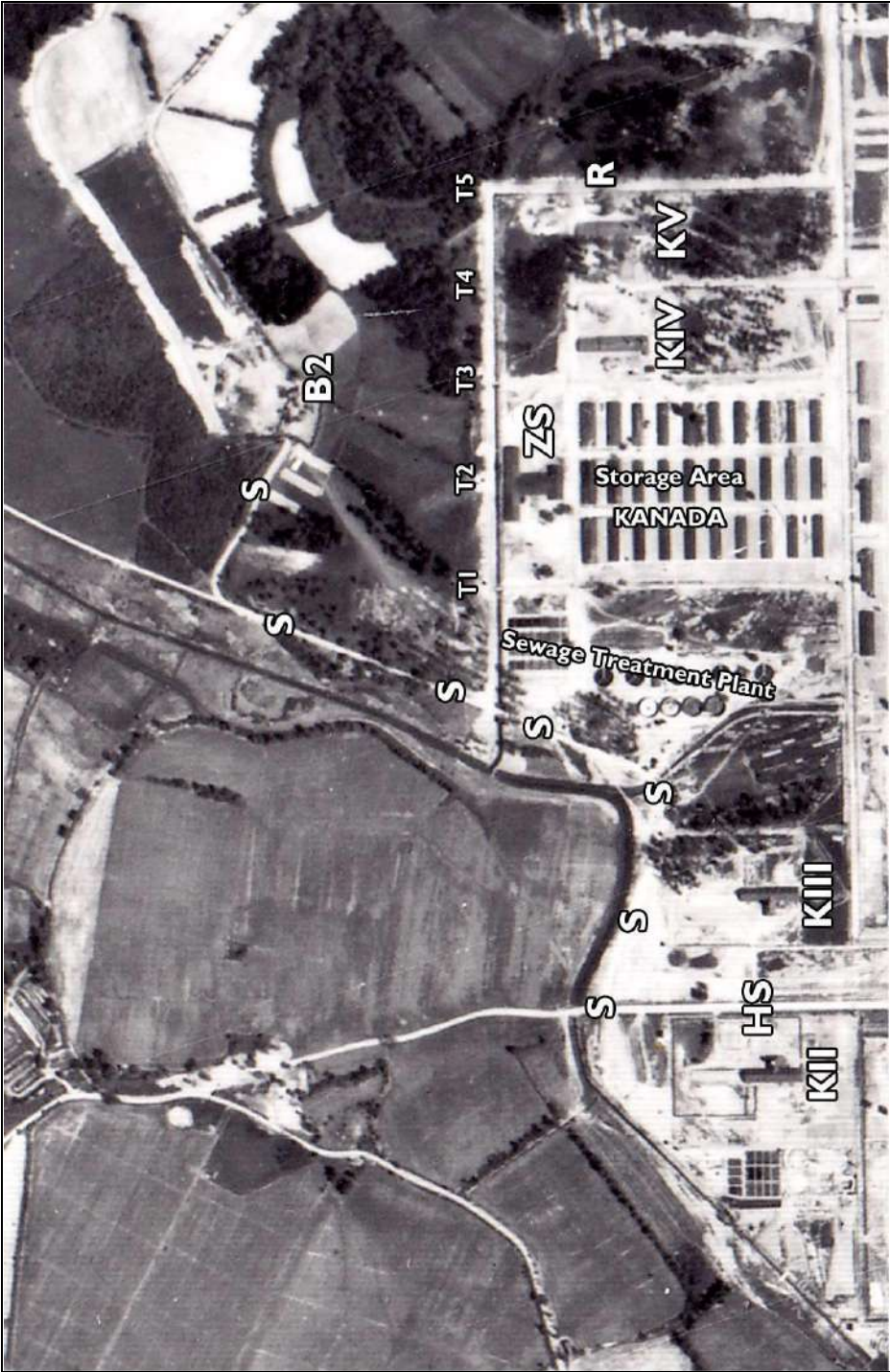


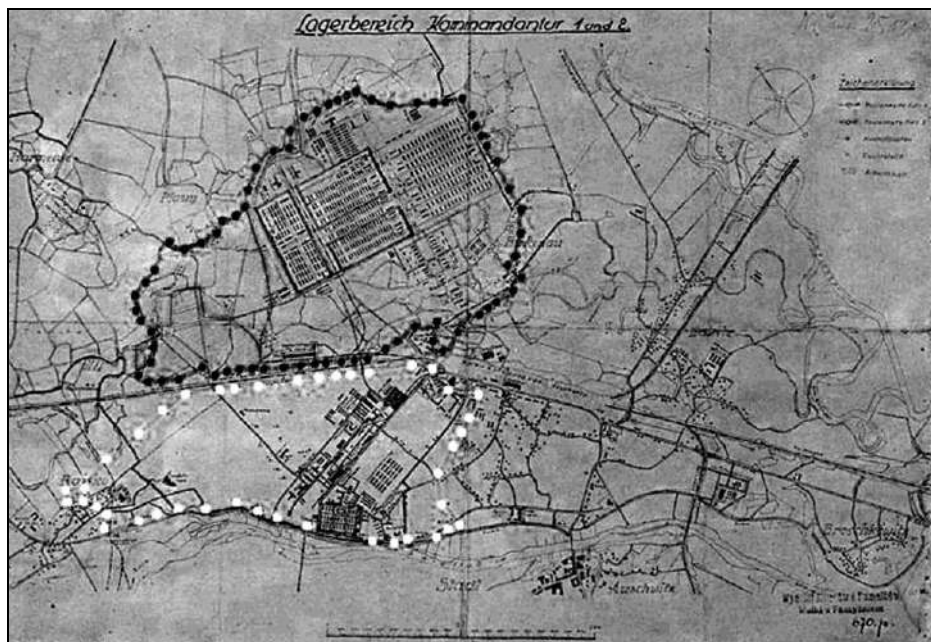


---

**DOCUMENT 15, 15A (next page):** Air photo of the area west of the Birkenau Camp taken on May 31, 1944 (Crematoria, *Effektenlager*, area of the alleged “Bunker 2”). From: National Archives, Washington D.C., Record Group no. 373, Mission 60 PRS/462 60 SQ. Can D 1508, Exposure 3055.

---





**DOCUMENT 16:** The “*grosse Postenkette*” (“large guard chain”) around the Birkenau Camp (black dots) and the Auschwitz Main Camp (white dots).  
 From: [http://lekcja.auschwitz.org/en\\_15\\_ucieczki](http://lekcja.auschwitz.org/en_15_ucieczki).



**DOCUMENT 17:** Guard tower of the “*grosse Postenkette*” outside the Birkenau Camp, close to the Zentralsauna; 1991. © Carlo Mattogno.



**Geheime Staatspolizei — Staatspolizeistelle Zichenau / Schröttersburg.**  
Nachrichten-Übermittlung

Aufgenommen Zeit Tag Monat Jahr 1831 8. OKL 1944 von durch <i>h</i>		Raum für Empfangsstempel Staatliche Kriminalpolizei Zichenau Eing.: - 9. OKL 1944 Nr. <i>1000000</i> <i>1000000</i> Fernschreiben	Befördert Zeit Tag Monat Jahr an durch Versäugerungsvermerk <i>63</i>
F.-S. Nr. 4732			

KL. AU. NR. 9277 8 10 44. 13,35 = DR=

AN DAS ROHA-RECH 4 A 6 KL. B- UND ROEN 4 A 4 KL. BERLIN.-

2.) AN RKPA V A 2, FÜRSTENBERG,

3.) AN KRIPO ERFURT,

4.) AN ALLE GESTL. STAPC(LEIT)- KRIPO(LEIT) STELLEN UND

C.E. KOHL, BESONDERS KATTOMITZ.==

BETR.: BEABSICHTIGTE MASSENFLUCHT DER IN DEN HIESIGEN KREATORIEN BESCHÄFTIGTEN HAEFTLINGE.==

A M 7.10.44 BEABSICHTIGTEN DIE KOMMANDOS DER HIESIGEN KREATORIEN EINE MASSENFLUCHT. DURCH SCHNELLES UND ENTSCHLOSSENES ZUGREIFEN DER HIES. WACHMANNschaften KONNTE DIESELBE JEDOCH VEREITELT WERDEN. DER GRÖSSTE TEIL DIESER HAEFTLINGE WURDE AUF DER FLUCHT ERSCHOSSEN. Z.ZT. WERDEN NOCH FOLGENDES HAEFTLINGE VERMISST:

RD. VH. BV.- HAEFTLING. ~~X~~ O.E.P.F.E.R., KARL, GER. 20.2.12 ZU - MUEHLHAUSEN, EINGELIEFERT AM 15.4.44 (LUDLIN) DURCH KRIPO ERFURT, TGB. NR. 4944/42 K.BV.-

2.) ~~RUSSISCHER KRIEGSGEFANGENER~~ ~~X~~ ~~SCHENKARENKO~~

— ALEKSANDER, GER. 10.10.21 ZU WITOMZY, EINGELIEFERT AM 15.4.44 VOM STALAG?, KENN- NR. 12766, BESONDERE KENNZEICHEN: KURZGESCHORENE HAARE UND AUF BRUST EINTRAETOWIERTE NR. 11526.- TRANSPORTJUDEN

*Handwritten:* Notwendig

*Stamp:* PANSTWOWE MUZEUM Auschwitz-Birkenau w. Oswiecimiu OZIAL ARCHIWUM

**DOCUMENT 18:** Telegram of the *Geheime Staatspolizei* – *Staatspolizeistelle Zichenau/Schröttersburg* of October 8, 1944 on the October 7 mass escape of the inmate staff working inside the crematoria at the Birkenau Camp. From: [http://auschwitz.ru/en/auschwitz/resistance/sonderkommando/#popup\[gallery\\_2\]/0/](http://auschwitz.ru/en/auschwitz/resistance/sonderkommando/#popup[gallery_2]/0/).

3.) ~~B O B-U I K O~~ MOSZEL ISRAEL, GEB. 25.11.11 ZU  
 LOMZA, EINGELIEFERT AM 18.1.43 VON RSHA, O. AZ,  
 BESONDERE KENNZEICHEN: KURZGESCHORENE HAARE UND AUF  
 LINKEM UNTERARM EINGETAETOWIERTE NR. 89297.==

4.) ~~L I S Z K O~~ MEIER ISRAEL, GEB. 16.4.16 ZU  
 WYSOKIE, EINGELIEFERT AM 16.1.43 VON RSHA, O. AZ  
 BESONDERE KENNZEICHEN: KURZGESCHORENE HAARE UND  
 AUF LINKEM UNTERARM EINGETAETOWIERTE NR. 89475.==

ES WIRD VERMUTET, DASS DER RD. VH/DV- HAEFTLING  
 T O E P F E R, DER ALS CAPO BEI DIESEM KOMMANDO  
 EINGESETZT WAR, ERSCHLAGEN UND BEISEITE GESCHAFFT  
 WURDE. WEITERE FAHRDUNGSSCHRIFFEN VON DORT ERBETEN.  
 ZUSATZ FUER RSHA: AUSSCHREIBUNG SOBOTKO UND PLISZKO  
 IM DEUTSCHEN KRIMINALBLATT ERBETEN.==

ZUSATZ FUER RKPA: AUSSCHREIBUNG S C H E N K A R E N K O  
 BEI ZUSTAENDIGER KRIMINALPOLIZEI BEANTRAGT.  
 AUSSCHREIBUNG SOBOTKO UND PLISZKO IM DEUTSCHEN  
 KRIMINALBLATT ERBETEN. - ZUSATZ FUER KRIPC ERFURT:  
 ICH BITTE TROTZDEM DIE FAHRDUNG UND AUSSCHREIBUNG  
 TOEPFER VON DORT ZU VERANLASSEN. - ZUSATZ FUER KATTOWITZ:  
 UMLIEGENDE GEND.- POSTEN WURDEN VON FLUCHT FERNMUENDLICH  
 VERSTAENDIGT, DESGLEICHEN HAUPTZOLLAEMTER KATTOWITZ,  
 BIELITZ, TESCHEN ZUR MITFAHRDUNG VERANLASST.==

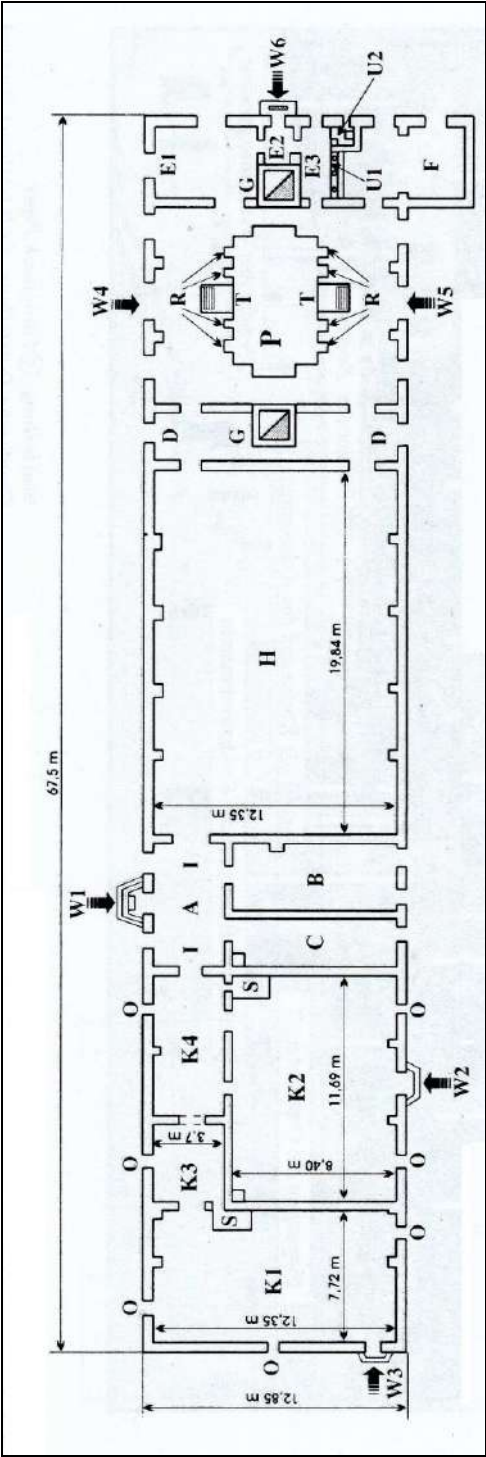
KL. AU. ROM 1 GEZ.: B A E R .++++++

1./Zur 478.46/44 zur Festnahme ausstreichen.  
 2./Wartkarten anlegen. 8. 23.10.44  
 3./Zur 478.46/44

PANSTWOWE MUZEUM  
 Auschwitz-Birkenau  
 w Oswiecimiu  
 DZIAŁ ARCHIWUM





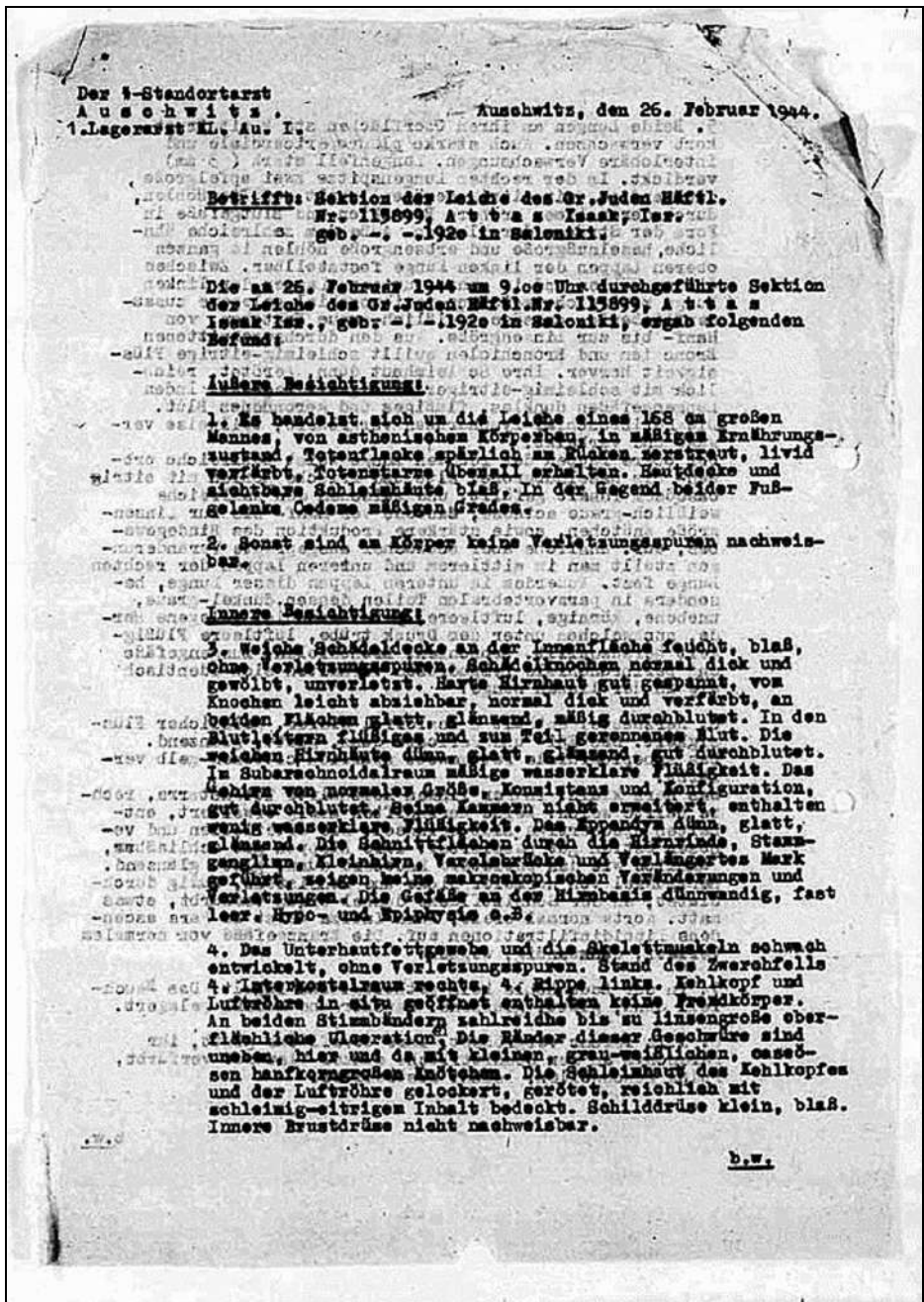


**DOCUMENT 20:** Floor plan of Crematorium IV at the Birkenau Camp. From: Piper 2000, Vol. III, p. 162.



**DOCUMENT 21:** Last page of the medical record of the Jewish prisoner Beniamin Beresi (covering the time from March 20 through April 3, 1944, his days 259 through 273 after his admission to the inmate infirmary). “Hoerlein Document No. 215.” National Archives Microfilm Publications. Microfilm Publication M892. Records of the United States. Nuernberg War Crimes Trials. United States of America v. Carl Krauch et al. (Case VI). August 14, 1947-July 30, 1948. Roll 68. Defense Exhibits. Washington,

1976.



DOCUMENT 22: Autopsy protocol by Dr. Fritz Klein of February 26, 1944 about the Jewish inmate Isaak Attas. Source: as Document 21.

5. Beide Lungen an ihren Oberflächen stark mit Brustkorb verwachsen. Auch starke pleuropericardiale und interlobäre Verwachsungen. Lungenfell stark (3 mm) verdickt. In der rechten Lungenspitze zwei apfelgroße, dickwandige, mit eitrig-serösen Inhalt gefüllte Höhlen, durch deren Lumen größere Bronchien und Blutgefäße in Form der Stränge durchlaufen. Außerdem zahlreiche ähnliche, haselnußgroße und erbsengroße Höhlen im ganzen oberen Lappen der linken Lunge feststellbar. Zwischen diesen Höhlen und im ganzen unteren Lappen der linken Lunge zahlreiche meistens peribronchial gelegene zusammenfließende, caseöse, weißlich-graue Knötchen, von Hanf- bis zur Linsengröße. Aus den durchgeschnittenen Bronchien und Bronchiolen quillt schleimig-eitrige Flüssigkeit hervor. Ihre Schleimhaut dünn, gerötet, reichlich mit schleimig-eitriger Flüssigkeit besetzt. Inden Lungengefäßen dunkles, flüßiges und geronnenes Blut. Die Peribronchial-Lymphdrüsen vergrößert, teilweise verkäst und verkalkt.
- Der Obere Lappen der rechten Lunge weist zahlreiche erbsen- bis haselnußgroße, alte und frische Höhlen mit eitrig caseösem Inhalt gefüllt, und zwischen den zahlreichen weißlich-graue acinöse, caseöse von Hanf- bis zur Linsengröße Knötchen, sowie stärkere Produktion des Bindegewebes, auf. Ähnliche aber schwächer ausgeprägte Veränderungen stellt man im mittleren und unteren Lappen der rechten Lunge fest. Außerdem im unteren Lappen dieser Lunge, besonders in paravertebralen Teilen dessen dunkel-graue, unebene, körnige, luftleere, peribronchial gelegene Herde, aus welchen unter dem Druck trübe, luftleere Flüssigkeit herausquillt. Bronchien, Bronchiolen, Lungengefäße und peribronchiale Lymphdrüsen verhalten sich identisch wie in der linken Lunge.
6. Herzbeutel enthält 2 Esslöffel klarer, gelblicher Flüssigkeit. Das Epi- und Pericard dünn, glatt, glänzend. Das subepicardiale Fettgewebe spärlich zitronengelb verfärbt.
- Das Herz klein. In der linken Herzhälfte Totenstarre, rechte Hälfte weich. Beide Herzhälften mäßig erweitert, enthalten speckartige Blutgerinnsel. Die arteriellen und venösen Ostien gut passierbar. Ihre Klappen gut schließbar, ähnlich wie das parietale Endocard dünn, glatt glänzend. Herzmuskel von normaler Dicke und Konsistenz, mäßig durchblutet, an der Schnittfläche dunkel-braun verfärbt, etwas matt. Aorta normal breit, ihre Lumen weist in Pars ascendens Lipoidinfiltrationen auf. Die Krampfgefäße von normalem Verlauf, dünnwandig, wegnah.
7. In der Bauchhöhle kein pathologischer Inhalt. Das Bauchfell dünn, glatt, glänzend. Bauchorgane normal gelagert.
8. Milz leicht vergrößert, ihre Oberfläche glatt, ihr Parenchym an der Schnittfläche dunkel-blau-rot verfärbt, Pulpa geschwollen, leicht abstreifbar.

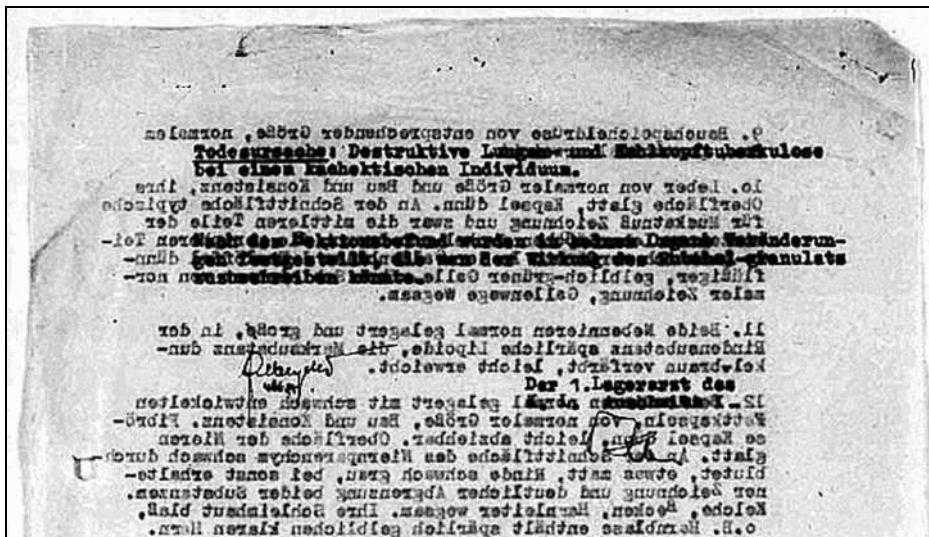
b.w.

9. Bauchspeicheldrüse von entsprechender Größe, normalen Bau, postmortal vergrößert. ovischneus sedansaussebof  
multivibnal nedositmedox mario fed
10. Leber von normaler Größe und Bau und Konsistenz, ihre Oberfläche glatt, Kapsel dünn. An der Schnittfläche typische für Muskatnuß Zeichnung und zwar die mittleren Teile der einzelnen Leberlappen dunkel-rot-braun; die peripheren Teile gelblich verfärbt. In der Gallenblase dunkelgrün dünne flüssiger, gelblich-grüner Galle. Ihre Schleimhaut von normaler Zeichnung, Gallenwege wegsam.
11. Beide Nebennieren normal gelagert und groß, in der Rindensubstanz spärliche Lipide, die Marksubstanz dunkel-braun verfärbt, leicht erweicht. *schwach*
12. Beide Nieren normal gelagert mit schwach entwickelten Fettkapseln, von normaler Größe, Bau und Konsistenz. Fibröse Kapsel dünn, leicht abziehbar. Oberfläche der Nieren glatt. An der Schnittfläche das Nierenparenchym schwach durchblutet, etwas matt. Rinde schwach grau, bei sonst erhaltener Zeichnung und deutlicher Abgrenzung beider Substanzen. Kelche, Becken, Harnleiter wegsam. Ihre Schleimhaut blaß, o.B. Harnblase enthält spärlich gelblichen klaren Harn. Ihre Schleimhaut blaß, o.B.
13. Mundhöhle, Rachen und Speiseröhre leer. Ihre Schleimhaut blaß, o.B. Adenoidaler Apparat im Rachen schwach entwickelt, nur die Mandeln vergrößert, derb mit zahlreichen gelblichen Pfropfen. Magen enthält Reste halbverdauter Speise, ohne spezifischen Geruch. Seine Schleimhaut blaß, ohne Erosionen, Erosionen und Geschwüre. Dünn- und Dickdarm enthalten spärlichen normalen Inhalt, die Schleimhaut des Dünn- und Dickdarms blaß, o.B. Die im Gekröse und hinter dem Bauchfell liegenden Lymphdrüsen nicht vergrößert.
14. Geschlechtsorgane ohne makroskopische Veränderungen insbesondere Hoden und Nebenhoden spezifische Veränderungen. *ohne*
15. Gelenke und Knöchelgürtel o.B.

#### Pathologisch-anatomische Diagnose:

Tuberculosis pulmonum. (Duae cavernae tuberculosae obsoletae magnitudine pomi appicis et multiplices cavernae magnitudinis nudis et cavernaculae lobii superioris et tuberculosis acino-nodosa totius pulmonis, insitri. Multiplices cavernaculae tuberculosae obsoletae recentes lobii superioris et tuberculosis acino-nodosa et fibre-productiva totius pulmonis dextri.) Bronchopneumonia dispersa lobii inferioris pulmonis dextri. Tracheobronchitis catarrhalis chronica. Congregationes pleurales compactae ambilaterales, pleuroparietales et interlobares. Tuberculosis lymphoglandularum peribronchialium. Ulcera tuberculosa chordarum vocalium ambilateralium. Dilatio cordis praecipue dextri medi gradus. Degeneratio parenchymatosa myocardii. Infiltratio lipoides intimae aortae ascendentes. Tumor lienis acutus. Hepar roscaeum. Degeneratio parenchymatosa renum. Hypolipoidosis subcutanea corticalis glandularum suprarenalium. Amygdalitis chronica. Oedema pedum. Hyperaemia passiva organorum praecipue cerebri et meningum. Cachexia.





Document 22 continued.



**DOCUMENT 23:** Josef Mengele on a bicycle. Drawing by Dinah Gottlieblová.  
From: Kraus/Kulka 1957, p. 212.



## Index of Names

Individuals only. Entries in footnotes as italics. This Index does not include names from the Tables in the Appendix (starting on p. 395)

- A —  
 Adler, Hans Günther: 11, 240-243  
 Algawa, Josef: 297  
 Altstötter, Josef: 160  
 Ambros, Otto: 161, 299  
 Amcham, Morris: 161  
 Aroneau, Eugène: 141, 172, 173  
 Attas, Isaak: 298, 465  
 Aumeier, Hans: 379  
 Awerbuch, Michael: 298
- B —  
 Babitsky, Arthur Harold: 392  
 Backhouse, T.M.: 309  
 Baer, Richard: 188, 260, 262  
 Baranowski, Julian: 237  
 Bartosik, Igor: 248, 257, 260, 261  
 Becher, Kurt: 244  
 Belowus, Wasil: 183  
 Bendel, Charles S.: 13, 14, 29, 143, 160, 168, 245, 265, 289, 294, 296, 309-330, 332-336, 340, 342, 343, 345, 353, 354, 357, 363, 377  
 Bennahmias, Daniel: 160, 289, 301  
 Bennett, John: 376  
 Berenbaum, Michael: 12  
 Beresi, Benjamin: 298, 464  
 Berillet, Pierre: 309  
 Bestic, Alan: 313  
 Bezwińska, Jadwiga: 266, 290, 343, 359  
 Biddle, Francis: 143  
 Bihari, Angelika: 116, 243, 253  
 Bimko, Ada: 353, 355-357  
 Birkett, Norman: 143  
 Bischoff, Karl: 353  
 Blaschke, Karl: 228
- Braham, Randolph L.: 182, 282, 283  
 Brandt, Karl: 160  
 Broad, Pery: 168, 341, 345, 357, 358, 360  
 Brüggemann, Max: 161  
 Bucci, Alessandra: 393  
 Bucci, Tatiana Liliana: 393  
 Buki, Milton: 266, 380  
 Bürgin, Ernst: 161  
 Bütefisch, Heinrich: 161
- C —  
 Camhi Fromer, Rebecca: 301  
 Čespiva, Jan: 388  
 Charmatz, Jan: 161  
 Christianson, Scott: 219  
 Churchill, Winston: 15, 129  
 Clauberg, Carl: 295  
 Czech, Danuta: 185, 191, 196, 198, 206, 214, 230, 232, 235-237, 239, 241, 242, 244, 257-259, 260, 262, 263, 265, 266, 280, 281, 283, 284, 289, 290, 294, 296, 299-303, 313, 317, 335, 336, 343, 344, 359, 450, 462
- D —  
 de Simone, Sergio: 393  
 de Vabres, Donnedieu: 143  
 Deana, Franco: 193, 194, 197, 198, 199, 200-202, 203, 276, 312, 313, 453-455  
 Dénes, Görög: 68, 111, 125, 126, 190, 289, 299, 300, 350, 362, 377  
 Diels, Rudolph: 341  
 Dionne, quintuplets: 29  
 Długoborski, Waław: 12, 375  
 Dragon, Szlama: 218, 251, 275, 276, 341, 362  
 Draper, Gerald I.D.: 309
- DuBois Jr., Josiah E.: 161  
 Dürrfeld, Walter: 161, 186
- E —  
 Ehrenburg, Ilya: 141  
 Eichmann, Adolf: 11, 212, 240, 282  
 Eindenmüller, Rottenführer: 81, 304  
 Entress, Friedrich: 295, 340, 341, 345  
 Enwonwu, C.O.: 388  
 Epstein, Berthold: 29, 62, 142, 143, 160, 289, 294-298, 300, 311, 312, 363, 389, 392  
 Erler, Rudolf: 260
- F —  
 Farkas, Elias: 297  
 Farkas, Henrik: 347, 348  
 Feinsilber, Alter: see Jankowski, Stanisław  
 Ferri, Luigi: 393  
 Fischer, Adolf: 68, 125, 190, 289, 299, 300, 362  
 Fischer, Bruno: 295  
 Fischer, Horst: 295, 379  
 Flick, Friedrich: 160  
 Flury, Ferdinand: 208  
 Forsyz, Michel: 297  
 Frąckiewicz, Jerzy: 375  
 Franco, Francisco: 172  
 Freese, Willi: 260  
 Frei, Norbert: 260  
 Freiherr von Verschuer, Otmär: 13  
 Freyer, Anne: 11, 223, 270, 370  
 Frickhinger, Hans Walter: 220  
 Friedler, Eric: 301  
 Friedman, Filip: 218



## — G —

Gajewski, Fritz: 160  
 Gál, Gyula: 349  
 Gasser, Ludwig: 210  
 Gattineau, Heinrich: 161  
 Gilbert, Martin: 181  
 Golinski, Apolinary: 204  
 Gottliebová, Dinah: 30, 44,  
 289, 300, 389, 390, 392,  
 469  
 Grabner, Maximilian: 331,  
 357, 379  
 Greifelt, Ulrich: 160  
 Grósz, Dr.: 27, 289, 290  
 Grotus, Thomas: 388  
 Grünbaum, Jakob: 297  
 Grunow, Herta: 267  
 Guionnet, Alain: 348  
 Günther, Hans: 240  
 Günther, Rolf: 282  
 Gutman, Yisrael: 12  
 Guttmann, Benno: 297  
 György, Huszár: 9

## — H —

Häfliger, Paul: 161  
 Hauptmann, Zoltan and Jenő,  
 twins: 241  
 Heller, Otto: 62, 289, 299  
 Herber, Friedrich: 161, 165,  
 183  
 Heydrich, Reinhard: 177  
 Hilberg, Raul: 11, 357  
 Himmler, Heinrich: 66, 113,  
 196, 206, 244, 312, 313  
 Hitler, Adolf: 172  
 Hoffmann, Karl: 299  
 Holick, Martin: 205  
 Holländer, Rottenführer: 81,  
 304  
 Hörlein, Philipp H.: 160, 297,  
 464  
 Höss, Rudolf: 11, 156, 157,  
 166, 167, 173, 174, 177,  
 212, 213, 217, 223, 227,  
 229, 234, 290, 313, 318,  
 330, 331, 339, 340, 342,  
 343, 345, 357-360

## — I —

Ilgner, Max: 161  
 Irmscher, Richard: 219  
 Israel, Matilde: 232  
 Iwaszko, Tadeusz: 291

## — J —

Jähne, Friedrich: 161  
 Jährling, Rudolf: 325  
 Janisch, Josef: 354  
 Jankowski, Stanisław: 198,  
 266, 358, 360  
 Jedrzekiewicz, Richard: 187  
 Jothann, Werner: 205, 206  
 Jsef, Davied: 187

## — K —

Kaltenbrunner, Ernst: 177,  
 228  
 Kárný, Miroslav: 230, 241,  
 299, 392  
 Kauffmann, Kurt: 177  
 Kaufman, Mary: 161  
 Kemény: 282  
 Kenész, Imréné: 348  
 Kessler, Richard: 202  
 Kielar, Wiesław: 257  
 Kirschnack, Hans: 224  
 Kitt, Bruno: 295, 319  
 Klarsfeld, Serge: 262, 300,  
 303, 304, 309, 318, 377,  
 397, 398  
 Klehr, Josef: 375  
 Klein, Fritz: 120, 121, 295,  
 298, 304, 319, 379, 465  
 Klein, Géza: 348  
 Klein, Károly: 348  
 Kloppmann, Joel: 297  
 Knopp, Sonja: 304  
 Kogon, Eugen: 171  
 König, Wilhelm: 319  
 Körner, Jecheskiel (Józef):  
 68, 125, 143, 160, 183, 190,  
 191, 289, 299, 300, 362  
 Kranz, Tomasz: 320  
 Krauch, Carl: 160, 166, 167,  
 297, 299, 464  
 Kraus, Ota: 230, 379, 469  
 Kremer, Tibère: 9, 10, 15,  
 172-174, 175, 208, 211,  
 356, 368, 447  
 Krewer, B.: 309, 310, 312,  
 313, 314, 317-320, 323,  
 327, 330, 332, 336  
 Krupp, Alfred: 160  
 Kubica, Helena: 12, 183, 241,  
 286, 296, 300, 305, 306,  
 387-391, 393  
 Kugler, Hans: 161  
 Kühne, Hans: 161

Kula, Michał: 216

Kulka, Erich: 230, 379, 469

## — L —

Łanczy, Czeslaus: 297  
 Langbein, Hermann: 11, 330,  
 331, 378, 379  
 Langfus, Leib: 185, 235, 301,  
 362  
 Lasik, Aleksander: 218, 280  
 Lassier, Hubert: 392  
 Lautenschläger, Carl: 161  
 Lawrence, Geoffrey: 143  
 Lengyel, Olga: 378  
 Lensky, Robert: 219  
 Lentz III, Harris M.: 392  
 Leuchter, Fred A.: 219  
 Levi, Primo: 290, 297  
 Lévy, Robert: 27, 143, 160,  
 190, 289-294, 342  
 Lewental, Zalmen: 266, 301  
 Lewinski, Jakob: 188, 189  
 Lewy, Albert G.D.: 161  
 Lichtenstein, Heiner: 11  
 Liebehenschel, Arthur: 205  
 Lifton, Robert J.: 135, 136,  
 348, 373, 380, 391  
 Limousin, Henri: 295  
 Lingens-Reiner, Ella: 11  
 Lipka, Anna: 387  
 Lipstadt, Deborah E.: 354  
 List, Wilhelm: 160

## — M —

Makowski, Antoni: 183, 184  
 Mandelbaum, Henryk: 251  
 Mann, Wilhelm: 161  
 Mansfeld, Gezar: 68, 295  
 Mark, Ber: 301  
 Markus, Kurt: 293, 360  
 Marsalek, Hans: 285  
 Matogno, Carlo: 12, 14, 16,  
 169, 173, 185, 186, 187,  
 193-195, 197, 198, 199,  
 200-202, 203, 209, 216,  
 223, 227, 229, 230, 233,  
 235, 236, 237, 245, 250,  
 251, 257, 258, 261, 267,  
 276, 291, 300, 303, 304,  
 307, 312-314, 320, 332,  
 341, 343, 353, 371, 379,  
 383, 387, 453-455, 459  
 Mazal, Harry W.: 212  
 McIlwraith, Ian D.: 143

- McNamara, B.P.: 227  
 Mengele, Josef: 9, 12, 13, 15, 19, 21-25, 27, 28, 30-35, 42, 43, 45-49, 55, 56, 59-70, 74, 82, 83, 85-87, 89, 90, 92, 94, 96, 98, 99, 103, 106, 108, 109, 118, 119, 121, 125, 130, 136, 138-143, 157, 159, 162, 167, 175, 181, 189, 190, 203, 217-219, 235, 236, 244, 246, 263, 285, 286, 292, 295, 296, 298-300, 304-307, 309, 310-312, 336, 350, 362, 372-374, 377-381, 387-394, 469  
 Merleau-Ponty, Maurice: 173  
 Messing, Heinrich: 224  
 Michel: 81, 272, 289, 301  
 Mikołajski, Zdzisław: 266  
 Milch, Erhard: 160  
 Minskoff, Emanuel: 139, 143-146, 150, 153, 154, 156-158, 161, 165, 166, 168, 190, 310, 345, 382  
 Möhs, Ernst: 240  
 Moll, Otto: 59, 60, 222, 318, 342  
 Mordowicz, Czesław: 282, 343  
 Müller, Filip: 212, 257, 304, 318, 347, 357, 363, 376-379  
 Mussfeld, Erich: 34, 59, 68, 72, 74-78, 106, 108, 110, 116, 119, 125, 136, 143, 158, 175, 226, 267, 268, 274, 302
- N —  
 Nelson, Tim B.: 14  
 Nemes, László: 14  
 Newman, Randolph: 161  
 Nikitchenko, Iona T.: 143  
 Nyiszli, Miklós: *passim*
- O —  
 Ohlendorf, Otto: 160  
 Olère, David: 159, 197, 222, 223, 289, 301, 303, 304, 318, 369  
 Olson, Kent R.: 225  
 Olszański, Tadeusz: 253  
 Orth, Karin: 343
- Oster, Heinrich: 161  
 Ottolenghi, Gustavo: 283
- P —  
 Pach, Jean (Jacques): 362, 363, 377, 378  
 Paisikovic, Dov: 222, 223, 251, 303, 304  
 Pankowicz, Andzrej: 283  
 Paraz, Albert: 9, 170-173  
 Parcer, Jan: 388  
 Parker, John I.: 143  
 Paskuly, Steven: 318  
 Peters, Gerhard: 165, 208-210, 226  
 Phillips, Raymond: 13, 304, 309, 311, 316-319, 328, 332, 356, 419  
 Picciotto Fargion, Liliana: 393  
 Pintzow, Michael: 297  
 Piper, Franciszek: 12, 15, 218, 239, 246, 247, 250, 257-259, 266, 271, 273-275, 304, 315, 319, 320, 347, 358-366, 367, 375, 377, 452, 463  
 Pliszko, Lemke (Chaim): see Pliszko, Meier  
 Pliszko, Meier: 261, 262  
 Pohl, Oswald: 160, 185  
 Pokrovsky, Yuri: 209  
 Poliakov, Léon: 11  
 Porębski, Henryk: 257  
 Porter, Carlos W.: 387  
 Posner, Gerald L.: 12, 391, 392  
 Pressac, Jean-Claude: 11, 12, 196, 197, 214, 216, 217, 223-225, 263, 271, 274, 275, 319, 324, 325, 327, 330, 334, 335, 347, 353, 354, 368-371  
 Provan, Charles D.: 10, 12, 135, 166, 338, 371-374, 376-378, 380-384  
 Prüfer, Kurt: 205, 224  
 Purke, Josef: 260  
 Puszyňa (Puzyna), Martyna: 300, 389, 392
- R —  
 Rabinovits, Dr.: 350  
 Rabinowitsch, Emil: 296
- Rahm, Karl: 240  
 Rasch, Walter: 210  
 Rassinier, Paul: 9, 170-174, 176, 181, 192, 201, 215, 245, 246, 255, 354, 382, 383, 447  
 Reich, Imre: 348  
 Reichenberger, Laslo and Ernst, twins: 241  
 Reitlinger, Gerald: 11, 170, 353-356  
 Reuter, Prof. Dr.: 371  
 Roosevelt, Franklin D.: 15, 129  
 Rosenberg, Walter: 266, 283, 313, 343  
 Rosin, Arnost: 266, 282, 343  
 Rozett, Robert: 232  
 Rudolf, Germar: 188, 210, 216, 227  
 Rüter, Christiaan F.: 375
- S —  
 Sakew, W.: 251  
 Sander, Fritz: 193  
 Sanford, P. Gerald: 95  
 Sartre, Jean-Paul: 172, 173  
 Scheimetz, Rottenführer: 217, 218  
 Schenkarenko, Aleksander: 261, 262  
 Schmitz, Hermann: 160  
 Schneider, Christian: 160  
 Schöttl, Vincenz: 189  
 Schuster, Heinrich: 342  
 Schwarz, Deszö: 251, 252  
 Seaver, Richard: 10, 15, 112, 127, 356, 369, 372, 373, 382  
 Sehn, Jan: 14, 217, 234, 267, 314, 321, 357  
 Seidl, Hans: 297, 298  
 Seitz, Robert: 81, 159, 304  
 Sentkeller: see Zentkeller, Roman  
 Setkiewicz, Piotr: 234  
 Sewell, Milton A.: 161  
 Shmaglevskaya, Severina: 331  
 Silberschein, Abraham: 348  
 Smoleń, Kazimierz: 313  
 Śnieszko, Tadeusz: 296  
 Soboiko, Moszek: 261, 262

- Sobotka, Moshe: see Soboiko, Moszek  
 Spector, Shmuel: 232  
 Sprecher, Drexel A.: 161, 166  
 Sproncz, József: 348  
 Stalin, Joseph: 15, 129  
 Steinberg, Karl-Fritz: 80, 81, 118  
 Steinberg, Maxime: 262, 398  
 Steiner, Endre and Zoltan, twins: 241  
 Steinfeld, Israel: 296  
 Stössel, Dr.: 153, 154, 166  
 Strassmann, Georg: 31, 371, 372  
 Strzelecka, Irena: 234  
 Szabo, Jozsef: 380  
 Szépvölgyi, Dénesné: 348  
 Szymańska, Danuta: 296  
 Szymański, Tadeusz: 296
- T —  
 Tabeau, Jerzy: see Wesolowski, Jerzy  
 Tauber, Henryk: 217, 218, 271, 275, 313, 334, 353, 358, 360, 377, 378  
 Taylor, George G.: 143  
 Taylor, Telford: 161, 166, 168  
 ter Meer, Fritz: 160  
 Tesch, Bruno: 11, 211, 309, 311, 315, 323, 325, 339, 341, 343  
 Thilo, Heinz: 66, 89, 90, 136, 157, 158, 167, 295, 306  
 (print edition)
- Toepfer, Karl: 261, 262  
 Trunk, Achim: 221  
 Tubridy, Joseph F.: 143
- V —  
 Vaillant-Couturier, Marie Claude: 331  
 Vámosi, Jenő: 348  
 van Pelt, Robert Jan: 11, 225, 227  
 van Street, Virgil: 161  
 Veesenmayer, Edmund: 283  
 Venezia, Shlomo: 222, 223  
 Vihar, Béla: 347, 348  
 Vitek: see Weisskopf, Rudolf  
 Volchkov, Alexander F.: 143  
 Volli, Gemma: 232  
 von Birago, Karl: 128  
 von der Heyde, Erich: 161  
 von Halle, Benvenuto: 139, 143, 145, 147, 159, 161, 164, 165  
 von Knieriem, August: 160  
 von Leeb, Wilhelm: 160  
 von Schnitzler, Georg: 160  
 von Thadden, Eberhard: 228, 282  
 von Weizsäcker, Ernst: 160  
 Vrba, Rudolf: see Rosenberg, Walter
- W —  
 Wagner, Bernd C.: 184  
 Wagner, Hans: 153, 154, 166  
 Waitz, Robert: 241, 290  
 Waksman, Gerszon: 186  
 Wallenstein, Albrecht von: 86  
 Ware, John: 12, 391, 392  
 Weinberger, Alexander: 297  
 Weinblum, Lejzor: 298  
 Weisskopf, Rudolf: 296, 298-300, 389, 392  
 Wellers, Georges: 232, 293, 357  
 Wesolowski, Jerzy: 343  
 Wetzler, Alfred: 266, 313, 314, 343, 344, 346-348, 355  
 Wind, Marcus: 183, 190  
 Wirths, Eduard: 158, 167, 187, 305, 330, 331, 387  
 Wolff, Dr.: 66, 67, 70, 157, 158  
 Wolken, Otto: 234  
 Wróbel, Halina: 284  
 Wurster, Karl: 161  
 Wüstinger, Erich: 210
- Z —  
 Zaun, Alfred: 340  
 Zbirohowski-Kościa, Withold: 253  
 Zentkeller, Roman: 24, 32, 289  
 Zernik, Franz: 208  
 Zippel, Otto: 315, 323, 325  
 Zorovics, Moses: 297  
 Zucker, engineer: 240, 241  
 Zündel, Ernst: 12, 219

# HOLOCAUST HANDBOOKS

This ambitious, growing series addresses various aspects of the “Holocaust” of the WWII era. Most of them are based on decades of research from archives all over the world. They are heavily referenced. In contrast to most other works on this issue, the tomes of this series approach its topic with profound academic scrutiny and a critical attitude. Any Holocaust researcher ignoring this series will remain oblivious to some of the most important research in the field. These books are designed to both convince the common reader as well as academics. The following books have appeared so far, or are about to be released. Compare hardcopy and eBook prices at [www.findbookprices.com](http://www.findbookprices.com).

## SECTION ONE:

### General Overviews of the Holocaust

#### **The First Holocaust. The Surprising Origin of the Six-Million Figure.**

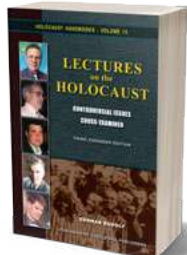
By Don Heddesheimer.

This compact but substantive study documents propaganda spread prior to, during and after the FIRST World War that claimed East European Jewry was on the brink of annihilation. The magic number of suffering and dying Jews was 6 million back then as well. The book details how these Jewish fundraising operations in America raised vast sums in the name of feeding suffering Polish and Russian Jews but actually funneled much of the money to Zionist and Communist groups. 5th ed., 200 pages, b&w illustrations, bibliography, index. (#6)



#### **Lectures on the Holocaust. Controversial Issues Cross Examined.**

By Germar Rudolf. This book first explains why “the Holocaust” is an important topic, and that it is well to keep an open mind about it. It then tells how many mainstream scholars expressed doubts and subsequently fell from grace. Next, the physical traces and documents about the various claimed crime scenes and murder weapons are discussed. After that, the reliability of witness testimony is examined. Finally, the author lobbies for a free exchange



of ideas about this topic. This book gives the most-comprehensive and up-to-date overview of the critical research into the Holocaust. With its dialog style, it is pleasant to read, and it can even be used as an encyclopedic compendium. 3rd ed., 596 pages, b&w illustrations, bibliography, index. (#15)

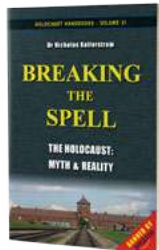
#### **Breaking the Spell. The Holocaust, Myth & Reality.**

By Nicholas Kollerstrom. In 1941, British Intelligence analysts cracked the German “Enigma” code. Hence, in 1942 and 1943, encrypted radio communications between German concentration camps and the Berlin headquarters were decrypted. The intercepted data



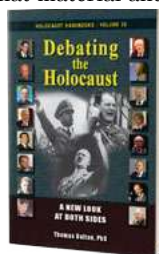
Pictured above are all of the scientific studies that comprise the series *Holocaust Handbooks* published thus far or are about to be released. More volumes and new editions are constantly in the works. Check [www.HolocaustHandbooks.com](http://www.HolocaustHandbooks.com) for updates.

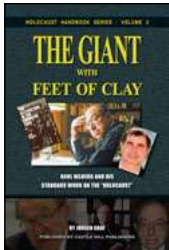
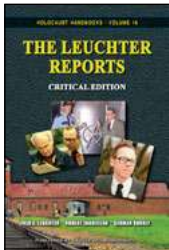
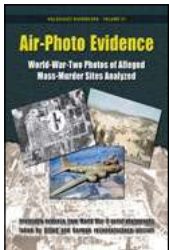
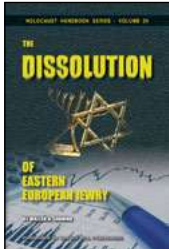
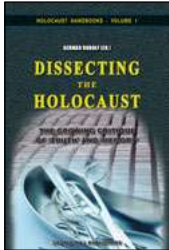
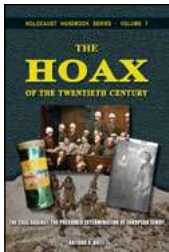
refutes the orthodox “Holocaust” narrative. It reveals that the Germans were desperate to reduce the death rate in their labor camps, which was caused by catastrophic typhus epidemics. Dr. Kollerstrom, a science historian, has taken these intercepts and a wide array of mostly unchallenged corroborating evidence to show that “witness statements” supporting the human gas chamber narrative clearly clash with the available scientific data. Kollerstrom concludes that the history of the Nazi “Holocaust” has been written by the victors with ulterior motives. It is distorted, exaggerated and largely wrong. With a foreword by Prof. Dr. James Fetzer. 5th ed., 282 pages, b&w ill., bibl., index. (#31)



#### **Debating the Holocaust. A New Look at Both Sides.**

By Thomas Dalton. Mainstream historians insist that there cannot be, may not be, a debate about the Holocaust. But ignoring it does not make this controversy go away. Traditional scholars admit that there was neither a budget, a plan, nor an order for the Holocaust; that the key camps have all but vanished, and so have any human remains; that material and unequivocal documentary evidence is absent; and that there are serious problems with survivor testimonies. Dalton juxtaposes the traditional Holocaust narrative with revisionist challenges and then analyzes the mainstream’s responses to them. He reveals the weaknesses of both sides, while declaring revisionism





the winner of the current state of the debate. 2nd ed., 332 pages, b&w illustrations, bibliography, index. (#32)

**The Hoax of the Twentieth Century. The Case against the Presumed Extermination of European Jewry.** By Arthur R. Butz. The first writer to analyze the entire Holocaust complex in a precise scientific manner. This book exhibits the overwhelming force of arguments accumulated by the mid-1970s. Butz's two main arguments are: 1. All major entities hostile to Germany must have known what was happening to the Jews under German authority. They acted during the war as if no mass slaughter was occurring. 2. All the evidence adduced to proof any mass slaughter has a dual interpretation, while only the innocuous one can be proven to be correct. This book continues to be a major historical reference work, frequently cited by prominent personalities. This edition has numerous supplements with new information gathered over the last 35 years. 4th ed., 524 pages, b&w illustrations, bibliography, index. (#7)

**Dissecting the Holocaust. The Growing Critique of 'Truth' and 'Memory.'** Edited by Germar Rudolf. *Dissecting the Holocaust* applies state-of-the-art scientific technique and classic methods of detection to investigate the alleged murder of millions of Jews by Germans during World War II. In 22 contributions—each of some 30 pages—the 17 authors dissect generally accepted paradigms of the “Holocaust.” It reads as exciting as a crime novel: so many lies, forgeries and deceptions by politicians, historians and scientists are proven. This is the intellectual adventure of the 21st century. Be part of it! 3rd ed., ca. 630 pages, b&w illustrations, bibliography, index. (#1)

**The Dissolution of Eastern European Jewry.** By Walter N. Sanning. Six Million Jews died in the Holocaust. Sanning did not take that number at face value, but thoroughly explored European population developments and shifts mainly caused by emigration as well as deportations and evacuations conducted by both Nazis and the Soviets, among other things. The book is based mainly on Jewish, Zionist and mainstream sources. It concludes that a sizeable share of the Jews found missing during local censuses after the Second World War, which were so far counted as “Holocaust victims,” had either emigrated (mainly to Israel or the U.S.) or had been deported by Stalin to Siberian labor camps. 2nd ed., foreword by A.R. Butz, epilogue by Germar Rudolf containing important

updates; 224 pages, b&w illustrations, bibliography (#29).

**Air Photo Evidence: World War Two Photos of Alleged Mass Murder Sites Analyzed.** By Germar Rudolf (editor). During World War Two both German and Allied reconnaissance aircraft took countless air photos of places of tactical and strategic interest in Europe. These photos are prime evidence for the investigation of the Holocaust. Air photos of locations like Auschwitz, Majdanek, Treblinka, Babi Yar etc. permit an insight into what did or did not happen there. The author has unearthed many pertinent photos and has thoroughly analyzed them. This book is full of air photo reproductions and schematic drawings explaining them. According to the author, these images refute many of the atrocity claims made by witnesses in connection with events in the German sphere of influence. 5th edition; with a contribution by Carlo Mattogno. 168 pages, 8.5”x11”, b&w illustrations, bibliography, index (#27).

**The Leuchter Reports: Critical Edition.** By Fred Leuchter, Robert Faurisson and Germar Rudolf. Between 1988 and 1991, U.S. expert on execution technologies Fred Leuchter wrote four detailed reports addressing whether the Third Reich operated homicidal gas chambers. The first report on Auschwitz and Majdanek became world famous. Based on chemical analyses and various technical arguments, Leuchter concluded that the locations investigated “could not have then been, or now be, utilized or seriously considered to function as execution gas chambers.” The second report deals with gas-chamber claims for the camps Dachau, Mauthausen and Hartheim, while the third reviews design criteria and operation procedures of execution gas chambers in the U.S. The fourth report reviews Pressac's 1989 tome *Auschwitz*. 4th ed., 252 pages, b&w illustrations. (#16)

**The Giant with Feet of Clay: Raul Hilberg and His Standard Work on the Holocaust.** By Jürgen Graf. Raul Hilberg's major work *The Destruction of European Jewry* is an orthodox standard work on the Holocaust. But what evidence does Hilberg provide to back his thesis that there was a German plan to exterminate Jews, carried out mainly in gas chambers? Jürgen Graf applies the methods of critical analysis to Hilberg's evidence and examines the results in light of modern historiography. The results of Graf's critical analysis are devastating for Hilberg.



2nd, corrected edition, 139 pages, b&w illustrations, bibliography, index. (#3)

**Jewish Emigration from the Third Reich.** By Ingrid Weckert. Current historical writings about the Third Reich claim state it was difficult for Jews to flee from Nazi persecution. The truth is that Jewish emigration was welcomed by the German authorities. Emigration was not some kind of wild flight, but rather a lawfully determined and regulated matter. Weckert's booklet elucidates the emigration process in law and policy. She shows that German and Jewish authorities worked closely together. Jews interested in emigrating received detailed advice and offers of help from both sides. 2nd ed., 130 pages, index. (#12)

**Inside the Gas Chambers: The Extermination of Mainstream Holocaust Historiography.** By Carlo Mattogno. Neither increased media propaganda or political pressure nor judicial persecution can stifle revisionism. Hence, in early 2011, the Holocaust Orthodoxy published a 400 pp. book (in German) claiming to refute "revisionist propaganda," trying again to prove "once and for all" that there were homicidal gas chambers at the camps of Dachau, Natzweiler, Sachsenhausen, Mauthausen, Ravensbrück, Neuengamme, Stutthof... you name them. Mattogno shows with his detailed analysis of this work of propaganda that mainstream Holocaust hagiography is beating around the bush rather than addressing revisionist research results. He exposes their myths, distortions and lies. 2nd ed., 280 pages, b&w illustrations, bibliography, index. (#25)

## SECTION TWO: Specific non-Auschwitz Studies

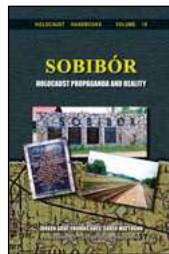
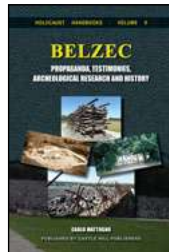
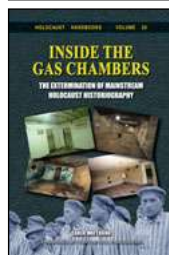
**Treblinka: Extermination Camp or Transit Camp?** By Carlo Mattogno and Jürgen Graf. It is alleged that at Treblinka in East Poland between 700,000 and 3,000,000 persons were murdered in 1942 and 1943. The weapons used were said to have been stationary and/or mobile gas chambers, fast-acting or slow-acting poison gas, unslaked lime, superheated steam, electricity, diesel exhaust fumes etc. Holocaust historians alleged that bodies were piled as high as multi-storied buildings and burned without a trace, using little or no fuel at all. Graf and Mattogno have now analyzed the origins, logic and technical feasibility of the official version of Treblinka. On the basis of numerous documents they reveal Treblinka's true identity as a mere transit

camp. 2nd ed., 372 pages, b&w illustrations, bibliography, index. (#8)

**Belzec in Propaganda, Testimonies, Archeological Research and History.** By Carlo Mattogno. Witnesses report that between 600,000 and 3 million Jews were murdered in the Belzec camp, located in Poland. Various murder weapons are claimed to have been used: diesel gas; unslaked lime in trains; high voltage; vacuum chambers; etc. The corpses were incinerated on huge pyres without leaving a trace. For those who know the stories about Treblinka this sounds familiar. Thus the author has restricted this study to the aspects which are new compared to Treblinka. In contrast to Treblinka, forensic drillings and excavations were performed at Belzec, the results of which are critically reviewed. 142 pages, b&w illustrations, bibliography, index. (#9)

**Sobibor: Holocaust Propaganda and Reality.** By Jürgen Graf, Thomas Kues and Carlo Mattogno. Between 25,000 and 2 million Jews are said to have been killed in gas chambers in the Sobibór camp in Poland. The corpses were allegedly buried in mass graves and later incinerated on pyres. This book investigates these claims and shows that they are based on the selective use of contradictory eyewitness testimony. Archeological surveys of the camp in 2000-2001 are analyzed, with fatal results for the extermination camp hypothesis. The book also documents the general National Socialist policy toward Jews, which never included a genocidal "final solution." 442 pages, b&w illustrations, bibliography, index. (#19)

**The "Extermination Camps" of "Aktion Reinhardt".** By Jürgen Graf, Thomas Kues and Carlo Mattogno. In late 2011, several members of the exterminationist *Holocaust Controversies* blog posted a study online which claims to refute three of our authors' monographs on the camps Belzec, Sobibor and Treblinka (see previous three entries). This tome is their point-by-point response, which makes "mincemeat" out of the bloggers' attempt at refutation. **Caution:** The two volumes of this work are an intellectual overkill for most people. They are recommended only for collectors, connoisseurs and professionals. These two books require familiarity with the above-mentioned books, of which they are a comprehensive update and expansion. 2nd ed., two volumes, total of 1396 pages, illustrations, bibliography. (#28)



**Chelmno: A Camp in History & Propaganda.** By Carlo Mattogno. At Chelmno, huge masses of Jewish prisoners are said to have been gassed in “gas vans” or shot (claims vary from 10,000 to 1.3 million victims). This study covers the subject from every angle, undermining the orthodox claims about the camp with an overwhelmingly effective body of evidence. Eyewitness statements, gas wagons as extermination weapons, forensics reports and excavations, German documents—all come under Mattogno’s scrutiny. Here are the uncensored facts about Chelmno, not the propaganda. 2nd ed., 188 pages, indexed, illustrated, bibliography. (#23)

**The Gas Vans: A Critical Investigation.** By Santiago Alvarez and Pierre Marais. It is alleged that the Nazis used mobile gas chambers to exterminate 700,000 people. Up until 2011, no thorough monograph had appeared on the topic. Santiago Alvarez has remedied the situation. Are witness statements reliable? Are documents genuine? Where are the murder weapons? Could they have operated as claimed? Where are the corpses? In order to get to the truth of the matter, Alvarez has scrutinized all known wartime documents and photos about this topic; he has analyzed a huge amount of witness statements as published in the literature and as presented in more than 30 trials held over the decades in Germany, Poland and Israel; and he has examined the claims made in the pertinent mainstream literature. The result of his research is mind-boggling. Note: This book and Mattogno’s book on Chelmno were edited in parallel to make sure they are consistent and not repetitive. 398 pages, b&w illustrations, bibliography, index. (#26)

**The Einsatzgruppen in the Occupied Eastern Territories: Genesis, Missions and Actions.** By C. Mattogno. Before invading the Soviet Union, the German authorities set up special units meant to secure the area behind the German front. Orthodox historians claim that these units called *Einsatzgruppen* primarily engaged in rounding up and mass-murdering Jews. This study sheds a critical light into this topic by reviewing all the pertinent sources as well as material traces. It reveals on the one hand that original war-time documents do not fully support the orthodox genocidal narrative, and on the other that most post-“liberation” sources such as testimonies and forensic reports are steeped in Soviet atrocity propaganda and are thus utterly unreliable. In ad-

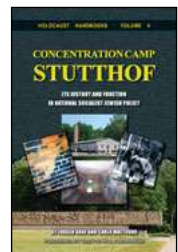
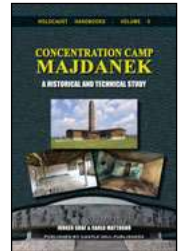
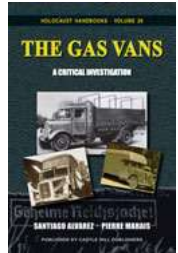
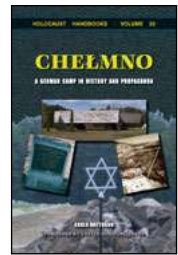
dition, material traces of the claimed massacres are rare due to an attitude of collusion by governments and Jewish lobby groups. 830 pp., b&w illustrations, bibliography, index. (#39)

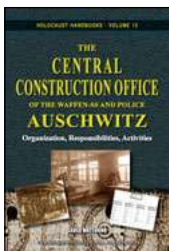
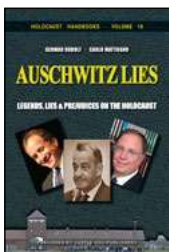
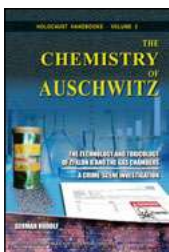
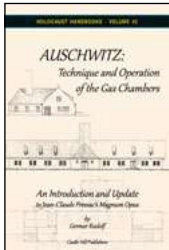
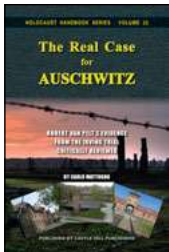
**Concentration Camp Majdanek. A Historical and Technical Study.** By Carlo Mattogno and Jürgen Graf. At war’s end, the Soviets claimed that up to two million Jews were murdered at the Majdanek Camp in seven gas chambers. Over the decades, however, the Majdanek Museum reduced the death toll three times to currently 78,000, and admitted that there were “only” two gas chambers. By exhaustively researching primary sources, the authors expertly dissect and repudiate the myth of homicidal gas chambers at that camp. They also critically investigated the legend of mass executions of Jews in tank trenches and prove them groundless. Again they have produced a standard work of methodical investigation which authentic historiography cannot ignore. 3rd ed., 358 pages, b&w illustrations, bibliography, index. (#5)

**Concentration Camp Stutthof and Its Function in National Socialist Jewish Policy.** By Carlo Mattogno and Jürgen Graf. Orthodox historians claim that the Stutthof Camp served as a “make-shift” extermination camp in 1944. Based mainly on archival resources, this study thoroughly debunks this view and shows that Stutthof was in fact a center for the organization of German forced labor toward the end of World War II. 4th ed., 170 pages, b&w illustrations, bibliography, index. (#4)

## SECTION THREE: Auschwitz Studies

**The Making of the Auschwitz Myth: Auschwitz in British Intercepts, Polish Underground Reports and Post-war Testimonies (1941-1947).** By Carlo Mattogno. Using messages sent by the Polish underground to London, SS radio messages sent to and from Auschwitz that were intercepted and decrypted by the British, and a plethora of witness statements made during the war and in the immediate postwar period, the author shows how exactly the myth of mass murder in Auschwitz gas chambers was created, and how it was turned subsequently into “history” by intellectually corrupt scholars who cherry-picked claims that fit into their agenda and ignored or actively covered up literally thousands of lies of “witnesses” to make their narrative look credible. Ca. 300





pp., b&w illustrations, bibliography, index. (Scheduled for mid-2020; #41)

**The Real Case of Auschwitz: Robert van Pelt's Evidence from the Irving Trial Critically Reviewed.** By Carlo Mattogno. Prof. Robert van Pelt is considered one of the best mainstream experts on Auschwitz. He became famous when appearing as an expert during the London libel trial of David Irving against Deborah Lipstadt. From it resulted a book titled *The Case for Auschwitz*, in which van Pelt laid out his case for the existence of homicidal gas chambers at that camp. This book is a scholarly response to Prof. van Pelt—and Jean-Claude Pressac, upon whose books van Pelt's study is largely based. Mattogno lists all the evidence van Pelt adduces, and shows one by one that van Pelt misrepresented and misinterpreted each single one of them. This is a book of prime political and scholarly importance to those looking for the truth about Auschwitz. 3rd ed., 692 pages, b&w illustrations, glossary, bibliography, index. (#22)

**Auschwitz: Plain Facts: A Response to Jean-Claude Pressac.** Edited by Germar Rudolf, with contributions by Serge Thion, Robert Faurisson and Carlo Mattogno. French pharmacist Jean-Claude Pressac tried to refute revisionist findings with the “technical” method. For this he was praised by the mainstream, and they proclaimed victory over the “revisionists.” In his book, Pressac's works and claims are shown to be unscientific in nature, as he never substantiate what he claims, and historically false, because he systematically misrepresents, misinterprets and misunderstands German wartime documents. 2nd ed., 226 pages, b&w illustrations, glossary bibliography, index. (#14)

**Auschwitz: Technique and Operation of the Gas Chambers: An Introduction and Update.** By Germar Rudolf. Pressac's 1989 oversize book of the same title was a trail blazer. Its many document reproductions are still valuable, but after decades of additional research, Pressac's annotations are outdated. This book summarizes the most pertinent research results on Auschwitz gained during the past 30 years. With many references to Pressac's epic tome, it serves as an update and correction to it, whether you own an original hard copy of it, read it online, borrow it from a library, purchase a reprint, or are just interested in such a summary in general. 144 pages, b&w illustrations, bibliography. (#42)

**The Chemistry of Auschwitz: The Technology and Toxicology of Zyklon B and the Gas Chambers – A Crime Scene Investigation.** By Germar Rudolf. This study documents forensic research on Auschwitz, where material traces and their interpretation reign supreme. Most of the claimed crime scenes – the claimed homicidal gas chambers – are still accessible to forensic examination to some degree. This book addresses questions such as: What did these gas chambers look like? How did they operate? In addition, the infamous Zyklon B can also be examined. What exactly was it? How does it kill? Does it leave traces in masonry that can be found still today? The author also discusses in depth similar forensic research conducted by other authors. 3rd ed., 442 pages, more than 120 color and almost 100 b&w illustrations, bibliography, index. (#2)

**Auschwitz Lies: Legends, Lies and Prejudices on the Holocaust.** By C. Mattogno and G. Rudolf. The fallacious research and alleged “refutation” of Revisionist scholars by French biochemist G. Wellers (attacking Leuchter's famous report), Polish chemist Dr. J. Markiewicz and U.S. chemist Dr. Richard Green (taking on Rudolf's chemical research), Dr. John Zimmerman (tackling Mattogno on cremation issues), Michael Shermer and Alex Grobman (trying to prove it all), as well as researchers Keren, McCarthy and Mazal (how turned cracks into architectural features), are exposed for what they are: blatant and easily exposed political lies created to ostracize dissident historians. 3rd ed., 398 pages, b&w illustrations, index. (#18)

**Auschwitz: The Central Construction Office.** By C. Mattogno. Based upon mostly unpublished German wartime documents, this study describes the history, organization, tasks and procedures of the one office which was responsible for the planning and construction of the Auschwitz camp complex, including the crematories which are said to have contained the “gas chambers.” 2nd ed., 188 pages, b&w illustrations, glossary, index. (#13)

**Garrison and Headquarters Orders of the Auschwitz Camp.** By C. Mattogno. A large number of all the orders ever issued by the various commanders of the infamous Auschwitz camp have been preserved. They reveal the true nature of the camp with all its daily events. There is not a trace in these orders pointing at anything sinister going on in this camp. Quite to the



contrary, many orders are in clear and insurmountable contradiction to claims that prisoners were mass murdered. This is a selection of the most pertinent of these orders together with comments putting them into their proper historical context. (Scheduled for late 2020; #34)

**Special Treatment in Auschwitz: Origin and Meaning of a Term.** By C. Mattogno. When appearing in German wartime documents, terms like “special treatment,” “special action,” and others have been interpreted as code words for mass murder. But that is not always true. This study focuses on documents about Auschwitz, showing that, while “special” had many different meanings, not a single one meant “execution.” Hence the practice of deciphering an alleged “code language” by assigning homicidal meaning to harmless documents – a key component of mainstream historiography – is untenable. 2nd ed., 166 pages, b&w illustrations, bibliography, index. (#10)

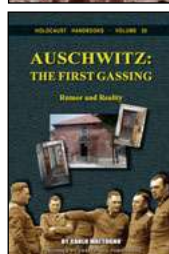
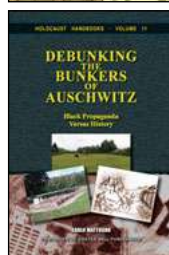
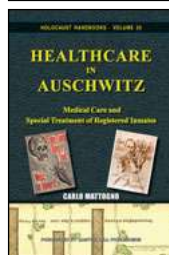
**Healthcare at Auschwitz.** By C. Mattogno. In extension of the above study on *Special Treatment in Auschwitz*, this study proves the extent to which the German authorities at Auschwitz tried to provide health care for the inmates. Part 1 of this book analyzes the inmates’ living conditions and the various sanitary and medical measures implemented. Part 2 explores what happened to registered inmates who were “selected” or subject to “special treatment” while disabled or sick. This study shows that a lot was tried to cure these inmates, especially under the aegis of Garrison Physician Dr. Wirths. Part 3 is dedicated to Dr. this very Wirths. His reality refutes the current stereotype of SS officers. 398 pages, b&w illustrations, bibliography, index. (#33)

**Debunking the Bunkers of Auschwitz: Black Propaganda vs. History.** By Carlo Mattogno. The bunkers at Auschwitz, two former farmhouses just outside the camp’s perimeter, are claimed to have been the first homicidal gas chambers at Auschwitz specifically equipped for this purpose. With the help of original German wartime files as well as revealing air photos taken by Allied reconnaissance aircraft in 1944, this study shows that these homicidal “bunkers” never existed, how the rumors about them evolved as black propaganda created by resistance groups in the camp, and how this propaganda was transformed into a false reality. 2nd ed., 292 pages, b&w ill., bibliography, index. (#11)

**Auschwitz: The First Gassing. Rumor and Reality.** By C. Mattogno. The first gassing in Auschwitz is claimed to have occurred on Sept. 3, 1941, in a basement room. The accounts reporting it are the archetypes for all later gassing accounts. This study analyzes all available sources about this alleged event. It shows that these sources contradict each other in location, date, victims etc, rendering it impossible to extract a consistent story. Original wartime documents inflict a final blow to this legend and prove without a shadow of a doubt that this legendary event never happened. 3rd ed., 190 pages, b&w illustrations, bibliography, index. (#20)

**Auschwitz: Crematorium I and the Alleged Homicidal Gassings.** By C. Mattogno. The morgue of Crematorium I in Auschwitz is said to be the first homicidal gas chamber there. This study investigates all statements by witnesses and analyzes hundreds of wartime documents to accurately write a history of that building. Where witnesses speak of gassings, they are either very vague or, if specific, contradict one another and are refuted by documented and material facts. The author also exposes the fraudulent attempts of mainstream historians to convert the witnesses’ black propaganda into “truth” by means of selective quotes, omissions, and distortions. Mattogno proves that this building’s morgue was never a homicidal gas chamber, nor could it have worked as such. 2nd ed., 152 pages, b&w illustrations, bibliography, index. (#21)

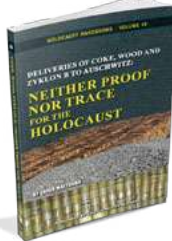
**Auschwitz: Open Air Incinerations.** By C. Mattogno. In spring and summer of 1944, 400,000 Hungarian Jews were deported to Auschwitz and allegedly murdered there in gas chambers. The Auschwitz crematoria are said to have been unable to cope with so many corpses. Therefore, every single day thousands of corpses are claimed to have been incinerated on huge pyres lit in deep trenches. The sky over Auschwitz was covered in thick smoke. This is what some witnesses want us to believe. This book examines the many testimonies regarding these incinerations and establishes whether these claims were even possible. Using air photos, physical evidence and wartime documents, the author shows that these claims are fiction. A new Appendix contains 3 papers on groundwater levels and cattle mass burnings. 2nd ed., 202 pages, b&w illustrations, bibliography, index. (#17)



**The Cremation Furnaces of Auschwitz.** By Carlo Mattogno & Franco Deana. An exhaustive study of the history and technology of cremation in general and of the cremation furnaces of Auschwitz in particular. On a vast base of technical literature, extant wartime documents and material traces, the authors can establish the true nature and capacity of the Auschwitz cremation furnaces. They show that these devices were inferior make-shift versions of what was usually produced, and that their capacity to cremate corpses was lower than normal, too. 3 vols., 1198 pages, b&w and color illustrations (vols 2 & 3), bibliography, index, glossary. (#24)

**Curated Lies: The Auschwitz Museum's Misrepresentations, Distortions and Deceptions.** By Carlo Mattogno. Revisionist research results have put the Polish Auschwitz Museum under pressure to answer this challenge. They've answered. This book analyzes their answer and reveals the appallingly mendacious attitude of the Auschwitz Museum authorities when presenting documents from their archives. 248 pages, b&w illustrations, bibliography, index. (#38)

**Deliveries of Coke, Wood and Zyklon B to Auschwitz: Neither Proof Nor Trace for the Holocaust.** By Carlo Mattogno. Researchers from the Auschwitz Museum tried to prove the reality of mass extermination by pointing to documents about deliveries of wood and coke as well as Zyklon B to the Auschwitz Camp. If put into the actual historical and technical context, however, these documents prove the exact opposite of what these orthodox researchers claim. Ca. 250 pages, b&w illust., bibl., index. (Scheduled for 2021; #40)



## SECTION FOUR: Witness Critique

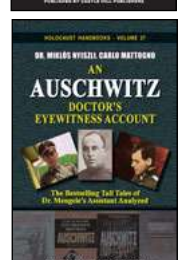
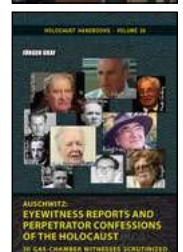
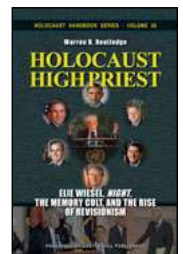
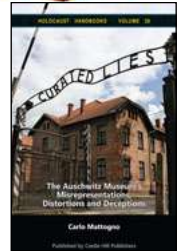
**Holocaust High Priest: Elie Wiesel, Night, the Memory Cult, and the Rise of Revisionism.** By Warren B. Routledge. The first unauthorized biography of Wiesel exposes both his personal deceptions and the whole myth of "the six million." It shows how Zi-

onist control has allowed Wiesel and his fellow extremists to force leaders of many nations, the U.N. and even popes to genuflect before Wiesel as symbolic acts of subordination to World Jewry, while at the same time forcing school children to submit to Holocaust brainwashing. 468 pages, b&w illust., bibliography, index. (#30)

**Auschwitz: Eyewitness Reports and Perpetrator Confessions.** By Jürgen Graf. The traditional narrative of what transpired at the infamous Auschwitz Camp during WWII rests almost exclusively on witness testimony. This study critically scrutinizes the 30 most important of them by checking them for internal coherence, and by comparing them with one another as well as with other evidence such as wartime documents, air photos, forensic research results, and material traces. The result is devastating for the traditional narrative. 372 pages, b&w illust., bibl., index. (#36)

**Commandant of Auschwitz: Rudolf Höss, His Torture and His Forced Confessions.** By Carlo Mattogno & Rudolf Höss. From 1940 to 1943, Rudolf Höss was the commandant of the infamous Auschwitz Camp. After the war, he was captured by the British. In the following 13 months until his execution, he made 85 depositions of various kinds in which he confessed his involvement in the "Holocaust." This study first reveals how the British tortured him to extract various "confessions." Next, all of Höss's depositions are analyzed by checking his claims for internal consistency and comparing them with established historical facts. The results are eye-opening... 402 pages, b&w illustrations, bibliography, index. (#35)

**An Auschwitz Doctor's Eyewitness Account: The Tall Tales of Dr. Mengele's Assistant Analyzed.** By Miklos Nyiszli & Carlo Mattogno. Nyiszli, a Hungarian physician, ended up at Auschwitz in 1944 as Dr. Mengele's assistant. After the war he wrote a book and several other writings describing what he claimed to have experienced. To this day some traditional historians take his accounts seriously, while others reject them as grotesque lies and exaggerations. This study presents and analyzes Nyiszli's writings and skillfully separates truth from fabulous fabrication. 484 pages, b&w illustrations, bibliography, index. (#37)



FOR CURRENT PRICES AND AVAILABILITY SEE BOOK FINDER SITES SUCH AS BOOKFINDER.COM, ADDALL.COM, BOOKFINDER4U.COM OR FINDBOOKPRICES.COM; LEARN MORE AT [WWW.HOLOCAUSTHANDBOOKS.COM](http://WWW.HOLOCAUSTHANDBOOKS.COM)  
PUBLISHED BY CASTLE HILL PUBLISHERS, PO Box 243, Uckfield, TN22 9AW, UK

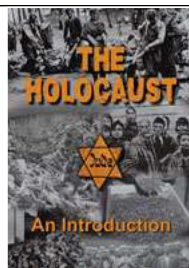
# BOOKS BY AND FROM CASTLE HILL PUBLISHERS

Below please find some of the books published or distributed by Castle Hill Publishers in the United Kingdom. For our current and complete range of products visit our web store at [shop.codoh.com](http://shop.codoh.com).

## Thomas Dalton, *The Holocaust: An Introduction*

The Holocaust was perhaps the greatest crime of the 20th century. Six million Jews, we are told, died by gassing, shooting, and deprivation. But: Where did the six million figure come from? How, exactly, did the gas chambers work? Why do we have so little physical evidence from major death camps? Why haven't we found even a fraction of the six million bodies, or their ashes? Why has there been so much media suppression and governmental censorship on this topic? In a sense, the Holocaust is the greatest murder mystery in history. It is a topic of greatest importance for the present day. Let's explore the evidence, and see where it leads.

128 pp. pb, 5"×8", ill., bibl., index

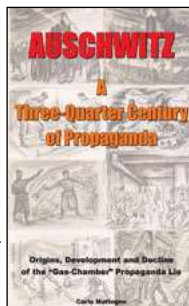


## Carlo Mattogno, *Auschwitz: A Three-Quarter Century of*

### *Propaganda: Origins, Development and Decline of the "Gas Chamber" Propaganda Lie*

During the war, wild rumors were circulating about Auschwitz: that the Germans were testing new war gases; that inmates were murdered in electrocution chambers, with gas showers or pneumatic hammer systems; that living people were sent on conveyor belts directly into cremation furnaces; that oils, grease and soap were made of the mass-murder victims. Nothing of it was true. When the Soviets captured Auschwitz in early 1945, they reported that 4 million inmates were killed on electrocution conveyor belts discharging their load directly into furnaces. That wasn't true either. After the war, "witnesses" and "experts" repeated these things and added more fantasies: mass murder with gas bombs, gas chambers made of canvas; carts driving living people into furnaces; that the crematoria of Auschwitz could have cremated 400 million victims... Again, none of it was true. This book gives an overview of the many rumors, myths and lies about Auschwitz which mainstream historians today reject as untrue. It then explains by which ridiculous methods some claims about Auschwitz were accepted as true and turned into "history," although they are just as untrue.

125 pp. pb, 5"×8", ill., bibl., index, b&w ill.

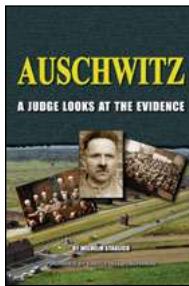


## Wilhelm Stäglich, *Auschwitz: A Judge Looks at the Evidence*

Auschwitz is the epicenter of the Holocaust, where more people are said to have been murdered than anywhere else. At this detention camp the industrialized Nazi mass murder is said to have reached its demonic pinnacle. This narrative is based on a wide range of evidence, the most important of which was presented during two trials: the International Military Tribunal of 1945/46, and the German Auschwitz Trial of 1963-1965 in Frankfurt.

The late Wilhelm Stäglich, until the mid-1970s a German judge, has so far been the only legal expert to critically analyze this evidence. His research reveals the incredibly scandalous way in which the Allied victors and later the German judicial authorities bent and broke the law in order to come to politically foregone conclusions. Stäglich also exposes the shockingly superficial way in which historians are dealing with the many incongruities and discrepancies of the historical record.

3rd edition 2015, 422 pp. pb, 6"×9", b&w ill.

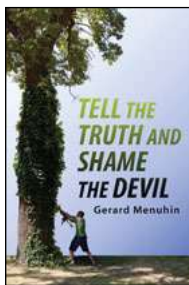


## Gerard Menuhin: *Tell the Truth & Shame the Devil*

A prominent Jew from a famous family says the "Holocaust" is a wartime propaganda myth which has turned into an extortion racket. Far from bearing the sole guilt for starting WWII as alleged at Nuremberg (for which many of the surviving German leaders were hanged) Germany is mostly innocent in this respect and made numerous attempts to avoid and later to end the confrontation. During the 1930s Germany was confronted by a powerful Jewish-dominated world plutocracy out to destroy it... Yes, a prominent Jew says all this. Accept it or reject it, but be sure to read it and judge for yourself!

The author is the son of the great American-born violinist Yehudi Menuhin, who, though from a long line of rabbinical ancestors, fiercely criticized the foreign policy of the state of Israel and its repression of the Palestinians in the Holy Land.

4th edition 2017, 432 pp. pb, 6"×9", b&w ill.



For prices and availability see [www.shop.codoh.com](http://www.shop.codoh.com) or write to: CHP, PO Box 243, Uckfield, TN22 9AW, UK

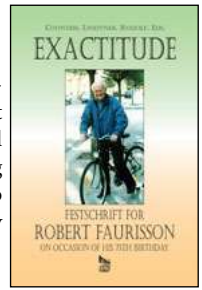


Robert H. Countess, Christian Lindtner, Germar Rudolf (eds.),

***Exactitude: Festschrift for Prof. Dr. Robert Faurisson***

On January 25, 1929, a man was born who probably deserves the title of the most courageous intellectual of the 20th century and the beginning of the 21st century: Robert Faurisson. With bravery and steadfastness, he challenged the dark forces of historical and political fraud with his unrelenting exposure of their lies and hoaxes surrounding the orthodox Holocaust narrative. This book describes and celebrates the man, who passed away on October 21, 2018, and his work dedicated to accuracy and marked by insubmission.

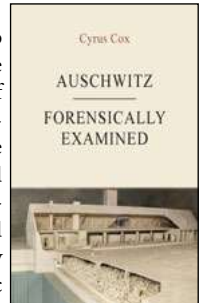
146 pp. pb, 6"×9", b&w ill.



Cyrus Cox, ***Auschwitz – Forensically Examined***

It is amazing what modern forensic crime-scene investigations can find out. This is also true for the Holocaust. There are many big tomes about this, such as Rudolf's 400+ page book on the *Chemistry of Auschwitz*, or Mattogno's 1200-page work on the crematoria of Auschwitz. But who reads those doorstops? Here is a booklet that condenses the most-important findings of Auschwitz forensics into a nutshell, quick and easy to read. In the first section, the forensic investigations conducted so far are reviewed. In the second section, the most-important results of these studies are summarized, making them accessible to everyone. The main arguments focus on two topics. The first centers around the poison allegedly used at Auschwitz for mass murder: Zyklon B. Did it leave any traces in masonry where it was used? Can it be detected to this day? The second topic deals with mass cremations. Did the crematoria of Auschwitz have the claimed huge capacity claimed for them? Do air photos taken during the war confirm witness statements on huge smoking pyres? Find the answers to these questions in this booklet, together with many references to source material and further reading. The third section reports on how the establishment has reacted to these research results.

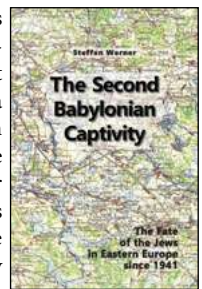
124 pp. pb., 5"×8", b&w ill., bibl., index



Steffen Werner, ***The Second Babylonian Captivity: The Fate of the Jews in Eastern Europe since 1941***

"But if they were not murdered, where did the six million deported Jews end up?" This is a standard objection to the revisionist thesis that the Jews were not killed in extermination camps. It demands a well-founded response. While researching an entirely different topic, Steffen Werner accidentally stumbled upon the most-peculiar demographic data of Byelorussia. Years of research subsequently revealed more and more evidence which eventually allowed him to substantiate a breathtaking and sensational proposition: The Third Reich did indeed deport many of the Jews of Europe to Eastern Europe in order to settle them there "in the swamp." This book, first published in German in 1990, was the first well-founded work showing what really happened to the Jews deported to the East by the National Socialists, how they have fared since, and who, what and where they are "now" (1990). It provides context and purpose for hitherto-obscure and seemingly arbitrary historical events and quite obviates all need for paranormal events such as genocide, gas chambers, and all their attendant horrors. With a preface by Germar Rudolf with references to more-recent research results in this field of study confirming Werner's thesis.

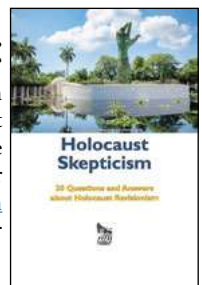
190 pp. pb, 6"×9", b&w ill., bibl., index



Germar Rudolf, ***Holocaust Skepticism: 20 Questions and Answers about Holocaust Revisionism***

This 15-page brochure introduces the novice to the concept of Holocaust revisionism, and answers 20 tough questions, among them: What does Holocaust revisionism claim? Why should I take Holocaust revisionism more seriously than the claim that the earth is flat? How about the testimonies by survivors and confessions by perpetrators? What about the pictures of corpse piles in the camps? Why does it matter how many Jews were killed by the Nazis, since even 1,000 would have been too many? ... Glossy full-color brochure. PDF file free of charge available at [www.HolocaustHandbooks.com](http://www.HolocaustHandbooks.com), [Option "Promotion"](#). This item is *not* copyright-protected. Hence, you can do with it whatever you want: download, post, email, print, multiply, hand out, sell...

15 pp., stapled, 8.5"×11", full-color throughout

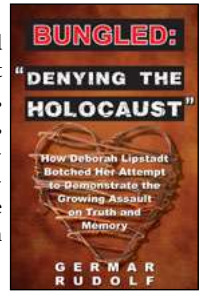


For prices and availability see [www.shop.codoh.com](http://www.shop.codoh.com) or write to: CHP, PO Box 243, Uckfield, TN22 9AW, UK

**Germar Rudolf, *Bungled: "Denying the Holocaust"* How Deborah Lipstadt Botched Her Attempt to Demonstrate the Growing Assault on Truth and Memory**

With her book *Denying the Holocaust*, Deborah Lipstadt tried to show the flawed methods and extremist motives of "Holocaust deniers." This book demonstrates that Dr. Lipstadt clearly has neither understood the principles of science and scholarship, nor has she any clue about the historical topics she is writing about. She misquotes, mistranslates, misrepresents, misinterprets, and makes a plethora of wild claims without backing them up with anything. Rather than dealing thoroughly with factual arguments, Lipstadt's book is full of *ad hominem* attacks on her opponents. It is an exercise in anti-intellectual pseudo-scientific arguments, an exhibition of ideological radicalism that rejects anything which contradicts its preset conclusions. **F for FAIL**

2nd ed., 224 pp. pb, 5"x8", bibl., index, b&w ill.



**Carolus Magnus, *Bungled: "Denying History"*. How Michael Shermer and Alex Grobman Botched Their Attempt to Refute Those Who Say the Holocaust Never Happened**

*Skeptic Magazine* editor Michael Shermer and Alex Grobman from the Simon Wiesenthal Center wrote a book in 2000 which they claim is "a thorough and thoughtful answer to all the claims of the Holocaust deniers." In 2009, a new "updated" edition appeared with the same ambitious goal. In the meantime, revisionists had published some 10,000 pages of archival and forensic research results. Would their updated edition indeed answer all the revisionist claims? In fact, Shermer and Grobman completely ignored the vast amount of recent scholarly studies and piled up a heap of falsifications, contortions, omissions, and fallacious interpretations of the evidence. Finally, what the authors claim to have demolished is not revisionism but a ridiculous parody of it. They ignored the known unreliability of their cherry-picked selection of evidence, utilizing unverified and incestuous sources, and obscuring the massive body of research and all the evidence that dooms their project to failure. **F for FAIL**

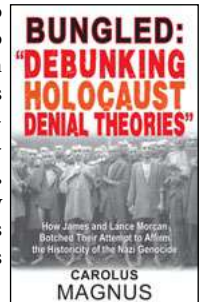
162 pp. pb, 5"x8", bibl., index, b&w ill.



**Carolus Magnus, *Bungled: "Debunking Holocaust Denial Theories"*. How James and Lance Morcan Botched Their Attempt to Affirm the Historicity of the Nazi Genocide**

The novelists and movie-makers James and Lance Morcan have produced a book "to end [Holocaust] denial once and for all." To do this, "no stone was left unturned" to verify historical assertions by presenting "a wide array of sources" meant "to shut down the debate deniers wish to create. One by one, the various arguments Holocaust deniers use to try to discredit wartime records are carefully scrutinized and then systematically disproven." It's a lie. First, the Morcans completely ignored the vast amount of recent scholarly studies published by revisionists; they didn't even identify them. Instead, they engaged in shadowboxing, creating some imaginary, bogus "revisionist" scarecrow which they then tore to pieces. In addition, their knowledge even of their own side's source material was dismal, and the way they backed up their misleading or false claims was pitifully inadequate. **F for FAIL.**

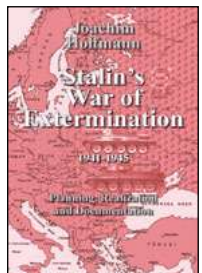
144 pp. pb, 5"x8", bibl., index, b&w ill.



**Joachim Hoffmann, *Stalin's War of Extermination 1941-1945***

A German government historian documents Stalin's murderous war against the German army and the German people. Based on the author's lifelong study of German and Russian military records, this book reveals the Red Army's grisly record of atrocities against soldiers and civilians, as ordered by Stalin. Since the 1920s, Stalin planned to invade Western Europe to initiate the "World Revolution." He prepared an attack which was unparalleled in history. The Germans noticed Stalin's aggressive intentions, but they underestimated the strength of the Red Army. What unfolded was the most-cruel war in history. This book shows how Stalin and his Bolshevik henchman used unimaginable violence and atrocities to break any resistance in the Red Army and to force their unwilling soldiers to fight against the Germans. The book explains how Soviet propagandists incited their soldiers to unlimited hatred against everything German, and he gives the reader a short but extremely unpleasant glimpse into what happened when these Soviet soldiers finally reached German soil in 1945: A gigantic wave of looting, arson, rape, torture, and mass murder...

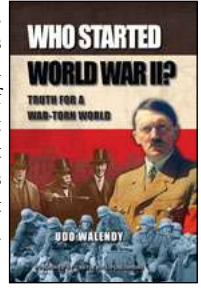
428 pp. pb, 6"x9", bibl., index, b&w ill.



## Udo Walendy, *Who Started World War II: Truth for a War-Torn World*

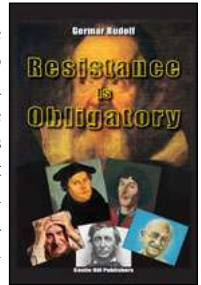
For seven decades, mainstream historians have insisted that Germany was the main, if not the sole culprit for unleashing World War II in Europe. In the present book this myth is refuted. There is available to the public today a great number of documents on the foreign policies of the Great Powers before September 1939 as well as a wealth of literature in the form of memoirs of the persons directly involved in the decisions that led to the outbreak of World War II. Together, they made possible Walendy's present mosaic-like reconstruction of the events before the outbreak of the war in 1939. This book has been published only after an intensive study of sources, taking the greatest care to minimize speculation and inference. The present edition has been translated completely anew from the German original and has been slightly revised.

500 pp. pb, 6"x9", index, bibl., b&w ill.



## Gerhard Rudolf: *Resistance is Obligatory!*

In 2005 Rudolf, a peaceful dissident and publisher of revisionist literature, was kidnapped by the U.S. government and deported to Germany. There the local lackey regime staged a show trial against him for his historical writings. Rudolf was not permitted to defend his historical opinions, as the German penal law prohibits this. Yet he defended himself anyway: 7 days long Rudolf held a speech in the court room, during which he proved systematically that only the revisionists are scholarly in their attitude, whereas the Holocaust orthodoxy is merely pseudo-scientific. He then explained in detail why it is everyone's obligation to resist, without violence, a government which throws peaceful dissident into dungeons. When Rudolf tried to publish his public defence speech as a book from his prison cell, the public prosecutor initiated a new criminal investigation against him. After his probation time ended in 2011, he dared publish this speech anyway...



2nd ed. 2016, 378 pp. pb, 6"x9", b&w ill.

## Gerhard Rudolf, *Hunting Gerhard Rudolf: Essays on a Modern-Day Witch Hunt*

German-born revisionist activist, author and publisher Gerhard Rudolf describes which events made him convert from a Holocaust believer to a Holocaust skeptic, quickly rising to a leading personality within the revisionist movement. This in turn unleashed a tsunami of persecution against him: loss of his job, denied PhD exam, destruction of his family, driven into exile, slandered by the mass media, literally hunted, caught, put on a show trial where filing motions to introduce evidence is illegal under the threat of further prosecution, and finally locked up in prison for years for nothing else than his peaceful yet controversial scholarly writings. In several essays, Rudolf takes the reader on a journey through an absurd world of government and societal persecution which most of us could never even fathom actually exists....

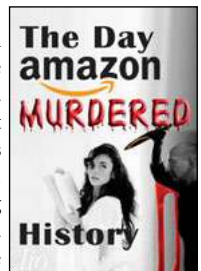
304 pp. pb, 6"x9", bibl., index, b&w ill.



## Gerhard Rudolf, *The Day Amazon Murdered History*

Amazon is the world's biggest book retailer. They dominate the U.S. and several foreign markets. Pursuant to the 1998 declaration of Amazon's founder Jeff Bezos to offer "the good, the bad and the ugly," customers once could buy every book that was in print and was legal to sell. However, in early 2017, a series of anonymous bomb threats against Jewish community centers occurred in the U.S., fueling a campaign by Jewish groups to coax Amazon into banning revisionist writings, false portraying them as anti-Semitic. On March 6, 2017, Amazon caved in and banned more than 100 books with dissenting viewpoints on the Holocaust. In April 2017, an Israeli Jew was arrested for having placed the fake bomb threats, a paid "service" he had offered for years. But that did not change Amazon's mind. Its stores remain closed for history books Jewish lobby groups disapprove of. This book accompanies the documentary of the same title. Both reveal how revisionist publications had become so powerfully convincing that the powers that be resorted to what looks like a dirty false-flag operation in order to get these books banned from Amazon...

128 pp. pb, 5"x8", bibl., b&w ill.



FOR CURRENT PRICES AND AVAILABILITY SEE BOOK FINDER SITES SUCH AS [WWW.BOOKFINDER.COM](http://WWW.BOOKFINDER.COM), [WWW.ADDALL.COM](http://WWW.ADDALL.COM), [WWW.BOOKFINDER4U.COM](http://WWW.BOOKFINDER4U.COM) OR [WWW.FINDBOOKPRICES.COM](http://WWW.FINDBOOKPRICES.COM); LEARN MORE AT [SHOP.CODOH.COM](http://SHOP.CODOH.COM). PUBLISHED BY CASTLE HILL PUBLISHERS, PO Box 243, Uckfield, TN22 9AW, UK



## Thomas Dalton, *Hitler on the Jews*

That Adolf Hitler spoke out against the Jews is beyond obvious. But of the thousands of books and articles written on Hitler, virtually none quotes Hitler's exact words on the Jews. The reason for this is clear: Those in positions of influence have incentives to present a simplistic picture of Hitler as a blood-thirsty tyrant. However, Hitler's take on the Jews is far more complex and sophisticated. In this book, for the first time, you can make up your own mind by reading nearly every idea that Hitler put forth about the Jews, in considerable detail and in full context. This is the first book ever to compile his remarks on the Jews. As you will discover, Hitler's analysis of the Jews, though hostile, is erudite, detailed, and – surprise, surprise – largely aligns with events of recent decades. There are many lessons here for the modern-day world to learn.

200 pp. pb, 6"×9", index, bibl.



## Thomas Dalton, *Goebbels on the Jews*

From the age of 26 until his death in 1945, Joseph Goebbels kept a near-daily diary. From it, we get a detailed look at the attitudes of one of the highest-ranking men in Nazi Germany. Goebbels shared Hitler's dislike of the Jews, and likewise wanted them totally removed from the Reich territory. Ultimately, Goebbels and others sought to remove the Jews completely from the Eurasian land mass—perhaps to the island of Madagascar. This would be the “final solution” to the Jewish Question. Nowhere in the diary does Goebbels discuss any Hitler order to kill the Jews, nor is there any reference to extermination camps, gas chambers, or any methods of systematic mass-murder. Goebbels acknowledges that Jews did indeed die by the thousands; but the range and scope of killings evidently fall far short of the claimed figure of 6 million. This book contains, for the first time, every significant diary entry relating to the Jews or Jewish policy. Also included are partial or full citations of 10 major essays by Goebbels on the Jews.

274 pp. pb, 6"×9", index, bibl.



## Thomas Dalton, *The Jewish Hand in the World Wars*

For many centuries, Jews have had a negative reputation in many countries. The reasons given are plentiful, but less well known is their involvement in war. When we examine the causal factors for war, and look at its primary beneficiaries, we repeatedly find a Jewish presence. Throughout history, Jews have played an exceptionally active role in promoting and inciting war. With their long-notorious influence in government, we find recurrent instances of Jews promoting hardline stances, being uncompromising, and actively inciting people to hatred. Jewish misanthropy, rooted in Old Testament mandates, and combined with a ruthless materialism, has led them, time and again, to instigate warfare if it served their larger interests. This fact explains much about the present-day world. In this book, Thomas Dalton examines in detail the Jewish hand in the two world wars. Along the way, he dissects Jewish motives and Jewish strategies for maximizing gain amidst warfare, reaching back centuries.

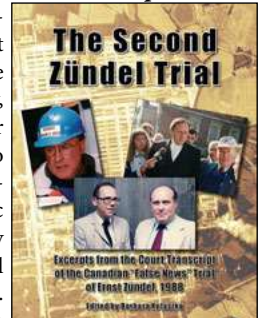
197 pp. pb, 6"×9", index, bibl.



## Barbara Kulaszka (ed.), *The Second Zündel Trial: Excerpts from the Transcript*

In 1988, German-Canadian Ernst Zündel was for on trial a second time for allegedly spreading “false news” about the Holocaust. Zündel staged a magnificent defense in an attempt to prove that revisionist concepts of “the Holocaust” are essentially correct. Although many of the key players have since passed away, including Zündel, this historic trial keeps having an impact. It inspired major research efforts as expounded in the series *Holocaust Handbooks*. In contrast to the First Zündel Trial of 1985, the second trial had a much greater impact internationally, mainly due to the *Leuchter Report*, the first independent forensic research performed on Auschwitz, which was endorsed on the witness stand by British bestselling historian David Irving. The present book features the essential contents of this landmark trial with all the gripping, at-times-dramatic details. When Amazon.com decided to ban this 1992 book on a landmark trial about the “Holocaust”, we decided to put it back in print, lest censorship prevail...

498 pp. pb, 8.5"×11", bibl., index, b&w ill.



For prices and availability see [www.shop.codoh.com](http://www.shop.codoh.com) or write to: CHP, PO Box 243, Uckfield, TN22 9AW, UK